

The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation

The Intermediate Study in The Perfect Principles of the Doctrine of Christ Trilogy

VOLUME I

Toward a Biblical Reconstruction of Reality:
An Exposé on the Science and History of the World

SECTION 1 Spiritual Maturity Diagnostic Pretest

Begun Late Spring 2012

So now you think you're 'ready', because you **know** the 'right question'. What question? Twisting around a **line** or two from the Apostle Peter, only to lay out what you should essentially mean, **line upon line**, you're thinking you're 'ready' to ask yourself, that,

*Seeing **then** that **all these things shall be dissolved...** [and] **Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat...** [while you] **look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness...** [then] **what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness** [?] ([2Pe 3:11a](#) [and] [12](#) [while you] [13](#) [then] [11b](#)).*

Right? I mean you should think you're 'ready' for this question or you shouldn't **continue in** this **study**, because otherwise you missed the 'whole point' of the last one, and need to go back there, to [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), till you **understand** that this question is at the 'core' of the **day star** that should—and really could not otherwise—**arise in your hearts, God willing** it has. Again, if this is not your **testimony** as a result of the last **study**, you're not **ready** for this one, let alone for this question, and you should go back to the previous **study**, and **continue in** it until it is your **testimony**, and you at least think you're **ready** for this question.

And to those who think they're **ready** to go on, **speaking the truth in love**, so that you **may grow up into him in all things** [Eph 4:15](#), first I should not neglect to **admonish you** for who you really are, and that is, given who really I am to you ([1Th 5:12-13](#)). And I mean that if you think you're really **ready** to **know**—much more specifically—**what** this **manner of holy conversation and godliness** should really look like, I **tell you the truth**, at this point it's more likely that it only **seemeth right** to you that you're **ready**, but you really probably aren't. Not yet anyway. And I mean if you think you've **learned** enough in the last **study** to really be **ready** for such an entirely 'life-changing experience and commitment', and I mean 'beyond' **salvation**, and that is, to really function on a **perfect** level of 'spiritual maturity', or in other **words of God**,

...that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding [Col 1:9](#),

or even worse, if you thought you were ready for this even before you started the last **study**, then I have to **admonish** you that this is not likely, the present reality being that, nope, you're almost assuredly not really even close yet. Not nowadays. But why should I expect you to **believe** me? In fact, again, God tells me to expect that you will not. How do I **know** you don't **believe** me, or at least don't really **understand** me? If you're 'up to speed'—and I mean as much as you can be having 'mastered' the last **study**—you should already **know** why, and that is, be **able** to 'decompartmentalize' why. Because if your **understanding** was **perfect** (yes, you're still reading 'spiritually mature') about what King Solomon meant by,

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death [Pro 14:12; 16:25](#),

and what he meant by,

For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow. [Ecc 1:18](#),

and also what the Apostle Paul meant by,

But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man
[1Cor 2:15](#),

or even what he meant when he said that **you** should **be**...

...a perfect man... [attaining] the stature of the fullness of Christ... [and] be no more children... [but] grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ...
[Eph 4:8-12](#),

...then you would at least **know** 'perfectly well enough'—or 'maturely enough'—that there is such a thing as **strong meat** that not only **carnal, babes in Christ**, but also 'new meat-eaters'—someone otherwise referred to by the Apostle Paul as **a novice**, and I mean you, and I also mean no matter how long you've been saved—are still **not** yet **able** to bear.

And I **hope** that you **hear** and **understand** that, **in love**, I'm telling you that you still need to **grow up** some more. I mean just like the 'starting place' for 'recognizing' you're **weaned from the milk, and drawn from** being **a babe in Christ** comes from **learning** that the **way** God will **teach knowledge** and **doctrine** to you is when you're **ready** and **able** to **eat** the **spiritual meat** of His Word, which is when you become **exercised** in the **use** of 'scattered precept interconnectivity' for **rightly dividing** God's Word, which at first is just 'child's play'—so in the same way the starting place for 'recognizing' you're **no more children**, and **ready** to **grow up**, comes when you're truly **ready** to **answer** the **right** questions. It's kind of like 'adolescent lost innocence' and best if you're 'fully **ready** for this "entirely life-changing experience and commitment".

And I'm talking about **doctrine** that, still to you, remains **hard to be uttered**, because this level of **strong meat**—and especially today, with how far we've become 'detached from reality', being 'programmed' by **the world**—can only be safely **received** and **rightly** 'divided' by those **of full age, even those who by**

reason of use have their senses [not just newly] exercised, but exercised ... unto perfection, that is, until 'fully' spiritually mature, or 'fully' approved unto God, and that is, long-exercised in all scripture and doctrine, and who a long time ago have escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust, and the flesh, but more importantly, long ago escaped what was formerly inside their head, when it was 'crammed-full' of the ways of death, 'crammed-full' like everyone's around them still is. And I mean your 'way'—however much still unwittingly—most likely pretty much still is, though, and however 'racing-fast', God willing, you're now 'heading' more so in a good and right direction.

And I mean that you need to be **exercised** a while in this **revelation** of reality, where you will most likely end up entirely alone, but somehow remaining **determined** and **able** to **continue** to **grow** in it, and in a multitude of other **revelations**, while in this **process** somehow The Spirit's Ministry to you remains sufficient. But I'm only talking about you if you have, for a long time now, **escaped** the **evil** 'deadly-milky' thoughts, and instead mostly confront increasingly **evil** 'deadly-meaty' ones, and all with an ever-growing aptitude to also 'decipher' the increasingly **good** and 'life-preserving' variety, all likely making you an increasingly **alone, troubled, chastened, persecuted, sore vexed, destitute, sorrowful, and humbled...soul**, who certainly has little to no opportunity for fully satisfying **fellowship**, and instead are forced to masquerade as just another **babe**—or 'adolescent'—and **suffer** alone, while nonetheless, **giving all diligence** to **continue** to 'freely' **eat...that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness**, and to **continue** in the **rest** and **refreshing** of 'precept-building', becoming increasingly **blessed** as you **abound** in **the grace, knowledge** and **righteousness of God**.

And no, this is not likely you, at least yet. I mean can you even yet imagine such a 'head' that is **able** to recognize, let alone 'subdue' such formidable, invisible, **evil** 'monsters', while simultaneously becoming, mostly indistinguishably to **babes**, a 'life-preserving fortress' for **good**? Again likely no, because **he that is spiritual**, as the Apostle Paul calls such, or **worthy** to be numbered among the **masters**, as the Apostle James refers to them, having continued beyond being merely **approved unto God** for some time, and who by no means remains **barren nor unfruitful** in **the knowledge of God**, but instead is **able** to **abound** by way of **exceeding great and precious promises**, and by being **partakers of the divine nature**, and by **giving all diligence to press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus**, which is the **full assurance of an [abundantly] [ministered] entrance** into God's **everlasting kingdom**, and who, being truly **blessed** in the **mercy** and **righteousness of God**, can truly say, though of course only generally speaking, that, because they have long **continued to grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord**, they are **able to live...by every word of God**, and that in this way they can **discern both good and evil in all things that pertain unto life and godliness**, but even more than all that, and I'm talking to you, that they are someone that is **able** to 'disciple', that is, to **save... them that hear thee**.

So if you **understand** me, the real question is, again, "Are you **ready** to 'disciple'?" I mean without doing more **evil** than **good**. Well, since, according to the Apostle Paul, **a novice** is prone to **being lifted up with pride**, and is certainly **not** always sufficiently **exercised to discern both good and evil**, and if you **understand** the **wisdom of Solomon** that warns us that such a one will nonetheless too commonly think that their **way...seemeth right**, when it's really just another of **the ways of death**, let me answer this question for you. And I tell you, never being able to remind you enough, **be not deceived**,

...every one that useth milk [or have not long ago **escaped** it] **is** [still] **unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe** [or at least still **a novice** who remains in danger of **being lifted up with pride** and thereby of a **fall into the condemnation of the devil**] [[1Ti 3:6](#)]; [Heb 5:11-14](#).

Another way to further ‘illuminate’ such a ‘self-revelation’—because all **revelations** are supposed to **grow**, right?—would be to ask yourself the question, “Am I even **ready** to ‘disciple’ myself, let alone someone else?” Think about it. ‘Along these lines’—yes, PAMD—so far you have mostly only been ‘spoon-fed’ by me, and certainly not with more **meat** than you could ‘handle’, at least most of the time, much less continually ‘choked to death’ on too much **strong meat**, this being especially **true** if you have not done all the extra **study** I recommended along the way. But either way, it would be easy for me to have you ‘choking’ and ‘spitting up’ at **the truth**—and I mean much more than you should have, at least on occasion, during the last **study**—though then and now I only **hope** it’s not more than you are **able to bear**, and only mean it for your own **good**. And again, I’m talking about **things that pertain unto life and godliness** that for you I expect are still just too **hard to be uttered**, and therefore for now, are best postponed.

And by all this **admonition** you should **understand** that you are only really **ready** for the ‘spoon-feeding’ of **stronger meat**. But be **patient**, the goal is to get you **ready** to ‘feed yourself’ and **them that hear thee**, and where The Spirit doesn’t have to always be ‘withstanding’ for you anymore—I mean like He must for **a babe** or **a novice**. When will you be **ready**? The goal is to get you **ready** to disciple others, just as God has **called** and **purposed** and **approved** me to **do**, mainly by your **use** of this **study**, though it will also require the next one too—which you won’t be **ready** for until you have ‘mastered’ this one. So it will require not just **patience**, but growing **patience**, and increasingly difficult **study**, to reach such a goal. And **shame** on you, and likely on ‘us all’, if you don’t **wait** for the next one till you’ve ‘mastered’ this one.

And why **wait**? From a long-time **spiritual man**, who among his **gifts** is **teaching** [Eph 4:8-16](#), who is telling you that you are **not** yet **able** to **judge** this, being **not** yet **spiritual** enough to do so—that is, if you’ve simply ‘mastered’ [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#) through ‘spoon-feeding’—and who is **able** to **speak as the oracles of God**, I tell you that you are not ‘fully’ ready to **receive** teaching concerning the level of the **manner** of person **ye ought to be in all holy conversation and godliness...** yet, and that is, not at the level I’m **called** to **teach** it. The **desire** of it must be enough for now to **continue**. But be **forewarned**. You may do yourself and others great **harm** if ‘taught’ such things before you can really **see** what we’re **looking for**.

So what could **prepare your hearts** to safely **receive** such supposedly and potentially ‘dangerous’ **doctrine**? A test. The test question being, “Are you one of Jesus’ **friends**?” I mean you will come to **understand** that such ‘dangerous’ **doctrine** can only be trusted to our Lord’s close **friends**. And how do you **prove**, like I **hope** to, that you are one of His close **friends**, or at least genuinely **press** to be one? Well, ‘mastering’ [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#) has put you on the right path, but has taken you only part way, because, as Jesus puts it,

Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you [John 15:14](#).

And though this topic is still too dangerous for us, there is another safer way to consider how He defines His closest **friends**, the definition of their identity being

that **all** His “plans” are **made known** to them. He explains this to all His closest **friends**—His **disciples**—saying,

Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you [John 15:15](#).

If you're not interested in absolutely everything that your **lord doeth** in both His past and future **works** and **counsel** (read, “plans”), nor have **vehement desire** to fully **participate** in them, nor **know** full well what He means when He says He **changeth not**, because you're not like one of His close **friends** who is more than familiar with **all** the **ways** that He **doeth... things**, then you ain't one of His close **friends**. And most Christians are not even close to being appropriately defined as one of them. Most are just **saved**, or little **better** than that, who maybe take the opportunity to **build** on their **foundation** in Christ, but add little that will survive the **fire** of **judgment**, and who certainly don't **build** 'substantial' or 'well-built' **gold, silver** and/or **precious stones** 'structures', nothing of **great** 'value' anyway—except maybe to those that **suffer** total **loss**—their **reward** being little to none, most likely making an embarrassing **eternal** 'showing'. And further I may assure you that if they do not fully **awake to righteousness**, then their **reward** will be much less than what presently **seemeth right unto** them. And yes, this means that they will **for ever** be relatively 'poorly' **clothed**, and 'dim lit', to say the least.

But as I **press** to be one of His closest **friends**, I **know** increasingly **better** His “plans”, and that as I **continue** this **way**, He will **continue** to **teach** me the increasingly refined intricacies of it daily. And **perfect...knowledge** (e.g., [Job 37:16](#); [Eph 4:13](#)) and **understanding** of **prophecy** is one of the 'flights' you must 'climb' in this 'staircase' before you can become one of Jesus' close **friends**. Another 'flight' to be **attained** is the **perfect... knowledge** and **understanding** of His **creation**, including the changes made and still to be made by The Curse, at Babel, by **The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation**, in The Millennium, and in the coming **new heaven** and **earth**. And the 'top flight **should be** the **perfect... knowledge** and **understanding** of **The Fellowship of The Kingdom of God** from 'pyramid top to bottom'. And as God uses metaphors—or **similitudes**—I say, **continue** 'climbing' this 'staircase' God has **approved** me to **build** for His Church, and other of the **predestinated** Immortal Son of God, or prepare for some **shame** when there's no longer any **glory** and **honour** to be **attained** by **so doing**.

But there's another thing He commands his **friends** to do that I should mention as we start up this next 'flight', and that is, to **press** towards increasing **love**, or more specifically He says,

Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends,

and that,

...when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the

master of the house Beelzebug, how much more shall they call them of his household? Fear them not therefore...

And later He reminded them, saying...

Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

So yes, among other things, He means that as He **died** for them, whether **servants** or **friends**, they are not above their **master** and so must also be **ready to lay down** their **life for** others too, but especially for **friends**, which includes Jesus, as all His **friends** He was speaking to then eventually did, (except John, through he really did too since he was delivered from being boiled in oil). But being one of Jesus' **friends**—who does what He tells them to do, and who **know** and **participate** in all His “plans”, that is, more than the ‘average’ **servant** does—makes them especially in need of that **greater love** Jesus implies that His **friends** should naturally have. Yes, that they should expect—ultimately—to have to **lay down** their **life for** Him and them.

And yes, the **love** Jesus inspires in His closest **friends** makes them ‘fearless’, a kind of ‘fearlessness’ I **hope** to inspire by this **study** in you, including making you ready, like Him, to get your **garments** [**all**] **sprinkled** with **blood** fighting His enemies, but before that, to inspire a kind of **diligence** that will prepare you for the next, ‘dizzily’ **high**, ‘flight of stairs’, as we will see.

But I have **preached** to you before that the ones that **keep** the most of The Father and Jesus' **commandments** are, according to Them, the ones who **love** Them most. And it is in this context that Jesus says,

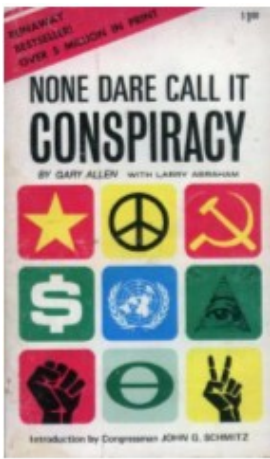
This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you
[John 15:12](#).

Of course Jesus' **friends** naturally do this **better** than your ‘average’ **servant** of Christ, the ‘average’ **servant** being naturally much less **able** to recognise their deficiencies. And I mean that your present ‘family’ and ‘friends’ will likely only try to keep you from such **‘greater love’**, that is, unless together we can eventually **provoke** them too—there are likely at least a couple of decades left (in 2012) before The Rapture is **at the doors**—and that would be **unto** [**greater**] **love and to good** [and **better**] **works**, and to **be...followers of ‘me’** too.

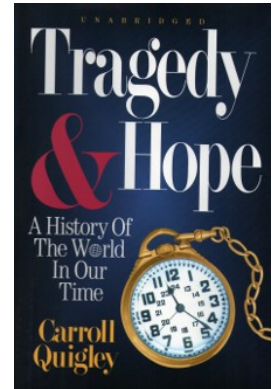
But I only mean this as the Apostle Paul means it, when he says,

Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

So what's this test? It's a test of your **knowledge** of God's **ways, works** and **counsel**. To pass such a test you will need to **study** a fuller account of **all** The Ages of Creation, including a ‘complete-as-possible’ history of past **ages**, as well as a ‘corrected, improved and expanded’ account of the **prophecy** of the **ages to come**. But the Prophet Habakkuk and our Lord Jesus say most won't **believe** the kind of things I have to **teach** ‘along these lines’ either, as they are, but in another way, also **hard to be uttered**, let alone **hard** to be **believed**. However those that are really listening for the Lord's voice eventually can.



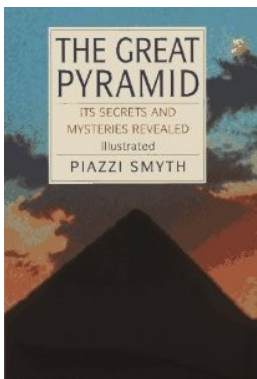
And few believed, or even have heard of Gary Allen, who maybe mostly unwittingly provided a service to Protestants, in general, when he published, *None Dare Call It Conspiracy* (1971), largely summarizing and commenting on the work of Dr. Carol Quigley—an open proponent of the designs of the ‘global elite’ to ‘control the World’, and all ‘for our own good’. Dr. Quigley’s mega-exposé, *Tragedy and Hope* (1966), includes the history and prospects of how the “shadow government” intends to establish itself as the ‘rightful ruler of the World’. (See both book covers, p.4.)



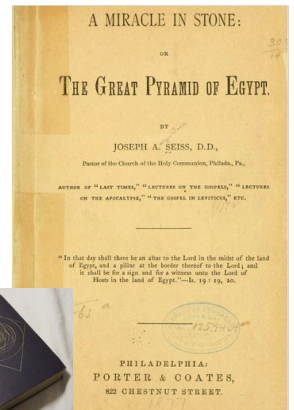
And only a **fool** thinks there are no such grand, worldwide ‘conspiracies’. And I mean **we** not only **know**—as King David says—that such **fools** deny the existence of God ([Psa 14:1](#); [53:1](#)), **we** should also **know** that suchlike deny the existence of ‘satanic conspiracies’, and never take the Apostle Paul seriously when he says,

Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles [read, ‘conspiracies’] of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the [‘conspiring’] rulers of the darkness of this world, against [the ‘conspiracies’ of] spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand Eph 6:11-13.

And do you still deny that such ‘conspiracies’ are now ongoing? This **study** should help along these lines, like Gary Allen helped me.



And Lutheran pastor and author Dr. Joseph Seiss helped in a similar way, providing Christian perspective to what Astronomer Royal of Scotland, Charles Piazzi Smyth, revealed in 1863 about his expedition to study the Great Pyramid. The results of this expedition conducted by this member of England’s elite scientific community were first published in 1864, and it was finally titled,

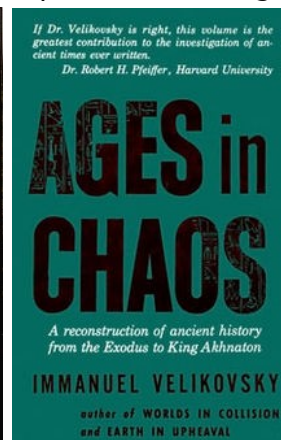
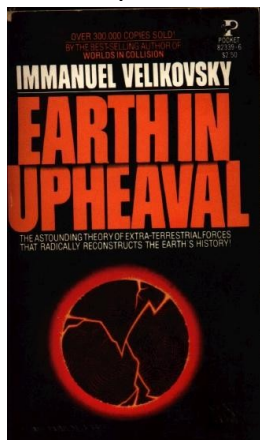
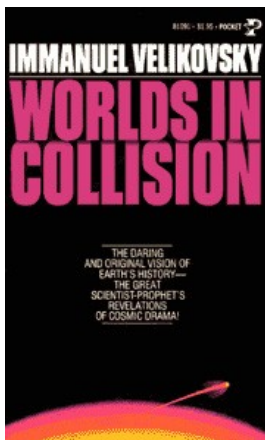


The Great Pyramid: It's Secrets and Mysteries Revealed. And the more God-focused **study** by Pastor, Dr. Seiss was appropriately entitled, ***A Miracle in Stone: or The Great Pyramid of Egypt***



(1877). And it is truly a **miracle** of design by God in stone, and would be worth your time to investigate, even as we will much further investigate the **miracles** of God’s “designs” in this **study**.

And I mean I hope to accomplish something comparable too, and that is to



provide a much more God-focused **study** based on someone else’s ‘monumentally important’ research, specifically to further Biblically interpret the controversial but now largely ignored mid-20th Century works of Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, especially the ones about Earth’s ‘recent’ and ‘catastrophic’ past,

and especially his earlier works, ***Worlds in Collision*** (1950), and ***Earth in Upheaval*** (1955), but also his 4 volume “series” on the chronological “reconstruction” (read, ‘heavy-duty overhaul’) of ancient history, called the ***Ages in Chaos*** series (1952-78), as well as a fair share of some of his ‘unpublished’ works too.

But at the level of ‘conspiracy’ against exposing such **truth**, or even what Dr. Velikovsky called “the ultimate truth”, in this **day** and **age**, I can really only **hope**, at best, to get the attention of the Church, or a small part of it, at least until the start of The Millennium. Still I nonetheless **know** that God,

...is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us Eph 3:20.

So, ***if any man have an ear, let him hear Rev 13:9***, but also **understand** you’re listening to a **teacher** who has had scores of ‘major cutting edge’ **revelations** that continually correct, improve and expand an unendingly **growing** perspective of The Word of God—this being a continually inevitable and ever-reoccurring process—in this case primarily involving both history and end times **prophecy**, and increasingly so since the last **study was** ‘finished’, many of the more recent **revelations** to be **revealed**—and had—along the way in this **study**.

And it should be your experience too by now that all **revelations** naturally and unendingly **continue** to **grow**. And you should come to **understand** that such ongoing and ever-expanding **fellowship** with God will not invalidate or render ineffective the usefulness of either of these studies for training **disciples**, certainly not in the time we have left to use them. And it doesn’t because we may **for ever**, as far as God is willing, see them as faithful testimony of our experience in time, altogether just points along The Natural Eternal Progression of the Word of God ‘timeline’ that I talked so much about in the last **study**. And I mean this process of eternally growing **revelations** is naturally neverending because God is naturally, or supernaturally, omniscient and **infinite**. Or in my interpretation of the prophet’s **words**,

...there is no [end to the] searching of his understanding Isa 40:28.

There is only the always ongoing correcting, improving and expanding of our **for ever** finite perspective of God through His Word, which is our **duty** as His **servants, disciples, family, friends**, and **betrothed**, and this being our **fellowship** as **sons of God**, and our **hope, comfort** and **joy unspeakable and full of glory** as **faithful** and **blessed...children of God**.

But it’s also time you **understood**, as explained in Psalm 1, that the only way such a **faithful servant** and **disciple** will become **wise** and fully **blessed... like a tree planted by the rivers of water**, growing **fruit** with **leaves** that **shall not wither**, and where **whatsoever he doeth shall prosper**, is **if in** The Word **he doth meditate day and night**. This is required for truly close **fellowship** with God, and for Them to **make** Their **abode** with you. And you should **know** by now that you not only can’t really **know** Him otherwise, but that ‘His way’ of **restricting** those who may **draw nigh unto him**, which is ‘designed into’ His Word, is **His doing**. And this is **supposed to be** an effective obstacle, an insurmountable barrier, to the **careless** and **foolish**, let alone to those who are not **sincere**, or are unrestrainedly **desperately wicked**. But these studies are meant to help you further up this exclusive and neverending ‘staircase’, and to **continue** ‘climbing’,

because, being 'designed' His **way**, these studies are likely the only trustworthy access **high** and **nigh to God** you'll get, and **higher** and **nigher** than you've likely ever 'ascended' before, all with the **purpose** to eventually **make you... perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works**, and increasingly so, as well as **able to continue** up, increasingly encouraged, with **God speed, for ever, glory to God**. So stay close, and 'climb' awhile with me.

Some of the topics, by-the-way, that I said I would include in this **study** I have since thought **better** to address in the next one, though, since sometime into the last one, I have not felt led by my Father to write any more than 3. This limit of 3 is not just because it is a lot of work, though it is. Decades of it. And I mean that since I am naturally not the smartest kid in the classroom, I therefore must meditate and rewrite many times to remove errors, add clarity, and most important, be sure that I am as sure as I can be that I am 'speaking for God' where it applies. And since He has also brought to my attention that speaking for Him cannot be trusted to a conventional editor, and as I presently do not have a sufficiently **spiritual** 'disciple' available to help me in this way, I must be responsible for **every word** myself.

So there will be 3 studies, God willing, mostly because there are 3 'areas of study' God has shown me as **profitable**—generally speaking—to wean **babes in Christ** and **stablish** them in a **strong, spiritual** 'discipleship', including that these 3 areas should be—generally—surmounted in a particular order so as to **provoke** the least amount of **stumbling** in this 'climb' as possible. This middle **study**, then, is the intermediate 'flight of stairs', so to speak. Those who try to 'climb' this one first are more likely to fail, let alone be unprepared to reach the 'top floor' at the end of the most formidable and perilous 'third flight'. And I mean at this point, to the 'overeager', and no less than anything else, you need to **grow** in **patience and faith**, without which, and without an ever-increasing supply, no one will reach the 'higher landings', let alone the 'top floor'. This too is God's doing, even in these studies, certainly much more His than mine.

But with all this 'climbing' you now have a guide, someone who is guided by **fellowship** with God and The Lord Jesus and The Holy Spirit. And I mean it is my testimony that it is God Who is giving me this '3-flight plan of ascent', and Who communes with me **day and night**, my **gift** of **teaching** being the 'equipment' for this specific **purpose**, His purpose, as I daily **continue in** His Word. Of course surely there have been and will continue to be 'missteps', as I will never be **able** to remove all **errors** and 'oversights'. But this is naturally and appropriately—even sometimes intentionally—part of the journey to ever-strengthen your **patience and faith**, not to mention **integrity**. Still, and besides preparing and waiting for near 2 decades before God gave me the 'go-ahead' to start, my **carefulness** lasted another full 6 years (2006-2012) before I considered my first **study** 'complete', including the time spent recording my reading of it, and this **carefulness** continued during the next over 11 years it took to write this 'intermediate' **study**, and, God willing, I **hope** will continue for what may be another decade before I complete the last and most 'advanced' one, while I continue to **grow** by such **labour in the word** in **understanding** and **experience**, to God be the **glory**, but which He promises will one day eternally 'radiate' from me, because He **promises** to all, through the Archangel Gabriel, that,

**...they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament;
and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and
ever [Dan 12:3](#).**

And indeed these are the ‘summits’ of our ‘climb’. So you must **understand** the **continuing** and **growing** need for **patience and faith**, even if for now it is more **faith** than **patience**, because God through me will be providing, every ‘step’, or ‘rung’, of the ‘climb’, and mostly indirectly, all the **instruction** in **patience** you will need to succeed. And you may have **faith** that,

This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing...

And **this** is the process of studying God’s Word God’s **way**, and it is the only **way** to reach the **mark** and **prize** we **press toward**. And surely it is a most worthy **mark** to ‘put in your sights’, it being our aim to be **wise** and to **increase** in **knowledge, understanding** and **wisdom** as we **endeavour** to **work, strive, run, fight**, and **press** to **continue** in The Word of God, so that we might eventually have **great** ‘stature’, and be **thoroughly furnished**, and be **meet** (read, “appropriate” or **fit**) **for the master’s use, and prepared unto every good work**, and among those **who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil**, and are therefore **wise** enough to **turn many to righteousness**, which, **according to his purpose** for me through these studies ([Rom 8:28-30](#); [Eph 1:11-12](#); [2Ti 1:9](#); [Phl 3:13-15](#), for examples), is not primarily for **salvation**, but for a **high calling** whose aim is instead on **things that accompany salvation** [Heb 6:1-9](#). Again, **if any man have an ear, let him hear**, and respond to this **high calling**.

The focus of each of these 3 studies is not new to me, as they all began—for me—decades ago. In the previous study, [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), the main features that drive the **study** are The 9 Raptures of the Immortal Sons of God, including one where only **some** that are raptured eventually become Immortal Sons of God, plus 3 additional ‘translations’ intended only for the **damned**. This “Beginning” **study** is more to motivate, encourage and stabilize budding **disciples** with a glimpse of the ‘big picture’, including where we are in it, and where we are going. And in that **study** I refer to this “Intermediate” one as [The Ages of Creation](#). This is because I only later fully realized—relating to the title—that the features that I intended to use to guide this **study** were the God-orchestrated cataclysms, or as He puts it, the **great judgments** of these **ages**, though on all these occasions when God did **shake terribly the earth**, and on the one to come when then He will **shake the heavens** too, all these **marvellous** and **wondrous works** are also to some extent meant to deliver, protect, and preserve **his people**. So it is the **purpose** of this **study** to further motivate, encourage and stabilize **disciples** with a **better** glimpse of the ‘big picture’, and not of just where we’re going, but also of where we came from, as well as correcting, improving and expanding our perspective of where we’re going too. So **be ye also patient**, and **continue** to **prove** yourself as we go, and **hope** with **vehement desire** that God will **eventually** allow you to have **knowledge** and **understanding** that is **perfect** (read, ‘mature’), and to **eventually see** that at this point you were not really ready to even consider **handling** the third, more ‘advanced’ **study**, not until you’ve ‘mastered’ the first two, having in this way **prepared** yourself for the long, difficult, though ultimately mindbogglingly rewarding, end of this journey, which is the beginning of a ‘mature discipleship’ which can, eventually, make you into one of the closest **friends** of Jesus.

And again, and generally speaking, none of this is new to me. And I will say that my ultimate goal in these studies, given to me by God in the late 1980’s, which has all along been my **hope** in Christ, is to see His **purpose** for me come to ‘fruition’,

and that is to **help** introduce The Church at large to a **spiritual** and **perfect** (continue reading, 'mature') perspective of God, and this through His **wondrous, great and terrible works** that take place throughout His physical Creation, throughout the **ages** of **creation**, the greatest of these being still to come, and with this perspective, that Christians would then really and truly **desire** to **know**, and finally be fully **ready** to **know**—as much as is possible at any point in time—while **seeing... that all... things shall be dissolved**, and that as **ye look for such things, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness 2Pe 3:11-14**. Again, and I **speak** the **truth**, you're not **ready** to fully **understand** a **spiritual** and **perfect** perspective of all this yet. But it is my **calling** and **purpose** in Christ to **prepare** His **disciples** to be **ready** for it.

And indeed God has brought, and will again bring **great and terrible cataclysms** upon the Earth both to **destroy** His **enemies** and to **prepare** His people for his plans for them, and it is my **purpose** in God to visit them all in this **study**, so that **ye may be ready**, and **of a ready mind** too, but also that you may become **ready not to be bound only, but also to die... for the name of the Lord Jesus**. Yes, this is a very **grievous**, even **perilous** undertaking, and the final **study**, God willing I finish it, entitled, **The Fellowship of The Kingdom of God**, will be even more so. And I have to warn you again, without the preparation of the first two, you are not likely to fully **understand**, let alone **receive**, the third. So begin, while you **continue** to **build** your **patience and faith**, with the first two, in order, and 'master' them both before attempting the third, which will not be available till some years after the publication of this one anyway, all of them **free** at <https://archive.org/details/TheRapturesOfTheGreatTribulation>.

So again, the guiding features of this **study**, as promised in the previous **study**, is mostly about God's 'world-shaking cataclysms', where these former and future more overt interventions by God are mostly to get man to **repent** of **sin**, and to get the focused attention of a few of the **few**. However the second and third sections of this **study** involve a lot of fact checking, but in this case only because the supposed facts aren't really facts, they're just 'theories', but really pure fantasy, **evil** 'flights of fancy' really, that left unaddressed remain an effectively deceptive influence, or at least a confusing distraction, that can distort a truer picture of God's **creation** and **works**. And you should get a clear, panoramic picture, **better** sooner than later, of how **the whole world** will be successfully **deceived** by such an **evil** philosophy ([1John 5:19](#); [Rev 12:9](#)), or as **scripture** identifies it, **science falsely so-called 1Ti 6:20**.

And you should **understand** by now that these studies, as any **strong meat** of God's Word, are not for the weakly committed. Such will not be **able to bear it**. But if you are 'starving' for a deeper experience with The Word of God, then maybe you can. And I don't mean that it's just **deep**. Ultimately you become **partakers of the divine nature**, whereby you become...

...able to comprehend... [more than most] **all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be** [even more greatly] **filled with all the fulness of God** [Eph 3:18-19](#).

Yeah, it's a dizzyingly-**high calling**, and an 'unendingly ascending' one, and not a 'level' all of **us** will **attain** while still in these **mortal** bodies. But if this **high calling** and **mark** are to be **attained** and **apprehended** before The Rapture, it will require **all** your ever-growing **heart, soul, mind** and **strength**. God knows your

diligence and **sincerity**, and the degrees of it. And He will continually update you about it, if you're paying attention. As Solomon says,

The fining pot is for silver, and the furnace for gold: but the LORD trieth the hearts [Pro 17:3](#).

And as David observes,

Oh let the wickedness of the wicked come to an end; but establish the just: for the righteous God trieth the hearts and reins [or "minds"] [Psa 7:9](#).

And Paul evidently got the message too since he concludes,

But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts [1Th 2:4](#).

But we're stepping far beyond Paul's **gospel** ministry in these studies, as he suggests we should, and therefore will expect much **greater** scrutiny and tests from God. We will not only **hope** to become **allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel**, but also with **things that accompany salvation**, and ultimately, **allowed** and to be **put in trust** by God to **speak as the oracles of God**.

And surely all we may **know**, and may **speak** about, began with God, **by** and **for** His Son Jesus, when They **created** the entire Universe—surely infinitely more of it than we will ever see both telescopically or microscopically—in 6 literal days, and all about 6,000 years ago. And it will be a **shame** for you not to come to **understand** and be able to **prove** this for yourself until The Millennium, as then everyone surely will. But not to worry, this **study** will offer '**many infallible proofs**' from both **scripture** and **creation** itself that this is **true**, allowing you to confidently **reject all science falsely so called**. This **study** will also make even '**more sure**' Jesus' testimony that **heaven** and **earth** will soon **pass away**—in about a 1,000 years from now.

But again, to fully **understand** all this, you will have to become **spiritually minded** enough to be **able to bear it**. For starters, or a refresher, see [1 Corinthians 3:1-3](#) and [Hebrews 5:11-6:3](#), and check your personal reaction to these 'reality tests' of your **heart** and **mind**. And still, even for those who are **able**, such **revelations** must appropriately involve some **shame**. I mean, what do you think the Apostle Peter means when he admonishes **blind** Christians to **grow in grace** and in **the knowledge of God** or **fall**? **Study** or re-**study** [2 Peter 1](#). It's all there. And what do you think the Apostle Paul means when he rebukes Christians that are **ignorant of the knowledge of God** to their **shame**? See this 'gut punch' again in [1 Corinthians 15:34](#). The bottom line is that when you finally and truly begin to **draw nigh unto God**, it's not only 'uplifting'; it's also 'humbling'. And I mean that in this **study** you should come to **know** God **much better** than you do now, and unavoidably see how **ignorant** you are now about Who He really is, and that is, see how 'immature' your perspective is. And you will be forced to abandon misunderstandings, misinterpretations, misconceptions and just plain errors on your part, including an embarrassing number of erroneous ideas you have about the Character of God and His Son, before we're done with these studies. And I mean it should feel like a 'coming of age story' where you are the one losing your 'childish

innocence'. And in fact I offer you the very **same** challenge God Himself offered, the challenge He gave to the 'split off' 10 **tribes of Israel** through the Prophet Amos nearly 3,000 years ago. He told them,

...prepare to meet thy God... [Amos 4:12](#).

Or do you think you have already been 'introduced' in this way? Since I'm not talking about the **work** of Jesus on **the cross**, it's likely you have not. Such a 'proper and mature introduction' to God involves a panoramic **revelation** about how God's 'unchanging' Character relates to His 'unchanging' means of **judgment**. This relationship between His Character and His **judgment** is expressed by God to **his people** through His **prophet** Malachi ([Mal 3:5-6](#)), when He says,

And I will come near to you to judgment... For I am the LORD, I change not...

But one of the reasons you probably don't really know God as well as you think you do is not your fault. And one of the things I mean by that is that God Himself commonly keeps such **wisdom of God** a **mystery** or as **hidden wisdom** to those who are not **perfect** nor **spiritually minded** (read, not 'spiritually mature'). The Apostle Paul, speaking to the Corinthian Christians that he describes as **carnal**, and **not...spiritual**, and as **babes in Christ** ([1Co 3:1](#)), only alludes to such **wisdom** when he says to them,

But we [Paul and friends] speak the wisdom of God [among them that are perfect or 'spiritually mature'] in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory [1Co 2:6-7](#).

So you may **understand** that there has been a **hidden** plan, and far beyond just **the gospel**, from before **the beginning**, that we may eventually be **allowed** and **put in trust** by God to **know** and **speak**. Now of course this revealed **mystery** to which Paul most directly refers is the revealed **dispensation of the grace of God**, which appropriately initiates the **preaching of the gospel**. See or review this in [Ephesians 3:1-11](#). But this is just the 'beginning piece in the puzzle', which should **provoke** us to begin to 'gather more and more pieces', and **learn** how to 'connect them correctly together'. And if you've never really considered this passage before, or most the others mentioned so far, please, for your soul's sake, postpone 'continuing' in this **study** until you finish [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), because if these ideas are new to you, you're likely still **not... spiritual**, nor **perfect**, nor **spiritually minded** enough, but still too **carnal** and **carnally minded**, and closer to one of the **babes in Christ** yourself. The **truth** is that you do not escape this level of 'spiritual immaturity' with 'time saved' alone. So here's another simple test. Do you think you fully **understand** what Paul means when he says,

...we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory [?] [1Co 2:7](#).

I mean you should have more than just an idea. And you should **know** Paul is not just talking about **salvation** here, but, to put it the way he did, **things that**

accompany salvation ([Heb 6:1-12](#)). But mostly you should come to **understand** how Paul is only referring to the **perfect** [again read, 'spiritually mature'] and **their glory**, because only the 'spiritually mature' are able to more fully **understand** and **be partakers** of this [**mystery, hidden**] **wisdom of God**, and are **promised** to ultimately receive **glory** (read, **reward**) for it. And if you think you **understand**, are you sure? And I mean you should **understand** what Jesus and the Apostles Peter and Paul mean when they talk about not only the **glory of God**, but also about **our glory** (see also [2Pe 1:3](#)). And the Apostles mean that suchlike will be eternally **glorified** (e.g. [Rom 8:14-19](#)), and **for ever** be **greater** than other Immortal Sons of God who enter The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ. And they will be **first**, or above those who are little more than just **saved** and otherwise **receive** little or no eternal **glory** or **reward**. Review [1Corinthians 3:8-15](#).

So who are you really? Do you **know** for sure? Because Jesus and the Apostles also talk about Christians who are **blind**, as well as about their **shame** and **nakedness**. Jesus counsels them to become **rich** and **buy...gold** from Him ([Rev 3:18](#); see also [Psa 19:9-12](#); [119:72, 127](#); [1Cor 3:10-15](#); [15:33-34](#)). Do you really **understand** what He means? If so, are you doing it? I **hope** so because I'm talking about a real **shame** that even The Rapture can't fix. And you should also **understand** that just **understanding** what Jesus is talking about here is not enough. You've really got to **buy** the **gold**, and as much of it as you can, for as long as you have, **and learn** how to make it **profitable**.

And how do you **buy...gold** from Jesus? The **gold** in this analogy is The Word of God. And this **gold** is very **precious** indeed. King David elaborates, saying,

The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes. ...the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward. Who can understand his errors? cleanse thou me from secret (or "hidden" or 'unknown') faults [Psa 19:7-12](#).

David can evidently see that the only **perfect, sure, right, pure**, more valuable than **gold**, and **sweeter...than honey** way to **live** is by The Word of God. But also that every one of us are naturally **carnal** and **foolish** otherwise, so that without becoming **wise** by The Word of God there is no way anyone **can understand his errors**. So we can **see** that King David's **praise** of The Word of God is more than it just being **perfect** and **wise**. It's also a matter of **life** and **death**. And though it all begins with a **simple** commitment, we should **understand** that without a lifetime of a lifestyle **living** this way, we will never be like **them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised** in The Word of God **to discern both good and evil**.. See again [Hebrews 5:11-6:3](#).

In another comparison of The Word of God Jesus proclaims,

...Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God [Mat 4:4](#); [Luke 4:4](#).

So He's saying the same thing, that it's essential to **life** itself, and that you're dead—**spiritually**—unless you **continue** to **grow** in it. The Apostle Peter confirms this directly when he says,

Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue... [2Pe 1:2-3](#)

So this **glory**—for **us**, and I'm talking about a **measure** of it you won't be **ashamed** of—does not come automatically with **salvation**. But it comes **multiplied to us only through the knowledge of God**. So then it is not only essential to **life**, it is also essential to your **glory**—or eternal **reward**, which is a measure of the same thing—and which is expressed through your behavior as true **virtue**.

And King David's rhetorical question in Verse 12 of Psalm 19 implies that no one can really **understand his errors**, and that we are all more or less living in **error** or worse, **saved** or not. So altogether he is making clear that the only thing that can really improve your situation is The Word of God, which by The Spirit of God is able to help you become more and more **transformed by the renewing of your mind** [Rom 12:2](#).

And you can find this natural and unavoidable proclamation of a **death** sentence—that **living** apart from **growing** in the **knowledge of God** leads to both **spiritual** and **physical death**—all over the Bible, including where it is repeated in the Psalms:

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death [Pro 14:12](#); [16:25](#).

This means that naturally, inside your brain, without ongoing 'transformation' by The Word of

God, there are really only **the ways of death**—though The Spirit and **the blood of Jesus** may still be **working** to at least **save** your 'immortal soul', to **deliver** you in The Rapture, **yet so as by fire, God willing**.

And you should want to **know** how to **escape** both this **death** sentence as well as the **shame** of being **saved** with nothing to show for it. The Apostle Paul teaches us about this with an analogy that involves building **on** a foundation, that foundation being your **salvation... in Jesus Christ**. In this analogy he tells us how this 'ongoing transformation' to **life and godliness** or 'spiritual maturity' may or may not happen. He explains,

For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day [of judgment at The Rapture] shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire [of judgment]; and the fire shall try [or judge] every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss [and have no reward]: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. [1Cor 3:11-15](#).

So even for Christians, the **work** that results from everything that is naturally in your own brain **shall be made manifest**, and **shall be revealed by** the 'spiritual fire' of **the judgment seat of Christ**, (see [2Cor 5:9-11](#)), where all **carnally minded**, '**ways of death**' inspired **work... shall be burned**, and those who really only do this kind of **work... shall suffer loss**, or in other Words of God, **shall not receive a reward** for any of this kind of **work** at **the judgment seat of Christ** at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church. And naturally, this will become more than just embarrassing. It will be a neverending **shame**. Or call it a neverending lack of **glory, honour** or **reward**, if you prefer. And you should be **able to see** from this little bit of **scripture** that it is really not enough just to be **saved**. You should also **see** that it will be 'greatly' preferable to **be** 'continually transforming' your naturally **carnal** and 'spiritually infantile' **mind** by **scripture** to do **good works**, while more and more leaving behind those **works** that **seemeth right**, those that at best will only be **burned** and result in a kind of eternal **shame**. And you must **see** and **understand** that there is no other **way** to do it but to **buy gold** from Jesus, and invest it into your **prayer, worship** and **service** to God. This is the only **way** true **good works** will accompany and enhance your **life and godliness** as you continually **grow** in **the knowledge of God**, because this is the only way your **work** can **glorify** both God and you. I mean otherwise, The Spirit of God can only mostly work through you in spite of you. And in such ministry of The Spirit, God truly does get all the **glory**.

And you should be able to confirm all this endlessly in **scripture**, or as Jesus puts it,

If ye continue in my word, [only] then are ye my disciples indeed; And [only then] ye shall know the truth, and [only then] the truth shall make you free [John 8:31-32](#).

Free from what? That would be the thing Christians should most want to be **free** from—a totally **bad** or even mostly **bad** eternal **judgment** at **the judgment seat of Christ**, along with the accompanying neverending **shame**, not to mention **free** from the danger that you might **fall away** and lose your eternal **salvation** altogether. See again [Hebrews 6:4-6](#) for example.

Thankfully, at the time of this writing (in 2012), The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church is not yet imminent, and is likely decades away. As a little test to show you that I do not **speak** on my own, but only **as the oracles of God**, or only what the Lord has **taught** me, let me tell you from Him what is imminent. Next we will see the rise of Israeli military superiority, until a lasting and secure peace is established in the region surrounding **her**, even until **she** tears down all her security walls, as they will no longer be necessary. And I have been on the record about this since 2009, having first written it in 2007, though having known it since the late 1980's. The **truth** is that The Rapture will not be imminent until a while after all of Israel's security walls come down. And I don't need to be a **prophet** to **know** this, just experienced at **rightly dividing the word of truth**. Having the **gift** of **teaching** also helps. And **understanding** how anyone can **know** this confidently enough to **speak as the oracles of God** is another reason to make sure you 'master' **The Raptures of The Great Tribulation** before you go on.

But back to the point, it is only after that rapture, decades from now, that it will be too late to **buy gold** from Jesus for the 'highest return on the investment'. And surely the **use** of this particular 'currency of the realm' before this rapture has **great** or the **greatest** value. And I mean **great** in the way Jesus means it.

Speaking of the proper handling of the **commandments** of God, for example, He says,

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven [Mat 5:19](#).

And though Jesus here is referring more directly to Old Testament **law**—which, as shown in the previous **study**, will be fully enforced by Him in The Millennium in Israel—we should also **understand** that it is only the ‘keeping’ and ‘doing’ of **every word...of God** that is able to make anyone among the **great in the kingdom of heaven**, and that little or no attention to it beyond **salvation**, especially if you have the opportunity, more likely leaves you among the **least in the kingdom of heaven**. Indeed, as Jesus would say, the **great** [or **greatest**] **in the kingdom of heaven** are those who ever-increasingly...

...live by...every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God [Mat 4:4](#); [Luk 4:4](#).

Still, after The Rapture, there will be a chance in the 1007 remaining years of this Creation for those left behind—the still mortal—and their progeny, to **buy** at the more ‘rewarding rates’.

So to oversimplify, this special offer will go on until **heaven and earth shall pass away** and **a new heaven and a new earth** appear. But to be clear, this ‘favorable rate of exchange’ will only remain available to living mortals after The Rapture. Those who leave at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church—and anyone else going in the other redemptive raptures throughout The Great Tribulation—will be fully **judged** at those times, and this ‘special offer’ will have expired for them. At these junctures, the participants will be **judged** for the **good** they have ‘done in their mortal body’, and for it they **shall receive a reward** and eternal **glory** that will **for ever** be in evidence with their immortal body, including by their station in The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ. But the **bad** they have ‘done in their mortal body’, though covered by **the blood of Jesus**, will be **burned** up leaving nothing to show for it by their immortal body and station. This is why those who end up with little or no **good** to show for themselves will eventually **understand** that they have, at best, wasted their time **in the body**, and, at least to some extent, have done mostly only **harm** to The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ while they were alive **in the body**, and that this will be an eternal **shame, for ever**, in evidence because they will have nothing to show for themselves. The Apostle Paul explains,

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad [2 Cor 5:10](#).

So then it will be too late for everyone to increase their eternal **reward** and **glory** like we have opportunity to do now. All this is more than adequately **proved** in the prerequisite to this **study**, [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#)—including why this coming ‘rapture’ is more appropriately called “The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church”. And I yet again recommend you first **study**, [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), not just because it

will help you **prove** all this, but because there is much you will not **understand** in this **study** without it. And its focus is to somewhat 'more gently' **teach** you how to **study** God's Word God's way, which you have not likely **learned** to do otherwise. And though **pastors and teachers** often need a **study** like this as much as anyone else, this is not just for them, because the Apostle Paul says that 'everyone', eventually, **ought to be teachers** [Heb 5:12](#). And he means that you should be **able** to,

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, [and become] a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth [2 Ti 2:15](#).

Because to really be **sure** you're going to be **saved**, you can't just **believe**, you must also,

Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine [the teaching of The Word of God]; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee [1Ti 4:16](#).

The Apostle Paul speaks of the **assurance** we have in Christ on Mars Hill ([Act 17:31](#)). But there he's really only talking about the **hope of salvation** (e.g. [1Th 5:8](#))—by the Lord's **work** on **the cross**. But Paul is speaking about more than that in [Hebrews 6:11-12](#), when he speaks of **full assurance**. This only comes with being **able** to **both save thyself, and them that hear thee**, and comes with the **reward** of greater **glory**, which is not available through the 'simple' **gospel** alone, because this 'abundant entrance' **into the everlasting kingdom** that Peter speaks of is only **obtained** through 'abounding' in The Word of God as he describes in [2 Peter 1](#).

And in this short letter of 3 chapters, I count that he warns his **brethren** and **beloved** to be careful not to lose their **salvation** to **false teachers** at least 4 times. And I think you should find these passages. And ask yourself some questions. Have you? Do you? Or at least, can you **study to shew thyself approved unto God** to stand in **full assurance** against this danger that can cause you to **fall**, be **castaway**, **cut off**, etc.? In other words, are you **able** to **save thyself, and them that hear thee**. This **full assurance** (e.g. [Col 2:2-3](#); [Heb 6:11-12](#)) is one of the **things that** [should] **accompany salvation** [Heb 6:9](#). Or you should not have confidence in your **stability**, neither in your **strength of salvation** [Isa 33:6](#). You should instead **fear** for your **salvation**, as Paul means it when he says,

Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling [Phl 2:12](#).

And as Peter counsels **newborn babes** in Christ in general,

And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear... [1Pe 1:17](#) (see also [1Pe 2:2](#) & [Psa 119:120](#)).

So if it **seemeth right** to you that you're **safe** just because it **seemeth right** to you that you can't

be talked out of the **truth of the gospel** by **false teachers** who **cannot cease from sin**, who are continually, and evidently successfully, **beguiling unstable souls**, and who **allure through the lusts of the flesh... those that were clean escaped from them who live in error**, think again. Because the Word of God is clear that such a person is **dull of hearing**, and they **have need of milk** of The Word, **and not of strong meat**, and therefore they cannot **discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:11-14](#). The Word of God assures us that, generally speaking, such 'heads' are full of ideas that 'seem right', but **the end** of such 'carnally-minded thinking' are **the ways of death** [Pro 14:12](#); [16:25](#). And this does not just include the **carnal**, or those who are **not... spiritual**, but certainly also all those identifiable as **babes in Christ** [1Cor 3:1-3](#). And time alone cannot 'elevate' you above being a **babe in Christ**. Only the **labour, work** and **study** of those who **strive, press, run** and **fight to buy...gold** from Jesus can. And do you think you are in no danger of being **lost** or becoming spiritually **castaway** if you don't? See [1 Cor 9:25-27](#). Or maybe the Apostle Paul is just being a little overanxious when he confesses his own **carefulness** about this. And do you really think **the devil** can't **devour** you? Or maybe the Apostle Peter got just a little carried away too in his first letter when he warns his **brethren** and **beloved** to,

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom [you must] **resist steadfast in the faith...** [or be **devoured**] [1Pe 5:8-9](#).

And what do you think happens if you don't, like Paul, **keep under** or 'suppress' your 'naturally' **carnal**, "lustful" and otherwise **sinful flesh**, and aren't sufficiently **sober** and **vigilant** to **mortify** it, let alone are **not able** to **resist** your **adversary the devil**? Uh-huh. And I mean this **fear** should motivate you to **learn** how to get this **full assurance of hope unto the end** [Heb 6:11](#). Or do you think all you need to do is be ready to 'guzzle down' more of **the blood of Jesus**?

And I mean our **race** [1Cor 9:24-27](#); [Heb 12:1](#), [2Ti 4:7](#), our **fight** [1Cor 9:25-27](#); [1Ti 6:12](#); [2Ti 4:7](#), our **mark** [Phl 3:14-15](#), which is our goal, is to...

...prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect ["complete" and "mature"], **will of God** [for each of us] [Rom 12:2](#).

And in all his letters really, Paul tries to **provoke** Christians **to love and good works** [Heb 10:24](#). In [1Corinthians 2:6-7](#), writing to those he calls **carnal, not... spiritual**, and otherwise **babes in Christ** [1Cor 3:1](#), he tries to **provoke** them by saying,

...we [he and **them that are perfect** or "mature"] **speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom...**

He's telling them that **perfect** or "mature" handling of The Word of God is 'out of their league'. It is **hidden** from them simply because it can only be 'fully' **understood** by the **perfect**, and by that term both he and Jesus mean 'spiritually mature'. And Paul is not 'excluding' the Corinthians (see [Rom 12:9-16](#)), but **provoking** them to do the **study** and **work** necessary to join him at his level of **understanding**. These **perfect** are the ones Jesus calls, **my disciples indeed**, who, **continue in** His Word ([John 8:31-32](#)). And Jesus says that this is how they will come to **know the truth**, making it clear that no one can have such 'higher' **understanding** otherwise. And Jesus is not talking about the 'simple' **gospel** in

this verse, but the 'lifestyle' of being a **disciple** in The Word of God. And do you really think you can **know the truth**, as Jesus means it here, otherwise? And do you really think you can **take heed** to enough **doctrine** to **save** yourself, let alone **save...them that hear you**, otherwise? And do you think you won't be eternally **ashamed** if you never **learn** to **study** to 'show yourself **approved unto God**, never becoming **approved** at **rightly dividing the word of truth** before the Rapture? No, no, and again no.

And it's in this **same mind** (e.g. [1Cor 1:10](#)), and with the **hope** for the day when The Church of Jesus Christ has just **one mind** (e.g. [Rom 15:5-6](#); [2Cor 13:11](#)), that Paul concludes,

...brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified
[Act 20:32](#).

This **inheritance** is made possible by **salvation**, but should go way beyond it, to the **glory** and **reward** that **accompany salvation**, that is, if you are to avoid the **shame** of an **entrance** into **heaven** with only your **salvation** by **the blood of Jesus**. And by God I **know** no **better teaching** to help **strengthen** your **faith and patience** (or **patience and faith**), to **build you up** to **run with patience the race that is set before us**, to **fight the good fight of faith**, [and] **lay hold on eternal life**, and to **press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus**, than the prerequisite to this **study**, [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), hereafter referred to simply as **RGT**. And the aim of this **study** is to **work, fight, race, strive** and **press toward** Paul's 'mindset' to,

Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded [Phl 3:7-15](#);
(see also
[Luke 6:40](#); [1Cor 2:6-7](#); [2Cor 13:11](#); [Rom 12:2](#); [Eph 4:13](#); [Col 1:28](#); [1Th 3:10](#); [2Ti 3:17](#); [Heb 12:23](#); [13:20-21](#); [James 1:4](#); [1Pe 5:10](#); [1John 4:17-18](#); [Rev 3:2](#)).

And by that, among a multitude of things **that accompany salvation**, he means that we should not simply depend solely on **the blood of Jesus** for our **entrance** into **heaven**, because though we can get into The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ with nothing but our **salvation** to show for it, as described in [1Corinthians 3](#), this will be a **shame**, compared to those **giving all diligence** to **build, labour, run, strive, press, fight** and **suffer** for the **glory** and **reward** they will **receive** when they are **judged** for their **work**.

But it's more likely that you've been hanging around at the wrong end of this scale, and likely because of how you've been 'taught'. And without the help of a fully **approved** teacher, you likely never will really **know the truth** as Jesus means it in [John 8:31-32](#), nor learn to **strive** upscale, until it is too late for the **glory** and **reward** that comes with **knowing** this level of **truth**, because you are probably not yet a **workman that needeth not to be ashamed**, neither already **approved unto God** [2Ti 2:15](#), nor are you likely **able** to avoid **shame** when you **suffer loss** on **the day** of The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church [1Cor 3:10-15](#); [2Cor 5:9-11](#), nor are you likely even **able** to **save thyself** as Paul means it in [1Timothy 4:16](#). But this is what Jesus is talking about when He says,

Be ye therefore perfect (“mature” or “complete”), **even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect** [Mat 5:48](#).

For those of us who are not omniscient and **omnipotent**, this means that we should be some-one who is committed to **continue in** God’s Word. And this designation, beyond **salvation**, of being **perfect**, or being **approved unto God**, or reaching **the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus** is not really a destination. It is an ‘eternal commitment’ that comes with **glory** and **reward** that you **obtain** only when you commit to and never stop doing the **work** to **receive** it. You begin this commitment as soon as you commit to your death to **build, work, labour, study, run, strive, press, fight** and **suffer** to **obtain** this **reward** and **prize** and **crown**, including the appropriate associated ‘station’. And when you begin your commitment and **continue** in such a **sober** and **vigilant** level of **diligence, for evermore**, this will eventually result in God’s ‘approval’ of your **perfection**. See [Hebrews 6:1-3](#) again, and see, that committing to **go on** beyond the “simple” **gospel** is to **go on unto perfection**. And remember Peter promises that **if ye do these things**, or **if you continue** in this ‘eternal commitment’, you have the **assurance** that you will **never fall** and that you will be **abundantly** ‘rewarded’ at The Rapture ([2Pe 1:1-11](#)). But if you are not ready and willing to **give [all] diligence to make your calling and election sure**, there are no guarantees of **reward**, or even any **assurance** of **salvation**, as the Apostles clearly **warn**, and as Jesus and the Prophets clearly imply.

The place **we** must all start, eventually, is where **we** acknowledge the far too common ‘existence’ of **new** or **newborn** or ‘chronically’ **barren** or **unfruitful** Christians, designated as such by Peter and Paul, and indirectly by Jesus and Isaiah and other **prophets**, identifiable also as **babes**, (*KJV* search also **babe** or **babes in Christ**). These Christians are not yet **weaned from the milk**—the **milk of the word**—and are **unable to bear...meat**, let alone **strong meat**, and are further identified by Paul as **dull of hearing**. Such **little children**, as designated by John, aren’t really supposed to **know** what Jesus means by being **perfect**. And again, it’s likely you don’t have a ‘deep enough’ **understanding** of it yet either, and that is, unless you’ve ‘mastered’ [RGT](#). Because most who think they **study** The Word of God more likely have not yet really started. Because they have not yet **learned** how. Because it is not something you naturally **know**. You only ‘naturally’ think with a **carnal mind**, and...

...the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be [Rom 8:7](#).

And **babes** are ‘naturally’ unaware of this. They think the way they think is fine. To them theirs is a **way that seemeth right**, but it is really just **the ways of death** [Pro 14:12; 16:25](#). And an early **revelation** on the road to **perfection** is the **understanding** that you need to ‘start from scratch’ to **learn** from The Word **whom** God **shall teach knowledge**, and **learn** how He will **teach** it to you. And when you finally **learn** this, you are finally **able to learn** how to become **perfect** or **approved unto God**, and you’ll **understand** what Jesus means when He says...

If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. [But]

He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me [John 14:23-24](#).

Now when Jesus invokes the authority of His Father, that's serious. At least part of what He means by doing so is that the consequences are out of His control. He also means that if you don't devote yourself to 'keeping His Words', or in other words, **learn** to commit to...

...live [by] every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God [Mat 4:4](#); [Luk 4:4](#)...

...then your very **life**, and I mean **eternal life**, is in danger, but that at least you're going to be in for more **shame** than you ever thought possible, and **suffer loss of reward** at the **resurrection of the dead** that you had no idea you could **receive**, and though you may somehow **obtain salvation**, you yourself **shall be saved; yet so as by fire** [2Cor 5:10-11](#); [1Cor 3:10-15](#).

And you can anticipate that it will be more than a little embarrassing if everything you **build upon your foundation**, which is your **salvation**, is combustible. This will be quite an eternally unpleasant surprise for many of the Immortal Sons of God. However just making the commitment to **continue in giving all diligence to study** each and every **word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God can make your calling and election sure**, and spare you at least some of this **shame**.

And get a clue, no one should have ever 'promised' you **eternal life**, just the **hope of eternal life** ([Tts 1:2](#); [3:7](#)). And **you** [should] **have been taught** [Eph 4:21](#); [Col 2:7](#); [2Th 2:15](#); [Tts 1:9](#) that from the point of your **salvation** on, that you must **learn to fight** for it. Because it is actually likely that **the world, the flesh** [1Jo 2:16-17](#) and that **roaring lion** waiting to **devour** any not **steadfast in the faith** [1Pe 5:8-9](#), including all those not committed to becoming **disciples indeed**, will steal your salvation ([John 10:10](#)), and that after you were...

...once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come... [Heb 6:4-6](#).

Yes, it is easy and common to be **lost** and **cut off** and **fall** or **fall away** or be **castaway** or **overcome** after being **saved** (e.g. [Rom 11:22](#); [Heb 4:11](#); [6:4-6](#); [2Pe 1:10](#); [2:20-21](#); [3:17](#); [1Cor 10:12](#); [9:26](#)).

And **worse** than this, according to Paul, it is **impossible** to **renew again unto repentance**—the second time—someone who has **fallen away** [Heb 6:4-6](#), and according to Peter, when they are **overcome**, they are **worse** off than if they had never **known the way** in the first place ([2Pe 2:20-21](#)). And it will also apparently be common for Christians to barely make it through the **gate**, and that is, having little or nothing to show for themselves. This is why Jesus counsels,

But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal [Mat 6:20](#).

And as the Apostle John warns,

Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought [or “worked for”], **but that we receive a full reward** [2Jo 1:8](#).

And the Apostle Peter that,

Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye [should] **know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness** [2Pe 3:17](#).

And it is also why the Prophet Isaiah encourages us, saying,

...wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of thy times, and strength of salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure [Isa 33:6](#).

Because without such **treasure** to give you **stability** and **strength of salvation**, you don't have it, and you could 'easily' **lose** that **full reward**, and maybe much, much more.

But I **understand** how most Christians mislead themselves to think that they **love the Lord** with all their **heart, soul, mind** and **strength** ([Mar 12:30](#); [Luk 10:27](#)), and that their **way** of **study**, however little, to them **seemeth right** [Pro 14:12](#); [16:25](#). But **Jesus says** that those that aren't really **disciples indeed**, who aren't committed to **continue** in God's Word God's **way**, and who don't increasingly **keep** His **words**, not only don't **know the truth**, but they also don't really **love** God or Jesus either—not in a **perfect** or 'mature' **way** anyway. Because the only **way** to **know the truth** and truly **grow** to deeply **love the Lord** is to be **transformed by the renewing of your mind** [Rom 12:2](#) by the Spirit of God through the **study** of God's Word His **way**. **This** includes **rightly dividing the word of truth**. And **this** is **the way** to trade **dung** for **the excellency of knowledge of Christ Jesus**, to trade **the loss of all things** for the only **way** to **win Christ**. And this is what the Apostle Paul means when he says,

Yea doubtless... I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ [Phl 3:8](#).

And this mindset is required if you are to eventually **win** for yourself the **prize** of being **approved unto God**. I mean if you think you're going to **grow** much beyond your 'spiritual **milk**-drinking infancy' toward becoming a **strong meat** 'eater' of God's Word—toward being **able** to 'digest spiritually mature precepts'—there's a **lot** to **learn**, and all of it from God's Word, no matter which **teacher**, if any beyond The Spirit, may help you to **see** all this for yourself.

Pop Quiz:

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? (Answer: [Isa 28:9-13](#)).

It's not you, unless you're willing to commit to **learn** to **understand** God's Word His **way**. In [RGT](#) I've tried to **reveal** through the process of becoming **exercised** in the **use** of God's Word many of His 'signposts' that help in **rightly dividing** the source of all **truth, knowledge, understanding** and **wisdom**. In that **study** we **learn** to let **scripture** interpret **scripture**, discern the literal from the figurative, be

sensitive to perspective, watch for the layering of verses as well as whole passages, mark transitions, make logical deductions, solve *mysteries* and riddles, pass integrity tests, *continue* to stay *diligent* and *patient*, *continue in* the *exercise* of *use* of God's Word, *continue* to *ask*, *seek* and *knock* which includes speculation and the testing of *precepts*, and all this and more while you *continue* to practice "*precept* interconnectivity" over the whole Word of God, and while you *continue* to 'reconfigure' a growing number of *precepts* and *continue* to correct, improve and expand your *knowledge* and *understanding* of God and His Word, always keeping in mind that *understanding* all this is not so much a goal as an 'eternal commitment' that comes with the *promise* that *ye shall never fall*, and with a yet unimaginable and 'eternally weighty' personal *reward* that *you* may *receive* at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, appropriate to how you *have handled...the Word of life* [1John 1:1](#), and *every word of God* [Mat 4:4](#); [Luke 4:4](#).

But we also *learn* that you must be on the lookout for all manner of pitfalls, because *you* [should] *have been taught* that *God Himself* is out to trip up the inattentive and insincere *through the very construction and presentation of His Word*—to make anyone who would *carelessly* misuse it, or by *wicked devices* abuse it, to *fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken* [Isa 28:9-13](#), including any who, for whatever reason, haven't *handled* God's Word God's *way*, the *blood of Jesus* always '*withstanding*' against *everlasting destruction*, but only against that.

And we *learned* that those who let God *teach* them His *way*, who *learn* to become 'unashamed' *workman* who *study* to 'show themselves' *approved unto God*, increasingly *receive* one of the most *exceeding great and precious promises* of all—certainly one that is *much better* and, *More to be desired... than much fine gold... sweeter also than honey... rejoicing the heart... enlightening the eyes...* [and bringing] *great reward* [Pro 16:16](#); [19:8-11](#); [Psa 119:127](#). A test that you really do *receive the promise*, by-the-way, is given by one of the angels of The Seven Trumpet Judgments, who gives this test as a riddle. But the *promise* I'm referring to is that The Word of God *... is sure, making wise the simple* [Psa 19:7](#), and it 'gives' *light* and *understanding unto the simple* [119:130](#). So the Word of God *promises* to eventually 'make' *wise* and 'give' *understanding* to even the *foolish* and *ignorant*.

And the angel's test I mentioned is straightforward. Anyone who can 'fully' solve his riddle has this *mind which hath wisdom* [Rev 17:9](#). Of course this test cannot be passed without *study*—the shortest route of *study* I know to *get wisdom* and *get understanding* sufficient to 'fully' *understand* the complex answer to this riddle is in the hundreds of pages (or many hours of audio) of *RGT*. But to have any hope of 'getting there', *the simple* and *foolish*, including *babes in Christ*—which would be anyone without *years* of consistent, focused *experience* being *exercised* in the *use* of God's Word God's *way*—should start on page 1 of *RGT*, and only turn a page when you've read it enough times to 'fully' *understand* it to the best of your ability at that time. In other words, it probably won't be enough to simply read or listen through the book just once. You must *study* it, and spend as much time and suffer as much repetition as necessary until you 'fully' *understand* every *line* of it. Yet you should *understand* more and more every time you go through any part of it, and expect to come to corrected perspectives as well as new and expanded *revelations* continually. I do. And the same goes for this *study*. And if you think that sounds hard, you must *understand* that God's way is based on an *eternal* relationship with us. And given that Jesus *will* tarry awhile, there is some time. And mean I can speak for God that The Rapture is *not* imminent, and that He

will not return this decade, nor likely in the next couple that follow. Again, I can say this because by The Spirit of God, I **speak as the oracles of God**, which simply means I am **approved unto God** to **speak** for Him, and **give [all] diligence** not to do so unless I can. And I have been **approved unto God** to **discern** the difference—the every growing nature of **revelations** notwithstanding. And I have already done the really hard **labour, work** and **study** for you. I have extracted **precepts** scattered throughout the Word and put them together connected in one **line** as one **study**, including an audio recording of my reading of it, so that these **precepts** can be **handled** like a **babe in Christ** handles God’s Word—linearly. Except, it’s a really long **line**, and the attention span required, as well as the repetition needed, make it nonetheless **strong meat**, and will likely require more **patience** than you’re used to if you’re ever going to finally ‘get there’, but where from then on you can do it for yourself, as God intends, and Paul exhorts, when he says,

But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. For every man shall bear his own burden [Gal 6:4-5](#).

And however you ‘get there’—and preferably before The Millennium—only ‘there’ will you be ready for an unendingly expanding ‘bigger picture’. And I say ‘bigger picture’ because if you truly **continue in** The Word, you will **experience** becoming **exercised** in the **use** of the ‘ever-increasingly deeper’ and ‘meatier’ **knowledge, understanding** and **wisdom of God** that will ‘unendingly correct, improve and expand’ your perspective of The Father and of Jesus Christ our Lord **for ever**. In other words, **revelations** are not fixed and unchanging, but should **grow**, and cluster, and interconnect with others, and other clusters, for bigger and bigger perspectives **for evermore**. There is no more an **end** to such ‘growth’ as there is to our **infinite** God.

However just hour-long, weekly, **milk** sermons, and ‘agree to disagree’ Bible study attendance, along with reading through the Bible every year—which you shouldn’t necessarily avoid, [Heb 10:25](#); [1Ti 4:13](#), God give you **patience**—can’t really serve up **strong meat**. **Little children**—yes, I and the Apostle John mean you, who, regardless of age, are scripturally and therefore ‘spiritually immature’ and vulnerable—you must **understand** that God may eventually **frame evil against you, and devise a device against you**, if you won’t **return ye now every one from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good** ([Jer 18:11](#); [Rom 11:21-22](#)), just as He does with **his people** the Jews (e.g. [Exd 18:1](#); [32:14](#); [1Sa 12:22](#); [Luk 7:16](#); [Rom 11](#)). And how can you avoid this **evil** unless you let God **teach** you, and that by the **use** of **his word** to have your **senses exercised to discern both good and evil**? Don’t you yet **know** that it is not naturally within you, but only **through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord** that you will ever be able to **discern both good and evil** when it comes to so many **things that pertain unto life and godliness**? ([Heb 5:14](#); [2Pe 1:3](#))

Yes, The Spirit of God **is within you** [Luke 17:21](#). And Jesus says The Spirit will **teach you all things** [John 4:26](#), **guide you into all truth** [16:13](#), **bring all things to your remembrance...** [that Jesus] **said** [14:26](#), and **testify of** [Jesus] [15:26](#). But this will not happen by The Spirit’s ministry alone. Jesus also says that **if** you are to **know the truth**, you must become a **disciple** and **continue in** His Word. He also implies that it won’t be easy, and that the supposedly simple process to **obtain salvation** is really a struggle that **few** are **able**, and **many** are not **able** to **find**, saying,

Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able [Luke 13:24](#); see also [Mat 7:13-14](#).

The Apostles also tell us we must **run, fight, press** and **give [all] diligence**. Because you, at best, even with the help of The Ministry of The Holy Spirit, (a ministry not as widely available in **other ages**, by-the-way), can only at first help you **build on your foundation** with the maturity of a **babe in Christ**, which will likely involve mostly the 'combustible materials' that will all be **burned** at the **resurrection of the dead** to your **shame**, or more likely worse. And if you never **abound in the knowledge of God**, as Peter warns, you will become **barren and unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ**, be **blind**, and **fall**.

And God states outright that He has already set a trap for the misusers and abusers of His Word. The 'secret' to avoiding this trap, of being **broken, and snared, and taken** by God, is to let Him **teach** you **knowledge** and **doctrine** His **way**, as explained in [Isaiah 28:9-13](#). In this passage the prophet declares God's intentions to **snare** and **break** those who ignore or misuse His Word, and that, to protect it from misuse, He has designed it so that the **meat** of His Word must be 'reconstructed' from scriptural **precepts** that are 'scattered' **here a little and there a little** throughout the Bible, so that **if** God is truly going to **teach** you **knowledge** and **make** you **to understand doctrine**, you must **learn** and continually practice His **way** of gathering these scattered **precepts** on any given subject or topic, and **learn to rightly** connect them together **precept upon precept** and **line upon line** into 'increasingly bigger constructions', where you ultimately become **weaned from the milk**, and come to **understand 'strong meat' doctrine**, and to become **able** to **speak wisdom among them that are perfect**. And more than that, **speak as the oracles of God**, becoming **able to save...them that hear thee**. And to **continue**,

Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ... [Eph 4:13-15](#).

So by all means, **grow up**, because it is not only **the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive** that we must avoid. God also makes clear that His **way** to **teach knowledge** and **to understand doctrine** is the only way to **continue in** His Word to become **disciples indeed**. He also makes clear that we must be careful to **continue** to navigate around the 'pitfalls' and 'snares' He sets along the way to catch all those who would misuse or abuse His Word, whether **deceitfully** or just **carelessly**.

And it is for all this that the Apostles also tell us to,

Beware [Phl 3:2](#); [Col 2:8](#).

And,

Be not highminded, but fear... [Rom 11:20-21](#).

And to,

...work out your own salvation with fear and trembling [Phl 2:12](#).

And to,

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour; Whom [you must] resist steadfast in the faith [or be devoured]... [1Pe 5:8-9](#)

And do you **see** a 'safe middle-ground' option here?

But this **truth** of how to **use** God's Word God's **way** is **better** confirmed by those **exercised** in it. And this is **hidden wisdom** that takes **study** and **all diligence** to **attain**. And the requirement of such 'full commitment' not only protects God's Word from abuse, but it is also to test the **sincerity, diligence** and **integrity** of His **disciples** who **continue in** it. And you **should fear** and **tremble** because of the potentially, even likely, 'eternally bad consequences'. And if not as much for **your own salvation**, then for **them that hear thee [1Ti 4:16](#)**. Because, as Paul puts it,

Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men [2Cr 5:10-11](#) (see also [Psa 2:11-12](#); [119:120](#); [Phl 2:12-13](#)).

And though God is...

...longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance [2Pe 3:9](#)...

...He is **willing** to **just save** you. By now you should **know** that on **the day** that **the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is**, it will **declare** that **if a man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire**, (read, 'he gets no reward'). Surely many of the Immortal Sons of God will **for ever** be among **the least in the kingdom of heaven [Mat 5:19](#)**, and arguably in a "station" in The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ with little or no **reward** as well as some degree of **dishonour**. But notice Jesus describes the **great in the kingdom of heaven** as those who **do and teach the commandments** of God (also [Mat 5:19](#)). So **the least in the kingdom of heaven** are those who **build** with 'combustible materials' right out of their own 'untransformed', **unskilful, milk-using, natural** and **carnal** brains. But the **great** evidently **build**, or **grow**, with a **transformed, perfect, meat-eating, spiritual** brain. This should **reveal** new meaning and importance to Paul's declaration.

But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ [1Cr 2:15-16](#).

And Paul is clearly not speaking about 'the minds' of **carnal** Christians here.

But hopefully, after this much **admonishing**, and **exhortation**, even **chastisement**, you are...

...sorrowed after a godly sort... [where] **...carefulness it wrought in you, yea, ...indignation, yea, ...fear, yea, ...[even] vehement desire** [2Cr 7:11](#).

...and all to avoid all this **dishonour**. I mean, you must **understand** that you are an 'ain't-gonna-get-no-reward—just saved', **carnal, milk-drinking babe** in Christ, **unless** you **build on your foundation** of **salvation** with **gold, silver** and **precious stones** 'bought' from The Word of God. And all these **treasures of wisdom and knowledge** [Col 2:3](#) you can **buy** (e.g., [Pro 23:23](#); [Rev 3:18](#)) through God's **rightly dividing, precept upon precept, way of study** ([2Ti 2:15](#); [Isa 28:9-13](#)), which must be finally put to **use** ([Heb 5:14](#); [2Ti 2:20-22](#)) by God through you. And see again [Psalm 19:9-12](#), and [119:72](#) plus [Verse 127](#)). See also [Hebrews 12](#), all 29 verses.

And you should also **hope** that He will **permit** you to **go on unto perfection** (e.g. [Heb 6:1-3](#); [2Cr 13:9](#); [Phl 2:12-13](#); [Rom 9:20-23](#)). This 'permission' is only given in God's Word, God's way. Again and unavoidably, those who only attend 'Sunday sermons', 'weekly Bible studies' and read through the Bible every year, mostly **do not** connect **precepts** from throughout the Word of God together in anything near what Paul identifies as **strong meat**. And those who use this 'spiritually immature' focus of **study**, by definition, receive mostly just the **milk of the word** [1Pe 2:2](#), **and** remain **unskilful in the word** [Heb 5:13](#), and just by the amount of time spent alone, it is insufficient **study** and **use** of The Word to **have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:14](#). And without being **able to bear** [1Cr 3:1-2](#) **rightly dividing** the widely scattered **precepts** of God's Word, you can't really tell **good** from **evil**, **right** from **wrong**, or **the truth** from **a lie** beyond the ability of a **babe** not yet **weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts** in too many **things that pertain to live and godliness** [2Pe 1:2-3](#).

Again, if you are still mainly just a spiritual **babe** in the way you are **exercised** in the **use** of The Word, then no matter how long you have been a Christian, you remain **blind** [2Pe 1:8-9](#) in too many **things that pertain unto life and godliness**. And you only think you have a clue. But you really don't. This is the **natural** state of a **carnal man**—a brain full **of the ways of death** that only '**seem right**', but really aren't, with the **blood of Jesus, God willing, 'withstanding'** against your **eternal judgment**. And the only **guarantee** of **eternal life** **and** **reward** comes **if you continue in** The Word—as God and Jesus mean it—and **if** you avoid being **conformed to this world** by becoming **transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God** [Rom 12:2](#). And again, the **blood of Jesus** was never meant to accomplish all this for you all by itself. Your **glory** and **full reward** depend on your 'full participation' and 'eternal commitment' to **continue in** God's Word God's **way**.

And in case all this is all still a little foggy, again, reread and be **patient**. Wait on God for his timing of your **understanding**. He wants to **see** that you're determined not to give up, and that you **see** that you are too, and that you **understand** that,

...Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God [Mat 4:4](#); [Luk 4:4](#),

and He wants you to **see** that if you're not on a regular **meat** diet of The Word of God, you're 'starving', with mostly only **the blood of Jesus 'withstanding'** against your **eternal judgment**.

So **continue** reading, because God's '**scripturally prescribed**', **precept** '**interconnectivity methodology**' for the **study** of **strong meat** is the framework of this **study**. And if you are not **able to bear it** [1Cr 3:2](#), add repetition as often as necessary until you can. If you're like me, that will be a lot, but at 'increasingly higher levels'. And after you do **understand**, the repetition becomes **exercise**, whereby in doing so you **continue** to correct, improve and expand your **understanding** of the Word of God, which should translate into '**increasingly** **good works** and a **better resurrection**. And what makes you think you should wait until the coming **kingdom** to get started anyway? When it comes,

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this [Isa 9:7](#).

Surely Jesus, with **zeal**, will **increase his kingdom** more and more, and **for evermore**. But it turns out that the **great** [or **greatest**] **in the kingdom of heaven** will not wait to start until then, but already **study, work, labour, build, strive, press, run, fight** and **suffer** for it now, and are already preparing to be **partakers** with God (see [1Pe 4:13](#) and [2Pe 1:2-4](#)) to **increase** His kingdom both now and once it is **come**. I am. And don't you think you'll be at least a little embarrassed by your '**immaturity**' if you wait to start until after it is **come**?

And don't let the **shame** connected with recognizing that you're a **babe in Christ** stop you from beginning to **press**. And though God has designed His Word so that there is no easy way to come to a **strong meat** level of **understanding**, He also **promises** that His Word **is sure, making wise the simple** [Psa 19:7; 119:130](#) (read **foolish** or **ignorant**, and see [Pro 8-9](#)). So any dummy who refuses to give up can do it. I'm living proof. And God assures us His '**narrow way**' leads to **understanding**, and to **better things...and things that accompany salvation**—toward more **glory** and **reward** and less **shame**, or if you prefer, **dishonour**.

And yes there is '**surface**' **understanding**, or a **milk of the word** way to **grow**, which is available in every verse of **scripture**, where all of us must start. The Apostle Peter encourages all Christians to,

As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby... [1Pe 2:2](#)

But The Apostle Paul also makes clear,

For every one that useth [just] milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe [Heb 5:13](#).

So **partaking** at this **milk** level alone keeps you at this level, or keeps you a **babe** spiritually. But the **deep, strong meat** way to **grow** in **knowledge** and **understanding** toward 'spiritual maturity', that Jesus and the Apostles call being **perfect**, requires the **continuing** cross-referencing and analysis of each **scripture** with all **scripture**. And this is not only because disconnected use of **scripture** offers a more limited perspective. It is also because God says He has designed His Word so that such limited examination unavoidable leads to misinterpretation and error. And this means that God has **hidden** an infinite number of **precepts** in His Word that can only be seen by rightly connecting **precepts** from all over the Bible, **here a little, and there a little**—that is until you get to the point where you're

connecting **precepts** to larger and larger topical groups, with increasingly complicated interconnections. And this is not an option. This is God's **way**. And He makes clear there is no other **way**, and that the consequences for using His word otherwise are eternally deadly, with only **the blood of Jesus 'withstanding'**. Isaiah, speaking for God, says,

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For [or Because] precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little... To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the LORD was [or remained] unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken [Isa 28:9-13](#).

Another pop quiz. What is God's **way** to **teach knowledge** and **make you to understand doctrine** on any given topic of **scripture**? The answer is that you first have to be **weaned** from just drawing conclusions about **all things that pertain unto life and godliness** from just one or even just a few places. This is **milk**. And if this is all you usually do, you are a **babe**, no matter how long you have been a Christian. And God makes plain here that you have to give up this **simple** approach to The Word of God. And He wants you to **know** that the only way you'll ever taste real, 'spiritually mature' **strong meat** is to begin to search out where God has scattered **all** His 'interconnecting' **precepts** all over His Word, and begin putting them together to see new, otherwise 'invisible multi-preceptual' perspectives. And you must recognize that this is a neverending, growing task and picture—where a potentially **infinite** number of new **precepts** are discovered by connecting both 'visible' and 'invisible' **precepts**—'invisible' **precepts** being those that are only seen by connecting other 'visible' ones, as well as by connecting 'invisible' ones to make 'higher-level invisible' ones too. And such 'higher-level' **precepts**, that are only seen by the added connections of more and more both 'visible' and 'invisible' **precepts**, will help you **build** or **grow** your 'level' of **understanding** on any topic. And all new **revelations**—that come from such 'construction'—must be seen as an 'eternal journey' toward 'forever-growing' **revelations** that must, necessarily and 'ever-increasingly', correct, improve and expand your **knowledge** and **understanding** of God **continually** and **for evermore**.

And surely this journey is designed by God to be neverending because He is altogether **unsearchable** [Job 5:9](#); [11:7](#); [Psa 145:3](#); [Rom 11:33](#), and is surely **past finding out** [Job 9:10](#); [11:7](#); [Isa 40:28](#); [Rom 11:33](#); [Eph 3:8](#), and has **no end** [Isa 9:7](#); [Luk 1:33](#). He is **infinite** [Psa 147:5](#). And He has designed His Word to show those who will **work** to **see** it that He is. And He will continue to show us this by 'ever increasing limits', and by our 'ever-increasing ability' to **understand**. And those who **continue** to 'climb' to these 'higher and higher vistas' eventually **see** quite clearly how they will never, ever really fully **understand** God.

This leaves us with one option. Since we will never be **infinite** like him, all we can do is to make an 'eternal commitment' to **grow** in our **understanding** of Him. This is really all we can give him. And let me repeat. The 'eternal commitment' to **grow** in our **understanding** of Him is really all we can give him. And surely He will

remain forever **worthy** of this commitment. And it's all He wants. And this commitment, according to God, is how to truly **love** Him. And this is more fully what Jesus means when He says,

If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him [Jhn 14:23](#).

And this is also why He adds,

He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me [Jhn 14:24](#).

But God also tells us through the Prophet Isaiah that there is a reason why He has divided up the components of 'meatier precepts' throughout His Word—the ones that can only be seen by connecting such widely scattered **precepts** together. Why? It is because his people...

...would not hear [Isa 28:12](#).

And the severe consequence for their **dull, carnal**, 'unloving' attention to Him resulted in the **way** the **LORD** 'constructed' His Word. His **judgment** therefore was that,

...the word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

Yes, ignoring God is dangerous. And He wants us to **know** that this is not just serious, it can be the difference between **eternal life** and **death**, with only **the blood of Jesus 'withstanding'** against total **loss** of **eternal life**.

But on the surface, this seems an impossible task. And surely the **simple**—as **babes** are—are not **able to bear** even the start of such a journey. This is one of the reasons why so many haven't yet started. Nonetheless, and somehow, the **prepared** who are **thoroughly furnished [2Ti 3:17](#)** and **approved unto God** eventually can be qualified as **perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**. Because Jesus is not teasing us when He tells us we should **be... perfect**. He is talking about a 'level of spiritual maturity' we should all be **able to attain**. And such **sojourners** get there by **understanding**—though **the blood of Jesus** is required most every **step of the way**—that showing God that their **hearts** are **for ever** committed to **give all diligence** with **vehement desire** to **be sober** and **vigilant** to **study, work, labour, build, run, strive, press, fight** and **suffer**, all to **pray, serve** and **worship** Him with **all their heart, soul, mind** and **strength**, in order to forever **grow in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ** by **patient continuance**, and in order to **receive a full reward** from God from the **moment** we **put on immortality [2Pe 1; 3:17-18; Rom 2:6-7; 2Jo 1:8; 1Cr 15:51-58](#)**.

Because how can you really **love** and **pray** to a God you don't really **know** except by a **dull** and **carnal mind**? And how can you **serve** God when don't even **know** you can't **discern both good and evil**, let alone **worship him in spirit**

and in truth [Jhn 4:23-24](#) when you are **unable to bear** ‘meaty’ **truth**, and when you are not really committed to **knowing** Him **better** every day, His **way**?

Need some encouragement? Making and keeping this commitment comes with the **promise** that you will **never fall**, and that you will receive a reward and **eternal glory**, starting with an **entrance** that **shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ** ([1Cr 3:14](#); [2Ti 2:10](#); [Rom 2:6-11](#); [2Cr 4:17](#); [2Jo 1:8](#); [2Pe](#)). In other words, if you make, and **by patient continuance** keep, this commitment, it becomes **full assurance** not just of your **salvation**, but also of your **full reward** for the **good** and **treasure** that you **lay up for yourselves in heaven**. Paul put it to the Colossians this way, saying,

...be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge [Col 2:2-3](#). See also [Heb 6:9-12](#) and [2Cr 5:9-10](#).

And yes, **be comforted**, because you can, as Jesus says,

...lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal [Mat 6:20](#)

But you should **know** that if you don’t, or don’t do it God’s way, there won’t be any there when and if you get there. You have to **understand** that all you really get to keep is the ‘pie in the sky, by and by’, because everything here is eventually all going to **burn**, both literally and spiritually.

And if you should finally recognize that you have been in a most precarious position for your entire Christian life, and that without this committed change you would have likely had to endure **the fire of judgment** only to discover that most everything you **build upon this foundation** is going to be **burned** up, leaving you with little to no **reward**, you can then now **see** that it is not only possible to have **full assurance** that you will be **saved** from **eternal damnation**, but **full assurance** of a **full reward** too, where you no longer need worry about the **shame** of an **entrance** into **heaven** that is, embarrassingly, not very **abundant**—as many, many ‘spiritually immature’ Christians will unavoidably experience. Because all you have to do to change that comparatively ‘dim’ **eternal** future is to make an ‘eternal commitment’ to become a **disciple indeed** now. And this commitment is really all you have to offer because the **mark** you’re reaching for will remain **for ever** beyond your reach. But God promises that our **suffering**—just **light affliction** really—as we **press** toward such a **mark** and **prize** can be worth an **exceeding and eternal weight of glory** [2Cr 4:17](#), compared to those who really don’t ever make and keep this commitment anyway.

And **God willing** you’re ready for a ‘crash course’, because in this **study**, when I **speak as the oracles of God** [1Pe 4:11](#), I am **instructed** and **commanded** by God to...

...speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world... But... speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden [‘preceptually interconnected’] **wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto** [not just His, but also to] **our glory** [1Cr 2:6-7](#)

And all this **mystery** should **provoke** you and **prove** if I am **able** to **teach** you to **be perfect**, and if I am **able** to **reveal** to you, as The Spirit has **revealed** me, **the deep things of God** [1Cr 2:9-10](#), and how to...

...be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God [for you] [Rom 12:2](#).

Personally I have spent decades **learning** how to **grow** in the **knowledge** and **understanding** of all this from God through His Word by His Spirit, so that now I expect to endlessly correct, improve and expand my **knowledge** and **understanding** of the **wondrous works** and **wonders without number** of our **wonderful, infinite, omnipotent, great and terrible** God. And all I do is try to keep up with his lead, and never give up, no matter what setbacks or obstacles I find in my way.

And before you will be **able** to make much progress on this 'trying road' to **great** 'spiritual maturity', there's another **mystery** from Jesus that I offer as an unavoidable challenge and provocation. Like any other verse of **scripture**, its most easily **understood** as **milk**, or in a way that is mostly disconnected from the rest of **scripture**. But this verse is exceptional because it is a key to **understanding** all **scripture**. It has **deep** or **strong meat** connections that are **hidden** far beneath the surface, farther than most other verses **provoke** you to go. Jesus says to his **disciples**,

...whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all [Mar 10:43-44](#); [Mar 9:35](#).

And part of what both The Lord and I are saying here is that there are certain challenges where only **servants** can truly **continue** on the road to being **great** [or **greatest**] **in the kingdom of heaven** [Mat 5:19](#). And He and I mean that the **instruction** of The Word of God will 'naturally' make you more 'useful' to everyone around you. But He and I also mean that if you **continue** as the Lord's **disciple indeed**, there is **suffering** on the behalf of others which is not just involved but required. On the one hand you move toward being **great in the kingdom of heaven** by becoming 'greater support' to more and more people, especially in the **body of Christ** [1Cr 12:27](#). On the other, and at the same time, you **learn** more and more how to **suffer** in order to be a **servant of all**. And your first impressions of what this should look like are surely no where near what God's plans actually require of you. And there is no way for you to see them until you become a **diligent, patient** and **faithful, strong meat**-eating, **approved** studier of The Word of Life, and until by the **use** of it you become **exercised** to...

...discern both good and evil [Heb 5:13-14](#).

And **able** to...

...prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God [Rom 12:2](#).

And **able** to...

...both save thyself, and them that hear thee [1Ti 4:16](#).

Surely the **chiefest** in **the kingdom of God** are the ones who **press toward** their **mark** and **prize** in this **way**. And surely those who **attain** such a **mark** would be among those who will be of the 'greatest service' to **the church** and to **the kingdom of God** overall, being among the 'few of the few' qualified to **suffer** as the **servant of all**.

But there is another obstacle most Christians remain unaware of, let alone willing to acknowledge, in this challenge. The point for now is that we, as 'spiritually mature' Christians, should increasingly only **speak** and **do** what The Father or Jesus **say**, because only then will They really **love** us, and make Their **abode** or home with us—as our 'true close family'.

One way Jesus makes this clear is when He identifies who His 'true close family' really is. And He makes it unmistakably clear that His family does not necessarily include his **mother** Mary or Mary's other children, otherwise known as Jesus' **brethren**. Who does Jesus say His 'true close family' is then? Jesus answers this question directly. It is recorded that,

While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother [Mat 12:46-50](#).

And this is exactly what Jesus means about who His 'true close family' is and isn't. He says,

If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. [But] He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me [Jhn 14:23-24](#).

And doesn't He mean that anyone that does not **keep** His **sayings** are not really part in His 'true close family', no matter who they are, and that He will only be as close to you as you are to Him, and that how close you are to Him is directly proportional to how much of His **words** you **keep**. Sure, that's a least part of what He means.

And Jesus repeatedly implies that if a Christian will not 'forsake' and 'leave', and even **hate** their own 'blood relatives' who reject Him, then such 'Christians' are not worthy of the Lord's company, and will end up at best **least in the kingdom of heaven**.

Jesus answered and said,

Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold

now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first [Mar 10:29](#).

And again He said,

And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first [Mat 19:29-30](#).

And again,

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple [Luk 14:24](#).

Do you get it? Jesus and The Father won't fully **manifest** themselves to anyone that doesn't really **love** Them. And the ones that really **love** Them are the ones that **keep** more and more of Their **words**. These are the ones who will **leave, forsake**, even **hate** their 'blood relatives' when it is necessary and appropriate to do so. Because, **be not deceived**, only true **disciples** are the real 'close family' of Jesus and His Father. The Apostle James puts it quite simply,

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you [James 4:8](#).

But these **precepts** are not 'naturally' in your brain. It might at first 'seem hateful' for you to put relationships with other **disciples**—as defined by The Word of God—before that of **ungodly** 'blood relatives', or even before **saved** but 'chronically immature blood relatives'. And the consequences of acting on such a **revelation** are at first very unpleasant, to say the least. But those that **understand** this, and act on it as much as it is appropriate, are truly **disciples**. And only those who practice this have **attained**, and best **obtain**, having become 'fighters' and 'runners' that are attempting to **go on unto perfection**. And only such who **strive** and **press** this **way** have a chance to be who Jesus calls **first** or **great** [or **greatest**] **in the kingdom of heaven**. Because those that limit how much they **keep** the **words** of Jesus in order to maintain relationships with their 'blood relatives', **saved** or not, show that they **love** them more than God. And remember Jesus makes it clear that He's just passing on the Father's **words** on the matter, and in fact, that's all He ever really **doeth**, even as we should **endeavour** to 'ever-increasingly' **do**.

So your job, as a **disciple**, is to focus on **study** and **work** to help other members of your 'true eternal family' **grow**, leaving behind as appropriate those who will not, whoever they are. And otherwise, where appropriate, and as Jesus says,

Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead [Mat 8:22](#).

And both Jesus and I mean, no matter who they are.

But neither I nor Jesus is saying you should try to offend people. We would agree you should always endeavor to avoid that when possible. But as Jesus could not

always avoid offending people, neither should it be possible for us. And Jesus and I don't mean you should not **obey magistrates** and other civil authorities. You should, while not neglecting to **render... unto God the things that are God's** [Mat 22:21](#); [Mar 12:17](#); [Luk 20:25](#). And the Apostle Paul and I are saying—as we always **endeavour** to agree with The Father and Jesus—that you should at least try to maintain a **good report of them that are without** [1Ti 3:7](#), that is, outside the Church—and to live according to the **precepts** of [Romans 12](#), including,

If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men
[Verse 18](#).

But again, this was not always **possible** for Jesus, nor should it be for us. But Jesus does promise that The Spirit will **help** us 'every step of the way', and especially those He and The Father **make** their **abode with**.

So if you really **love** God, your 'true close family' are the ones Jesus and the Father **make** their **abode with**, no matter who they are. And you must **understand** that Jesus warns us in advance that **from henceforth**, He is going to be the cause that,

...there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law
[Luk 12:52-53](#).

Why? Isn't it now obvious? Jesus will tear apart 'blood relatives' because of the ones that will **follow** Him, the ones who have **left** and do **forsake** and **hate... houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for His name's sake**. And surely,

...if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand [Mar 3:21](#).

But the point Jesus and I are really making here, is that such 'houses' should not stand. Indeed the 'spiritual immaturity' of the Church today can be seen by how many Christians 'improperly stand' in 'households' along with 'blood relative' who are not Christian, or who if are Christians are 'chronically immature', and will not **take up** their **cross** and really **follow** Jesus [Mat 16:24](#); [Mar 8:34](#); [Luk 9:23](#). Again, such 'houses' should not **stand**. And it is a **shame** when they do.

So making this transition out of the World, including, as appropriate, out of your **house**, and into God's **family** can be perilous, especially if beyond this **revelation** you are still mostly a **milk-drinking**, and therefore **dull of hearing**, ignorantly **carnal** Christian, and aren't, **by reason of use** of The Word of God, **exercised to discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:11-14](#). I mean don't you now **see** that you are all these things if you are not regularly **exercised** in The Word? And I mean as you start to **grow** with this 'renewed mind', expect to make some 'big messes', at least at first, because it is only eventually, **by reason of use** of The Word of God, that you can become **exercised to discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:11-14](#). Or as Jesus puts it, **be perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**. But notice that Paul implies in Verse 14 of Hebrews 5 that this should take years,

even decades, and that The Word of God's most reliable **use** is by those who have—**rightly—exercised** in its **use** most their whole life, which brings us back to the only option for dealing with this situation, making the 'eternal commitment' to become a **disciple indeed**.

And hopefully by now you **understand** who God will **teach knowledge...and... make to understand doctrine** [Isa 28:9-13](#), and who He will call **first** or **great[est]** in His **family**, and therefore closest to Him. And hopefully you now **know** the ones He and Jesus **manifest** themselves to the most, and that is, **beyond salvation**. You should. This is why Peter and Paul plead with us so much on this subject. They express their inner **great conflict** to **stir up** our 'renewed' **minds** through 'repetitious warnings' about Christians who remain **dull of hearing, carnal** and **blind**, and worse, who are **unable** to bear truly **spiritual** 'handling' and **exercised... use** of The Word of God, and **shamefully**, a lot of this is because such **babes** only occupy themselves with **dead** or 'chronically' **dull** and **carnal** 'spiritual relationships', and are too easily satisfied with the **way that seemeth right** to them in their own **carnal** or **fleshly minds**.

Wherefore the rather brethren! With **a willing, ready** and **fervent mind** and **lowliness** and **humbleness of mind**,

...give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall: For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ [2Pe 1:10-11](#).

And see also [Romans 2:1-11](#), especially Verses 7 and 10.

So, this **study** is only for **perfect** Christians, or for those who are **ready** to make a commitment to be. And you should **understand** that to **go on unto perfection** or become **approved unto God** this **way**, or His **way**, is simply to become 'spiritually mature'. And this means that **little children**—and I mean as the Apostle John means it—should not read this **study** before the 'mastering' the first **study**, [RGT](#), which provides 'softer meat' that is more 'bearable' than in this **study**, though **giving all diligence** in **patient continuance** and in a firm commitment to becoming **approved unto God** are requirements for that **study** too. So, generally speaking, you shouldn't read this **study**, because this **study** is only for those who have the **experience** of a **disciple**, and that is, of getting to **know** The Father, Jesus and The Spirit of God **better** and **better** over time through The Word of God, and preferably, have already not just read, but have 'mastered', and that is, have been sufficiently **exercised** in this study's prerequisite, [RGT](#), available free, including with audio, read by me.

But are you still interested? Do you want to go on? Do you really want to **draw nigh to God** and experience both **rewards** and **suffering**? This has been a long, repetitive 'test' to see if you will be **able to bear** what is to follow. And if you still feel even a little bit overwhelmed—and I certainly don't mean you should go all **Epaphroditus** on us (see [Phl 2:25-30](#))—you should start over, and go through this 'test' as many times as you need to for an 'acceptable' self-evaluation. Or maybe **better**, go back to [RGT](#). Download the text and/or download or stream the audio recordings of it at [Archive.org/details/TheRapturesOfTheGreatTribulation](#).

And again, since [RGT](#) is designed in agreement with God's **way** to **teach knowledge** and **doctrine** by The Spirit of God, and to take you from **milk**-drinking to **strong meat** 'eating' as gently as possible, (though it is gentle only compared to this **study** really), it is a required prerequisite. And it is designed to **provoke** you to **strive** and **press** toward discipleship. And I mean to **grow** you have to become

weaned, and insist on no longer being treated like a **babe**. The free resources that accompany this **study** are available at this site too.

And there is still another qualification really. This **study**, as well as the last, is really only for the 'close' **friends** Jesus, and for those who genuinely **desire** to be. Jesus said to His 'closest'

friends as he was preparing to go to **the cross** that,

Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you [Jhn 15:14-15](#).

The point is that the 'closest friends' of Jesus surely **know** best what He **doeth**, including **all** the who's, what's, why's, when's, where's, and how's of **all** His plans. If you've read [RGT](#) you have a **better** idea than most what the future plans of The Father and Jesus are. But the answers to these questions are naturally corrected, improved and expanded in this **study**, and many new ones are revealed along these lines too, mostly about the past but also some about the future. Indeed those that know God's plans the best, both past and future, are by that **knowledge** among His 'closest' **friends**, because only they are able to **know** and **love** Him best for who He really is. Surely His true **friends** cannot help living on the 'cutting edge' of the **understanding** of what He **doeth**. Not that interested in **prophecy**? Or **creation**? Does it 'seem right' to you that you can fully **love** Him without knowing His designs and plans? I tell you that such thinking only shows that you really don't care about Him that much, not enough to be really interested in what he **doeth**. And that this would likely be because you're too caught up with your own unavoidably more **worldly** plans, and this would be whether your plans seem **worldly** to you or not. And I just mean that the 'least' **worldly** plans must involve **knowing** and **understanding** Jesus' plans best, while the kind of thinking that too easily accepts ignorance of Jesus' plans is evidence that you are still too 'spiritually immature'. And I just mean that **little children**—naturally—are **not able to bear** the grown-up **fight** Jesus and His 'close' **friends** are involved in. But whatever your 'level' of 'spiritual maturity', there should be no question that those that **know** and **understand** Him best are his 'closest' **friends**, as they are best able to **see** the **help** He wants us to **give**, and that those that make little effort to do so, assuming they are even **able** at all, really cannot be that 'close', nor be of that much **help**, if not be a 'continual hindrance'—kind of like **little children**.

So maybe you now have a glimpse of what I mean when I say that these studies are really only for 'close' **friends**, and 'would-be close' **friends** of Jesus—those who **live to know all** the who's, what's, why's, when's, where's, and how's of His plans. And if this is not you, it is **not safe** for you to **continue**. There is enough **peril** ahead for those who really want to be among our Lord's 'close' **friends** as it is. And you don't **have to be** one of His 'close' **friends** to be **saved**. Certainly only 'a very few' of the **few** will be. And you could be easily **lost** if you proceed this **way** with any insincerity whatsoever. Be **forewarned**.

And Jesus **forewarned** his **friends**, saying in verse 13,

Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends [Jhn 15:13](#).

And though it may not seem to be the case, I did a lot of 'hand-holding' in [RGT](#). For example, I included KJV references of a lot of the quoted **scripture**. This time

I'm going to expect you to do more of your own concordance searching—finding **scriptures** that fit the **bold italic** quotes of the KJV, **rightly dividing** them from the ones that do not, and **study** beyond that too. Because it is important that you **grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ**.

And it is important not too get distracted from **pressing toward** this **mark**. And I mean we should all be **doing** everything we can **do** to be **so doing**. And this is what these studies are for, to offer a way to **grow** in **grace** and **knowledge** as fast as **spiritually** possible. And I mean I know no **better** way to **work, strive, run, fight** and **press toward** this **mark**. So the best thing you can do **is** to **finish** this **course** and **race** as fast as you can. Because it doesn't matter as much what your **gift** is, and that is, if you hang back with, or just too close to other **babes in Christ**, because then mostly all you'll have to offer is your reliance on The Spirit to do all the **work** for you.

In other **words of God**, you should avoid getting too distracted by other 'seemingly right', or even by just 'less pressing work', and instead **press** to escape being **dull** and **unskilful in the word of righteousness**, and to become long **exercised** in the **use** of **strong meat**, and thereby finally becoming **able** to **discern both good and evil**, and that is—and from God's perspective—to be **formed** of Him to be used by The Spirit of God in **ways** only the **perfect** and **thoroughly furnished unto all good works** can.

And don't you yet **know**—and that would be from your perspective—that this is the only way to **build** that can actually make you **worthy** to **abound**, and to **receive** [**abundantly**] **a** [**great**], **reward**, and yes, one where the Apostle Paul and I...

...reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

And one that can really only cause...

...light affliction, which is but for a moment, [and which] worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.

However yes,

...unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake.

And let me say it again, **sufferings** and **affliction** must come along with this **way**. But **rest** and **refreshing**, and **peace** and **comfort** do too, and more than most any other **way** you could **press**. And I **tell you the truth**, it's what our Lord will **find** his real **friends, when he cometh, so doing**. And I mean this **study** is designed by God to **strengthen** you enough to **endure unto the end**. And **verily** I also **say unto you** by God and His Spirit, while 'pressing' to be a real **friend**, that the last, this, and the next **study** can help you become His real **friend** too, **for ever**.

So don't lose focus. And I mean avoid as much as you can other **ways** that may be **good**, just not as 'pressing-toward-the-mark-of-the-prize-of-the-high-calling-of-God-in-Christ-Jesus' **good**, at least for now, and stay the **course** with this **study** until you 'master' it, (read, become **apt to teach** it), because then you will be **thoroughly furnished unto all good works**. Well, you'll at least make fewer 'messes' of the **things that pertain unto life and godliness** than you would be **able** to avoid otherwise.

And this is more fully what I meant in the last section of [RGT](#) when I said,

Just take a deep breath and count to 10. And I mean 10 years...

...especially if it's not yet 2030. And I mean after that you might be on a tighter schedule.

We are informed by God's Word that by Jesus **were all things created** (e.g., [Col 1:12-17](#)). And we all **know** that,

The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their [The Father's, The Son's, and The Spirit's] voice is not heard [through Their creation] [Psa 19:1-3](#).

You should also know that,

The heavens declare his righteousness, and all the people see his glory [Psa 97:6](#).

And **the heavens** not only **declare** God's **glory** and **righteousness**, but also that...

...God is judge himself [Psa 50:6](#).

The 4 volumes of this **study** will **declare** all this too. And it will also **declare** that the Earth, including its *crust*, **declareth** the **glory** and **righteousness** and **judgment** of God too. But before we begin this journey, there's another one we're going to have to take.

Somehow too many Christians think that The Creation of the World, or the about 7,000-year timeframe deducible from Scripture, cannot be **proved**. Poppycock! Balderdash! Hogwash! Or more specifically, this is just another successful campaign of Satan, by compartmentalization—which is easily used on the 'spiritually immature'—to deceive not only the World but also much of the Church, which is evidence of the Church's overall lack of 'spiritual maturity'. I mean we, the Church, still readily believe that the day is coming when **Heaven and earth shall pass away** rather immediately—poof! And that this will happen by God's **power** and **will**. But somehow, at the same time, we have trouble believing that God managed to create the World in 6 days, and only about 6,000 years ago. And God didn't need **six days**, by-the-way, but 'drew it out' **six days** as an example to us of what our 'work week' should look like. I mean of course He could have **created** everything in a 'poof' too, if He wanted, and just like he's apparently going to do when He's through with this Creation and makes a **new** one.

But the Apostle Paul says we should **prove all things**. So let's get to it.

SECTION 2 Rejecting The World and Accepting God, Part 1: Big Bang Cosmology

Begun Summer 2012

Why wouldn't you want to **prove** the 'scientific truth' of God's literal week of Creation to be **true**? The Apostle Paul commands,

Prove all things; hold fast that which is good [1Thes 5:21](#).

And see again [Galatians 6:4-5](#), which makes clear this is your personal responsibility. I mean, don't you yet **know** there are multitudes who will lose their eternal souls over this one issue?

But such **understanding** must eventually involve a 'spiritually mature' **mind** along with the **diligence** of someone who really wants to **know**—more and more—who God really is.

Yet **scripture** tells us you can't trust the 'science' or 'philosophy' of an *atheist*. In two of his Psalms, King David declares,

The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none [that deny God] that doeth good [Psa 14:1](#); [53:1](#).

And don't you believe the Apostle Paul, when talking about such **so-called** 'scientist' and 'experts', that they are...

...vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools...

And yes it's true the game has changed somewhat since Paul's time, as we will see. But such **corrupt, vain**, 'dark-hearted' **fools**, who are deniers of God, and their 'hell-bent' predisposition to do only **abominable works** has not changed, one of the **purposes** of this **study** being to **shew** you just how severely **darkened** and entirely **vain** their **imagination**s have become.

And surely **the truth** of this repeated verse in Psalms about the identity of a **fool** has little to do with a person's IQ, because some of the 'smartest' people in the World **deny** God. This is one way to see that everyone is 'lightyears' below God in **knowledge**, no matter how 'smart' they think they are. The most 'intelligent' among us is 'infinitely dumber' than a moron in comparison to God. But such **fools** even believe they know more than God, or even that they have become **like the most High**. I mean Satan may have been the first to think like this, but, according to King David and the Apostle Paul, not the last. And such **foolishness** is quite common. In fact, it is everyone's natural condition. In [Proverbs 22:15](#) we are informed that...

Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child...

And clearly the vast majority of **souls** do not outgrow this condition, but are ultimately overcome by it.

And just as surely, God has designed His Word to make **fools** of the worldly-wise, but also by His Creation He continually confounds **so-called** 'geniuses' too. Because the **study** of His Creation will only continually **reveal** that He is

omnipotent and **infinite**. And **wise** and **perfect** (read ‘mature’) **men of God** ultimately come to this conclusion. I appreciate how Zophar the Naamathite puts it, when he is talking to Job. He says,

Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection [or “to completion”]? It is as high as heaven; what canst thou do? deeper than hell; what canst thou know? The measure thereof is longer than the earth, and broader than the sea.
[Job 11:7-9.](#)

But now we are able to see that such **knowledge** is longer than the Universe and deeper than *space*, not to mention more complex microscopically than we will ever be able to fully understand or measure. So we have to **understand** that people who think they are just as smart as God—that they can **find out the Almighty unto perfection**, even in His Creation, have been set up by Him to take a **fall**. And for most of them, and in spite of the Holy Spirit, they won’t see this downfall coming until it’s too late. But we should also **know** that any ‘science’ or ‘philosophy’ whose end is to **deny** or simply ignore God is full of **error** at best, and corruption at least, and way too often, no more than **science falsely so called** [1Tim 6:20-21](#).

Still, we should nonetheless **believe** that we can and should **prove all things**—even **the creation of the world** [Rom 1:20](#). So on this quest—until we exchange this **creation** for an even more ‘**marvellous**’ and ‘**wondrous**’ **new heaven** and **new earth**—we cannot forget to **give diligence** [2Pe 1:10](#) and be **vigilant** [1Pe 5:8-9](#) to be...

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ [2Cr 10:5](#)

But everyone should see that the Church is having big problems with this, and on both sides of the ‘evolutionary fence’. Undeniably and dangerously often, we behave as **babes** who are unable to differentiate between **the things of the world** and **the things of God**. And I mean that so many of us seem to embrace current popular worldviews, and have no problem ‘adjusting’ our limited **understanding of scripture** in order to include these **lies**, rather than oppose them. And on the other side, we attack the **glory of God** because of our **ignorance**, and because we lack **perfectness** (read, ‘spiritual maturity’), and in the process only push the **lost** further away. And it’s not just a problem for the **lost**. It is and will be a **shame** for Christians too, if not also **the way of death** and **eternal damnation**—after being **saved**—for way too many. And surely such **lies** and **ignorance** ‘naturally’ lead to **idolatry**, the **doctrine of vanities** of **vain religion**, sufficient in too many cases to **steal** away our very **souls**.

But it’s not enough to ask Christians to choose sides when they don’t even see the **life** or **death** choices involved. This **study** is meant to make these kinds of choices much more recognizable. But this can’t be done by just simplifying. Instead our **understanding** must become much more “mature” or, as Jesus puts it, **perfect**. And though I would admit that one side of this fence is generally worse than the other, the Church needs to **grow** up and **see** that both sides can lead to **shame** and possibly **death**. So we will have to do the **work** to ‘begin’ to **understand** God’s unendingly complicated Creation at a ‘cutting edge’ level—as best as any layman can—in order to see the missteps of ‘cutting edge’ scientist. But

again, I've already done the hard **work** to get us there. Your **work** will be, **giving all diligence**, to endeavor to follow along. So to get through this the first time you just need to hang on for the ride, down to the end of your fingernails, adding as much repetition, and side work, as you need. And keep reviewing, having some form of dictionary and encyclopedia handy, until you begin to more fully **understand**. Because we all must accept that to **know** God means to **know** that all **understanding** is only the beginning of inevitably greater and greater **understanding, for ever**. And we need to **understand** that this is **work**—an eternal **work**. And now is the time to get to **work**. And to...

...work...while it is day: [because] **the night cometh, when no man can work** [John 9:4](#).

So, foundational to a **godly** perspective, we should want to **prove** that the Bible **truly** does **reveal** and **teach** a literal weeklong Creation of the Universe, and that it **promises** that only a few thousand years later it will all **pass away**. And of course it does. And the **word of God** does not stand alone in making this **promise**. God's **creation** makes this same **promise** too, though some of its newfound **wondrous** complexities are as misinterpretable—and abusable—as His Word. And I mean that it's still really the same as it was in the past, when our **great and terrible** God's **wondrous works** were used by **Satan** and his **rulers of the darkness of this world** to create the **vain religion** and **idolatry** of Biblical times. But both back then and still today, people who don't believe God **created all things** remain **without excuse**.

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature [or "created things"] more than the Creator... [Rom 1:20-25](#).

And this past 'Creation-**worshipping**' **idolatry**, which 'deceived' **the whole world** in Biblical times, will be made much clearer in **SECTION 5** through **11**. But the focus of **idolatry** today has changed. Satan has been forced to take a new tack to successfully ambush mankind.

Today, the new strategy is no longer so much to exalt Creation, but mankind. **Humanism**, and any kind of **spiritualism** that supports it, has become the new **religion** where individuals are deceived to **worship** themselves as 'evolving' or 'ascending gods'. And **humanism** has many **doctrines of devils** [1Ti 4:1](#) that support it, the **theory of evolution** being arguably the biggest, where Satan, 'the father of lies' [John 8:44](#), is leading mankind toward believing his '**lie** of all lies'. You remember that **lie**, the one he told Eve in the Garden, that...

...ye shall be as gods [Gen 3:5](#)

Like all **doctrines of devils**, they contain a little **truth** mixed with **lies**, and now they are promoted by a 'priesthood' called scientists who have again **changed the truth of God into a lie**, who now use evidence from the **wondrous** complexities of God's Creation, or when necessary, ignore or 'doctor' this evidence, or just misinterpret it, so they can continue to 'preach' their increasingly oppressive **doctrines of devils**.

Surely the typical participant in this **delusion** simply **deceiveth his own heart** [Jam 1:26](#). These are mostly the **foolish and ignorant**—the unstudied layman—who accept without investigation or understanding the claims of *evolutionary scientists*. But the growing dominance of this new self-**idolatry** is more the result of the **ungodliness** (e.g. [Rom 1:18](#)) and **worldly lusts** [Tts 2:12](#) of **evildoers** (e.g. [Isa 31:2](#); [Jer 23:14](#)), or **the wicked** (e.g. [Psa 7:11](#); [140](#); [Pro 4:19](#)), or **workers of iniquity** (e.g. [Psa 94:4](#); [125:5](#); [Jer 9:3-6](#)), who by their **secret counsel** plot **insurrection** [Psa 64:2](#), and **devise evil** [Pro 14:22](#), and **hurt** (e.g. [Psa 35:4](#); [38:12](#)), and **mischief** and **wicked devices** (e.g. [Psa 10](#); [26:10](#); [Isa 32:6-7](#)). And all this not just against their **enemies**, but also **they devise deceitful matters against them that are quiet** [or peaceful] **in the land** [Psa 35:20](#), being the kind who **speak peace to their neighbours, but mischief is in their hearts** [Psa 28:3-5](#). So naturally, they **lie**, **pervert**, and **deceive** while they **set a trap**, or **snares**, or **gins** (bait or lures—e.g. [Jer 5:26](#); [Psa 141:9-10](#); [38:12](#)). These are also the ones who **digged a pit** [Psa 7:15-16](#); [35:7](#); [57:6](#) or **spread a net** [Psa 140:5](#); [Hsa 5:1](#), and otherwise **bare** (or **bear**) **false witness**, so they can **deny** God (e.g. [Tts 1:15-16](#); [Mat 10:33](#)), and **cast down the truth to the ground** [Dan 8:12](#), and **oppress** (e.g. [Psa 17:9](#); [Zec 7:10](#)), even **force** [Eze 34:4](#) as many as they can to follow them into **the pit that they made**, because surely,

The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken [Psa 9:15](#). (See also [Psa 7:15-16](#); [35:7-8](#); [37:1,7,12-15](#); [41:7](#); [57:4-6](#); [119:85-86](#); [Pro 16:30](#); [Mic 2:1-2](#)).

Anyone with more than superficial experience with any field of science 'should' already **know** these **scriptures** apply to most 'top scientists'. And surely the deeper you go into any 'scientific discipline', the more shocking the behavior of its 'practitioners' becomes. But this is **true** of any of man's 'disciplines'. And this is the unavoidable worldview of the **perfect** or 'mature Christian'.

Still, you 'should' also **know** that it is not predominantly **the world, the flesh**, and such **corrupt** and **foolish** men that we really **wrestle** with. Primarily,

...we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places [Eph 6:12](#).

Surely Satan and his **principalities** and **powers** are conspiring everyday to keep this problem big, and to make it grow **worse and worse**. And **they** are winning. In fact, Jesus promises that **they** will win the numbers game. This is part of what He means when He says,

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it

[Mat 7:13-14](#).

And when He says,

Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able [Luke 13:24](#).

He also explains,

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity [Mat 7:21-23](#).

In the first two of these three verses, Jesus is talking about the majority of humanity, making clear that most of **mankind** will be eternally **lost**. And this must be because of our **natural** or **carnal** condition. But in the third verse He has something even more startling to say about those who call themselves 'Christians'. Apparently many, maybe even most of them, will be **lost** too. This is how I read this verse, and it's not just by of this verse alone. This **precept** is supported by the totality of **scripture** and **proved** in the prerequisite to this **study**, especially in [SECTION 4](#) and [7](#) through [11](#).

So clearly not all that **work iniquity** even realize that they do. And most that **know** they do are made to do so by **force** and **oppression**, if not by their own **deceivableness** [2Th 2:10-12](#), at least originally. And all you have to do to ignorantly **work iniquity** is remain **ignorant** of (read, 'unstudied in') The Word of God. This unfortunately includes **many** who are **saved** by **the gospel** (or **once** were—see again [Heb 6:4-6](#) and [2Pe 2:20-21](#)). Anyone, **saved** or not, who remains a **slave to sin** ([Gal 5:17](#); [6:8](#), [Rom 6:16-20](#); [8:13](#); [13:14](#)), or cannot **resist the devil** [Jam 4:7](#); [1Pe 5:8-9](#), let alone **discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:14](#), must 'naturally', however unknowingly, **work iniquity**. And even those who can **avoid the path of the wicked, and... the way of evil men** are only able to do so **increasingly**, and then only if they also **continue** to **abound...in Christ**. (See [Pro 4:14](#); [Rom 15:13](#); [16:17](#); [2Cr 1:5](#); [8:7](#); [9:6-15](#); [Phl 1:9-11](#); [1Th 3:12-13](#); [4:1](#); [2Pe 1:1-11](#); [3:18](#)).

And the point is that this is the state of this **evil, wicked** World, even in the 'sciences'. And I mean that the 'scientific world' is mostly, and increasingly, directed by men who are **deceived** by **the flesh, the world, and Satan**, and who are **gone astray** [Psa 119:67,176](#); [2Pe 2](#), and this is precisely because of their **evil, wicked** and **ungodly** perspectives, and too commonly, whether or not they call themselves 'Christian'. They are Satan's pawns that twist or even fabricate 'evidence', or just cooperate to protect or prosper themselves, or are simply **fools** blindly following along, all working to perpetuate the **profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called** [1Ti 6:20](#), so they can **deny** God, or submit to those that do. Jesus would say to them...

Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he

speakeeth of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it ([See Jhn 8:20-59](#)).

These are the terms Jesus puts it in. In this case He was speaking to Jewish 'religious authorities', but this no less applies to today's 'scientific authorities'.

And God's Word is clear. If we look deeply enough, we should expect to uncover ***evil*** everywhere we look, even in the 'sciences', just like I continue to do in my own ***heart***. I mean, as God exposes us all through Jeremiah the Prophet, there is no point denying that,

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?

[Jer 17:9](#)

So understandably, this is a big problem. And it's a problem that can be a little lonely to embrace because you should also expect to find yourself increasingly alone—even subject to ridicule or worse—the deeper you ***work to understand*** it. And I mean that the real problem is that too '***few***' Christians seem to have this ***perfect*** (or "mature") picture of the World. And if you truly are ***awake to righteousness*** [1Cr 15:34](#), you ***know*** that ***fellowship*** with Christians who really and truly,

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world [1Jo 2:15](#)...

is rare. And shamefully, it would be more appropriate to say that most Christians, 'Love not ***the word***, neither the things that are in ***the word***', with embarrassingly few exceptions. And I mean I know all Christians will say they 'love the Word', but so many of them do so knowing so little of it and spending no regular time in it. So exposing ***deceivers*** and their ***lies*** can be bittersweet, but this is nonetheless the goal of this ***study***. The ***good news*** is that a day is coming when those who ***obtain salvation*** [1Th 5:9](#); [2Ti 2:10](#) will no longer remember these ***lies***, and, even ***better news***, if you really 'wholeheartedly' ***run this race, fight this good fight, and strive and press toward this mark***, becoming one of the ***partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust***, you will experience ***an entrance*** [that] ***shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ*** [2Pe 1:11](#) above most others. All this is thoroughly ***proved*** in [The Raptures of The Great Tribulation study](#). But this ***study*** will even further ***establish*** this ***proof***, and again, by the end, much more by ***the truth*** of ***scripture*** than by uncovering ***lies***.

Still we must first uncover some ***lies***. This is the messy business of especially this and the next section. The honest, informed, unbiased observer must find the Theory of Evolution, at best, speculative and wholly unsupported in literally every field of study, and ***understand*** that it only receives popular support because of fraud, conspiracy, ignorance, and worse. And yes, Jesus and the Apostles assure us that it's a ***worldly*** conspiracy driven by ***spiritual wickedness in high places***. And the Theory of Evolution is an important topic that deserves a ***study*** of its own. But there has been enough ***fraud, corruption*** and ***lies*** about it exposed already, usually by Christians, and readily available to inquiring ***disciples***, so that I can be selective in this brief exposé, and focus more on ***study*** that will ***glorify God***, rather than ***reprove the world of sin***. Good sources of this God-glorifying ***work*** come from organizations such as the Creation Research Society (CRS), Institute for

Creation Research (ICR), Answers in Genesis (AIG), and Creation Ministries International (CMI), although a couple of these organizations are the result of a 'hostile split', including unfortunate, long-lasting, and shameful disputes. So some **shame** must accompany the perspective here too, before I move on.

In the totality of the **RGT study**, I **prove** the case that the 'modern translations' of the Bible (**NKJV**, **NLT**, **NIV**, **NASV**, etc.) are **perverted**, literally full of **error** and much worse, so that they must be handled, at best, as frequently erroneous Bible commentaries, and that the most widely available and trustworthy **pure words** of God in English are found in the *King James Version*. King David testifies,

The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever [Psa 12:6](#). (See also [Psa 119:140](#) and [Pro 30:5](#))

And God has kept his **word...pure**, even in English. Still, the Apostle James gives one of the bigger reasons for all the 'translation' **wars and fightings** evidenced by all these widely contradictory 'modern translations', saying,

From whence come wars and fightings among you [Christians]? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? [James 4:1](#)

And you are not close to being **perfect** (read "mature") in your Bible **study** if you are **not aware** of the ongoing **wars and fightings** among the 'modern translators', because you have not really begun to **study** God's **pure words** until you begin to deal with this **shame**, especially if you depend solely on a single modern translation for **the truth**. Does God contradict Himself? Of course not. But all the modern translations frequently contradict each other. They cannot be appropriately said to **agree**. And the point is that they all can't be right. Turns out the case is irrefutable; they are all flawed, perverted and full of errors. See the **RGT study**. And they are clear documentation of the **wars and fightings among us** Christians because of the **lust that war in our members**. This should become painfully evident to all **disciples** who **continue in** God's Word, who **understand** that with The Word of God, there is no 'wobble room'. So the 'spiritual immaturity'—or possibly sometimes even **wickedness**—of modern translators is undeniable by their own publications, only overlooked by those who are also immature or worse. And if you have never come across a single verse in two different modern translations that are not the same, and at the same time, irreconcilable, or you simply 'shrug it off' whenever you do, I'm talking about you. Because there are many, many such 'verses'. And it is embarrassingly common to find several, conflicting, contradictory and contrary, different, divergent and diverse, incompatible, incongruent and inconsistent translations of a single verse rendered in the various copyrighted modern translations. Again, see **RGT**. Or may I simply say again that they don't **agree** with each other. And could this be the **pure words** of God? This is not **pure**, but **perverseness** [Pro 15:4](#); [Isa 30:12](#); [59:3](#). And this adds unbearable **shame** to our perspective of the state of the Church today. More **proof** of this **shame** should be uncovered in any **perfect** (read "mature") **study** of The Word of God. And this will be, unavoidably, further clarified as we go, because I'm keeping an eye on all these **warring** modern translations as we go at [BlueLetterBible.org](#) (now [blbclassic.org](#)).

But I bring this up again now because some of the ‘Creation science’ organizations I mentioned above are guilty of these same, at least immature, **wars and fightings**. And I won’t be specific. You can look into their histories if you like. The point is that James would say the same to some of the officers of these Creation science organizations that he would say to the modern translators—but probably worse to the modern translators since in their case we’re talking about **perverting** the Word of God, not just behaving shamefully.

And Paul would point out, sometimes **sharply**—even threatening figuratively to **come...with a rod**—that such **divisions** and the corresponding **behaviour** come not from **the knowledge of God**. This would include **carnal... envying, and strife**, and those who **do wrong** and **defraud** the **brethren, and that before the unbelievers**—and again I’m including the published ‘disagreements’ of the modern translators, and the disputes of officers of some Creation science organizations as modern examples of this. (See [Tts 1:13](#); [1Cr 3:3](#); [4:21](#); [6:5-8](#); [11:18-19](#); [1Th 4:6](#)). And Paul plainly charges the **ignorant** Corinthians, saying,

**Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God:
I speak this to your shame [1Cr 15:34](#).**

Now here Paul is not really speaking to these Christians about **salvation**, because he repeatedly acknowledges that they are **saved**. (Using BlueLetterBible.org (now [blbclassic.org](#)), type ‘saved’ in the “Search the Bible” box in the right side margin, then click “Range Options” below that, and type ‘1cor’ in the pop-up box, then click the search arrow to see such verses).

But he also warns them about the danger they might **fall [1Cr 10:12](#)**, and that their **salvation** by the **gospel** is conditional and can be **lost** (e.g. [1Cr 15:1-2](#)). And, as Paul testifies about the Corinthians, certainly a mark of more **ignorant** and ‘immature Christians’ is that they **fight** with one another, in public, just as also the modern translators do with their publications, and as some of the leaders of some Christian science organization have done in public courts. And this is due largely, according to Paul and the Prophet Hosea, to their **lack of knowledge** of God. As God says through the prophet,

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children [Hsa 4:6](#).

And you should **understand** that if God will do this to **his own people**, He will surely do the same to us Christians, who are, at best, **grafted in among [his people], and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree**, which is Jesus. Read [Romans 11](#) as many times as you need to until you do **understand** that He will do no less to Christians than He has and will do to **his own people**, only the **blood of Jesus** ‘withstanding’.

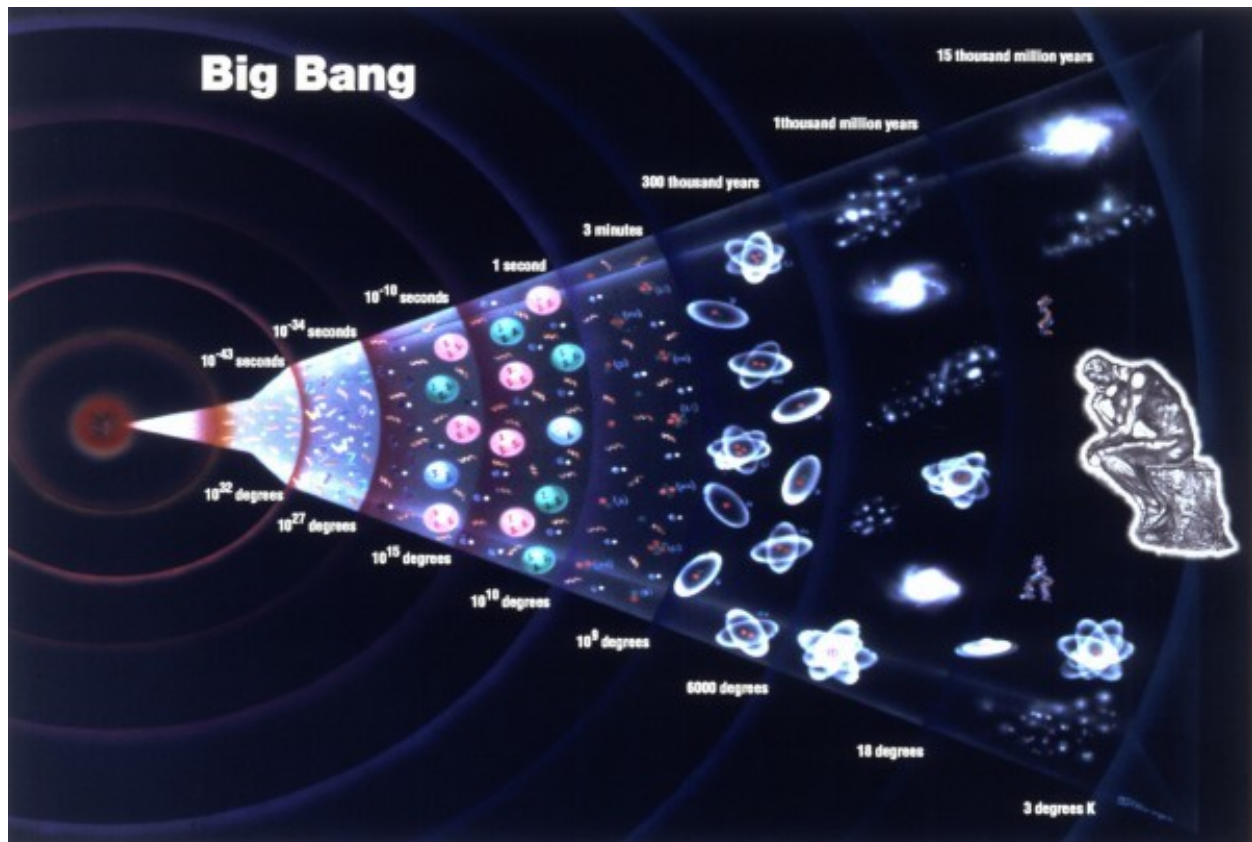
And don’t confuse someone who is able to translate ancient Hebrew and Greek, not to mention any given *atomic physicist*, with someone who has the **knowledge** God is talking about. Such **knowledge of God** can only be ‘gotten’ from His Word by someone who will **study** to show themselves **approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed**, because they **continue** in **rightly dividing the word of truth** ([2Ti 2:15](#); [John 8:31-32](#)). In other words, if any Hebrew and

Greek translator, or any scientist of any kind for that matter, participates in any way in perverting their work in order to pick a fight with their colleagues, or to **do wrong** and **defraud** them or others, they do indeed **lack...knowledge** and/or have **rejected knowledge**. This is the way God sees it anyway.

So if you're really going to get to **know God** significantly **better**, this **revelation** about 'immature vs. mature Christians' is unavoidable, though, unless you're a 'brand new' Christian, must be accompanied by a bigger share of **pain** and **shame**, even as it was for Paul to write about it. But it should give you a clue that you must be careful even with 'Christian scientific perspectives'.

Still, I recommend these ministries as a good place to spend some **study** time. Their best use is for raising issues with the Theory of Evolution, and they are also helpful in **revealing** aspects of God's Creation, although we must eventually get to their faults on this account too. But some of the evidence I will offer both against *evolution* and for *creationism*, generally speaking, originated from these ministries. I **know** because I **learned** some of my present but still growing perspectives from them. Still it is the **purpose** of the totality of this **study** to greatly correct, improve and expand the scope of all these perspectives, as much as God is willing at any point in The Natural Eternal Progression of the Knowledge of God by The Spirit of God.

Most *astronomers* or *astrophysicist*, now also commonly referred to as *cosmologist*, still think our Universe started with a mysterious "Big Bang", though there are some nowadays who argue that it might have instead involved a "Big Bounce" or "Big Rip". And I say mysterious because there is no consensus about where the Universe came from. The debate mostly focuses on what happened at and after this "Big Bang". Still the opinion that the Universe has always been here in one form or another is growing in popularity, contrary to the Bible that explains, in [Ephesians 3:9](#) for example, that **God...created all things by Jesus Christ**, and evidently "out of nothing", and only a few thousand years ago. But considering The 4th Day of Creation when God created the Sun, Moon and stars, and God's awesomely **powerful** and commanding **voice** [Psa 29:4](#), this seems to me to be the more likely cause of a Universe-shaking, "Big Bang". So besides what is taught in the



Bible, we can mostly only consider all the competing theories about what's happened since this supposed "Big Bang" (diagram, p.42), all of which

are more complicated than they used to be, and increasingly so, as we should expect.

A lot of this increasing complication is due to our ever-increasing knowledge of the *atom*. Turns out they're made up of literally hundreds more *subatomic particles* than we were able to 'break out' of them a century ago. I mean it's not just *protons*, *neutrons* and *electrons* anymore, because *protons* and *neutrons*, now each classified as *hadrons*, are made from 6 "flavors" of *quarks*, each different in "charge" and "spin". And they are held together—and repelled when too close—by the *strong nuclear force* that is "carried" by *gauge* (or "force-carrying") *bosons* called *gluons*. And the "residual effect" of this *strong nuclear force*—it's not really just 'one force' anymore—binds *hadrons* together—including binding together *protons* and *neutrons*—but it also allows positively-charged *protons* within this tiny, but strongest of all, "force field" to hold on to the negatively-charged *electrons* just outside of it. And it turns out that *electrons* are just 1 of the 6 "flavors" of *leptons*, each also different in "charge" and "spin", 3 of which are branded as different kinds of *neutrinos*, and all of them serving an amazing variety of functions, including the ones that can be "radiated" from *atoms* as *beta particles*.

And there are two "families" of *hadrons*: *baryons* and *mesons*. *Protons* and *neutrons* are types of *baryons*. Other *baryons* are thought to help "mediate" the *strong force interactions*. And *baryons* can also be "radiated" from atoms as *alpha particles*. They are also called *fermions* because they are constructed of 3 quarks from the 6 "flavors"—each with their characteristic "charge" and "spin" and each having measurable *mass*. And there are very many other both "confirmed" (read, measured) and "theoretical" (read, not yet measured) types. The same goes for *mesons*, except, because of their characteristic "charges" and "spins", they are classified as *bosons*, being constructed of just one *quark* and one *antiquark*. And there are a variety of other *bosons*, which are instead "bundles" or *quantums of energy*—also called *virtual particles*, as they have no measurable mass unless moving—and which serve a great variety of functions too, including *gauge bosons* which are thought to "carry" the 'four' *fundamental forces*, with all of this working together to hold everything together. Who'd've thought?

By-the-way, this *boson-carried residual strong force* that holds together *protons* and *neutrons* and other *hadrons*, works best at 1 *femtometer*—the standard but very small distance between *protons* and *neutrons*—and it stops working altogether at between 2 and 3 *femtometers*, but it actually works to repel *protons* and neutrons away from each other inside of .7 *femtometers*. So it both attracts and repels *nucleons* (*protons* and *neutrons*), and all inside this incredibly narrow range. So again, this limited range allows this *force* not to interfere with the *electromagnetic attraction* between the *protons* and *electrons*, nor with any of the other 3 *fundamental forces* for that matter, including the *weak nuclear force*, thought to be "carried" by *W and Z bosons* (also "force carrying" *gauge bosons*), and "mediated" by certain of the great variety of *mesons* (which are *hadrons*, remember?), which also serve many other functions in helping *atoms* do all their business of holding together and remaining 'relatively' stable.

And remember the 'primary job' of this *strong nuclear force* is to hold the *quarks* together that make up *protons* and *neutrons* and other *hadrons*. And that the *residual strong nuclear force* holds *hadrons* together. And remember this *strong force* is said to be "carried" by the "force-carrying" *gauge bosons*, *gluons*, and that there are other "bundles" or *quantums of energy* that "carry" the other 3 *fundamental forces*, including *W and Z bosons* that are thought to "carry" the *weak*

nuclear force, and *photons* that carry the *electromagnetic force*, and the still almost completely “theoretical”, (not yet measured), *gravitons* that “carry” the *gravitational force*. And again, there are many other kinds of *bosons* that “mediate” the great complexity of processes helping to hold *atoms* together. In fact there are presently over 200 both “confirmed” and still “theoretical” *subatomic particles* now accounted for. And the number seems to be increasing daily. So zoom in, and you’ll begin to see the unending complexity of the **handywork** of the Creator, just like you can in **the heavens**.

Gamma radiation, by-the-way, is made up of *photons*, which are also the *gauge bosons* (“force-carriers”) for the *electromagnetic force*. *Beta radiation* is *electrons* or *positrons* (positively-charged *electrons*) or one of the *neutrinos*, all otherwise classified as *leptons*. But *alpha radiation* is the ‘big gun’ because it’s made of *baryon hadrons*—each a construction of 3 *quarks*, (while *meson hadrons* consist of “one quark and one antiquark”, and *exotic baryons* now include a union of 4 *quarks* called *tetraquarks*, or 4 *quarks* and an *antiquark* called *pentaquarks*), altogether bound by the *strong nuclear* and *residual strong nuclear forces* by *gluons*—the strongest “forces” (including the one that *repels*) known to man.

And *alpha particles*, (to correct my earlier misunderstanding, or acknowledge a change of definition), are 2 *protons* and 2 *neutrons* (or 4 *hadrons*), and “identical to helium nuclei”, and that is, without the ‘normal’ accompanying 2 *electrons*, and therefore are also identified as *ionized helium*, where each of its 4 *hadrons*, whether *proton* or *neutron*, is a couple thousand times more massive than an *electron*, let alone a *photon* which has “zero rest mass”. So as *radiation* goes, *alpha particles* ‘pack a punch’. And they naturally like to steal *electrons* from the *matter* they pass through. And it takes a lot of *energy* to ‘break them apart’, so they’re usually the ones doing all the breaking. And we’ll get back to these ‘big boys’ in a bit, and later along the way too.

But the *force* under the most debate nowadays is *gravity*, including the still “theoretical”—not yet confirmed by measurement—*gauge boson* called the *graviton*, that together with its ‘mediator’, the also still theoretical, *Higgs boson*—which is thought to produce the *universal gravitational field*—work together to allow all other particles with *mass* to react to it. However, some *particles*, like *bosons* including *gluons*, *photons*, *gravitons* and *Higgs bosons* are considered to be ‘massless’ *quantums* or “bundles” of *energy* (or *virtual particles*) that are therefore not affected—or much less affected—by the *gravitational* or *Higgs field*, allowing the *Higgs boson* (and/or other *theoretical particles* along these lines), for the most part, to ‘attach’ the *effects of gravity* to *particles* with *mass*.

Again, we account for 4 *forces* in Creation, all supposedly “carried” by ‘massless’ *gauge bosons*, that are also thought to be “mediated” by various types of *hadrons* and other *bosons*. Remember that *gluons* are the *gauge bosons* that “carry” the *strong nuclear force*, but certain *baryons* (*hadrons*) may help “mediate” this force. *W* and *Z bosons* are believed to “carry” the *weak nuclear force*, and *mesons* (also *hadrons*) are indicated to help “mediate” this *force*. And *photons* are the *gauge bosons* that carry the *electromagnetic force*, but they are also believed to “mediate” other functions of the *atom*. And it is now supposed that *bosons* such as *gravitons* and the *Higgs boson* “carry” and “mediate” the *gravitational force*.

Again, some of these particles and/or their functions are to some degree still theoretical, while others are much better confirmed by measurement. But naturally and surely, as God intended, more confirmed pieces to the puzzle are ever-forthcoming and will continue to correct, improve and expand our understanding of this **so-called standard model of particle physics**, but more importantly, that God is, and shows Himself to be, forever **past finding out**.

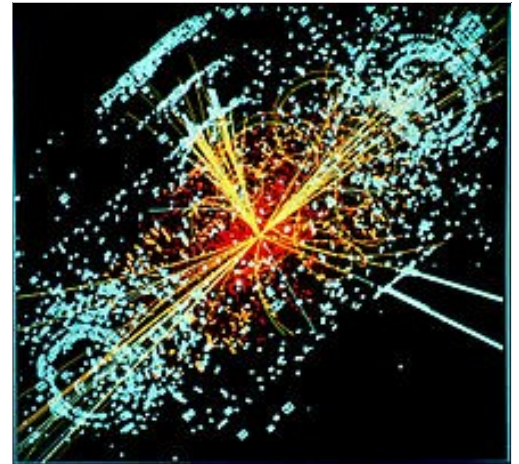
And again, the only known *fundamental force* still almost completely unaccounted for in the *standard model of particle physics* is *gravity*. And it is assumed, as would fit well into the present, ever-expanding *model*, that the *gravitational force* must also be “carried” by a ‘massless’ *quantum of energy* too. Again, *bosons* are often called *virtual particles* for this reason. Lacking “rest mass”, this predicted “force carrying” *gauge boson* for the *gravitational force* has been named, the *graviton*, and should be able to transmit its force over extreme distances. And the *gravity field*, more recently called the *Higgs field*, is believed to “fill all of space”.

The problem with these *virtual particles* is that a ‘massless’ *quantum* is difficult to measure. But near Geneva, Switzerland, The European Organization for Nuclear Research (CERN) is nonetheless presently working toward this goal with their Large Hadron Collider or LHC. This recently constructed, now operating, biggest ever, nearly 17 mile-long, magnet-driven, “particle accelerator”, with 7 times more power than available in the past, and over a football field deep underground, is now actively using all this never before available distance, power and shielding to smash together *hadrons* in head-on collisions in order to ‘break out’ a *Higgs boson*, or rule out its existence, one or the other. And they expect the “collision pattern” should be identifiable and repeatable.

And they suspect that the reason why previous efforts to confirm the *Higgs boson* have failed is that until the LHC came online they didn’t yet have enough *energy* involved to break one out in a measurable form. But now, with the power available that is believed to be comparable to the early moments of the *Big Bang* (all *particles* flying near the *speed of light*), they should be able to remove that doubt, and they are now sure that by the end of 2012 they will be able to confirm whether or not the *Higgs boson* really exists, or whether they will have to consider other, likely more complex, models, and likely involving even more “theorized” *subatomic particles*.

The theory presently under experimentation presumes that the *mass* and *energy* of two *hadrons*—in this case, two *protons*—brought to an abrupt halt in a head-on collision, could actually convert a ‘detached’ *Higgs boson* from *energy* to *mass*, when broken out by this conflict. However, it is believed that this *subatomic particle* “decays” so suddenly that its identifying *collision pattern*, which again they hope to “confirm” by repetition, only reveals its “decaying state”, meaning only some of it can be converted to measurable *mass*. Still, what does get converted should leave a mark, or a unique, distinguishable, repeatable pattern. And this means these physicists are depending on some of the ever-trustworthy laws of God’s *creation*—in this case the *Laws of the Conservation of Mass* and *Energy*—that neither *mass* nor *energy* can be created nor destroyed, but only converted to different forms. (See *collision pattern image*, p.44.)

Of course they expect to “confirm” many more *subatomic particles* in this process, and in future experiments, and also “confirm” their ever-increasingly complex interdynamics. I mean remember there are already literally hundreds of *subatomic particles* in consideration, some already “confirmed”, (most easily those with “rest mass”), and many others still theorized to exist, (the more elusive being merely *quantums of energy* without “rest mass”), waiting for experiments to



“confirm” them, the LHC being presently able and working to ‘crash test’ another bunch of them.

So go figure. The ancient Greeks thought there was just 1 ‘atomic particle’. In the last century we’ve gone from 3 to hundreds. But a misunderstanding of most *evolutionary scientists*, that don’t **know** or ignore God, including some Christians who don’t **know** Him as well as they should, is that they one day expect to arrive at a completely “confirmed” theory, or what Einstein coined, a “theory of everything”. But do you really think we’ll ever arrive at such a theory? I mean do you think we will ever know even the depths of the complexity of the *atom*? If you do, you don’t **know** God as well as you should, let alone His plan for us. And indeed this is a milestone of ‘spiritual maturity’. Because ‘immature Christians’ who think they **love the lord**, and also think God is **infinite**, still have heads full of ideas that assume that they have both Him and his Creation all figured out. But He wants us to **know** that **knowing** Him is an ‘eternal journey’, just like getting to **know** His Creation. And such an endless supply of incomplete perspectives can only be identified and ultimately swept away, or built upon, making room for endlessly greater ones, by actively and continuously pursuing **the knowledge of God** in His Word, but also through His Creation.

Still, some hope the *Higgs boson* and thereby the *standard model of particle physics* will be confirmed by experiments at LHC by the end of 2012. Then again, they thought they had confirmed the “standard model of the *atom* last century when all we knew about were *protons*, *neutrons* and *electrons*. Now we know *protons* and *neutrons* are *composite particles*—made up of *quarks*. But is it possible that *quarks* are made of yet other unidentified subparticles too? And we still think *electrons*—and other *leptons*—are *elementary particles*, made of just one particle. Will we find one day it is a *composite particle* too? And could the *residual strong force* that holds *hadrons* together really just be the “residual of the residual”, because the ‘real’ *strong force* is the one that holds the *subparticles* of *quarks* together, and the real “residual strong force” is the one that keeps quarks in their place? And do the other *forces* really have “residual forces” too, and maybe even “residual of residual forces”?

I’m not sure about any of that. But there is something I am sure of. And that is that I **know** God. And although I can see from my **study** why scientist say that finding the *Higgs boson* is the simplest solution for a ‘complete model’ of *particle physics* given the current data, it’s more likely to me, **knowing** God, and even if they do find the *Higgs boson*, that we’ve been down this neverending road before, and that we’ll never find the end of the complexity of God’s **handywork** in His Creation, even just within the *atom*. This is God’s Character and Integrity. True to who He is, He has **created** all things to make even finding the very many *elementary* and *composite particles*, and even the end of the complexity of *forces* and *laws* He has **created**, forever passed finding out. I mean we used to think that the *strong nuclear force* just held together the *protons* and *neutrons*. But now it is believed that this is just the *residual strong force*, which has a limited range that does not interfere with other *fundamental forces*, and which can even repel the very particles it usually attracts if the range is too tight. And the now presumed ‘primary’ *strong force* actually holds together *composite particles* called *hadrons*, presently classified as either *baryons* (including *protons* and *neutrons*) or *mesons*, these being the two “families” of constructions of *quarks*, that are already identified in a great variety of types, with more and more of them discovered all the time. The same goes for the presumed *elementary particles*, major classifications of these being *leptons* (including the electron) and *bosons* (including *gluons*, *photons*, and possibly *gravitons*). And from what I’ve read they still have a lot to learn about the

weak nuclear force, including how it's "carried" by *W and Z bosons* and "mediated" by *mesons and* those multitasking *photons*.

Meet God. Searching out his Creation is—by definition of who He is—a neverending quest. And that's who He intends us to ***understand*** He is. But He nonetheless wants us to search Him out, because there are growing levels of ***understanding*** to be had along the way, and ***for evermore!*** And He has designed both His Creation and His Word to encourage this ***for evermore!*** And those who ***do*** should expect to ***reveal*** incredible ***marvels, wondrous works and wondrous things*** unendingly. So yes, He wants us to be able to travel on the road to ***understanding*** His Creation as best we can at any point, but along the way also realize that we can never fully arrive at our intended destination—full ***understanding*** of God. This is one of the ***ways*** He is showing us that,

Great is our Lord, and of great power [the ***word*** is ***omnipotent*** [Rev 19:6](#)]: ***his understanding is infinite*** [Psa 147:5](#).

And if this is who He says He is, shouldn't He be able to show us that this is who He is? About Him Isaiah boasts,

Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no [end to the] ***searching of his understanding*** [Isa 40:28](#).

In other words, God has designed His Creation to reflect who He is—that He a God we will never, ever be able to completely search out, but that by doing so we will forever ***grow in knowledge***, and thereby ever increasingly ***get wisdom and understanding*** (See [Proverbs](#)).

And in [Isaiah 40](#) God makes clear, ***by the greatness of his might***, being unlimitedly ***strong in power***, that compared to His ***glory, judgment, knowledge and understanding*** evidenced by His Creation, and by His ***infinite*** abilities, and by His unimaginably awesome deeds, we are as ***nothing*** and ***vanity***. But in this same ***prophecy***, in [Isaiah 55](#) for example, God is almost pleading with us to get to ***know*** Him ***better***. And at some point you should begin to see this as your ***eternal*** duty—to ***continue*** in a committed relationship with Him and His Son, to get to ***know*** Them ***better*** and ***better*** each day and ***for evermore*** through The Word of God, because there will be ***no end*** to this, ***ever*** ([Isa 9:7](#)), for those who really ***love*** Them. And do you really want to ***know*** how God will ***manifest*** himself to you but not to the ***world?*** Read [John 14:22-24](#).

The Apostle Peter repeatedly 'reminds us' of the 'life or death' importance of growing in ***the knowledge of God*** throughout His second letter to the Church, opening with,

Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord [2Pe 1:2](#).

And concluding with,

But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ

[2Pe 3:18](#). (Using [BlueLetterBible.org](#) (now [blbclassic.org](#)), type 'knowledge' in the "Search the Bible" box in the right side margin, then click on "Range Options" below

that, and type '2pet' into the pop-up box, then click the search arrow to see verses that show the extent of Peter's passion about the importance of growing in **the knowledge of God** through His Word). The point is that growing in **the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord**, including His Creation, is neverending, requiring an unending need to **grow in grace** too, this requirement constraining you to give both yourself and others **grace**, as we **for ever** correct, improve and expand our perspective of God, while only **ever** further confirming His Word. Because this is not only who He is, it is the perspective of God that is required to begin to **understand** the **mysteries** He has **hidden** in His Word for us, **mysteries** that only **disciples indeed** can really **understand**. And I'm talking about the **strong meat** that can only be **understood** by those who are **able to bear hard work** and **study** while staying **patient** and **diligent** until they become **approved unto God** as **perfect** or "mature" (e.g. [2Ti 2:15](#); [Eph 3:8-9](#); [1Cr 2:5-7; 4:1](#)), and then therefore **able to speak... as the oracles of God** [1Pe 4:11](#).

So it is not just the **high look** and **proud heart** of *evolutionists* that is a problem. Immature or **carnally minded** Christians also act and live as if they **know** all they need to about God too, not **knowing** that they are not really getting to **know** Him **better** over time like they think they are, or not at a mature pace. And when it comes to the question of whether they **love** God and Jesus, they **deceive** themselves by thinking that they **do**. Sure they're glad for the 'fire insurance', and they think they'll get **rewarded** for that alone. They also like that Jesus promises to help them in every way they can think of, though they often think they should **do** nothing, confusing **salvation** by **grace** (e.g. [Eph 2:8](#); [Rom 11:6](#)) with **reward** by **works** (e.g. [Mat 16:27](#)). But is this actually what God and Jesus would say it means to really **love** Them? And if you say you don't really want to **know** the answers to this question, you're a **liar**—or worse than a **liar**. Oh I'm sure you think you...

...love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength [Mar 12:30](#); [Luk 10:27](#).

But don't you yet **know** that,

...to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity [or an enemy] against God: for it is not subject to the law of God [or The Spirit of God], neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God [Rom 8:6-8](#).

And don't you **know** that your 'naturally' **carnally minded** head remains full of **the ways of death** that to you **seemeth right** ([Pro 14:12](#) and [16:25](#)) unless you **continue** by The Spirit of God to **study** The Word of God? And the **carnally minded** think they **love** God and that God will **manifest** Himself to them. But when Jesus is asked,

...how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?

Jesus answered and said,

If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode [or home] with him [Jhn 14:22-23](#).

And in case there is any doubt about who Jesus and The Father **will...make** Their **abode** or home **with**, or what it really means to **love** Them, Jesus adds,

He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me [Jhn 14:24](#).

So here's another one of those times where Jesus acknowledges the authority of The Father, implying again that it's out of His hands. Specifically, only to those that **keep** Their **words** will They really **manifest** Themselves, because this is the **way** The Father defines and identifies true **love**. And this makes **perfect** sense because how can you really **love** God if you don't devout yourself to **know** everything you can about Him; and how can you **pray** to God when you ignore or avoid most of the **words** that proceed out of His mouth, and how can you **serve** anyone **well** that you're not really trying to get to **know, daily, better and better**? And how does Jesus show His **love** for the Father? Remember Jesus declares that everything He says and does is 'commanded' by The Father. Jesus **said**,

When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things [John 8:28](#).

And **Jesus cried and said**,

He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak [John 12:44-50](#). (See also [John 5:19,30](#); [6:39](#).)

The point is that we, as 'mature Christians', to show our true **love** of both The Father and Jesus, should only speak and do what Jesus and the Father have said through The Word, because only then do we really show our **love** for Them, and only then will They really **love** us beyond Jesus' sacrifice on the cross, and make Their **abode** or home with us as our true 'close family', because this is when we really start acting like Jesus' future **wife**.

But Jesus makes it even clearer when He identifies who His true 'close family' really is. And He makes it clear that His family doesn't necessarily include even his **mother** Mary or her other children. Who does He say his true 'close family' is then? Jesus answers this question directly. It is recorded that,

While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother [Mat 12:46-50](#).

And Jesus repeatedly confirms that if a Christian will not ‘forsake’ and ‘leave’, even **hate** their ‘blood relatives’ who reject Him, then that Christian is not worthy of the Lord’s company, and will end up at best **least in the kingdom of heaven**. **Jesus answered and said,**

Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first [Mark 10:29](#).

And again He **said,**

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple [Luke 14:24](#).

And again,

And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first [Mat 19:29-30](#).

So Jesus and The Father won’t really **manifest** themselves to those that don’t really **love** Them, or only to the extent that they do. And the ones that really **love** Them are the ones that **keep** Their **words** most devotedly. And such **disciples** will leave, forsake, even hate their ‘blood relatives’, their possessions, even their own lives, if necessary, to show their true love of Jesus. Because, **be not deceived**, only true **disciples** are the real ‘close family’ of Jesus and The Father. The Apostle James puts it quite simply,

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you [Jam 4:8](#).

But these **precepts** are not ‘naturally’ in your brain. Your relationships with other **disciples**—defined by the Word of God—should define your real ‘close family’ regardless of who they are otherwise. Those that **understand** this are truly **disciples**. And only those who practice this can be truly **spiritual**—read, **be**

perfect or “mature”. And only these have a chance to become who Jesus calls **first** or **great in the kingdom of heaven**. Because those satisfied by **the blood of Jesus** alone, or with that and only tolerably more, can be only tolerably more than **last** or **least in the kingdom of heaven**. See [Matthew 5:19](#). The ‘spiritually mature’ **know** that they have to **labour** and **work** and **study** to get closer to Jesus and The Father. And Jesus promises that the Spirit will help us **every thought** of the way. So if you really **love** God, wouldn’t you want to be a **disciple** who will **continue in** God’s Word to eventually, **by reason of use** of God’s Word God’s way, ultimately become **exercised to discern both good and evil** [Heb 5:11-14](#).

But Paul implies this should take years, even decades. So there is another amazing **promise** we can rely on from the very start. It’s a **promise** explained in detail by the Apostle Peter in 2 Peter 1 that assures us that if we will simply make the commitment to become devoted **disciples**, then we can rest in the **full assurance**—from that moment on—that God’s ‘got our backs’. And our ‘spiritual security’ is unbreachable—as long as we **continue to keep** our commitment. Of course, this is no ‘light commitment’. It is a commitment of our entire **heart, soul, mind** and **strength**—as it should be. And I mean it is not really our growth and works that keep us safe in God. It is much more just the commitment to **patiently, faithfully** and **diligently** endeavor to **study, use** and to **continue to grow** in God’s Word, and in **grace**, that keeps us spiritually safe. And I mean you should only feel safe if you have an ever vigilant diligence to correct, improve and expand your **knowledge of him** through His Word, and are doing it His prescribed **way**. Because it’s not that our growth in the **knowledge of God**, or **service**, or **prayer**, or **worship** of Him doesn’t help—it does—and increasingly so. But really it’s God’s **faithfulness** and **love** in response to our true **love** of Him that really protects all that we **attain** and **gain** and **receive** from Him—and for as long as our ‘love-commitment’ lasts.

And hopefully by now you **understand** who God will **teach knowledge... and... make to understand doctrine** [Isa 28:9-13](#), and who He will call **first** or **great** in His family, these being the ones who He and Jesus will really **manifest** themselves to beyond salvation. You should. This is why Peter and Paul plead with us so much on this subject. They express their inner **great conflict** to **stir up** our **minds** through ‘repetitious’ **warnings** about Christians who remain **dull of hearing, carnal**, and **blind**, and worse, who are **unable to bear** truly **spiritual** ‘handling’ and **use** of The Word of God including the **strong meat** connections for **understanding** God’s **knowledge, doctrine** and **wisdom** put together from many **precepts** that are **hidden** because their component parts are scattered throughout The Word of God, and further constructed from ‘invisible’ connections of connections of connections, etc. But the immature exhibit their shallow love of God by never even ‘tasting’ such **meat**, nor really experiencing God’s ‘abiding love’ at any **deep** level, because they occupy themselves with **dead** or ‘chronically immature relationships’, and are mostly satisfied with the **way that seemeth right** in their own mostly ‘untransformed’, **natural, carnal, blind**, and even still somewhat **corrupt minds**, and likely not even realizing that they are not doing much of anything about it.

But no one has an excuse, because all, according to the Apostle Paul, should in **time** become **strong meat** level **teachers**. So to remain **blind** and **barren** and **unfruitful** in the Word of God is to remain what both Paul and Peter call **babes**. But they also encourage us to instead **give all diligence** to become **strong meat** eaters, saying, **in understanding be men**, and to **escape** being **entangled in the pollutions of the world** that keep us from becoming **spiritual**, and from knowing **all things** that are **given unto us** that **pertain unto life and godliness**,

through the knowledge of God, **yea, the deep things of God**, as we **take heed** and **study** the Word of God. And the Apostles also mean to **warn** us that this is a kind of **work** that those who remain **babes**, who at best **desire** only **milk**, remain **unable to bear**. These are the Christians that, beyond **salvation, have not the knowledge of God**, which Paul concludes is a **shame**, or worse. Paul warns,

Of whom [Jesus] we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing. For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. Therefore leaving the [first] principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection [and that is, 'spiritual maturity']; not laying again [and again and again] the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit [Heb 5:11-6:3](#).

And putting it into a nutshell, Paul expresses his exasperation with Christians that have remained too long **carnal, ignorant**, and 'spiritually immature' **babes**, admonishing them to,

**Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God:
I speak this to your shame [1Cr 15:34](#).**

The Apostle James, also speaking to Christians, puts it another way, exhorting,

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up [Jam 4:8-10](#).

Offended? Not applicable to you? Please stop here, and don't read any further, because it will only get worse for you to go on—until after The Rapture anyway—God willing you make it to The Millennium 'above ground'.

But if by the Spirit of God I have been able to at least **provoke you**, if not **encourage** you, to **continue**—because you're still reading—you must come to **understand**, no, **experience**, that God will always test us on the **knowledge** He **promises** He will **teach** us, one way or another, at least those of us who are really paying attention. This is the **godly** intention of this **study**.

But getting back to the focus of this section, let's take a glimpse at the unendingly vast and infinitely complex **handywork** of **the Creator** of Heaven and Earth. The current debate on the 'hows and whys' still drives efforts to determine whether the amount of **mass** and **energy** in the Universe as a whole is sufficient to 'continue' a repeating cycle that is not unlike the instructions on a bottle of shampoo: expand, contract, repeat. More descriptively, the "expanding" phase would follow a "Big Bang"—a

'pinpoint' explosion of all *matter*—which, once this expansion of *matter* slows to a stop by its own gravitational attraction to itself, a “contracting” phase begins called a “Big Crunch”, leading naturally to another “Big Bang”, etc. But the presently more popular opinion is that there is too much *energy* and not enough *mass* to stop our presently “expanding universe”, ever. This is supposed to ultimately lead instead to a permanent “Big Freeze”—where all the *matter* of the Universe becomes so far dispersed that it becomes too cold for anything to possibly live—the eventually established *United Federation of Planets* and the ingenuity of intelligent life forms from across the Universe surely withstanding 😊. Seriously, and though we'll have to deal with such 'alien concepts', neither of these scenarios really answer the 'how or why' that *mass* or *energy* exist in the first place. And this becomes a much more profound observation when we consider how amazingly precise all the constructions, operations and interactions of *matter* and *energy* in our 'particular' Universe has to be in order for it to function at all, as we will consider further a little later on in this 'star log'.

Out the gate (no pun necessarily intended), this 'mother of all gaseous expulsions'—“The Big Bang Theory”—overlooked the work of men such as J. W. Gibbs, L. Boltzmann, and J. C. Maxwell that proved, really over half a century prior, that it's not reasonable to believe that you can squeeze *gas* into *solids* with just the *gravity* between *gas molecules* alone. And this—'at the time'—error by compartmentalization, still commonly made, and where not intentionally misapplied by all **false teachers**, still works to make **fools** of the **ignorant** who consider the 'theory' to be reasonably explained by the *force of gravity* alone. And this original glaring oversight is known as *gas pressure*. It is a form of the *electromagnetic force*, and therefore 'a force to be reckoned with' throughout the known Universe.

If you've ever tried to push down on a 'bicycle pump' when the tire—or ball—is already full of air, you know about *gas pressure*. This was the already long-known *force* that was not considered in the original Big Bang Theory, and later, when considered, was questionably dealt with, and really still is when it comes to *galaxy*

formation after the *Big Bang*. And the Big Bang Theory was also more recently 'cluster-bombed' by measurements of the *kinetic energy of galaxies*—the *energy* they have by how fast they're moving—as well as by the latest observations of the form of the Universe that **God created**.

Look and see. A centralized *Big Bang explosion* is unaccounted for by the distribution of *matter* in the Universe. The **Very Large Array** or **VLA** (photo, p.51) is a formation of *radio telescopes* that came fully online in 1980. A decade-long upgrade, mostly replacing the 70's electronics with state of the art



electronics, was completed in 2011, greatly improving technical capabilities, and “Karl G. Jansky” was added to the array's name early in 2012 to honor this pioneer of radio astronomy. But the bottom line has not changed really. By the late 80's it had become unavoidably clear. There is no indication whatsoever of *matter* distribution caused by a 'centralized explosion'. Actually, the Universe we can see

has been discovered to be mostly empty *space* with all the visible *mass* almost exclusively concentrated in “clusters” of *galaxies*, these “clusters” being incredibly ‘far-flung’ from each other, and not traveling away from any discernible ‘center point’, including the strikingly irregular distribution of *mass* throughout *space*. Many *evolutionists* have admitted the need to ‘rethink’ or even abandon the Big Bang Theory for this reason alone. And apparently God wanted to make plain by His Creation, not just by His Word, that the Universe wasn’t simply the result of an ‘explosion’, however ‘explosive’ His original ‘voiced commands’ may have been. Still and apparently, the *VLA* can see *black holes*, and even ‘developing’ *protoplanetary disks*, a supposed ‘early stage’ of “developing” *young stars* and their *solar systems*, predicted by *evolutionists* in even the newest, now ‘Universe-wide’ versions of the *nebular hypothesis*—the original ‘theory’ of how *solar systems* are formed.

But the story stands, that since the Universe is apparently expanding, calculations show that if you consider the speed of expansion along with the distance the farthest stars ‘appear to be’ away from us right now, and adjust for that—because we are supposedly seeing them where they were a long time ago, right?—then the Universe must be nearly 14 billion years old, unless, of course, **God created** the *photons* streaming between us and the *stars* when He **created** them 6,000 years ago SO WE COULD SEE THEM ! But this ‘evolutionary age’ of the Universe is subject to change when ‘next generation’ telescopes begin reporting their ‘greater scope’—including planned future improvements to the *VLA*, all of which we’ll focus on in a bit. But do you really think we’re going to find an **end** to what God has **created**? I mean can you even imagine that an ant in the center of a table the size of Texas could find the edge? But we’re really so much smaller to God than that ant. An ant on any table is at least something. But God says that,

All nations before him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity [Isa 40:17](#).

Remember? We’re finite; He’s **infinite**. So isn’t God’s telling us that we shouldn’t ever expect to see ‘the edge of our table’?

Now of course you know that this nearly 14 billion years supposedly started with all the *matter* in the Universe somehow contracted together into a space maybe smaller than the head of a pin, though *matter* is now thought to be forever “expanding”, never to “contract” all together again, which only adds more mystery about how it all started. Still somehow, this unimaginably ‘dense speck’, becoming “unstable”, “exploded”. And we are often encouraged to visualize, (read, fantasize), how *galaxies* are supposedly showing how *matter* typically ‘spins away’ from the center of an *explosion*, though the *law of angular momentum* would require all matter to be spinning in the same direction—a ‘universal dynamic’ that is also unsupported by the *VLA* data—except, ignoring that many *galaxies* are spinning in the ‘wrong’ direction, most of them are spinning at incredible speeds as they ‘rocket through space’. Of course instead, God may have just wanted to show us his vastness, that he could fill a sky with **lights**, some that are millions of *light years* across or more, that are spinning and flying dozens of miles a second, but look like they’ve hardly moved in thousands of years. And they still say that this ‘spinning action’, with the help of mostly *gravity*—and now other ‘not-yet-fully-accounted-for’ *forces*—eventually lead to the *formation of galaxies* and *solar systems*. And this is still “the most widely accepted model explaining the formation and evolution of the Solar System” too.

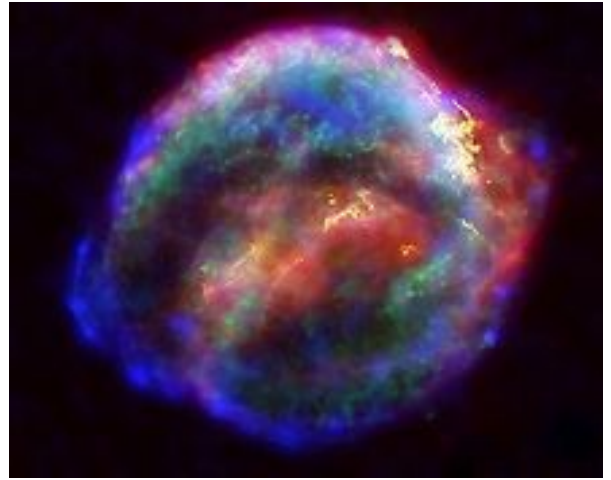
Pierre-Simon Laplace (an *atheist*—remember [Psalms 14:1](#)) was the French *astronomer* who made famous this idea for our *solar system* in 1796, all evidently to ‘explain away’ the need for a Creator, and it was called the *nebular hypothesis*. More recently it is called the *Solar Nebular Disk Model*, and is now ‘universally applied’. And this is really just a late stage of the *standard model of big bang cosmology*. In one of the earlier stages of this *theory*, just after the supposed *Big Bang* ‘explosion’—and I mean just after *matter* supposedly ‘naturally’ organized itself into the incredibly complex *standard model of particle physics*—*matter* is believed to have existed only in the form of very, very hot *gas*, equally spread across space, and continuing to expand away from the point of a once extremely ‘centralized explosion’, though somehow all this *matter* ended up in *clusters* unimaginably far apart from each other, and not traveling away from any discernibly ‘centralized point’. And this *Big Bang* of *hot gas* is thought to have started out “homogenous” (all the same) because of a measurable—by *radio telescopes*—virtually “unfluctuating”, universal *heat radiation*, now called *cosmic microwave background* (CMB) *radiation*, though evidently you can feel free to shuffle this acronym any way you want. This is the present “unfluctuating” temperature of the Universe. These *microwaves* (*heat energy*) cause some of the *static* in all *radio transmissions*. But more likely this ‘heat’ was really caused by the **breath** of God’s **mouth** and **voice** [Psa 18:8-13](#); [Job 4:9](#) when He ‘spoke-on’ His apparently infinitely ‘far-flung’ **lights** on The 4th day of Creation—more on this in [SECTION 4](#).

And *evolutionists* don’t worry much about the many “problems” with their ‘theories’ of *galaxy formation* and *solar system formation*, because any apparent impossibilities are made to sound more believable by adding that this process of *gravitational collapse* takes billions of years. The latest stage of the ‘theory’ involves *gas giants*, like Jupiter and Saturn. They’re misnamed ‘gas giants’ based on the *Solar Nebular Disk Model*—more on this in [SECTION 8](#). But the story goes that these **so-called** *gas giants* are thought to conclude the *evolution* of *solar systems* by finally vacuuming up the remaining local gas by their greater *gravity*. But all of this, from the ‘big bad big bang’ all the way to ‘great gas-guzzling gas giants’, is fantasy because of the Universe’s existing *kinetic energy*, or how fast *galaxies* are ‘spinning’ and ‘flying’, if not also because of *gas pressure*, not to re-mention that the *law of angular momentum* opposes the dynamic that some *galaxies*, etc., are ‘spinning’ in the wrong direction.

Again, though you can still find the idea popularly taught throughout the media, the idea that ‘spiraling hot gases’ from the *Big Bang* could have condensed by *gravity* alone into *stars* and *planets* has been soundly proven to be impossible. Calculations, originally done by James Clerk Maxwell over half a century before the Big Bang Theory was published, show that the *gas pressure* resisting the ‘squeezing’ of a large *gas clouds* into *solids* is at least 60,000 to 100,000 times stronger than the *gravitational force* between *gas molecules*. Get an elephant to stand on your bicycle pump and you’re just going to ‘blow your tire’—not further *compress the gas*. The point is that *gas* has long been understood to be characteristically increasingly resistant to being *compressed*. Nonetheless, it remained widely believed that ‘swirling hot gases’, by *gravity*, were squeezed into *galaxies* and *solar systems*, because back then there was no other way to account for it otherwise. And it is no surprise that the avowed *atheist*, Pierre-Simon Laplace, who originally popularized the *theory*, implied that this *theory* removed the need for a Creator. But remember that God repeatedly assures us that a *theory* with **no God** is **abominable iniquity**, and in no way **good** ([Psa 14:1](#) and [53:1](#)).

And it should also be no surprise that it was principally the work of a reputable Christian, James Clerk Maxwell, that proved impossible the *nebular hypotheses*

given the scientific knowledge that existed in his day—the mid-1800's. And though this *nebular theory* was rejected for a time, like many *evolutionary* 'sub-theories' that get rejected or even exposed as fraudulent, they just keep coming back, even without new evidence, and especially if it's all they've got on the subject, which to the diligent investigator, is nauseatingly common. But this *theory* is indeed back, but for a better reason. This time it's because of increased **understanding** of the unending complexity of God's Creation, though still commonly without acknowledging God at all.



Nevertheless, *galaxy* and *solar system formation* by *gravitational collapse* has recently been 'reinforced' by a 'universe full' of 'unseen' support. And the quantity of this awesome but still mostly unaccounted for 'reinforcement' now overwhelms both the *standard model of big bang cosmology* and even the *standard model of particle physics*, as we will see.

But I should also expose, again typical of *evolutionists* (read, the **worldly**), that once *gas pressure* was finally admitted to be a "problem" in the *formation of galaxies* and *stars*, etc., it was only along with the introduction of another arguably desperate, and at the time even comical, 'fix-it' *theory*, that is still to some degree depended on. This 'saving theory' was that exploding *supernovas* provided the extra *force* necessary to 'squeeze' *gas* into *solids*. I mean it was known that "explosions" tend to blow things outward, expanding them—not *concentrating* or *contracting* them. Besides, if you need the 'exploding death' of a sun to 'birth' new ones, how'd you get the first one? And I offer this history to show you that to *evolutionists*, any 'theory', no matter how ridiculous at the time, will be advanced, rather than leave as the only solution that, **God created**.

But God eventually even provided an 'out' for more recent supporters of this 'theory', and that is, once we better understood *shock waves*. Evidently, *supernova explosions* produce incredible *shock waves* that apparently "sweep up" and *compress matter* as they travel through space, while carrying with them from such *exploded stars* 'needed' *heavier molecules* into 'nearby' *gas clouds*. See the picture of one of these *shock fronts* discovered by and named after Kepler, otherwise known as a **supernova remnant** on p.54. And this is supposedly just one way we can see *triggered star formation*, because there are also apparently a number of ways a *black hole* can "trigger" *gravitational collapse* of nearby *gas clouds*, but also sometimes prevent it, supposedly leading to or some-times preventing *star formation*. And *galaxies* full of *stars* and *gas clouds* *colliding* with each other supposedly result in *triggered star formation* too. But in all these cases, you need a *star* to eventually make other *stars*, so this can't be the whole story.

The full 'escape' came with another **increase of knowledge** (Dan 12:4) of the properties of *gas*, such that *evolutionists* can now 'wipe their brows in relief'. Turns out the behavior of *gas* is not always as "ideal" as originally believed. Surprise! Its behavior is much more complicated. The original, and what is now called, *Ideal gas law*, is now believed to be inadequate to explain the behavior of *fluids* (*liquids* and *gases*) in 'extreme' *temperatures* and/or *pressures*. The bottom line is that *gas*, at very *low temperatures* or very *high pressure*, can "collapse" into *solids*. This has been measured. And it happens "easier" at both *low temperature* and *high*

pressure, but these are particular, possibly very rare, conditions. And evidently only God **knows**, or fully can **know, the end** of how ‘particular’ and ‘rare’.

One way such conditions could arise is in the *collision* of *gas clouds*, conveniently believed to be plentiful in the early Universe. This is another type of *triggered star formation* where a secondary *force* of *gravity* comes into play, called *tidal force*. And the math seems to indicate that a big enough *collision* of just *gas clouds* could help “initiate” *gravitational collapse* into various kinds of smaller *cosmic structures*, maybe also explaining the existence of *globular clusters*—one of the more “gravitationally stable” and therefore potentially longer-lasting *structures* within *galaxies*. More than 150 of them have been discovered so far in our *Milky Way Galaxy*, so it is believed they are common in other galaxies too. But is there math to show that a single, ‘large enough’, ‘cool enough’, and ‘fast enough’ head-on “collision” of *gas clouds* could ‘initiate’ *gravitational collapse* all by itself, or at least with less provocation than in other *star triggered star formations*? This would seem necessary in the making of the **so-called** ‘first stars’.

And yes, there is now math that makes the *gravitational collapse* of *gas* to *solids* appear theoretically possible. The *virial theorem* states that, for a *gas cloud* to maintain *equilibrium* or remain *gas*, the *gravitational potential energy* must equal twice the *internal thermal energy*. If a *cloud* is *massive* enough that the *gas pressure* can no longer support it, the *cloud* will begin *gravitational collapse*. This much *mass* is called the *Jeans mass*, and it depends on the *density* and *temperature* of the *cloud*. And this ‘critical mass’ is commonly many thousands of *solar masses*, or the same as the *mass* of many thousands of *stars*, or equivalent to the *mass* of a typical *open cluster* of *stars*—a smaller, “less gravitationally stable” and therefore believed to be a potentially shorter-lasting *cosmic structure* of *stars* within a *galaxy*. But this kind of structure is thought to be a possible result of a collapsing *cloud*. There are over a thousand of these *open cluster* formations that have been discovered so far in the *Milky Way*, anyway.

And it is the collapse of these smaller *cosmic structures* such as *globular clusters* and the even smaller *open clusters* that is believed to help build the larger *cosmic structures*, such as *galaxies*, *galaxy clusters* and *groups* (of *galaxy clusters*)—all believed to be to some extent “gravitationally bound”. *Superclusters* are even larger groups of *groups*, but so far apart that they are not thought to be “gravitationally bound”, just markers for measuring “Hubble expansion”, a *theory* using Einstein’s *general relativity theory* and *spectrographic data* obtained by telescope to measure our “expanding” Universe, this being the beginning of what became called the Big Bang Theory.

The idea of the *Big Bang theory* was originally proposed by a Catholic priest and professor of physics, Georges Lemaître, in 1927, wouldn’t you **know**—see [RGT](#) if you don’t **know**. But this *theory* was refined and popularized by Edwin Hubble in 1929, and is often misattributed to him. But remember all these *groups* and *superclusters* are very, very, very, far from each other, where even ‘warp speeds’ make them inaccessible to each other in lifetimes, some even uncrossable in literally millions of lifetimes at the *speed of light*.

By-the-way, *cosmological spectrographic data*—including *redshift* and *blueshift*—is obtained through *optical telescopes* where the received *light* is passed through a *prism* and split apart into distinct, recognizable ‘rainbow light patterns’. These *color spectrum* patterns can identify even the ratios of different compositions of *elements* and *compounds* because everything is now known to have its own unique ‘rainbow signature’, and that each element and/or compound from the *light* source will contribute proportionally to its unique pattern. This is how we know that *stars* are made of the same elements and compounds that are found on Earth. And *red* and

blue color “shift” in these *spectrograms* also indicate, in a ‘*light* version’ of the *Doppler effect*, whether the *light* source is traveling toward us (an elongation of the *blue* or *ultraviolet* end of the *spectrum*—*blueshift*) or away from us (an elongation of the *infrared* end of the *spectrum*—*redshift*). And it is the preponderance of observed “redshift” that contributes to the belief that the Universe is, at least for now, still expanding.

But it’s possible that all this is just another “swindle”, at least according to some *evolutionists*. You see it turns out that *Jeans mass*—the “critical mass” where a *gas cloud*, at a specific *density* and *pressure*, begins *gravitational collapse*—was calculated with an artificial, infinite limit at the edge of the collapse, and this is now acknowledged as a theoretical error that is unrealistic, and has come to be known as “Jeans swindle”. Supposedly new calculations correct this error, and still account for the collapse of *gas clouds*—but at a slower rate. Then again, some *evolutionists* aren’t necessarily so picky, still satisfied that British physicist, Sir James Jeans, original calculations are ‘close enough’. Because ‘close enough’ works for those who have already excluded God from the equation, and in order to keep God excluded from the equation. Of course they probably don’t know or want others to know the statistical probability of getting all the ‘ducks in a row’ required to collapse the first *gas cloud*. But there’s plenty of time for this multiplication of ‘long shots’, right?

And this is how *evolutionists* think. Whenever ‘steps’ in the Theory of Evolution get ‘far-fetched’, as they frequently do, most *evolutionists* navigate this challenge with a **worldly** and therefore faulty perspective. Christian *evolutionists* do too. Mainly, they give themselves the liberty of a seemingly unlimited amount of time, making ‘long shots’ and ‘long odds’ seem more reasonable. But we’ll see that all this time doesn’t really help anyway. And most top scientists either already know this, or they are **fools** who **deny** the very existence of God, and who will otherwise **lie, defraud** (or “cheat”) and **steal** to **force** others to agree with them, or at least to go along with them, such having **conspired** to keep the **world** in general **deceived** that all is well with the ‘Theory of Evolution’. And this is not a stretch at all for the behavior of an *atheist fool*. And don’t you **believe God** that this is how they all behave?

But worse than this really, because it is much more pervasive, is the behavior of those who **have not the knowledge of God**, *atheists* or not. And I mean that even a great many Christian *creationists* also operate within a much too **worldly** perspective. Because you see, it’s not so much the use of the ‘Theory of Evolution’ that makes a person **worldly**—this is merely an expression of ‘worldliness’ at most. But it is ignoring and denying God that makes someone **worldly**. And the vast, unseen problem for Christians, as well as the rest of the **world**, is that the exclusive **use of milk**, to the exclusion of **meat**, also identifies a person as ‘spiritually immature’ and, however little they’re aware of it, **worldly**. It is only by the **knowledge of God** through **the word of God** by **the Spirit of God** that you can be **transformed by the renewing of your mind** from **worldly** to **godly**, including in your perspective of *science*, because the only **way** to truly escape **worldliness** and make strides toward **godliness** is to **understand** what the Apostle Peter means when says,

[God’s] **divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory [reward for works] and virtue [perfection or spiritual “maturity”]** [2Pe 1:3](#) (See also [Psa 19:7-14](#); [Pro 11:5](#); [Mat 5:48](#); [Rom 12:1-2](#);

[1Cr 3:1-3](#); [2:6-16](#); [2Cr 13:11](#); [Eph 4:11-15](#); [Phl 3:7-15](#); [2Ti 3:16-17](#); [Heb 6:1-3](#); [Jam 1:2-5](#); [1Pe 5:8-10](#); [1Jo 4:17-18](#) and [Psalm 1](#)).

The **blood of Jesus** alone just opens **the door**. And that's your cue. Time to **ask, seek**, and well, you can **knock** first if you want ([Mat 7:7-8](#); [Luke 11:9-10](#)).

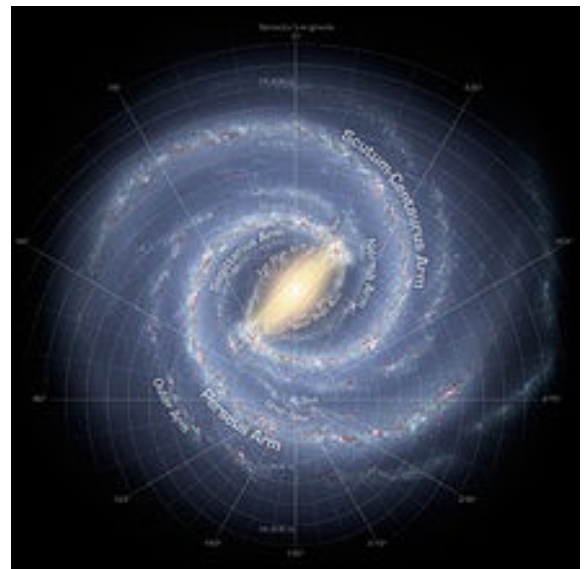
So with our present 'understanding' of God's endlessly complex Creation, it seems reasonable, while we remain on the lookout to expose **worldly** bias, and **error** and **lies** on all sides, that the Universe, though it will surely **pass away** soon, may have been **created** by God to last indefinitely, though this idea is probably contrary to what most Christian *creationists* think.

Ok, I've been 'toying' with you. Taking you on a kind of 'wild goose chase'. Because there is reason to believe that the Universe was built to last. Or not. But surely it's a legitimate question. And as Jesus counsels, we're going to **ask, seek** and **knock** on the door of the Word of God about it. And maybe **learn** more about the **patience** needed to **wait on the Lord** for the answers that always eventually come. So I'm not letting you off the hook just yet, because I intend to 'string you along' at least a little while longer, but only for the **edification** of it.

And we will see more about all this as we go. But the possibility that God did **create** the Universe so that it 'could' last indefinitely, though He clearly tells us it will soon **pass away**, could be an overwhelming, possibly embarrassing **revelation** for most Christian "young Earth" *creationist*, that I expect should be reinforced by incredible unforeseen discoveries about the nature of God's Creation, which, **remember**, we should expect unendingly, and as appropriate to God's Nature and Character. And surely the 'biggest discovery' yet, literally and by far, that could account for a 'lasting' Universe, has supposedly, at long last, recently been measured. And that would be *dark matter* and *dark energy*.

And this brings us back to another legitimate question. How are *galaxies*, and *galaxy clusters* for that matter, remaining "gravitationally bound"? I mean *astronomers* agree that the visible mass in the Universe is insufficient to hold it all together in its present form for more than a couple hundred thousand years, let alone billions. *Galaxies* and *galaxy clusters* are 'flying' and 'spinning' at way too fast *supersonic speeds* for them to have held together for billions of years. But evolutionists need them to hold together that long to make it seem 'reasonably possible' that *organic evolution* could take place.

Ever 'bob for apples'? Holding your hands behind your back, you stick your head in a tub of water full of floating apples. The goal is to extract an apple with your teeth. Naturally, your hair gets soaked. And naturally, the humiliation accompanying this task, (all in good fun), might provoke a participant, whether successful or not, to vigorously twist their head back and forth, to spray water over nearby gawkers. But I describe this 'old-school' game to give you another picture. Let's imagine a slow motion camera with a 'bird's eye view' positioned directly over the heads of humiliated, or gloating, participants, just as they begin to quickly twist their water-soaked heads. Freeze-frame shots taken less than a second into their first twist should render, with a variety of hair textures and lengths, what should look remarkably like this artist's rendering of a **spiral galaxy** (diagram, [p.56](#)). The difference is that the 'apple-bobbed' spiral 'water galaxies', will dissipate much more



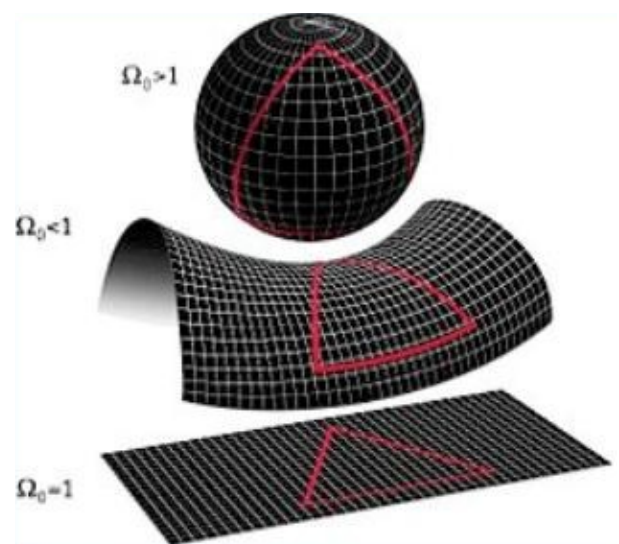
quickly than real galaxies because of their much smaller size and mass, though they both should dissipate quite quickly, relatively. But real *galaxies* are supposedly not dissipating, but are being held together, evidently with the help of some ‘not yet fully unaccounted for’ *forces*. Either that, or they’re so new—no more than a few thousand years old—so that they haven’t yet had time to dissipate.

Thanks to Einstein, we now know *speed* is “relative”. Speed ultimately depends on a combination of speeds. You walk at one speed (4 *mph*), rotate around the surface of Earth at another speed (1,000 *mph* at the *equator*), orbit around the Sun (averaging about 65,000 *mph*), while our *solar system* races around our *galactic core* (half a million *mph* or *Mach* 650), while our *galaxy* rockets through space (1.4 million *mph* or *Mach* 1850), with our “Local Group” of *galaxies* estimated to be expanding away from each other (at an average of about 250,000 *mph*). But the nearest *spiral galaxy* in our “Local Cluster”, named *Andromeda*, is on a collision course with us, (also approaching at around 250,000 *mph*), ‘impact’ in about 4 billion years. The bad news is that it has maybe 2 to 5 times the number of *stars* than our *galaxy* has. Observations in 2006 by the *Spitzer Space Telescope* estimate it has around a trillion *stars* compared to our mere 200-400 billion stars (up from the old figure of 100 billion). Ours are harder to see and count since we’re in the middle of them all. Recent estimates also measure *Andromeda* to be maybe twice as wide as the *Milky Way*. But the good news is that apparently these two *galaxies* are somehow similar in *mass*, with maybe the *Milky Way* being more massive. This is attributed to the growing evidence of *dark matter*, and that we have more of it than *Andromeda* does.

And God knows if the *mass* of the Universe as a whole is moving too. And surely it’s bigger than we can see. In 2004 Dr. Neil Cornish and his colleagues recently “deduced” a new, much wider width of the Universe, 156 billion *lightyears*. The previous estimate was 93 billion. However, it is popularly expected that the Universe, though we really can’t see the edge of it in any direction, is like many *galaxies*—“flat” like a pancake—but otherwise goes on for, at least, 78 billion *lightyears* in all directions. They got their result by mining data from the *cosmic microwave background radiation (CMB radiation)* using the *Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP)*. But this doesn’t mean that the age of the Universe has changed again too. Dr. Cornish earlier helped determine that the Universe is about 14 billion years old. But if the whole Universe is moving too, it could mean that beyond *superclusters*—that supposedly are not “gravitationally bound”—there may also be “universe clusters” or ‘bunches of universes’ like ours, which would presently be out of our range of ‘sight’. Dr. Cornish and his team didn’t seem to find the edge of our Universe. That’s why it’s sometimes called the “visible universe”.

But the “shape” of the Universe is really a matter of debate. The WMAP spacecraft’s recent measurements imply, according to *NASA*, that,

... We now know that the Universe is flat with only a 0.5% margin of error. This suggests that the Universe is infinite in extent; however, since the Universe has a finite age, we can only observe a finite volume of the Universe. All we can truly conclude is that the Universe is much



larger than the volume we can directly observe.
http://map.gsfc.nasa.gov/universe/uni_shape.html.

Nice admission. In fact it has been determined that it must be at least 100 times larger than we can see. So in line with Einstein's *general relativity* and *lambda CDM theory*—which we will explain further as we go—the “infinite” *flat model* ($\Omega = 1$) is now the most popularly imagined shape of the Universe as it seems to best fit the observational data, though possible variations on the “flat” *model* include *space* in the shape of a “bottle” “cylinder”, or “donut” too. Other *metrics* fitting the probe's data and compatible with “popular theory” include the *Picard horn* ($\Omega < 1$), (‘saddle shaped’), and the *Poincaré sphere* ($\Omega > 1$) (diagram, p.57). And it is also admitted that the difficulty of determining the ‘flatness’ or ‘curvature’ of space is like that of a person standing on the Earth, who sees Earth's surface as ‘flat’, the ‘curve’ being on such a comparatively larger scale. It's the same with the shape of the Universe or the shape of *space* itself. But how *space* can have “shape” is mindboggling to me, let alone contemplating what's outside—or inside—the relatively ‘thin slices’ of the ‘spaces’ predicted here. And *space* of this degree of ‘thinness’ is relative, because no matter what the shape of our ‘slice of space’ we live in, it's still too ‘thick’ for us even just to see the nearest ‘edge’. And evidently all this relatively ‘thin-skinned’, *4 dimensional space* may not be the “bulk” of our Universe, but may really be just the ‘outer skin’ of it. We'll try to wrap our minds around what that might be in a bit too.

But maybe ‘next generation’ *telescopes* will find ‘an edge’, or at least confirm the ‘flatness’ or ‘curvature’ of space—at least ‘locally’. Or maybe they'll discover that we're just one of an unknown number and diversity of “shapes” in a “universe cluster”, not to mention determine a better estimate of the number of *stars* in the *Milky Way*. But one way or another, and whether admitted or not, we will surely only continue to discover that The Creator is ***infinite***.

Still, and accepting all this, *Galaxies* are thought, some measured, to be traveling at *speeds* relative to *CMB radiation*—about 1.2 million *mph* (near 500 km/s). The *Milky Way*, again, is believed to be flying through space at near 1.4 million *mph*, and spinning at nearly 500,000 *mph* (225 km/s). And this is thought to be a typical *speed* and *rotation* of a *galaxy*, though their speeds in the *Local Group* appear to vary by as much as 335,000 *mph* (150 km/s). ***Light***, by-the-way, is much faster, traveling near 670 million *mph* (300,000 km/s). So again, *galaxies* should not be the ‘stable’ *cosmic structures* that *evolutionists* want them to be. The “visible” *mass* holding them together is vastly insufficient for their *speeds* and *rotations*. At these ‘typical’ *speeds*, they should have long ago dissipated, widely ‘flinging away’ all their *stars*.

Of course *galaxy clusters*—believed to be “gravitationally bound”—offer help holding together *cosmic structures* in general. The bigger the *cluster*, the more help it gives in holding things together. Still, some scientists, and especially *creationists*, have calculated that even some of the largest known *galaxy clusters*—with hundreds of *galaxies* “gravitationally bound”—should take no more than 200-300 million years to disperse to a stage where there are no more recognizable *cosmic structures*. And this is not enough time for *organic evolution*, if indeed any amount of time would be.

Worse than this, there are rare but known examples of “two-galaxy” *clusters* where there is overwhelmingly insufficient “visible” *matter* to hold them together compared to the *speed* they are traveling and spinning (https://stackoverflow.com/teams/create/free?utm_source=social&utm_medium=side-bar&utm_campaign=campaign-

[38&utm_content=cta](#)). *Two-galaxy clusters* lead us to the conclusion that the outer limit for the age of the Universe must be only a few million years at most, or they would have long ago dispersed. Though some argue there are certain ‘considerations’ that might allow such **so-called** “forbidden binaries” to hold together longer, though invariably raising other inconsistencies at the same time, of course.

But I should mention that not all scientists believe Einstein’s *theory of relativity* is right. And I mean that Newton wasn’t really wrong either, but his discoveries don’t account for the level of complexity in *nature* that *physicists* see today. And we may soon “confirm” that Einstein’s don’t either. To his credit he did admit that he fell short of finding his **so-called** “theory of everything”. But now, with the experimental “confirmation” of the *Higgs boson* seemingly within reach to help complete the *standard model of particle physics*, we nonetheless find ourselves, yet again, at a place where we’re going to have to “rethink” God’s Creation all over yet again.

This is because there is a ‘slue’, (delayed pun intended), of other presently “invisible” and, until recently, ‘undetected particles’ to consider, as well as to imagine. In other words, *evolutionists* have come to depend on a newly discovered form of *matter* and *energy* that as yet has no established place in the *standard model of particle physics*. This supposedly newly measured form of *matter* and *energy* is called *dark matter* and *dark energy*. And this elusive *dynamic matter* gets its name because it cannot interact with *photons* at all, making it “invisible”, nor does it react with most other *standard model subatomic particles*, giving it ‘no place’ in the present *standard model*. Except apparently it reacts with the *Higgs field* (*gravity field*), because the effects of this “invisible” *matter* is now considered necessary to influence “visible” *matter*, so that the popular *standard model of big bang cosmology* can ‘hold together’. And yes, it’s *dark matter* and *energy* that is now thought to provide the additional *gravitational force* to hold *cosmic structures* together that should have otherwise long ago dispersed. And ironically—because it’s “invisible”—it supposedly even removes doubts about whether there is enough *matter* available for the *gravitational collapse* required to form a diversity of *cosmic structures* wherever they may be. And some calculations estimate that “invisible” *dark matter* and *energy* account for over 90% of the *matter* and *energy* in the Universe, making “visible” *matter* less than 10%. But some have already adjusted this ratio of “visible” to “invisible” a bit by remembering to include some originally overlooked “visible” *matter*, and that would be “space dust”. (Oops.) But still others offer ‘dramatic adjustments’ made by ‘rethinking’ existing “standard forces”

But all this means that there may be various “unconfirmed” *dark* or “invisible” *subatomic particles* that somehow work together in the same *model*, somehow interacting with still other “unconfirmed” but ultimately “visible” *subatomic particles*. For example, it may be that the *graviton* and *Higgs boson* might someday, somehow, be measured to “carry” and “mediate” the *gravitational force* for both “visible” and “invisible” *matter*. And though most *evolutionists* are depending on this still ‘theorized’ *matter*, they are also concerned about its ‘theorized’ *energy*. Here’s why. They’re concerned about this *energy* because it is calculated that *if* there is enough of it to perform all its ‘necessary’ functions in the *standard model of big bang cosmology*, *then* a side effect is that there is also enough to slow, and eventually stop, the supposedly unending “inflation” of the Universe on its eventual course to a “Big Freeze”, and that is, if not interrupted by a “Big Bounce”, or “Big Rip”, which we’ll get to a little later.

But whatever the case, the **faith** of self-**idolatrous** *evolutionists* in themselves, and in mankind, comforts them that they will find a solution to these problems. And

they comfort themselves that there will be plenty of time to come up with a solution. Not that some don't already think that their descendants will eventually have to 'pirate' the *genes* of distant developing *lifeforms* to repair our own failing *gene pool*, like certain 'alien visitors' to Earth from distant *galaxies* are supposedly already doing to us. And though this 'gene pirating' by 'aliens' is apparently 'actually' occurring, and fully 'verifiably' by credible, trustworthy eyewitness testimony, we'll talk more about why this is nonsense before we're done with the next section.

So *evolutionists* are presently depending on this "invisible" *matter* and *energy* to hold *cosmic structures* together for 'billions of years'. And since the Universe is measured to be nearly 14 billion years old—by "inflation" plus 'light's travel time', at least until better *telescopes* further 'inflate' our perspective—and since things must have been going on this way for at least a few billion of those years, then 'something' that looks like 'nothing' must be holding *cosmic structures* together. And they're now using this great big 'nothing' to almost single-handedly account for the *gravitational collapse* required in every step of the *standard model of big bang cosmology*.

But I should add that even before *dark matter* and *energy* 'caught on', it was believed that in the center of most *galaxies* were *black holes*—*collapsed*, very *dense*, 'matter-sucking' *stars*—supposedly providing sufficient *force* to hold everything together. And when this 'stop-gap' *theory* 'collapsed', because even if they are as plenteous as hoped, *black holes* really don't have enough pull to do the job, *dark matter* finally got its chance. But it was all the way back in 1932 that Jan Oort (yes, of Oort Cloud fame) originally postulated that the apparently "missing mass" in the otherwise 'too fast' *orbital velocities* of *stars* in the *Milky Way* was "invisible", and in 1933 Fritz Zwicky applied the idea to the apparently 'too fast' *orbital velocities* of *galaxies*. And today *dark matter* remains the reigning *theory* to account for the supposed stability of the Universe.

Again, we've known for a long time that without more *mass* or *force*, the incredibly 'fast-flying' and/or 'spinning' *galaxies* would have long ago far dispersed all their *stars*, leaving no *cosmic structures* of any kind still identifiable. So most *cosmologists* generally agree that there is at least some kind of "matter" out there that is holding things together. And that, since it cannot be seen, this *matter* and *energy* must be *dark*—meaning that it is made from *particles* that vary in "spin" and "charge" from particles "confirmed" in the *standard model*, and therefore are "invisible" to us. But is this stuff really real? Or is it just a fantastic evolutionary 'face-saving' scam?

Dark matter, as *particle physicists* define it, is certainly mathematically and theoretically possible, even likely to exist. Again, you just have to change the "spin" (the "rotation" or 'torque') and/or the "charge", and/or the *masses*, of some of the various *subatomic particles* from the *standard model*, and you come up with different possible *particles* for the *dark model*. And this would make the difference between "visible" and "invisible" *matter* kind of like the difference between Eastern and Western music—the notes are arranged in different scales of frequencies, so they don't really interact in any easily distinguishable way.

Other than this, the existence of this "invisible" *matter* is suspect because the rationale for trying to find it is mostly just the need to buy 'a lot of time' for the Theory of Evolution, especially the great amount of time that is needed for *organic evolution*, for which, really, there seems to be no need. But the real problem is that, again, *scientists* don't really **know** God. But what I **know** about Him in this case, as Paul puts it, is **hard to be uttered**. And I mean that by my **experience** with most Christians, this is too complicated for them, making them **not able to bear it**, and

this includes the many Church leaders and teachers I have come to know both directly and indirectly. And I believe I will make this testimony clear in the totality of this **study**, though I also **hope** to pull you through it all by **the power of God** in me, expressed through the ‘spiritually mature’ **gift of teaching**, and by the miraculous, continuing **work** of The Spirit of God **working** in us all. However the **proof** will include that you will likely find yourself more isolated than ever before, since likely no one you know will have your level of **understanding**. Yes, this will be a **miracle** of God for those so **delivered**, but a step toward a level of **suffering** and **servicing the Lord** that is **deeper** than you have ever experienced before. And again, it will not really be me that takes you there, but **the power of God** and The Ministry of The Holy Spirit. And oh what a **wondrous** journey it is supposed to be.

Still this is not **milk**. And you must **understand** that God protects His Word from misuse or worse by ‘scattering’ and making ‘invisible’ the components of **strong meat**—by dispersing not just **precepts**, but also the components of the higher **precepts** of the bigger picture. And this ‘scattering’ of **precepts** is not just all over the Word, but God further hides ‘invisible’ **precepts** that are **discerned** only by the connections of **precepts** that are ‘visible’. But going **deeper**, God ultimately hides **precepts** of an even ‘meatier’ kind, the kind made by the connection of only ‘invisible’ **precepts**, and at increasingly **deeper** or **higher** levels, ultimately becoming very **deep** or **high**, in that such **precepts** become far above from the ‘visible’ **milk of the word**.

Indeed this is probably the most practical interpretation to one of Paul’s **revelations** about this. And I’m guessing ‘smoke was coming out of his ears’, figuratively speaking, when he wrote,

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God
[1Cr 2:9-10](#).

And yes, I’m talking about loneliness now, but it only lasts, relative to **eternity**, for a **moment** really. Paul assures us that the worst possible **suffering** for Christ here and now is merely...

...light affliction, which is but for a moment, [and which] worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory
[2Cr 4:17](#).

But if this kind of loneliness will not continue forever, what will? As the totality of the **RGT study** has **proved**, in The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ we can look forward to the **increase** of **knowledge** and **peace** with **no end** (e.g. [Isa 9:6-7](#)), but since all **revelations** are supposed to be corrected, improved and expanded over time, **for ever**, here’s an improvement on this **revelation** from a single verse from the Prophet Isaiah. Now you can only trust me on the context here until you can truly **see** it for yourself. Actually the entire **prophecy** this verse comes from apparently goes back all the way to the middle of Chapter 8, and finishes at the end of Chapter 35. So this **prophecy** predominantly expresses God ‘transcendent perspective of time’, meaning God, or Isaiah speaking for God, is really speaking about the period from Isaiah’s time all the way to the establishment of God’s **everlasting kingdom**, everywhere throughout ‘jumping around’ in this timeframe as is usual in God’s perspective, where He speaks as if these few thousand years are just a few days, and often referring to events that will occur—or have occurred

—as if they will only happen once, though because He is by nature Unchanging, and is Transcendent, some of the things described occur repeatedly, in the same way from **age to age**. Lost? Go back to the [RGT study](#) to ‘get your footing on this road’.

But if you will hear this **revelation** now, I will tell you that the dozen or more ‘modern translations’ I am watching provide adequate ‘commentary’ on this particular verse, and do not really introduce any serious ‘perversion’ at all. But in any case, and despite any **confusion** and the **depth** attached to this verse, if ‘the daystar has arisen in your heart’, you can **understand** it, at a beginning level at least.

In this verse Isaiah **prophesieth**, among other things, about the coming **peace** seen through the absolute change in the people of Jerusalem and throughout the Nation of Israel, as well as throughout the whole World for that matter—by how they will be brought to an **understanding** of God and His Word from that point on by the advent of ‘universal and easily comprehensible’ **speech**, which apparently involves the advent—or return—of God’s **pure language** [Zep 3:9](#) to the whole World, where **other tongues**, and the **interpretation** of them may no longer be required, as everyone from then on will be speaking the same language. Isaiah **prophesieth**,

Thou shalt not see a fierce people, a people of a deeper speech than thou canst perceive; of a stammering tongue, that thou canst not understand [Isa 33:19](#).

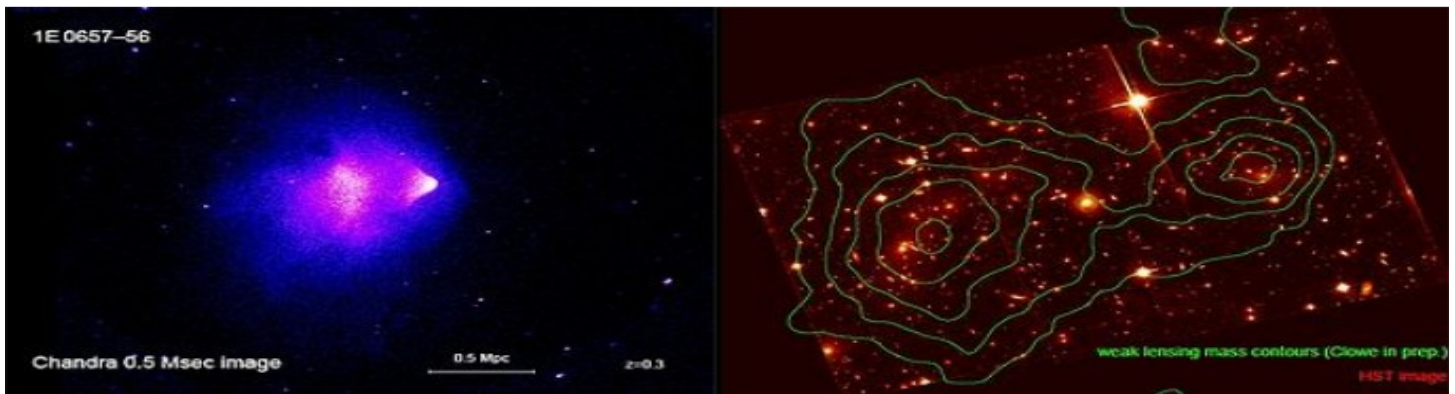
And there will be no more loneliness then, beginning in The Millennium at least. And the loneliness will only remain while **we** remain mostly isolated from each other, partially by language. But we will one day be ‘one close family’, the one that is now **the whole family in heaven and earth** [Eph 3:15](#). But becoming more ‘united’ before The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church is apparently unlikely. Still, ‘uniting’ my true eternal **whole family** as soon as God is willing is my **purpose** and **hope** in Christ expressed through the totality of these **studies**.

And still it takes time and **work** to collect and properly organize **precepts** of **the truth**, all depending on the topics in question. And so this **study** is built to show you how God nonetheless wants to **teach knowledge** to you, and **make you to understand doctrine**. This primer, like [RGT](#), is meant to take you on a guided tour. It is meant to offer an experience of what it is like to **eat...that which is good**, including **strong meat**, and search **the deep things of God**. In the process I must leave many things unexplained till a later time, to become later **revelations**, in a neverending chain of them, and **growing** ones too. And this **study** is not intended take you to a conclusion, nor should any ‘spiritually mature’ **study** ever intend to. Except you should come to the point where you **know** that you are **approved unto God** to **continue** in your **own work**, and more than that, **understand** what it means to have **rejoicing** in it, because you reach the place where you no longer need to rely on the **work** of others. Certainly, one day you will be called by God to answer for this, either **rejoicing**, or more in **shame**, and there will be no one to answer for it except yourself. See again [Galatians 6:4-5](#).

Paul clarifies that ‘spiritually mature’ **knowledge** of God requires the **use** of, or that you become **able to eat, meat** (e.g., [Heb 5:12-14](#))—that we **grow up** and become **men in understanding** [1Co 14:20](#). In this particular section we want to **grow** in the **understanding** that God is **infinite** and **omnipotent**, and improve our perspective that **there is no searching of his understanding**, and that He is

truly ***past finding out***. So, getting back on track, the question at this juncture becomes, is there really evidence for the existence of *dark matter*?

Indeed there seems to be some evidence for it. It has been seen most clearly through one of Einstein's predictions of a phenomenon he named *gravitational lensing*. Einstein was first to believe that high concentrations of *mass* and therefore stronger *gravitational force* could "bend" *light*. And this has been "confirmed" by measurement. *Light* from distant *stars* or *galaxies* can be seen to "bend" as it



passes by closer *stars* or *galaxies* on its way to a *telescope* near you. But evolutionists have recently come up with some much more telling observations regarding *gravitational lensing*. This would be the extreme *gravitational lensing* expected to occur when two *galaxy clusters* "collide". Most noteworthy is the data currently under scrutiny from the presently "colliding" *Bullet Cluster*, though the *speed of light* and its distance from us supposedly imply that this "collision" supposedly happened 150 million years ago—unless God ***created*** all the *photons* streaming to us when He ***created*** everything else. And surely He wanted us to be able to see that ***the heavens declare the glory of God***, and not just take His Word for it, right?

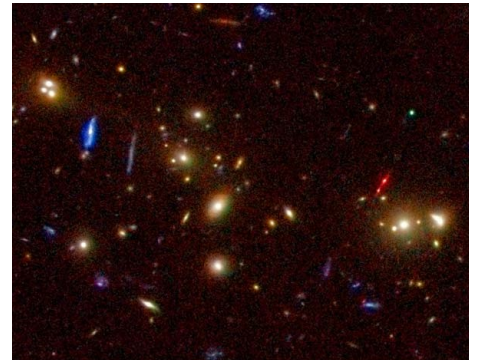
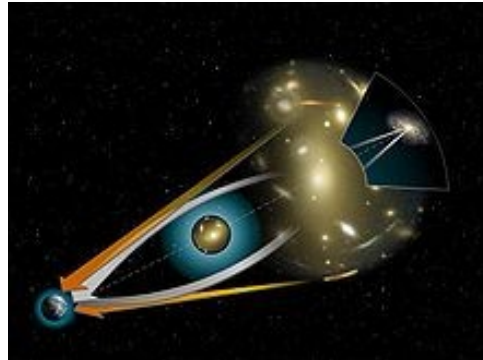
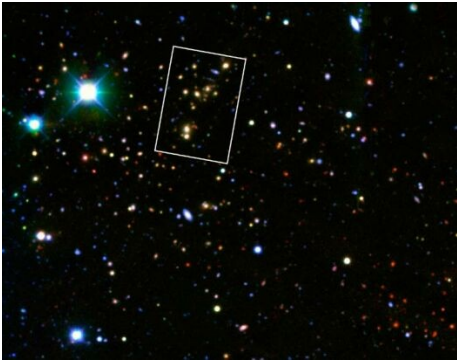
**X-ray photo of Bullet Cluster
superimposed over Bullet
by Chandra space telescope
Space Telescope**

**Mass density
Cluster photo by Hubble**

Anyway, the ***Bullet Cluster***, (photos, p.62), is named because it is a smaller *cluster of galaxies* 'bulleting' its way through a larger *cluster*. And I can't do the math, but I have no reason to believe that they aren't really measuring way too much *mass* in this "collision" of *galaxy clusters*, and evidently way beyond what is "visible". And the evidence they are seeing for *dark matter* here is that the greatest *gravitational lensing* is accounted for in regions with apparently less visible *mass*. And this implies the existence of the *theorized dark matter* "halos" that apparently surround and engulf "visible" galaxies, that, even when disrupted by *collisions* with other *galaxies*, help to hold them together, though *dark matter* is thought to be "collisionless", or not able to "collide" with visible matter, though it supposedly does provide the effects of *gravitational attraction*. So *cosmologists* 'hypothesize' that this "flatness of the rotation curve of galaxies"—meaning the "outer disk" *stars* are moving 'too fast'—is caused by *matter* outside its "visible disk". And since all large *galaxies* show the same characteristic, large *galaxies* seem to be embedded in a

“halo” of “invisible” *dark matter*. Of course, all this is driven by the assumption that these *galaxies* have all been around and holding together for many millions to billions of years.

And yes, this means *dark matter* is not necessarily believed to fill the entire Universe, but mostly resides in these “haloes” within and around stable *cosmic*



structures. Because, oh my God, even with as much as 100 times more *dark matter* than “visible” matter, there’s just too much space out there for even this much *matter* to fill. Just filling the *space* around *galaxies* apparently takes it all, or so the ‘math’ would seem to indicate. And think about it. It’s around 1,000 *lightyears* or more just between the arms of the *Milky Way Galaxy*. Two of the largest *galaxies* closest to us, including *Andromeda*, are between 3 and 5 million *lightyears* away. Our *local supercluster* (named the Local Supercluster) is 100 million *lightyears* across. And the second closest of our neighboring *superclusters*, the Perseus-Pieces Supercluster, is about 300 million *lightyears* away, but also about 300 million *lightyears* across—about 2 billion trillion miles away and about that same distance from end to end. But if you can’t imagine the just half a billion trillion miles across our own *local supercluster*, then why bother with one of our closest neighbors that’s 3 times the size of ours? And remember the rumor is that they’re all too ‘distant’ for us to be “gravitationally bound” to them anyway. And by-the-way, like all *superclusters*, even though they’re so big, they’re *invisible*. I mean they’re all just too far away to be seen by the naked eye. And all that mostly empty *space* out there is a “problem” for any ‘theory’ starting with a ‘big bang’.

The farthest known *supercluster*—in 2010—has been given the name the **Lynx Supercluster** (see on p.63), it’s only viewable by *gravitational lensing* (center diagram above) around the *Lynx Galaxy Cluster* about half way between here and there. And at about 3.7 *gigaparsecs (Gpc)*, it’s a little over 12½ billion *lightyears* away. It was ‘color photographed’ in 2004 by a team of Japanese scientists, *domo arigato*, using Japan’s largest *optical telescope*, the 8.2 *meter Subaru Telescope*, using their ‘state of the art’ *Supreme-Cam* camera. It operates atop an inactive Hawaiian volcano, *Mauna Kea*, which is the highest mountain in the U.S., and an ideal location for minimized ‘light pollution’. And this site on **Mauna Kea** (p.63) is presently host to a total of 20 *optical, infrared, submillimeter array, and radio telescopes*, supported by about the same number of nations, including being a site contributing to the *Very Long Baseline Array*, or



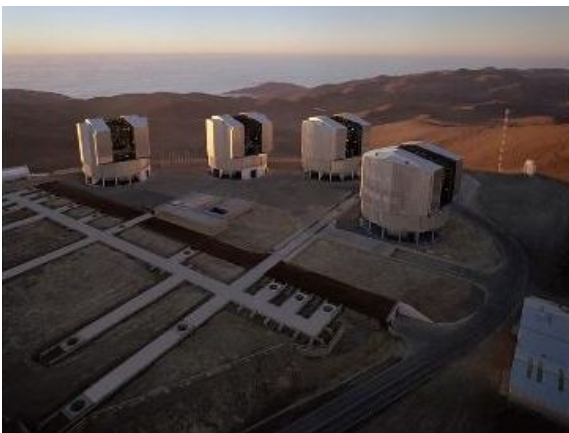


VLBA, a project of the National Radio Astronomy Observatory (NRAO) that came on line in 1993. The *VLBA* is a system of 10 *radio-telescope antennas*, each with a 25-meter or 82-foot dish, each weighing 240 tons. The entire system spans more than 5,000 miles from Mauna Kea to the U.S. Virgin Islands, providing the sharpest images of any *telescope* on Earth or in *space*.



But it was in 1999 that a “twin” or “binary” *galaxy* or *galaxy cluster*—they’re not sure which—that is part of the *Lynx Supercluster*, was first observed by American *scientists* in Arizona at the

Kit Peak National Observatory (p.63). These are the folks famous for their vigilant watch for the danger of *asteroids* colliding with Earth. But this facility is really a complex of a variety of 26 independently operated *telescopes*, which makes *Kitt Peak* the largest, most diverse international gathering of *astronomical instruments* in the World, including the *National Optical Astronomy Observatory (NOAO) telescopes* participating in the *ROSAT Deep Cluster Survey (RDCS)*.



Also participating in *RDCS*, as well as with numerous NASA satellites, but on Mauna Kea, is the **Keck Observatory** (p.64), using dual 10 meter *telescopes*, each only smaller than the single 10.4 meter *telescope* in the Canary Islands. All these ‘big boys’ use “segmented mirrors”—lots of little *mirrors* fit together. But just one *telescope* by itself is much less powerful than the *Keck* and other *dual* or *interfero-meter* arrays, as they are designed to work together, offering the ‘finest’ optical views of the sky available.

Another ‘big boy’, ‘effectively’ the biggest, also in Arizona, and supported by a global cooperation, is the **Large Binocular Telescope** or **LBT** (p.64). It’s a ‘state of the art’ *binocular telescope* that has been fully operational since 2008, using two single (not *segmented*) 8.4 meter *mirrors*, that give it an “effective” *circular aperture* of 11.8 meters.

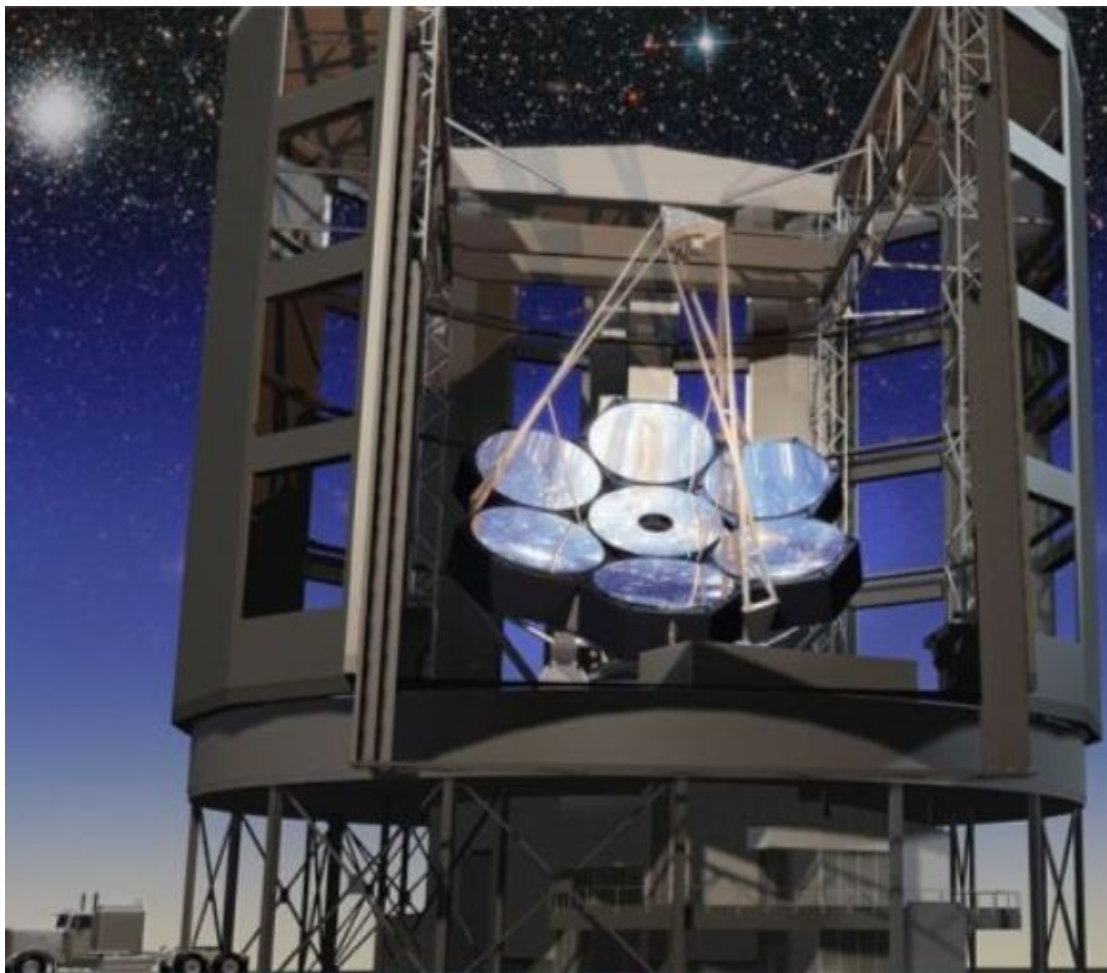
Then there are the *European Southern Observatory (ESO) telescopes*. This organization presently cooperates internationally in building two record-breaking systems of *telescopes* in the high desert of Chile. And since 1998, in the high Atacama Desert of Chile, there’s already an ESO ‘big boy’ operating there, or 4 of them really, each with an 8.2 meter single (not *segmented*) *mirror*. ESO boasts that this “third millennium” *telescope* is “the world’s most advanced optical instrument”. Altogether it’s called the **Very Large Telescope** or **VLT** (p.64), and the 4 *telescopes* can be used separately or together as an *interferometer*. Using a complex system of tunnels and mirrors it can achieve *angular* (or *circular*) *resolutions* near 200 meters., “allowing astronomers to see details up to 25 times finer than with individual telescopes”. And this system attracts more research than any other facility in the world (<http://www.eso.org/public/teles-instr/vlt.html>).

But it takes all kinds. Large, *single-mirrored* (including *segmented*) or *binocular-*

type telescopes, as well as the various kinds of *interferometric telescopes*, must work cooperatively to sort out some of the pictures we are seeing in **the heavens**. Because *multiple-mirror telescopes* that work together as *interferometric instruments* have the advantage of providing “effective” *angular resolutions* that are nearly—or with manipulation even better than—the same *mirror* of ‘actual’ larger instruments. So, *interferometers* are most useful for fine resolution of the brightest *astronomical objects*. But dimmer objects require the collection of more *light*, and therefore larger *mirrors*. That’s why there’s even bigger ‘big boys’ in the works. One, about 3 times larger than any optical telescope presently operating, the *Thirty Meter Telescope* or *TMT*, is a large *segmented-mirror telescope* beginning construction in 2014, and it is hoped to be operational near the end of the decade. Its construction presently involves cooperation from educational and/or astronomical institutions from Canada, The U.S., China, and Japan. Such a large *telescope’s* correction ability by *adaptive optics* would enable observations with 10 times the *spatial resolution* of the *Hubble Space Telescope*. And the comparison of the ‘area’ of *resolution* here is *spatial*, not *angular* or round because *segmented mirrors* don’t exactly provide *resolution* in the shape of a circle, like single, not *segmented mirrors* do.

And there’s still another even larger *telescope*—about 40 meters or near 4 times larger than any *optical telescope* currently operating—that is also ready to begin construction. It’s one of those record-breaking *ESO* projects, also with international participation, but instead of being located, along with the *VLT* and most of their more than 60 other *telescopes*, at a few different locations in the high inland Atacama Desert, this record-breaker is to be placed even higher in the coastal mountains of Chile, with start of operations planned for the early 2020’s. It was finally named the *European Extremely Large Telescope* or *E-ELT* after other larger versions of it were abandoned because of costs. And both the *E-ELT* and the *TMT* should be big enough to achieve a number of notable firsts in *astronomy*, like viewing ‘Earth-like’ planets around other *stars* in the **so-called** “habitable zones”. They should also be able to perform what is called “stellar archaeology” in nearby *galaxies*, and measure *spectrographically* “the properties of the [supposed] first stars and galaxies”, and of course “probe the nature of dark matter and dark energy”. Present technology limits the construction of single *optical mirrors* to a little better than 8 meters or around 27 feet, so to be cost effective these telescopes will be very *segmented*. The *E-ELT’s* primary telescope will consist of nearly 800 hexagonal 1.45 *meter mirrors*, and boasts the potential for *spatial resolutions* near 15 times that of the *Hubble Space Telescope*
<http://www.eso.org/public/teles-instr/e-elt.html>.

But still there is yet another “extremely large telescope” already beginning construction in the Atacama Desert, the **Giant Magellan Telescope** or **GMT** (p.65), also planned for completion in



the early 2020's. It will integrate 7 single (not *segmented*) 8.4 meter or 27.6 foot *mirrors* that together will have the resolving power of near a 25 meter or 80 foot *primary mirror*, with a collecting area equivalent to about a 22 meters or 72 foot *single circular mirror*. This *telescope* is expected to have around 5-10 times the light-gathering ability of existing *optical instruments*. The *GMT* will join the twin 6.5 meter *Magellan Telescopes* that came on line in 2000 and 2002, as well as the several other projects in the high Atacama Desert region of Chile because this area is arguably, besides maybe atop Mauna Kea in Hawaii, the best light-and-air-pollution-free place on Earth for long-term astronomical observation, including a minimal number of days of cloud cover. The 7 over 27 foot *single mirrors* will be arranged with one *mirror* in the center and the others arranged around it. The *mirrors* are being constructed by the *Steward Observatory Mirror Lab* of the *University of Arizona*, and major site preparation began with the first blast to level the mountain peak it will sit on in March 2012. A wide array of new optical tests and laboratory infrastructure had to be developed to polish the first *mirror*, a feat estimated to be 10 times more difficult than any previously attempted. Casting a *single mirror* uses 20 tons of specialized glass provided by the *Ohara Corporation* of Japan and takes about 12-13 weeks. There are now 2 *mirrors* cast. The casting of the first *mirror*, in a rotating furnace, was completed in November 2005, and the second in January 2012, though the polishing of the first *mirror* wasn't completed until later that year—7 years after casting. The second mirror is now in process at the *mirror lab* in Arizona, with the

third and fourth *mirrors* scheduled to be cast in 2013 and 2014. The intention is to build 8 identical *mirrors* altogether, so that a spare is always available to substitute during the 1-2 week recoating process that each *mirror* must undergo every year or two. Supporters of this *telescope* include several Australian, Korean and American astronomical and educational institutions, as well as the Carnegie Institution for Science and the Harvard Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics.

So in case you didn't notice, there is a new 'space race' going on. With the *TMT*, the *E-ELT* and the *GMT* all poised to go online early sometime next decade, it will be a race to see who will track down the first 'Earth-like planet'—a **so-called** "Goldilocks planet"—confirmed to be in the supposed "habitable zones", or first to expose conclusive evidence proving the existence of *dark matter* and *energy*, and further confirming—as well as correcting and re-establishing—the *standard model of particle physics*, or be the first to better characterize the supposed 'first *stars*' and 'first *galaxies*' including how they formed, or discover better the role of *supermassive black holes* at the center of *galaxies*, or even be the first to find evidence of life on other planets both inside and outside our own solar system. Yet these are all goals of *evolutionists*. Or are they?

But still even all these *visible light telescopes* are not enough. *Radio, infrared, ultraviolet, millimeter-submillimeter, microwave, x-ray, and gamma ray telescopes* are needed too. And all these kinds of *telescopes* exist, and not only on the Earth, but also as *satellites*. There are even special ones now in *orbit* hoping to measure the Sun's *gravity well*, and even one specifically designed to search for *exoplanets*—any *planet* that *orbits* a *star* other than our Sun, the most interesting ones more specifically described as *circumstellar habitable-zone exoplanets* (or "Goldilocks planets")—as well as the many improved versions of all types of *telescopes* still in the works, including a bigger and better version of the *Hubble Space Telescope*, this time to be named after the late *NASA*, Apollo-era administrator, *James E. Webb*, and presently planned for launch in 2018.

Such *invisible light telescopes* are needed, for example, to more easily find the supposedly 'youngest' *cosmic structures*. These are the ones that are still in a stage where they're mostly or completely just *gas*. The *ROSAT x-ray satellite* recently reentered Earth's atmosphere after nearly a decade of service. It was a German built telescope with American and British instruments, its name being an acronym combining the German words for 'x-ray' and 'satellite'. *ROSAT's* legacy is the *ROSAT Deep Cluster Survey (RDCS)*, where *telescopes* worldwide continue to follow up on the *ROSAT satellite's* contributions.

And *ESO* has another mega-project just coming online to help along these lines, also in the high desert of Chile, partially working in 2012, and fully operational in 2013. This global cooperation is "the largest ground-based astronomical project in existence". Technically it's not an *infrared* or a *radio telescope*, but a *millimeter-submillimeter interferometer*. This means it's designed to use all of its 66 *dishes*, most of them about 12 *meters* or about 40 *feet* wide, to act as one *telescope* to receive the narrow range of *light* between *infrared* and *radio waves*. These *millimeter-submillimeter wavelengths* are useful for the 'viewing' of 'cooler' *cosmic structures, dust* and *gases*, as well as *CMB radiation* from the *Big Bang* (read, the ongoing 'echo' of God's **voice** on The 4th Day of Creation). This army of cooperative *dish telescopes* goes by its

acronym name **ALMA, Atacama Large Millimeter-submillimeter Array** (p.67). *ALMA* is a system of high-precision *dish antennas* spread over 16 *kilometers* (about 10 *miles*), conformable to a great variety of configurations, which will give *ALMA* a powerful variable "zoom". It will be able to probe the Universe in the *millimeter* and *submillimeter wavelengths* "with unprecedented sensitivity and resolution", and



with a 'vision' up to 10 times sharper than that of the *Hubble Space Telescope*, and able to further complement and clarify the images of other *telescopes*, like maybe eventually discerning if those *Lynx Supercluster structures* are just *clusters* or really *groups of clusters*. And this facility is meant to study the 'building blocks' of *stars*, *planetary systems* and *galaxies*. It hopes to both provide *images* of *stars* and *planets* being 'born in gas clouds' near our *solar system*, as well as offering glimpses of the 'birth' of *galaxies* at the edge of the observable Universe (<http://www.eso.org/public/teles-instr/alma.html>).

But are you seeing the pattern here? Naturally, (pun intended), as those that are **perfect** can see, most *evolutionists* only want to see more of what they consider evidence for their present *standard model of big bang cosmology* that conforms to the worldwide Satanic conspiracy to **deny** God. This is easily enough seen in the present use and plans for all *astronomical instruments* of **the world**. Specifically there is a focus that includes finding further evidence of 'high' *redshift galaxies*, *star formation*, *exoplanets*, and *protoplanetary systems* (the 'birth' of *solar systems*), and all with attention to the effects of *dark matter* and *energy*, (or *MOND*, which we'll get to in a bit), and all to try to show the needed 'billions of years' that supposedly 'improve the odds' and 'opportunity' for *organic evolution*. These *evolutionists* show in all their **ways** that they, as the *atheist* Laplace put it, "have no need" for a God. (Note: Specifically, Laplace famously answered about "the Creator", <<Je n'avais pas besoin de cette hypothèse-là.>> - translation: "I have no need of that hypothesis.")

But do you remember what the first "extremely large" *radio telescope*, the *VLA*, discovered, at least originally? Surely it instead dashed the hopes of *evolutionist* to be able to openly *deny* God. They initially found only evidence that contradicted a centralized *Big Bang explosion*, because they found *matter* mostly relatively tightly and irregularly 'clustered' together wherever found, and at the same time separated by almost unimaginable distances throughout mostly *empty space*. I mean it's kind of like God just put the lights where He wanted them, making them so big, far apart, and far away, all to show us how "vast" He is. I mean, talk about a "Very Large Array". This would be a fair description of the **host** identified in [Gen 2:1](#), translated "vast array" in the *NIV*, by-the-way.

And now *evolutionary astronomers*, using *ALMA* and other *telescopes*, have inserted *dark matter* into the picture, and that is, where apparently appropriate, and it may really be evidence that God has weaved quite a marvelous "web" in the Heavens, except, speaking as someone who is paying attention, we're talking about a lot of not previously accounted for *dark matter*, which seems, in the 'evolutionary scheme of things', should have put us all in a 'tight spot' long ago. And I mean with that much 'gravitationally influential' *matter* out there, it seems to me that *evolutionist* should expect that we should have gotten back to the next *Big Crunch* already, except that, again, all the evidence also indicates that the Universe is still expanding, which would mean, on the 'accepted evolutionary timescale', that this supposed "web" contains way too much *dark matter* than there could really be, and that is, if the Universe is really over 13 billion years old, and didn't really just get 'spoken into existence', and relatively shortly thereafter got **cursed**, only a few thousand years ago (<https://video.search.yahoo.com/yhs/search?fr=yhs-mozilla>

001&hsimp=yhs-001&hspart=mozilla&p=The+Dark+Matter+Enigma - id=2&vid=2d802aa26190dc7b2366d891fb0c60f8&action=click).

But before we're through we will see much more specifically some of the more practical, down-to-earth reasons why God has **ordained** the **stars** in the Heavens the way He has. And so far He has been **faithful** to show us that He is 'passed searching out', hasn't He? His Creation is certainly too big to see by the biggest *astronomical instruments* currently available, and it is sure the bigger ones coming soon won't change that. Without doubt the 'spiritually mature' can **see** that it is at best **ignorance** and at worst **foolish atheism** to still expect to find His limits. And it is already scientifically reasonable to classify God—just with what we have learned so far—as **infinite**. And Paul, back in his time and without the aid of all these modern *astronomical instruments*, not even including what Jesus did, but evidently just from the world-renowned reports of the **great and terrible things** and past **wondrous works** of God, could **understand** that the...

...ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; [who do so] Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them... so that they are without excuse... Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And [back in Paul's time] changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things... Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature [or created things] more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. [Rom 1:18-23](#).

But today's **idolatry** is not so much of **the creature** or Creation itself. It has more become self-**idolatry**. And nowadays the **rulers of the darkness of this world** conspire, partially through the Theory of Evolution, so that now we **wrestle** with the **temptation** of self-**worship** (See [Eph 6:12](#)). These **revelations** will be made much clearer in **SECTION 5** through **12**, but also somewhat in the next section.

But surely God shows His endless **mercy** to us too, and He has designed His Creation to continually confound **the World**, because, as usual, **having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it** [Col 2:15](#). And all this kind of **triumphing** by God is not restricted to The Crucifixion and Resurrection of Christ, but has happened and will happen again and again, since the **beginning**, and to the end of The Ages of Creation. And nowadays, even though the **knowledge** of Him and of His Creation has **increased** [Dan 12:4](#). But this **triumphing** by God happens in other, more readily observable ways too, as [Psalm 2](#) suggests, and as we will see in great detail in the later sections.

But though we can already **understand** that He has placed **lights in...the heaven** at unimaginable distances, and big enough to see—immediately—as one way to show how **great in power** He is, you should be aware that we can really only see with the naked eye the more or less 'local' **stars** and **galaxies**. **Orion**, for example is around 1300 to 1400 lightyears away—though they're still debating a more exact distance—and the **Pleiades** are only a little more than 400 lightyears away. And it is only by **both telescopes and** the relatively 'close collection' of hundreds of **galaxy clusters**, each with hundreds of millions of **stars**, that enable us to see the **lights** that are billions of **lightyears** away. Again, the largest

superclusters in the Universe, with billions of *stars*, are invisible to the naked eye, and dimmer from our perspective than *Bernard's Star*—a single, small *star*, which is only visible because it is one of the closest *stars*, only 4 *lightyears* away. Even the nearest large *supercluster*, 300 million *lightyears* away, let alone the farthest away known *supercluster*, estimated to be in the ballpark of half a billion times that distance, is *invisible* without a *telescope*, which shows God is amazingly **great** (read, “vast”), and amazingly **divers** (or diverse), like how He made **the sea**. The psalmist sings about God,

So is this great and wide sea, wherein are things creeping innumerable, both small and great beasts [Psa 104:25](#). (See also [Heb 1:1](#); [2:4](#).)

And the psalmist finally must exclaim!

O LORD, how manifold [or “many”] are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all... [Psa 104:24](#).

So it is God's Character to be awesomely **divers**, and diverse beyond measure. God's unlimited care and attention extends infinitely beyond the largest and most distant *visible* (telescopically) *galaxy clusters* to unsearchably within the smallest, 'massless' *subatomic particles* that 'power' it all. And we must remember why He says He created this “vast array” of **lights**...

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years... [Gen 1:14](#)

And God's “Very Large Array”, besides giving us *light* to see by in both **the day** and **night**, and helping us track **seasons**, and time in general, is a way for Him to **speak** to us through **signs**. As the Apostle Paul explains,

God, who at sundry (or “various”) times and in divers manners spake [or spoke] in time past unto the fathers by the prophets... [Heb 1:1](#).

And this includes times when God **spake...by the prophets** with **signs and wonders in heaven and in earth**. I mean in the Prophet Daniel's day, the Medo-Persian **King Darius**, (or Astyages—see [RGT](#)), had seen and heard enough, and he got the picture, saying,

I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel: for he is the living God, and stedfast for ever, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and his dominion shall be even unto the end. He delivereth and rescueth, and he worketh signs and wonders in heaven and in earth... [Dan 6:26](#).

And these **revelations** of **King Darius** will be made much more clear in **SECTION 5-12**, and a little in the next section too.

But now, *evolutionists* (read ‘self-worshippers’) think that what they are looking for now will finally prove the *standard model of big bang cosmology*, and help them finally be able to, once and for all, **deny** God. But by now you should **know** that God is **faithful**. And that He is not a **deceiver**. But that, generally speaking,

evolutionists are **deceivers** [2Jo 1:7](#). They are helplessly the **servants of the rulers of the darkness of this world** [Eph 6:12](#). And I mean that now, if you have been able to keep up—and I mean you should start over as many times as needed until you can—you are ready to see more of God's **triumphing**, and how He will yet again confound those that would seek to **deny** Him. And I mean that no matter where *evolutionists*—or any other kind of self-worshiper—look, **they** will remain always and forever **without excuse** to **glorify** the God of Creation.

And remember there are more than just the previously discovered “twin” *galaxy clusters*—or *groups of clusters*—way out there in the *Lynx Supercluster*. This uncertainty, again, being because it's hard to tell at such *distances* whether they're just *clusters* or *groups* of them, at least till those “extremely large telescopes” in the works fully come online and get around to taking a look. But whichever kind of *cosmic structures* they are, there's now a count of at least 7 of them. Try to distinguish these 7 brightest **lights** in the rectangle in the top left photo on [p.62](#), and notice the “twins” that were first discovered on the bottom, and in the further magnified top right photo. The *Lynx Supercluster*, by-the-way, has an estimated width of about 20-25 *Mpc* or about 70 million *lightyears*. And they're excited about it since it's over 12 billion *lightyears* away; a *distance* ultimately determined by *comparative redshift*—the longer the *redshift*, the farther it is away. And that's 'near' 75 billion trillion miles away, which would take at least 750 million trillion 100-year-lifetimes traveling at the *speed of light* to get there. Kind of makes even the U.S. national debt look small, doesn't it? And I'm guessing there's really only one way to get there within a lifetime before The Rapture, and that would be to 'hook up' with an **angel**, who I would expect aren't 'Earth-bound' anywhere near like we are.

By-the-way, using *comparative spectrographic shift* to determine *distances* is foundationally supported by a “principle” akin to *geometric* and/or *trigonometric triangulation* called *parallax*, which essentially means 'altered angles of viewing'. My encyclopedia informs us that,

Astronomers use the principle of parallax to measure distances to the closer stars. Here, the term "parallax" is the semi-angle of inclination between two sight-lines to the star, as observed when the Earth is on opposite sides of the Sun in its orbit. These distances form the lowest rung of what is called "the cosmic distance ladder", the first in a succession of methods by which astronomers determine the distances to celestial objects, serving as a basis for other distance measurements in astronomy forming the higher rungs of the ladder.

The 'highest rung', then, must be *comparative redshift* or *blueshift*, where 'distortions' in *telescopic spectrographic images* are compared with 'undistorted' ones to determine an object's *speed*, *general direction*, and *distance* relative to Earth, that is, where *redshift*, or the 'stretching out' of the *infrared* end of the *spectrographic image*, implies the object is moving way from the Earth, while *blueshift*, or the 'stretching out' of the *ultraviolet* end of the *spectrographic image*, implies an object is moving closer to the Earth, and where evidently just one of the ways *comparative spectrographic shift* can be *calibrated* is to take both *parallax* and *comparative spectrographic shift measurements* on the “closer stars”. Also remember it is believed that the *visible* Universe is, generally speaking, *expanding*, because most objects are viewed to have *redshift*, and so are moving away from Earth. But you should know of one of the minority exceptions to this. Remember

the Andromeda Galaxy is thought to be on a 'collision course' with us, and so must present itself with *blueshift*. But this could only be bad news if there were enough time left before this Universe ***shall pass away*** for that to happen.

But also remember it's believed by *evolutionists* that we are seeing this *supercluster* in the 'most distant past', and that this must be a picture of a 'hot bed' of newly forming *galaxies*—though there's really only an "artists rendition" of what this might look like presently available. Of course since The Word of God is clear, and as we'll account for it in **SECTION 4**—that Heaven and Earth are really only a few thousand years old—what we should really expect to see with further study of the *Lynx Supercluster*, and similar distant supposed 'hot beds', is the neverending diversity of God's awesome Creation. But surely some more "rethinking" of *evolutionary theory* too. I'm guessing they'll spin whatever they see to buy even more time to help them rationalize and continue to ignore what the evidence already shows to be impossible—that nothing out there created itself.

But for now the *standard model of big bang cosmology* is king. Except really there are a few different versions of it, the most popular being the *lambda CDM (Cold Dark Matter) model*, and the less popular being the "hot" and "warm" *dark matter* versions. But all these theories accept Einstein's *general relativity theory*, which assumes that *gravity* is always "constant", and they all depend on 'cold', 'hot' or 'warm' *dark matter haloes* to hold *cosmic structures* together, even pull them together, though since *dark matter* is 'invisible', these theories are far from being reconciled with the *standard model of particle physics*, but otherwise seems to answer the questions of most *cosmologists*, except for the seemingly endless 'ignored or explained away' list of unsolved "problems" that accompany all *evolutionary theories*. For example, they are no longer overlooking the 'stiff resistance' expected in the *gravitational collapse of gases*. They simply predict that there must be enough *dark matter* to overcome any expected opposition. So like the age of the Universe last century, and likely this century too, the percentage of *dark matter* may continue to do some 'bouncing around' for a while.

But all this *dark matter* stuff could one day all go 'out the window' too. And all these 'next generation' *telescopes* may begin looking for some other cause for the stability of *cosmic structures*. Turns out there is another completely different explanation that has not yet really 'caught on', which relies instead entirely on a "modified" view of just one of the 4 *fundamental forces*. I mean there are a minority of *evolutionary cosmologists* who think that there doesn't need to be much *dark matter* out there at all. They think the problem of insufficient *mass* to hold it all together over hundreds of millions to billions of years can be handled with a little tweak of the *law of gravity*. This means that much of Einstein's General Relativity Theory could go 'out the window' too, well, kind of like Newton's laws did anyway.

Back in 1983, one of these *cosmologists*, an Israeli *astrophysicist* named Dr. Mordehai (Moti) Milgrom, found a different solution to the problem that outer *stars* of spinning "disk galaxies" were traveling 'too fast'. His proposed solution was called *Modified Newtonian Dynamics (MOND)*, reasoning that *gravity* must behave differently at the lowest accelerations, as opposed to Einstein's Theory of General Relativity which assumes that *gravity* is an unchanging or "constant" *force*. Moti calculated that this would explain the stability of *cosmic structures* without the need for *dark matter*. A couple of experiments to test *MOND* involving spacecraft have been proposed, the confirmation of either test being that "slight kick" as the spacecraft approaches the very low acceleration levels required by *MOND*. Of course a "confirmed" measurement of a *WIMP (weakly interacting massive particle)*, one of the theorized types of *dark matter* particles, would cast doubt on *MOND*.

But in 2011, Dr. Stacy McGaugh examined the rotation of “gas rich” *galaxies*, which simply means they have fewer *stars* and are mostly *gas*. This allowed the *mass* of the *galaxy* to be more accurately determined because *gas* is easier to see and measure than *stars* or *planets*. He studied a sample of 47 *galaxies* comparing their *mass* and *speed of rotation* with the ratio expected from *MOND* predictions. All 47 *galaxies* fell on or very close to the *MOND* prediction. No *dark matter* model performed as well. Then, another 2011 team study, observing the gravity-induced *spectrographic redshift* of *galaxy clusters*, found results that strongly supported *general relativity* with *dark halos—lambda CDM*—but not *MOND*. But a more recent work found ‘mistakes’ in this team study, and confirmed that *MOND* can fit the determined *redshifts* about as well as *lambda CDM*.

But there’s not just *MOND*. There’s also *MOG*, *Modified Gravity Theory*, or *scalar-tensor-vector gravity (STVG)*, postulated by Dr. John Moffat, which instead predicts a modification of *gravity* at great distances, like an overstretched rubberband. This *theory* works as well as *lambda CDM* and *MOND* to answer questions, and requires no *Higgs boson* to do it. And the Large Hadron Collider should soon provide a ‘break’ in this *theory* one way or another, multiple pun intended. Dr. Moffat is also the guy that originated the *theory* (later stolen) that *light* traveled 10^{30} times faster during the ‘early moments’ of the *Big Bang*. That’s a 1 with 30 zeros, which means he thinks the Universe would have been filled with *photons* pretty much instantaneously. And in 2001, Dr. John Webb and his mates In Australia, with their *Automated Patrol Telescope* or *APT*, apparently detected evidence of this. And sure, God ‘awesomely’ **spake** the **lights** on both on The 1st and 4th Day, and just like the psalmist sings,

Let all the earth fear the LORD: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. For he spake, and it was done [or the world “came to be”]; ***he commanded, and*** [say, 10^{30} times faster than the *speed of light*] ***it stood fast*** [or “it appeared”] [Psa 33:8-9](#). (and see again [Psa 119:120](#)).

Now there’s a mouthful.

And still there are other illuminating “modified gravity theories” or “alternates to general relativity” helping and/or competing such as *AQUAL*, *TeVes*, and *Conformal Gravity*, all these theories having their strengths and weaknesses, but all good enough to still be in the running. But you should **understand** by now that God is big enough to have them all describe at least some part of His Creation.

But I should also mention Dr. Pavel Kroupa. His ‘stellar’ career has taken him literally all over the world, and includes cooperation with other *astronomers* to expose evidence of several contradictions to *lambda CDM theory—constant gravity* with cold *dark halos* to hold thing together. These contradictions are found in measurements within our own *Local Cluster* that he explains without *dark matter*, but like *MOND*, with adjustments to the *law of gravity* at slow accelerations, and with other natural solutions. And Dr. Kroupa is one of the *scientists* offering those ‘considerations’ that supposedly account for what are called “forbidden binaries”, that is, theories that account for the ability of isolated but closely adjacent *stars* or *galaxies* to remain stable for longer periods than otherwise expected.

And by the way, the *Bullet Cluster* observations that seems to confirm the existence of *dark halos* by the *general-relativity*-approved method of *gravitational lensing*, has been recently rebutted by our Israeli astrophysics, Dr. Moti. He calculates that *MOND* answers the observations from the *Bullet Cluster* data as well as *lambda CDM theory*.

So go figure. I mean we now have a different perspective of the *strong force* than we used to—that it is multifunctional—and that it is now known to both attract and repel within the very limited range of one of its operations. So why couldn't *gravity* also work differently in different 'ranges' and/or '*accelerations*' that we haven't actually measured yet? And why couldn't or wouldn't God also use both "visible" and "invisible" *subatomic particles* to run His Creation? But let's 'keep our eyes on the ball'. What we really want to know is if God has any reason to make it appear that his Creation could last indefinitely? The answer to this question is more important to our **understanding** than any we'll get from these contending, and contentious, **worldly scientists**.

And pardon the lack of standardized direct references for all of this information here, but if you really want to verify any or all of it—you should do it yourself. My handing of **scripture** is the only credential and references you should really worry about. Besides, I gave you plenty of names, facts and figures to substantiate this information on your own. And you should because you'll see that the story's a lot more complicated than I told it, and because you'll surely find places where I've 'dropped the ball'—because everyone at least sometimes does—which is one of the reasons why we're **commanded to grow in grace**, isn't it? And I mean I'm offering in this entire **study** a **sincere** 'point in time' testimony of my life's **diligent** journey to **know God**. You should 'get a life' too.

And I said I have no reason to 'doubt the science' offered. But I really do, don't I? Remember the 2011 team study with 'mistakes'? They weren't likely really 'mistakes', were they (question mark omitted intentionally). They are more likely evidence of the war between "constant gravity - dark matter theories" and the "modified gravity - no dark matter theories". And as I also made clear, these 'mistakes' must be just the tip of this iceberg. Because probably almost no one is always 'fighting fair', and in a variety of **deceitful** ways. And now you know **we** have supernatural insider **knowledge** about this from God! Remember we **know**, as God laments through the Prophet Jeremiah,

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?

[Jer 17:9](#)

And as I also already said, you won't be able to avoid finding more and more of this **deceitfulness** the further and deeper you go. (See also [Mar 4:19](#) and [Heb 3:13](#).)

And though God's Creation is 'passed searching out', and though His Creation could be one where the existence of *matter* and *energy* outside the parameters of what we've discovered and confirmed so far is not only possible, but unavoidable, God is not **deceitful** nor a **deceiver**. It is those that **deny** Him that are ([2Jo 1:7](#)). I mean, though God can and likely did **create** a **variety** of kinds of *dark matter*, like He has **created** an **innumerable** diversity of **living** things, with new *species* being found literally every day, the questions at this juncture are, did God **create** enough *dark matter* to indefinitely sustain the Universe—that we can find and measure—or, like our corrected, expanded and improved understanding of *gas laws*, and the *strong force*, will we discover and confirm that *gravity* does indeed vary with *acceleration* and/or *distance*, and therefore could sustain the Universe indefinitely? And the bigger question is, could God be **deceiving** us through His Creation into **believing** that the Universe is 'billions of years' old, when His Word is clear that it is only a few thousand years old and will soon **pass away**? Or are we missing something else, something about who He is and what He has **promised**?

Confused? Uncertain? Not ready yet on this subject to ***speaking as the oracles of God*** [1Pe 4:11](#)? The answers to these questions make me much more confident than any self-***worshipping evolutionists*** could ever be, when I say that God is ***true*** to Himself and His Word by His Creation. But such ***strong meat*** answers can only be ‘studied-out’ and ***understood*** by those committed to ***knowing*** Him ***better*** and ***better, for ever***. Jesus and the Apostles make it clear in many ways that in order to ***know the truth*** that will ***set you free*** from confusion and uncertainty about who God is, you must ***for ever*** commit yourself to ***continue in*** His Word, because only in this way can you truly become His ***friend***, His ‘homie’, so to speak, and a ***disciple indeed***. See [Psalms 119:45](#) and [John 15:14-15](#)

When talking to the ***Sadducees*** about ‘the wife of seven husbands’, Jesus concludes very generally,

Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God [Mat 22:29](#).

And this ***study*** has the goal of showing even ***disciples*** that if they are really ready to increase their ***knowledge of God***, they must remain ***ever*** attentive to this perspective. And I mean you should be able to say by ***experience*** and ***testify*** that God’s ***word***,

...is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path [Psa 119:105](#).

So do you really regularly, and shouldn’t I say daily, ***experience***—with delight—***deep*** meditation ***in*** The Word of God ([Psa 119:16](#); [47](#); [174](#))? Indeed, ***in*** God’s Word the ***blessed***...

...meditate day and night [Psa 1:2](#).

If you don’t, you ***cannot*** ***love*** God as much as you think you do. Because only those who do should ***testify***,

O how love I thy law! it is my meditation all the day [Psa 119:97](#).

And only those with this ***testimony*** can also truly say,

Therefore I love thy commandments above gold; yea, above fine gold [Psa 119:127](#).

And only they, with profound exhilaration, can say,

I rejoice at thy word, as one that findeth great spoil [or “great treasure”] [Psa 119:162](#).

And beyond exhilaration, only these ***know*** what it is like to ***tremble*** in ***fear***, saying,

...my heart standeth in awe of thy word [Psa 119:161](#) (and see again Verse [120](#)).

And only suchlike ***disciples indeed*** really mean it when they say,

My soul hath kept thy testimonies; and I love them exceedingly [Psa 119:167](#).

Because like God's Creation, God's Word is an unending supply of **wondrous things**. And those with this **experience** plead on their knees and on their beds to God,

Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law
[Psa 119:18](#).

And they plead in **fear**,

Order my steps in thy word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me
[Psa 119:133](#).

The Apostle John defines true **love** for us this way too, saying,

And this is love, that we walk after his commandments... [2John 1:6](#).

And remember that Jesus also settles the issue about those who really **love** Him, saying,

If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me [John 14:23](#).

And **indeed**, speaking to **the devil** himself, Jesus declares that to **keep** God's Words is **life** itself, **saying**,

It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God [Mat 4:4](#); [Luke 4:4](#) (from [Deu 8:3](#)).

And Jesus means that you are dying **spiritually** if you 'continue' in your **lack of knowledge** of His Word. And He is saying that you are **not able**, without **the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God, to stand against the wiles of the devil** [Eph 6:11-18](#), nor **resist** the 'devouring, lion-like jaws' of **your adversary the devil** [1Pe 5:8-9](#), and that you are likely to be **overcome, fall** and be **cut off** by your own **natural**, 'carnally-minded' **flesh**, nor will you see **death** coming, being naturally **deceived** that all your **ways** to you **seemeth right**. But He also means you can survive all this and **live** and **grow** and **abound** by regular and **increasing** input of the Word of God by The Spirit of God, because His Word **promises** that **by reason of use** of it, **you** will **have** your **senses exercised to discern both good and evil**. And doesn't Jesus **promise** that this is the only way that He and His Father will **abide** and **dwell** intimately with you?—I mean beyond that 'great deal' on 'fire insurance'? See [Col 1:9-10](#)

And I tell you again that the general statement of Jesus to the **Sadducees**, that,

Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God [Mat 22:29](#)...

...Is **true** for you also, and for no matter what topic of **scripture**, and **true** to whatever extent that you don't **meditate** in The Word **day and night** on that subject ([Psa 1:2](#); [119:97](#)), and to the extent that you aren't **exercised** in the **use** of God's Word on a regular, growing basis. And by-the-way, if you're keeping up, a lot of the places where I don't give **scripture** references are references you should already know, 'chapter and verse', or you should chase them down, again and again, that is, with a concordance, and as many times as you need to until you **know** them. And being committed to the KJV, for reasons you should also already **know**, remember I like [blueletterbible.org](#) (now [blbclassic.org](#)) for a lot of this kind of **work** and **exercise**.

And as for God's Creation, you should also already **know** that,

For ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. They [heaven and earth] continue this day according to thine ordinances: for all [things created] are thy servants [Psa 119:89-91](#). (See also [Jer 33:25](#); [Rev 4:11](#), [10:6](#) and [Col 1:15-17](#).)

And what God has **created** leaves us **without excuse** [Rom 1:20](#). Want the God of Creation to really **love** you? I mean far beyond sending His Son to **die** for your **sins**. Then **learn** to really **keep** His Words. And that means you have to start an **eternal** relationship with His Word. Because, I can't say it enough, as the Apostle James so succinctly reveals, you must...

Draw nigh to God... [if you really want Him to] **draw nigh to you** [James 4:8](#).

And Peter considers it his duty as an Apostle to often remind us ([2Pe 1:12-13](#); [3:1-2](#)), saying,

Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity [or agape, meaning "love"]. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall: For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into

the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. [2Pe 1:2-8](#),

Yes, everything we need for ***life and godliness*** comes ***through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord***. And through ‘abounding’ ***knowledge*** Peter is saying God ***promises*** us that ‘abundant’ ***glory*** and ***virtue*** will come with it, but ***never*** without it. Jesus is speaking about the ‘levels’ of ***reward*** that will be given to individual Immortal Sons of God when He says,

For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his work [Mat 16:27](#).

And it’s clear that this ***knowledge*** is not inherent, or natural to us, but completely against our ***sin nature***. But what is this ***lust*** that is common in ***the world*** that Peter is speaking of? The Apostle John breaks down its major components, listing,

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever [1Jo 2:15-17](#).

And remember God can get succinct too, revealing,

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? [Jer 17:9](#)

And do you really think you are any different? You might have actually ***deceived*** yourself to believe that you are. But God assures us ***we*** are not. To ***escape*** our ***desperately wicked*** hearts and the ***worldly lusts*** of our ***flesh*** we ***must continue*** in ***giving all diligence to abound in glory and virtue*** that is available only ***through the knowledge of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ*** by God’s Word God’s way and by The Spirit of God. Along these lines, in The Book of Proverbs, King Solomon offers keys to...

...wisdom and instruction; to perceive the words of understanding; To receive the instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment, and equity; To give subtilty to the simple [or give the ability to eat strong meat to the ignorant], to the young man knowledge and discretion [read, ***understanding that ‘discerns good from evil’].***

Solomon begins this ***wisdom and instruction*** to all ‘new travelers’ on this road—which nowadays applies to everyone regardless of their age or however long they have been saved— by saying,

A wise man will hear, and will increase learning; and a man of understanding shall attain unto wise counsels: To understand a proverb, and the interpretation; the words of the wise, and their dark [or deep] sayings. The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction [Pro 1:3-7](#).

Uh-huh, he means it should scare you if you are not actively and regularly pursuing **knowledge, instruction, wisdom** and **understanding**, even **dark** or **deep** and mysterious **sayings**, including **prophecy**, all through the Word of God. And Solomon repeatedly teaches why this should be scary, warning,

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death [Pro 14:12; 16:25](#).

He means that what's in your head will naturally and unavoidable lead you to **hell** and **the lake of fire**, and that you are **deceived** if you don't **know** this. More to the point, according to Jesus and the Apostles and Prophets, and corroborated by the whole Word of God, **the blood of Jesus** alone may not, and likely is not, enough to **save** you. Because even if you have been **saved** by **the blood of Jesus** and thereby have **the hope of salvation** [1Th 5:8](#), you are both still **carnal** and still have a desperately **wicked heart**, and are still vulnerable to the **worldly lusts** of your **flesh**, not to mention that **roaring lion**, prowling about, seeking such especially easy prey to **devour**, and surely with all this working together against you it will most likely succeed in causing you to **fall**, and ultimately **for ever** to be **tormented** in **the lake of fire**, that is unless you at some point become **secure** in your **safety** by making and **continuing** to **keep** a commitment to **grow** and **abound** in **glory and virtue** by the knowledge of God through The Word of God His **way**.

So don't be a **fool**. Use the **fear**. **Understand** that you can only be **free** and **obtain** the **promise** that you will never **fall** only **if** you become one of the Lord's **disciples**, and **understand** that you must commit yourself to **learn** to **study** God's Word God's **way** and, **giving all diligence**, begin an **eternal** relationship with it. Otherwise, you are 'naturally' **ungodly**, with only the **blood of Jesus** '**withstanding**' between you and **hell and destruction**.

I tell you **the truth**, all you have to do to be **ungodly** is to make a habit of passing up opportunities to **study** The Word of God [Psa 1:1-2](#). And according to King Solomon, surely, as **wisdom** 'herself' says,

...he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death [Pro 8:36](#).

And in this Proverb the personified 'woman' calling herself **wisdom** is talking about...

...the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death
[Rev 21:8](#).

So truly there is the only one way to **make your calling and election sure** [2Pe 1:10](#), and to **avoid** this **shame**, or worse, **eternal judgment**. And this one **way** only begins with **the blood of Jesus**. And yes of course! No one makes it into The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ without **the blood of Jesus** every step of the way. But 'guaranteed salvation', or making **your calling and election sure**, comes another way. And that way is to,

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth [2Ti 2:15](#).

And even the Apostle Paul can be succinct sometimes, **provoking** us to **fear God**, saying,

**Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God:
I speak this to your shame [1Cr 15:34](#).**

And he is not talking about **salvation** here, but to **saved** Christian on the road to losing their **salvation**. So wake up! You can't **live** just by saying you **know** God, and saying you **believe** God, and saying you **trust** God, or **saying** you **obey** and **serve** God, or even **saying** that you **worship** God, if you don't **continue in** His Word His **way**. No, most these things don't mean very much unless you're really committed to getting to **know** Him His **way**. And you can't really sincerely **declare**, like the Psalmist does, that you are someone who,

...dwelleth in the secret place of the most High [and] shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty... [nor that] ...He is my refuge and my fortress: my God...[that] I trust... [Psa 91:1-4](#)...

...unless you **study** and **meditate** in His Word **day and night**. And if you mostly only declare your **love** of God and Jesus because of God's sacrifice of His **only begotten son**, and Jesus' sacrifice **on the cross**, then wake up! Because if this is mostly all you really do, without much further real **understanding** from Him His **way**, you don't really...

...love [nor serve, nor fear] the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength [Mar 12:30](#); [Luk 10:27](#). (Also [Deu 6:5](#); [10:12](#); [11:13](#); [13:1-5](#); [30:6](#).)...

And I mean if this is you, you don't really **know** Him, **serve** Him, **fear** Him nor **love** Him though His Word, His **way**. And your **way**—which God assures us 'seems right'—only leads to **shame** (read, 'lack of **reward**', where you are really of little or no help to anyone), or possibly, even likely, it leads to **the second death**. And I mean 'mature', **spiritual**, true **love** takes being **transformed by the renewing of your mind**, far beyond **salvation**, where you begin a lifestyle of growing in **understanding of the things of God**, and where you have new **revelations** about God and yourself through His Word by His Spirit **day and night**. This is what it is like to truly **love**—and truly **abide** with—our **infinite, omnipotent, glorious, wondrous, fearful, dreadful, great and terrible** (read, "awesome") God. And to borrow a succinct conclusion from the Apostle Paul's second letter to the Corinthians, he 'premonishes',

...Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men... [2Cr 5:9-11](#)

So do you get it? The only real **safety** comes with a growing relationship with The Word of God through The Spirit of God. Because your **salvation** alone may not ultimately **save** you. And these are not my ideas, but they are 'rightly divided' **precepts** of the Word of God. And without the regular input and practice of The Word of God you are in great danger of **falling away**. The Apostle Paul spoke of his own vulnerability repeatedly (e.g. [1Cr 9:26](#)). And do you think you are any safer? And

what about **Satan**? Even **the great prince...Michael**, God's **archangel**, won't **fight** with him if he can avoid it, and certainly has no easy time of it when he does. See [Jude 1:9](#), [Daniel 10](#) and [12:1](#). I mean it's not just your own 'ignorant mind' and 'carnal flesh' that endangers you. The Apostle Peter makes clear that you also must,

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom [you must] resist stedfast in the faith... [or be devoured]. But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you [1Pe 5:8-10](#).

Sure, it's a lot of **pain** and hard **work** to become 'spiritually mature', **established**, **strong** and **settled** in God. But the **way** to get there is **sure**. Paul points **us** there, saying,

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth [2Ti 2:15](#).

The **approved unto God** are surely **disciples indeed** who are **perfect**, **established**, **strong** and **settled** by God, and remain **committed** to correcting, improving and expanding their spiritual perspective **for ever**, knowing that because they are always on the look out for their **sins** and **errors**, God's got their backs. And remember that Peter makes clear that you are safe from the moment you make an eternal commitment to do so, though becoming **perfect**, **established**, **strong** and **settled**, and **approved unto God** should take **a while** longer. But it's just a **moment** really, at least in the way Paul means it in [2 Corinthians 4:17](#).

So are you getting all this 'recommended' **fear and trembling** about your **salvation** yet? (See again [Phl 2:12](#); [Psa 2:11](#); [119:120](#); [Jer 5:22](#); [Dan 6:26](#).) But you should also be getting that you can be completely **safe**. You can get through the **fear and trembling** to that place where, as the Apostle John puts it,

...perfect [or "mature"] love casteth out fear.

And John explains what he means, saying,

Herein is our love made perfect [or "mature"], that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he [Jesus] is [Who always obeyeth His Father], so are we in this world [who should always obey The Father and Jesus]... because fear hath torment [and shame—whether you're saved or not]. He that feareth is not made perfect in love [1Jo 4:17-18](#) (See also [Isa 26:3](#)).

And He doesn't mean that if you feel like that you 'love' God you no longer have to be afraid. He means if you are **perfect** enough to **know** and **obey** God—increasingly—you can stop being afraid. In other words, Jesus **obeyed** The Father, and did and said only what The Father told Him to do and say. In the same way, we should be **obedient** to them, and therefore eventually **made perfect** or "mature", as we **press** to **live...by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**. However such a commitment makes us immediately **safe** from being **lost**,

and we can never be separated from God as long as this commitment lasts. Absolutely no...

...tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword... [And] neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord
[Rom 8:35-39](#).

And you should continue reading from there all the way through at least to Chapter 11, [Verse 22](#) if you think Paul means that you can be this **secure** just because you are **saved**. Because he makes clear in this verse that such 'security' is only had...

...if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

And to **continue in** God's **goodness** implies **obedience** that leads to **works** that will be **rewarded** at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church on **the day of judgment**, where our **boldness** increases, and our **fear** decreases, because we not only have **assurance** of our **salvation**, but the **expectation** that for what we **build** on our **foundation** of **salvation** we will **receive** a **reward** and **glory** at our [**abundantly**] [**ministered**] **entrance...into the everlasting kingdom**.

So appropriately, Peter urges you to **give [all] diligence to make your calling and election sure**, because—I'm saying it again—**only if** you become 'fruitful' and **abound** through **the knowledge of God** does this conditional **promise** apply to you. Peter tells you for God that **only**...

...if ye do these things, ye shall never fall...

And only then...

an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

And please read [2 Peter 1:1-11](#) again.

And by now you should have an **understanding** of the difference between **salvation** and **reward**, as well as the difference between when you should **fear** and **tremble** and when you should 'cast out' **fear** and **have boldness**. Start over if you don't. But you should also see by now that the journey to a **perfect, established, strong** and **settled** level of **understanding** of this not only involves **study, work**, and at least for **a while, suffering**, but also an eternal commitment. And specifically, you should **experience** the **terror** [2Cr 5:10-11](#) that is appropriate when you **awake** to the dangers of your **spiritual** immaturity—which is part of the motivation you need to become **perfect**, and to **press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus** [Phl 3:14-15](#), or from God's perspective, to be **predestinated** and **called according to his purpose** [Rom 8:28](#); [Eph 1:10-12](#); [2Ti 1:8-9](#), or to be one of the **vessels** that God will **make...unto honour** [Rom 9:19-24](#).

But in Romans 9, Paul is also making clear that some **vessels** are 'made' by God **unto dishonour**. And in this passage Paul identifies **vessels of wrath fitted to destruction**, implying they will end up in **the lake of fire**. Yet he uses this

analogy a little differently when writing to Timothy. There he distinguishes **vessels... some to honour, and some to dishonour** within one **great house**, or within God's Kingdom, really warning us that inside The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ there will be a separation too, saying,

But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work [2Ti 2:20-21](#).

So from our perspective, to **be** one of the **vessels of honour** in God's **great house**, we must **purge** ourselves **from these**. What are **these**? In the context of the preceding verses, **these** are 'errors' and **iniquity**. See [2Ti 2:16-19](#). So to be **sanctified** or 'set apart' for God's **purpose**, and be **meet** or "useful" to God, and **prepared** through the Word of God for **every good work**, you must **purge** yourself **of these**. And since **purging** yourself of 'error' must be an **eternal** process, as we all are and will all **for ever** remain finite, you can really only make a commitment to begin this process and **never, ever** quit.

So the question at this point becomes, how 'useful' to God can a **babe in Christ** be? Someone who does not **rightly** build on the **foundation** of their **salvation** can only be a **vessel of dishonour** in God's **great house**. And you cannot be a **disciple indeed** who can **study to shew thyself approved unto God**, [and be] **a workman that needeth not to be ashamed**, nor a **vessel of honour**, who is **spiritual, perfect**, and **able to bear the strong meat** of The Word of God, unless you **do these things**. And I mean you should be scared about the **way** you **live**.

And considering God's servant Job seems to make this even scarier. In [Job 11](#), for example, **Zophar the Naamathite's** ironic speech to Job about avoiding **sin** to be 'secure' and **live** in 'safety', only shows his **ignorance** that Job is instead **persecuted** by Satan through no apparent fault of his own, which seems to only **prove** that 'safety and security' are really only **spiritual** realities, with sure **reward in heaven**, but possibly not so much temporally.

And yeah it does—and it's suppose to—get increasingly complicated **for ever**, which means these are not the only reasons we have to **fear and tremble** before God, though at the same time, increasingly, **be not afraid**. But I won't have done my job if at some point you don't start, literally, 'shaking in your shoes'. Of course I'm not the cause of any of this appropriate and inescapable **fear**, nor the author of any of the accompanying, mindboggling **comfort** that inevitably should go along with it, these **wonderful** experiences provided by The Word of God by The Spirit of God, just as They **promise**, but including the **fear** of the Psalmist who sings,

My flesh trembleth for fear of thee; and I am afraid of thy judgments
[Psa 119:120](#).

(See also [Psa 99:1](#); [114:7](#).)

And I'm talking about the **comfort** the Prophet Isaiah offers starting in [Chapter 40](#). And I mean that if you haven't read the [RGT study](#), the **revelations** of why this psalmist **trembleth** and is **afraid**, and how the Prophet Isaiah is able to nonetheless **comfort** us, is still probably beyond your 'ability' to 'perfectly' **understand**. It is an **understanding** you have to **work** at to get. But if you haven't yet, keep reading and you will.

And you could say that when it comes to answering the questions I've raised about God's **creation** so far, there is no difference between myself and a self-**worshipping evolutionist**. After all evolutionists, to oversimplify, point to nothing and say something is there, or assume the laws of nature must be amended in ways that are not yet measured, and all in order to account for a long-lasting Universe, but really more to **deny** God. While I point to nothing too, and say it may or may not be there—or if there it could be in less than 'Universe-sustaining' dynamics, but possibly along with yet undiscovered variable fundamental *forces* that may make up the difference needed to 'sustain' this Universe indefinitely, or not. So you see we're both operating by 'faith'. But instead of **building** on **sand** as someone **fitted to destruction**, who is naturally bent on ignoring, denying or even **blaspheming** God, or, though building on a sure foundation, doing so while remaining **carnal** and **blind**, and doing it **carelessly**, I have a **triumphing** advantage, because I am **able** to operate with a relatively 'mature spiritual mindset', one that seeks to see God perpetually **glorified**. Of course God's continual **triumphing** in this **way** is His Own doing. I am simply sufficiently 'spiritually mature' enough to...

...be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust [2Pe 1:4](#).

With such 'participation' I can, unavoidably, find out more about the behavior of **matter** and **forces** than even 'top scientist' can, and that is, by 'standing on their shoulders'. And I **understand** there will be no end to such **revelations**, because I **know** God is **infinite**, and that His **creation** will **reveal** Him to be. So I remain ever ready to **ask, seek** and **knock**, expecting **higher** and **higher** levels of **understanding** to be **revealed** in time, and that is, at **God speed**.

And the point here is that if you **continue in** this **study**, God will **reveal** to you whether an indefinitely sustainable Universe will **glorify him** by His Word, and how, or not, and why (e.g. [1Pe 2:12](#)), though at the same time God naturally keeps **the world** in **derision** in this process (e.g. [Psa 2:4](#); [Psa 59:8](#); [1Cr 3:19](#)/[Job 5:13](#)). But because He has shown me so many **marvels** (e.g., [Ex 34:10](#)) and **wonders** (e.g. [Ex 15:11](#); [Deu 26:8](#); [1Ch 6:7-36](#)/[Psa 105](#)) so far, I **know** that I would be a **fool** to **deny** that I have more to **learn** about Him and His Creation, while **evolutionists** are often **foolish** enough to think that they've got the nature of the Universe pretty much all figured out. But the reality is that God will be **glorified** in **ways** we do not yet **understand**, and that such 'mindblowing', 'paradigm-busting' **revelations** will occur again and again **for ever**. This is God's nature.

So both 'self-idolizing' **evolutionists** and I are in a way the same. We both proceed in **faith**. Except,

...they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations.

Therefore to 'God-denying' **evolutionists**, and the like, God says,

I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not [Isa 66:3-4](#) (see also [Isa 65:12](#) and [Rom 1:18](#)) .

So they can only proceed in their Satanically-controlled, **carnally minded, flesh-driven**, and ultimately, 'God-chosen' **delusion**, save some **mercy** and a

miracle from God, where without this they ultimately even lose their ability to **choose** their fate. They indeed become **vessels of wrath fitted to destruction** [Rom 9:22](#). But by The Spirit I can **choose** to **resist the devil** and my **flesh**, and proceed by the **instruction** of The Word of God to **seek** to **know** all **the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory** [Rom 9:23](#). (Note: as covered in [RGT](#), it's important not to confuse God's perspective with ours. He's the only one who can fully **see** what's **afore prepared**. From our perspective we must **choose**. And after all, that's why He is and should be known as **the righteous judge** ([2Ti 4:8](#)), because from our perspective, we all will be **judged** for what **we chose**, not for what He **afore prepared**.)

And don't be confused, the answers to these cosmological questions are not as important as getting to **know** God **better**. And by the time we're through with this **study**, you will **know** Him better. Still you should not come to any firm conclusions about these questions until then, because too many of your ideas may only be the kind that **seemeth right**, but really aren't. You need a lot more input from The Word of God first. And this is one of the reasons **scripture** teaches so much on the subject of **patience and faith**. You have to **learn** by **experience** to **wait on God** for answers to specific questions, especially the **strong meat** type, and if you don't, I tell you by **experience** that you won't get near as many of the more **perfect** answers.

So for now we'll let these questions stand. Would it **glorify God** more if we "confirmed" that there **is matter** or/and **forces** that could sustain the Universe indefinitely, **or** if, like a great clock, it's simply winding down, where, like the water freshly 'flung' from an 'apple bobbers head', **spiral galaxies** are so newly flung by God and remain so tightly held together simply because they haven't yet had enough time to spin apart in the few thousand years they've been here, and were **created** only to last long enough to finish God's plan for mankind a little more than a thousand years from now. In the later case, no additional **matter** and/or **forces** are needed to hold it all together. But remember we are looking for an answer that will **glorify God** by the Word of God, and answers that acknowledge and show that He is **infinite**. But we also want to be on the lookout to steer clear of answers that deify man instead of **glorify God**. This is one way we will be **able** to tell the difference between **truth** and **lies**. But really it's not as **simple** as this. Truly **strong meat** answers never are. And are you really ready for such answers? And I mean that you have to be ready to have your mind **transformed**. What 'seems' to be **the truth** and God-**glorifying** to **babes** often really is not, and such an 'immature perspective' can easily be twisted to instead deify man or worse, with only **the blood of Jesus 'withstanding'**. Again, I'm not talking about IQ or age, but about a **lack** of 'spiritual perfectness' or 'spiritual maturity' that includes 'fruitfulness' in and by The Word of God. And those who consider themselves 'too stupid' are **without excuse** too, since the once and future King David assures us that,

...the testimony of the LORD is sure, making [or able to make] **wise the simple** [or 'ignorant', or 'stupid', evidently including the 'spiritually immature'] [Psa 19:7](#).

So all you could possibly lack to **get** or **gain** such a **perfect, established, strong** and **settled** level of **faith** is **patience**. Because if your **able** to **hear** at all, the Apostle Paul also **teacheth** that this is all you really need, saying,

... **faith** cometh **by hearing, and hearing by the word of God** [Rom 10:17](#).

But getting back to the science, both ‘spiritually immature’ Christians and ‘self-worshipping’ *evolutionists* may use billions of years in their ideas about Creation. Christians may rationalize that this vast amount of time somehow **glorifies** God as ‘eternal’, while of course *evolutionists* cling to the idea, deceiving themselves, that it eliminates the need for God. And if you haven’t noticed, I’ve really already made a **simple** case for how God can be **glorified** if *dark matter* and/or more complex *fundamental forces* are confirmed—it could further testify to the unending complexity of God’s Creation, and further testify to His **infinite** Character. And the potential **shame** of this reality to our **simple** Church is that these grand ‘theories’ of an ‘indefinitely sustainable Universe’ originated with *evolutionists*. I mean, what great ‘leaps of faith’ these *evolutionists* take. They dare to believe that most of the *mass* of the Universe is invisible though still presently undetectable—or that yet unmeasurable *forces* exist—to hold the Universe together to make enough time for *organic evolution* and eliminate the need for God. Of course it is arguably a greater ‘leap of faith’ to believe that with or without an indefinitely sustainable Universe, God **created** all things about 6,000 years ago, and that it will all **pass away** in a little more than 1,000 years from now.

Again and of course, God could **create** this *dark* Universe that *evolutionary mathematicians* imagine, and they may even be seeing evidence of it now through *gravitational lensing* in the *Bullet Cluster* and elsewhere, or they may be seeing new aspects of the *law of gravity*, or both, or neither. And so far the *evolutionists* ‘best evidence’ that our Universe is mostly *dark matter*, or that the *law of gravity* needs ‘redefining’, is this—that some force of this magnitude has to be there to form and hold *galaxies* together for at least the last several billion years or *organic evolution* could not be possible. And of course this is not evidence but ‘self-glorifying’ **idolatry**. But don’t worry, if it turns out that **God created** the Universe to last **for ever**, even this is not enough time for *organic evolution*, at least as *evolutionists* imagine it. And we will see that both *evolutionists* and *creationists* are missing something really big. I’m talking about God’s ongoing ‘involvement’ in His own Creation. And clearly, the Bible tells quite a different story than *evolutionists* about both **the creation of the world**, and of us, and of how long it’s been since that happened, and about when **heaven and earth will pass away**. It’s a 7-thousand-year story to be exact. And this means that neither *dark matter* nor “modified” *gravity* should be able to ‘fix’ everything, because there should be other ‘time problems’ we can discover with the *standard model of big bang cosmology*, especially in the final stages, than even such a ‘marvelous load’ of *invisible matter* and *energy* could ‘fix’. We’ll get to some of these, what I’ll call, ‘evolution deadlines’, shortly.

But before that, I should admit that so far I’ve just been ‘stringing’ you along. Because now we’re really going to get ‘loopy’. Still, I can embrace the following, more imaginative, though largely unimaginable, *theories of evolutionary cosmology* as part of a **trap** God has set to **catch** ‘self-idolizing’, ‘God-denying’ **fools**. Of course it is always at least a **shame**, if not also a **trap**, when ‘immature Christians’ presume to ‘speak for God’ **ignorantly**. But this is only a **snare** for them, whether *atheist* or Christian, because they are **ignorantly** looking for an end, or a complete “theory of everything”. And this is how these **fools** are **caught**. Because they can’t stop chasing that ‘dangled carrot’ of their independence from God that they think they’ll reach by completely ‘understanding’ God’s Creation. And they don’t

know that they are really on a path to at least **shame**, if Christian, or **their own destruction**, if they hope to **deny** God. And so, on this 'road', *evolutionists* are unavoidably duped by God, being the **fools** that they are, to continue to reveal God's 'unendingly complex' **creation**. I mean they believe that a complete "theory of everything" is 'just around the corner', so they continue to expose what's 'around corner after corner after corner'. So it would be worthwhile to consider what they're trying to find 'just around' some of the next 'corners' that they're presently trying to 'peek around'.

And I'm talking about some of the more popular 'mathematically possible', what I'll call, 'backstories' to the beginning of our Universe implied by the *theory of cosmic inflation*. The leading *theory* is tempting some *mathematicians* to imagine, really fantasize, that there are "really" an "infinite" number of connected "pocket" or "bubble" or "alternate" *universes*, also known collectively as a *multiverse*, where each "pocket" may have its own unique but *random* and *accidental constructions* and *dynamics of matter and forces*, or its own unique *laws of physics*. But it is also calculated that almost all these conceivable combinations of *matter and forces* would not be able to support *life* as we know it. Still, an infinite number of possible "pockets" supposedly makes the existence of at least one "pocket" like ours 'mathematically reasonable' and, of course, eliminates the need for God. But surely you've already seen some of the diversity of God's **creation**. And even more sure is the fact that, when it comes to what God is going to show us, we haven't really seen anything yet. The Prophet Isaiah says,

For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him [Isa 64:4](#).

And the Apostle Paul updates us about this, revealing that because of The Spirit the game has changed somewhat since Isaiah's time, saying,

But as it is written [in Isaiah], Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God [1Cr 2:9-10](#).

So we should be looking for some really **deep things** by now, though if it's something **we** can imagine, it can't be anywhere near the level of the **thoughts** and **ways** of God, because we should also **know** that God says,

For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts [Isa 55:9](#).

And since the **heavens** are apparently infinitely **higher** than **the earth**, we should never, ever be able to get anywhere near God's **thoughts**. But the good news is that our **thoughts** about God, at least in some **ways**, should be **deep** or 'way out there', and **for ever** increasingly 'mindblowing'.

And remember, *evolutionary cosmologists* are already looking for completely different forms of *matter and energy—dark matter and energy—right here in our own "pocket"*. And naturally this 'way-out' *theory of inflation* I'm talking about is compatible with *lambda CDM theory*. But the real drama for us in this *theory* is that

our own unique “bubble”, that we’re supposedly presently inside, should eventually be in danger of a *Big Bounce* off a neighboring “bubble. And this is expected to be both a *universe* and ‘mind-altering’ event for all concerned.

So I’m also talking about Dr. Alan Guth. He is the “revered cosmologist”, who is the originator of the presently most popular *theory of inflation*. *Inflation* is the supposed initial extremely ‘quick’ and extremely ‘high energy expansion’ of the Universe immediately after a *Big Bang* or possibly *Big Bounce*. His *Inflation theory* predicts that *inflation* is both extremely ‘irregular’ but ‘continuous’, forming an unlimited number of “pocket universes” or a “multiverse”. And I’m guessing he got the idea for this from the ‘irregularly dispersed’ *matter* in our own, now relatively stable “pocket” originally observed by the *VLA* in Arizona. And I mean our “pocket” is now believed to be ‘relatively stable’ because it is no longer “inflating”, just “expanding”. I get the picture that our supposed “pocket” may be kind of like a ‘newly forming eddy’ off a ‘stream’ of ‘inflating space’.

Dr. Guth, ‘blowing a multiverse’ of evidently ‘intermittently expanding hot space’. explains,

An important feature of this process of inflation is that when inflation stops, it doesn’t stop all over at the same time. What tends to happen is that it stops in some places and those then become universes. And elsewhere, in what we now call a multiverse, inflation would go on, and only later more pocket universes would form, and there could be an infinite numbers of these pocket universes formed altogether by this process that we call eternal inflation. The point is that if there is really a multiverse... each of these pocket universes could have different laws of physics.

I witnessed a video recording of this statement by Dr. Guth, transcribing it myself, from a cable TV science program. Notice in this quote by our “revered cosmologist” how it is sufficient for Him to explain away God with a “could be” that “could have”. In other words, he is comfortable to dismiss God with a ‘guess’ inside another ‘guess’. And I mean he is plainly making this ‘statement of faith’ in these terms.

And notice also that just as *organic evolutionists* need an unimaginable amount of time, this *evolutionary cosmologist* shows us that he too is counting on an unimaginable number of “pocket universes” to make the odds ‘reasonable’ that a “pocket universe” like ours could have ‘randomly’ and ‘accidentally’ formed. Why such a ‘way out theory’? Because *scientists* are now beginning to understand that the odds that our Universe could exist all by itself is statistically impossible, because if it is the only one, the only reasonable conclusion is that there must be a Creator God. This is why Dr. Guth is ‘guessing’, or should I say ‘hoping’, that “there is really a Multiverse” with an infinite number of “pocket universes” such that each have different compositions and *constructions* of *matter* and *energy*, and “different laws of physics”, almost all of which ‘could not have’ *life-supporting characteristics*, though an infinite number of them supposedly make it ‘statistically possible’ that one like ours could exist. Because “if there is really a Multiverse”, and if they’re all the same as ours, then he’s really only got a ‘infinitely’ bigger problem ‘explaining away God’.

And I mean a “pocket universe” like ours—that somehow has perfectly “fine-tuned” *matter* and *forces* to support *life*—is really impossible to explain by itself, but “infinite numbers” of universes like ours is unthinkable, except to possibly further **glorify God**. So it is clear to me that he chooses these particular ‘guesses’ in order to ignore God. But this is just His **ungodly** perspective. And surely most

evolutionary scientists will ‘spin’ their ‘guesses’ and ‘conclusions’ of what they discover about the nature of God’s Creation in order to exclude God, while a **true** and **abounding** perspective of God seeks to reconcile our discoveries about His Creation with who He is and how He is faithful to Himself, to His Word, and to us—and I mean in cases where we’re dealing with real **deep** discoveries and not simply with **deceit** and **lies**. But as always with anyone in the process of being **overcome** by **the world**, there will remain the need to ‘separate the wheat from the tares’.

But lots of *theories* in the past that at first seemed surprising and fantastic were eventually confirmed, and by using methods that were not previously imagined. And this is not just what The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God is supposed to be like. It is also what **revelations** about God’s **creation** are supposed to be like too—unending. And I mean God surely could make a Multiverse that would indeed eventually and unendingly be seen to **glorify** Him. But I also mean that we have to be on guard because our **adversary the devil** is always trying to twist the **truth** about God and His Creation to glorify himself and/or **deny** God.

And our **adversary the devil** tends to get some temporary victories along the way. But what always finally happens is that God...

...having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it [Col 2:15](#).

And again, we will **see** by this **study** that this is not just what God did with Jesus on the cross. This is God’s ‘MO’ (“mode” or “method of operation”, Latin abbreviation of *modus operandi*). It’s how he does things again and again and again. This is part of what God means when He says,

For I am the LORD, I change not... [Mal 3:6](#).

So though, as we will also confirm, Satan’s tactics have changed, God’s, however diverse and complex, **change not**. And we will confirm these characteristics of God much more clearly in **SECTION 5** through **12**. But every Christian should already **know** that the ‘guesses’ of **fools**—who **speak** in order to **deny** God, or **speak for God** too often **ignorantly** or ‘immaturely’—lead to **shame** and/or **destruction**, because they will eventually be **snared** by their own words. As the **proverbs** teach,

The wicked is snared by the transgression of his lips... [Pro 12:13](#).

And,

A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips are the snare of his soul [Pro 18:7](#).

And don’t forget that anyone who either ignores or denies God is a **fool**, and by definition is **wicked**.

Again, most *evolutionary cosmologists* would not deny that an ‘extraordinarily particular’ and ‘minutely narrow range of the strengths and dynamics’ of *forces*, matched with a ‘remarkably particular construction and quantity’ of *matter*, in both small and large scales, is all together required in order to *support complex life* as we know it. And the growingly popular—shall I say inescapable—‘solution’ for these impossibly long odds is to ‘water them down’ with “eternal inflation” where “infinite

numbers” of unique “alternate” or “pocket” *universes* form, which, because of even the slightest differences between them, make most all of these imagined ‘alternates’ unable to *support life*, let alone *support complex life*. But these *lifeless* ‘other’ *universes* must exist or the odds ours could exist would be ‘infinitely worse’, and that is, if you’re aim is to **deny** God. So this greatly ‘inflated theory’ makes the odds that a *universe* like ours could ‘randomly’ and ‘accidentally’ exist as ‘reasonable’ as the ‘theory’ itself. But what is reasonable about this *theory* is that it may help us ‘turn another corner’, or get a ‘bigger picture’ of our Creator than you have likely considered before. And one way or another, and though, again, we must be careful of ‘the leaven in this lump’, we should expect to ‘separate out’, unendingly, new **revelations**. And I mean we should all **come to... revelations 2 Co 12:1**, and that is, **revelation** after **revelation**, that God is bigger than we ever imagined before.

But did you notice that it is impossible that such a *multiverse* ‘could’ result in a permanently expanding *Big Freeze* as predicted in ‘narrower’ versions of *lambda CDM theory*, even given that ‘marvelous load’ of *dark matter* and *energy* supposedly pushing the issue? I mean if any “pocket” of a *multiverse* is unstoppably expanding, it must eventually “bounce” off others elsewhere, and whether neighboring “pockets” are *expanding* or not. And an unstoppably *expanding* “pocket” surely must eventually *collide* with another “pocket” which “could have” different *laws of physics*, which ‘could’ result in a change in the *physical laws* of them both, now couldn’t it?

But I’m also talking about some even more ‘far out’ yet somewhat popular *theories* competing within the “branes” (wait for the pun) of *evolutionary cosmologists*. That would be *string theory* or *superstring theory*, which sometimes implies “large extra dimensions”, leading some of these imaginative *mathematicians* to *theorize*, or again really fantasize, about even more ‘mind-blowing’ *models* of “recycling” *universes*, some involving even more bizarre ways of getting that inevitable *Big Bounce* or *Big Rip*, including *models* where “collisions” between *large extra dimensional* “bubbles” ‘rip open’ when their *branes* (read, “membranes”) “collide”. And such *models* are arguably even more imaginative—and more ‘mathematically complicated’—than Dr. Guth’s *theory*. Still the most popular versions of *string theory* remain ‘mathematically compatible’ with *lambda CDM theory* and Dr. Guth’s *theory of inflation*.

String theorists imagine “extra dimensional” *subatomic* “circles” or “loops” or “strings” that allow certain *subatomic particles* the ability to “vibrate” or “oscillate” ‘in and out of’ the more commonly known realm of the *4 dimensions* of *height*, *width*, *depth* and *time*. And *string theory* is another avenue, with its apparently endless possible *constructions* and *operations*, that attempts to explain and reconcile all *particles* and forces into a general “theory of everything”. And again, the possibilities are literally endless. And I mean *string theory* is a ‘big shovel digging a bottomless pit’ that only further reveals just how **deep** God ‘could be’. But since the “string theory revolution” of the mid 90’s, the most popular *string theories* involve just *10 dimensions*—*height*, *width*, *depth* and *time*, plus 6 more *extra dimensions*.

But the first “string theories” were proposed around the time that Einstein’s General Relativity Theory was published in 1916, but lay mostly dormant until the mid-century, 3-decade rise and fall of *S-matrix theory*—a competing theory to *quantum field theory* that identified the more massive *subatomic particles*, the *fermions*, as not remaining at a point, but “vibrating” within ‘extremely small spheres’. This *theory*, in the late 60’s, was applied to the *strong force*, and finally triggered a revival of theories concerning “extra-dimensional space” that ‘took off’

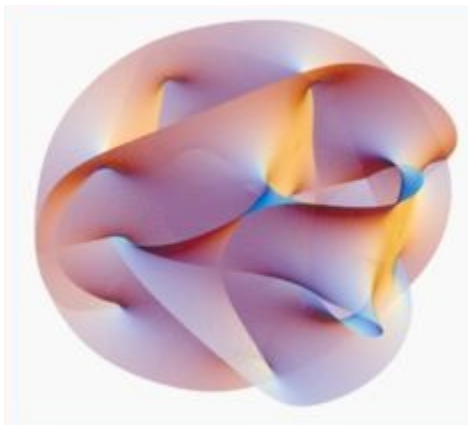
as they were reconnected to *quantum field theory* in the 80's, with further 'breakthroughs' during the "Second Superstring Revolution" of the 90's. This is one way to look at it anyway.

So by the start of this last resurgence there were 5 major competing "string theories", now called "superstring theories" because they are not using just 5 or 6 dimensions, but 10, each mathematically predicting operations of the 'bulk' of *atomic particles* in *10 dimensions*. And though just about any number of *dimensions* are mathematically possible, 10 turned out to be compatible with our present understanding of the *standard model of particle physics*, including *lambda CDM* and *Inflation theory*.

Time for a review. Remember the *subatomic particles* with "bulk" or "rest mass" are classified as *fermions*. These include the *quarks* and *leptons*. And remember that the 6 "flavors" of *quarks* are the particles that make up *protons* and *neutrons*, and *electrons* are one of the 6 "flavors" of *leptons*, as are the *neutrinos*. So we'll mostly be talking about the "vibrations" or "oscillations" of the *quarks* that make up *protons* and *neutrons*, and the *leptons* including *electrons* and *neutrinos*, but also about *mesons* as they are also constructions from the 6 "flavors" of *quarks*. And we will also be talking about the *subatomic particles* without "rest mass", classified as *bosons*, which include the *gauge bosons*, or "force-carriers", including *gluons* for the *strong force*, *W and Z bosons* for the *weak force*, *photons* for the *electromagnetic force*, but also the *Higgs bosons* and *gravitons* which are among the 'elusive' *bosons* predicted to "mediate" and "carry" the *gravitational force*. But also remember that though many *bosons* are 'massless bundles' or *quanta* of *energy* that have no "rest mass", the LHC is trying to convert their pure *energy* to *mass* through "high energy" *hadron*, or in this case, *proton collisions*. This should remind you too that *hadrons* are a sub-classification of *fermions* because a *hadron* is a *construction* of *quarks*. Again, *hadrons* include *protons*, *neutrons* and *mesons*.

But I said 'many' *bosons* are 'massless bundles' of *energy* because *mesons*, though *hadrons*, are not classified as *fermions*, but are instead classified as *bosons*. This classification is because of their *charge* and *spin*, and because they only exist for a split second in the process of performing their 'mediation roles' where they almost instantaneously *decay* into *electrons*, becoming *fermions*, but they also can *decay* into *photons* remaining *bosons*. And sorry, it's all really a lot more complicated than this, and I mean too complicated for me too.

And by-the-way, from my history of *string theory* you might also be able to see why *string theorist* often don't see eye to eye with other *particle physicists*. The 3-decades-long 'tug of war' between S-matrix Theory's "vibrating-point *space*" and Quantum Field Theory's "single-point *space*" has surely left some 'tears in the fabric of spacetime'. In 1978, at Revelle College at the University of California, San Diego, S-matrix Theory wasn't mentioned in my required undergraduate "Quantum Mechanics" class as far as I noticed, neither did I see it in my Richard Feynman *Quantum Electrodynamics [QED] Physics* textbook, 'edited' from his best selling, *Feynman Lectures on Physics*. But keep in mind that the renowned physicist Richard Feynman, who was often referred to as 'the next Einstein', won the Nobel Prize in Physics in 1965 for contributions to *particle physics*, while I, in the class using his text, got a "C". Still, though S-matrix Theory died out in the 70's, and though Feynman finally came out clearly against *string theory* before his death in 1988, a form of S-matrix Theory actually survives as *string theory*. And though it's arguably true that Feynman advanced Einstein's *theories* as much as Einstein advanced Newton's, Feynman was an outspoken *atheist* who also openly abandoned his Jewish heritage, so really he's no more than a **vessel** of **dishonour**



used by God to 'carry His water' that ultimately will only help to **glorify** God. (See [Psa 22:23](#)).

And you can guess which side a *particle physicist* is on when they dismiss *string theory* as 'unmeasurable' and therefore not *physics*. In Feynman's day and perspective, this was true. But ideas of how to measure it are emerging, as well as the means to do it, like the LHC, for example. And it all seems to hinge on measuring the *particles* governing *gravity*, because by doing so we may eventually be able to determine which of the endless possible constructions of "extra-dimensional space", matches our

present reality. For example, *extra dimensional space* may be revealed by finer and even more 'energetic' measurements of the behavior of the *Higgs Boson* and the *graviton* by *particle accelerators* that are even more powerful than the LHC.

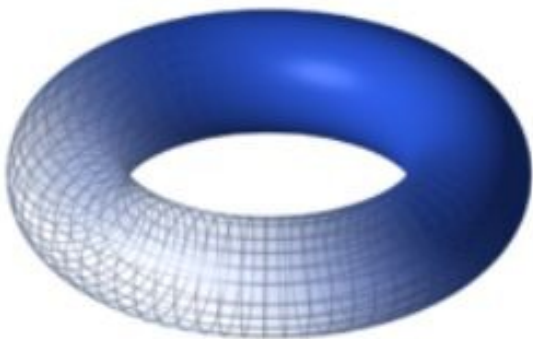
And the "Second Superstring Revolution" erupted in the mid-90's because Dr. Edward Witten and his colleagues announced the discovery of 'strong mathematical evidence' that all 5 of the different, supposedly competing, *10-dimensional superstring theories* were really just the different "limits" of the new *11-dimensional theory* that they now call *M-theory*. And doesn't this 'coincidence' really sound like their on to something?

All I really understand for sure about these *superstring theories* is that they can, 'in theory', manifest themselves in a great variety of ways. But to oversimplify, and sticking to *theories* compatible with *lambda CDM* and *inflation theory*, you could describe them in two main classifications. One branch of this *theory* sees the *massive subatomic particles*, the *fermions*, as "oscillating" in "closed strings", and the other sees them "vibrating" on "open strings", and possibly connected to *branes*.

"Closed strings" are something like S-matrix Theory, except the *fermions* don't 'vibrate in a sphere', they "vibrate" or "oscillate" in "circles" or "loops". And these "loops", as you add "extra dimensions" tend to "wrap around" themselves forming shapes. And this 'fast track' that these *fermions* 'race around' is very, very small, but make it possible for these *particles* to 'appear' in *4-dimensional space* at only 'one point' along this 'track'. In other words, these *fermions* could be described as very quickly 'strobing in and out' of *4-dimensional spacetime* as they 'race around' their 'infinitesimally small courses'. And since these "closed-string loops" are so small—sub-subatomic really—the *extra dimensional space* that these "loops" define is identified as "compactified". And its hard for me to imagine how even the 'simplest' *5 dimensional* "closed-string" model works, where that single, little "loop" somehow 'escapes' the *4 dimensions*, let alone how it might "wrap around" itself half a dozen times, or even near a couple dozen times, all on a track mostly 'outside' *4-dimension spacetime*. But a "closed" *5 dimensional* 'single loop track', versus a "closed" 10 or 11 dimensional 'interwoven' or 'wrapped-around track', is the difference between *string theory* and *superstring theory*, though no matter how many *extra dimensions* are in play, it's all usually referred to as just 'string theory' anyway. And the most popular models of these "closed" *superstring tracks* have a name. They're called **Calabi-Yau manifolds**. They were given this name in 1985 by Philip Candelas and his colleagues to remember E. Calabi's work, who first studied these shapes in the 50's, and S. T. Yau's work, who in the late 70's proved these shapes are a classification of *Ricci-flat manifolds*—which apparently makes them compatible with the current popular *standard models of big bang cosmology* and *particle physics*. This picture (p.88) is a mathematically derived model of an extremely small or "compactified" *6-extra-dimensional track*—appropriate for a *10*

dimensional model—that *fermions* (the *massive subatomic particles*) could ‘race around’, as they ‘strobe’, at one point along their ‘track’, ‘into and out of’ *4 dimensional spacetime*, and ‘racing’ so quickly that they ‘appear’ to be in *4 dimensional spacetime* continually, but really mostly aren’t. But I should add that “compactified” *extra dimensional space* is presently undetectable, though apparently experiments that begin to detect it are presently ongoing. And the difference between “closed” and “open string” models can be “large”. In the ‘open branch’ of *string theory*, *fermions* also “oscillate” over *subatomic distances*, but these ‘raceways’ are more like straight-line “drag strips” or “tubes”. And in some models, at the end of these *strings* is a *brane*, also called an *M-brane*, (read, “membrane”). And if I understand it correctly, all *fermions* in these models somehow connect by these *strings* to a single “large”, universe-sized *brane*, which is the border to the ‘space’ that contains the “large extra dimensions”. I have heard it described by *string theorists* in this way, that we are all like “flies” stuck on an extremely “large” computer screen, and on the other side of the screen, which is this *brane*, several other *dimensions* ‘operate’ that are presently undetectable by us “flies” in *4-dimensional spacetime*. But I really have no picture of these ‘open tracks’ connected to ‘branes’ containing ‘large extra-dimensional space’. I mean how can all the *fermions* in *4 dimensional spacetime* be directly connected by extremely small *strings* to a single, ‘universe-sized’ *brane* containing isolated, *extra-dimensional space*? And I mean no wonder that those who can imagine such things get ‘swelled heads’.

But to spare those of us with ‘normal brains’, I left out that there is also *bosonic string theory*. This is one of the oldest theories, but is taken less seriously because it has the “problem” of predicting a *particle* with an “imaginary mass” called a *tachyon*, but otherwise supposedly comes with equally ‘good math’, at least given certain special circumstance. This *theory* instead assumes that it’s not the *fermions*, but the *bosons* or “force carriers” or the ‘massless’ *quantums of energy*, that are doing the ‘racing around’ these ‘tracks’, and doing it on possibly either “closed” or “open” *string tracks*. But in order for these *bosonic string theories* to be compatible with *lambda CDM* and *inflation theory*, they evidently must operate in “closed” *strings*, and specifically in *26 dimensions*, including the ‘normal’ *4 spacetime dimensions*. The shapes of these “compactified”, “closed” *strings* or *manifolds* in *bosonic theory* are different too. One popular shape is a ‘donut’ called a *torus* (p.88). But evidently the shape of this *torus* can change as *bosons* travel



within it. In this “cycle” or “flux”, as a *bosons* distance to the axis of revolution decreases, the *ring torus* collapses into a *spindle torus*, becoming ‘squashed-together’ where it ‘loses its hole’ and looks more like a ‘spinning top’, and it completes the cycle by finally ‘collapsing into a sphere’. And since this is a model that sees the *string tracks* themselves in constant “flux”, it is identified as, are you ready for this, *flux compactification*. And no, I didn’t just make that up.

But getting ‘back to the future’, (sorry, another personally unavoidable pun), I’ve been trying to get a better picture of *string theory* for years, but I’m still not satisfied with mine. But then again, who is? It’s necessarily much more complicated than the *standard model of particle physics* because it takes this *model* and makes it operate in multiple either *large* or *compactified dimensions*. The existence of *large extra dimensions* could evidently “infinitely” expand the actual size of our Universe, while

the existence of “compactified” *extra dimensions* would not significantly increase the size of our *4 dimensional spacetime*. And though there are a variety of popular but competing theories, they are all apparently subject to further correction, refinement and expansion, as competing *theorized particles* continue to be measured or be eliminated by measurement, including the ones expected to be detected by the LHC, or possibly others no one predicted, which will send *evolutionists* scurrying back to their drawing boards for the next, surely even more complicated, “theory of everything”, as surely as they will continue to **deny** God. But no wonder God sees these ‘intellectual giants’ as really nothing more than ‘flies on a computer screen’. And I mean that no matter how new discoveries offer clarification, they also inevitably force the discoverers to expand and further complicate their ‘theory of everything’. And how presumptuous. I mean how foolish or immature can you be to think that you could ever fully and finally define God or his Creation.

And still, accepting that such ‘constructions’ are at least ‘mathematically’ possible, and surely no problem for God, this brings us to the *Big Bounce*, also imagined as the *Big Rip*, each of which are a description of transitions in various *cyclical models of cosmology*. These continuous “cycles” restart with a *Big Bounce* or a *Big Rip*, which is the “collision” of *large extra-dimensional branes* that are believed to cause a type of *Big Bang* which may or may not eventually become a *Big Crunch* before the next, supposedly eventual, *Big Bounce* or *Big Rip*.

One *model*, proposed in 1998, suggesting that *large extra-dimensional “membrane” collisions* happen maybe every trillion years or so, is the *ADD model*, named from initials of the scientists who proposed it, Drs. Arkani-Hamed, Dimopoulos, and Dvali. This is a *model* where “open strings” connect to *large extra dimensions*, which are thought to be the “bulk” of any given *universe*. I mean again, with “closed-strings” and “compactified” *extra-dimensional space*, the *extra-dimensions* are so small that they are expected to be contained pretty much within *4-dimensional spacetime*. But in the *ADD model*, *extra-dimensional space* can be infinitely larger, and heavier than the *4-dimensional space* that it is ‘attached to’. This *model* also offers an explanation to the debate about the relative weakness of the *gravitational force* compared to the other 3 *forces*. It does this by requiring that 3 of the *force fields* of the *standard model of particle physics*—the *strong*, *weak* and *electromagnetic forces*—be confined ‘atop’ and ‘outside’ *large extra dimensional space*, staying completely inside *4 dimensional spacetime*, while *gravity* is somewhat more free to “leak” into the several additional much “larger” *spatial dimensions*, supposedly ‘weakened’ or ‘dissipated’ in this ‘process’.

And the *ADD model* would be a type of an *ekpyrotic universe*, or *ekpyrotic scenario*, which is a variation from the *standard model of cosmic inflation* that popularly assumes that *inflation* is the result of the explosion of a *Big Bang singularity*. The difference in the *ekpyrotic models* is that “inflation” does not occur because of the “explosion” of *matter* ‘concentrated at a point’, but by the *collisions* of two ‘universe-sized’, *large extra dimensions*. But such *models* often otherwise still accommodate the *standard models of Big Bang* and *lambda CDM cosmology*, and they are usually “cyclic models”, because, after all, no one really wants a permanent *Big Freeze*, now do we.

A notable *ekpyrotic model* using *M-theory*, where the *Big Bang* is explained as a *collision* between two “brane-worlds”, came out of the work of Paul Steinhardt and Neil Turok, called the *Steinhardt-Turok model*. These ‘heavyweight’ *cosmologists* proposed that the *collision* of two ‘universe-sized’ *M-branes* or *orbifolds* could cause “nearly scale-free expansion” (read, *lambda CDM inflation*), which would look much like the “explosion” of a *Big Bang singularity*. This *model* is also “cyclic”, though

collisions between *branes* are also considered much more rare than the supposed age of our present Universe. And the infrequency of such *collisions* is thought to be partly due to the expectation that such *universes* would also be “flat” like a pancake. And there are some ideas about measurements that could distinguish between the *ekpyrotic* and the more popular *inflationary models*, with some experiments apparently already underway, in addition to what we may learn from the LHC.

By-the-way, Neil Turok worked with Steven Hawking to develop the *Hawking-Turok instanton solutions* which describe the ‘birth’ of an *inflationary universe* as ‘instant on’. Sounds like what might happen if God ‘spoke creatively’, huh.

Again, *ekpyrotic models*, as opposed to ‘standard’ *inflationary models*, predict that our visible *4-dimensional universe* is attached by *open strings* to a ‘universe-sized’ *brane* that contains the *large extra dimensions* which constitute the “bulk” of any given *universe*. And the “collision” of two “branes” supposedly results in a transition from the ‘pre-collision expansion’ or ‘contraction’ to a new ‘post-collision expansion’. This would be either an interrupted *Big Crunch* or *Big Freeze* followed immediately by a new *Big Bang*, where the *matter* and *CMB radiation* we see today were generated during the most recent “collision”. And I hope you realize that I only offer these ‘trillion-year theories’ because they may at least offer ideas about how God constructed (read, ‘spoke into existence’) His Creation, and that it may be that He has created an infinitely sustainable Universe, but that He surely did this only about 6,000 years ago, as we will best **prove** when we **rightly** handle His Word on the subject, starting in **SECTION 4**.

And we could also consider the *DGP model* (more initials of scientists), which predicts that our *4-dimensional spacetime* is embedded in a *5-dimensional spacetime* called *Minkowski space*. Or we could consider the *Baum-Frampton model* involving what they call “phantom energy” that may or may not involve *string theory*. Or even Dr. Lee Smolin’s ‘naturally selective’ *fecund universes model* that predicts ‘reproducing’ or ‘expanding’ new *universes* “on the other side” of the *formation of black holes*. So I’m really just ‘scratching the surface’, sticking to more popular *theories* and *experimentation*. But more and more *cosmologists* are being forced to believe we live in some kind of *multiverse*, and are coming to the conclusion that there will never be a *telescope* so powerful that we can even see to the end of our own “bubble”. In fact, more and more of them are counting on it.

But maybe the most attention was attracted when Edward Witten announced the discovery that the 5 competing *10-dimensional superstring theories* were likely just ‘subsets’ of an all-encompassing *11-dimensional theory*, naming it *M-theory*. It was popularly thought that he meant ‘membrane theory’, also implying he thought that *large extra dimensions* were possible, even likely. But he has not committed himself to this conclusion, though the *theory* has remained a focus of attention.

Recently, “Britain’s most celebrated living scientist”, Stephen Hawking, wrote,

M-theory is the only candidate for a complete theory of the universe
(*The Grand Design*, 2010).

But does this mean that Dr. Hawking expects that there are really such things as *large extra dimensions*, and that a collision of a couple of these ‘cosmic juggernauts’ could have been responsible for our ‘Big Bang’, and could account for *CMB radiation*, instead of a single “unstable” *singularity* “explosion”, that is still more popularly associated with the ‘*Big Bang*’? I’m not sure he’s committed to that either. And it’s certainly not even that ‘simple’, because the possibilities have become so much more broad that no one is as sure as they were back in

the 1980's that we're on the verge of a "theory of everything". Dr. Hawking, for example, predicted in 1988 that the final "theory of everything" would be found by the end of the 20th Century. But he now suspects, given the ever-increasing possibilities, that it may take until the end of this present century. So our 'greatest scientists' are realizing, again, that the Universe is likely much more complicated than they had previously imagined.

And I'm becoming **more sure** that anything man can imagine, God has already **created**, and that it is only a matter of time till we find where more yet undiscovered 'dimensions' within His Creation exist and operate. But you have to keep in mind that all these "string theories" can only presently be fully tested in the realm of *mathematics*, and are at best some really well thought out 'guesses' as to how to reconcile the *operations* of all *particles* and *forces*—especially *gravity*—with what we have confirmed or predicted so far. Still it all sounds like God to me, and it sounds like another way He might reveal Himself to us, that is, if we can eventually single out the real model from the infinite possibilities, and separate out the **ungodly** bias or **leaven in** this unimaginable large **lump**. And mainly all we have to do is **understand** that whatever level of **understanding** we climb to, with God there will always be 'higher plateaus' of **understanding** to reach for after that, where 'theories' we have left behind may apply, and where some of the 'models' we ruled out may eventually find application.

And naturally I'm guessing that one day **we** too will be able to 'oscillate into and out of' *extra dimensions* too, as I expect Jesus did in the several occasions where He appeared to His disciples just after His **resurrection**. I also expect that **we**, after The Rapture when we become **like him** [1Jo 3:2](#), will be able to do what appears to us now as 'miraculous works', including, as appropriate, 'calming storms' and 'moving mountains'. And whatever the case, it's more than just Jesus, it's also God's Creation that suggests all these possibilities. So just as I experience The Natural Eternal Progression of Understanding through The Word of God, I also expect that, as our **understanding** of God's Creation increases, we'll discover that more and more of these *models* will be confirmed as components of our reality, that is, till the time comes that it will all **pass away**, and we get a **new** and better **creation to study** and **grow to understand** and **subdue** and have **dominion over**, more and more, **for ever**. See [Genesis 1:28](#).

And by-the-way, in the *Steinhardt-Turok model*, *dark energy* serves as the *force* between the *branes*, and serves a crucial role in several issues within the *model*. And I should also disclose that some presently calculate that *superstring theories* with 12 or more *dimensions*, ones that are also thought to be compatible with *standard models*, like *Bosonic Theory*, for example, apparently don't have "membranes" containing *large extra dimensions*, but only work with "compactified" *extra dimensions*, and some with more than a couple dozen *dimensions*.

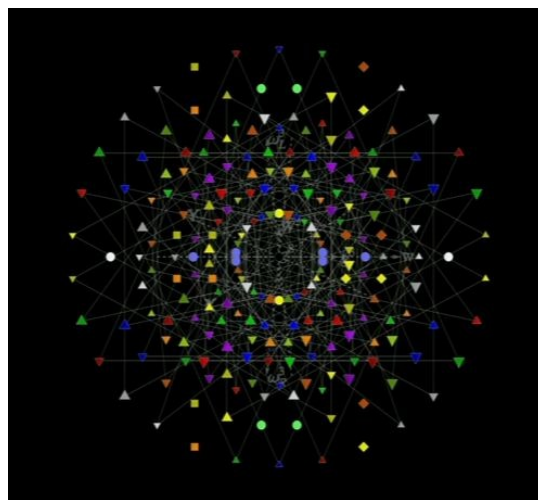
But it's also time I should 'come clean'. I mean that I've been holding back that, according to "preliminary reports", the LHC research "severely constrains" all "open string theories" that allow for "large extra dimensions", which means that it appears that they don't exist, at least at the level of complexity *scientists* are now considering, which is a kind of relief really, because evidently *theories* like *ADD* suggest the possibility that 'high-energy' *hadron* collisions could produce *singularities*—in this case, tiny *black holes*—that could grow to swallow the entire Earth, (dun, Dun, DUHHH!—old-fashioned 'scary movie' soundtrack intended). In other words, we've apparently 'dodged' a 'speed-of-light', 'global-killer', *hadron* 'bullet'.

And I should also 'come clean' that early results from the LHC "cast doubt" on some of the '*modified gravity theories*' that 'work' without *dark matter* and *energy*,

including the one that predicts an increase in the *gravitational force* at great distances. But theories that reject *dark matter* and *energy* and expect *gravity* to be 'modified' at low accelerations, including *MOND* and *MOD*, are still in the running as far as I know. However in all models there are still issues that are unresolved, let alone measured, including that there are no candidates for *particles* in the present *standard model of particle physics* to account for certain "issues" within many popular *string theory models*. Well, at least until a certain Maui 'surf bum' came along.

And I'm talking about a legitimate 'surf bum', because he used to avoid rent and maximize his time for surfing by living in his van at various "beautiful" beaches in Maui, Hawaii. But really, time in the outdoors is only one of his priorities. His second priority is based on his education. He has undergraduate degrees from UCLA in physics and math, and a Ph.D in physics from my alma mater, UCSD. But his love of the outdoors is not the only reason he became a surf bum. Another reason is that he rejects *string theory* as "too speculative", and jobs for his 'specialties' were mostly only in *string theory*. So, having wisely invested his graduate science stipend, he moved to Maui to do research on his own. On Maui he volunteered in schools, taught at and eventually turned down tenure at the University of Hawaii, Maui College, and all so he could have time to continue his own research, decompress in the "beautiful" outdoors, and spend time with his third priority, though I should say first, his girlfriend, and all while living in his van 'camping' at various beautiful Maui beaches.

His name is Dr. Antony Garrett Lisi, but he goes by Garrett Lisi. And he may have just discovered a structure for the *atom* that could make *scientist* believe that they are again about to confirm the "theory of everything", including predicting many new *subatomic particles* that some *string theories* require, except that, of course, Dr. Lisi's model doesn't consider *string theory* at all. Then again, all *string theorists* have to do is take Dr. Lisi's



model and imagine that it's *fermions* or *bosons* 'oscillate in and out' of 4-*dimensional spacetime*. Dr. Lisi's model, that he calls *E8 theory*, (Everything 8th Dimensional Theory), or "An Exceptionally Simple Theory of Everything", is only "simple" compared to *string theory's* potentially extremely complicated *extra-dimensional* configurations. And his model includes the over 200 subatomic particles already considered, most of which have already been verified experimentally, but he also predicts 20 new ones, and all within a "beautiful" structure that has 248 "charge dimensions", including the *Higgs boson* and the *graviton*. But don't misunderstand, these 'dimensions' Dr. Lisi speaks of are only the 8 'directions' that *atomic particles* align themselves in by *charge* and *spin* in the normal 4 *spacetime dimensions*, not *string theory dimensions*.

And though this **248 particle model of the atom** (chart, p.92) is deeply complicated, the shape of this structure is considered by some mathematicians to be the most beautiful mathematical structure of all. But to have any chance of really getting a 'full view' of this structure, I recommend Dr. Lisi's 18 minute presentation about it available on the *TED.com* website, web address on p.92, (http://www.ted.com/talks/garrett_lisi_on_his_theory_of_everything.html). But you'll likely need to watch it several times—or more—to get your best, though surely not complete, picture of it. And Dr. Lisi, in his presentation, informs us that

the CERN *subatomic* “particle collider” near Geneva, Switzerland is presently working to identify as many of the *particles* that his model suggests as possible.

And speaking of ‘speculative’, I think Dr. Lisi is not speculative enough. Focus has its necessary place, but for getting the bigger picture I think he’s just too ‘specialized’. And I mean he apparently rejects the concept of *Cold Dark Matter* in *lambda CDM cosmology*. But the *theories* involving *dark matter* and *extra dimensions* with both “invisible” and “vibrating” particles have been around nearly a century now. And Dr. Lisi’s *model* is in no danger just because some *model* of *string theory* is also valid. It just means that some of Lisi’s *particles* could “oscillate” while also retaining the “beautiful” mathematical *atomic structure* that he imagines, and that there may be other ‘invisible’ types of *matter*, with still other *structures*, that also interact with the “visible” one in certain circumstances.

And let’s try to imagine some of that. I mean it’s now no stretch of the imagination to understand that *electrons*—one of the smaller ‘mass-bearing’ *fermions*—were once thought to “orbit” the *nucleus* of the *atom* and thereby create the illusion that *matter* is solid, because the *solidness* of *matter* is mostly the result of the *speed* of the *electron* ‘whirling around’ the *nucleus* so fast that it’s virtually ‘everywhere’ in that *shell* surrounding the *nucleus* at once. And in a sense this is what *electrons* do, but it is *quantum physicists* like Richard Feynman that discovered that it’s a lot more complicated than that. I remember in my “Quantum Mechanics” class at UCSD using Dr. Feynman’s text how we were encouraged to prepare ourselves for some ‘amazing revelations’ when it came to the “behavior” of *subatomic particles*. In the case of *electrons*, Feynman’s analogy changed from describing them moving as *particles orbiting* the *nucleus* to *particles* that move around the *nucleus* more like a *wave*. And I guess this means they move so fast that they move less like *particles* and more like a *wavefront*. This is much harder to imagine. And many other *subatomic particles* can move in equally amazing ways, including traveling from point A to point B in less than the shortest measurable *time*. Again, no wonder when it comes to the actual location of any given *atomic electron*, all we know about it is what *particle physicists* call the “Uncertainty Principle”, which means it’s impossible to specifically locate an *electron* ‘operating’ as part of an *atom*, yet.

But with this now longstanding ‘understanding’, it’s not much further to get an equally simplistic picture of *string theory*. Now all we have to do is imagine that as an *electron* ‘wavefronts’ its way around the *nucleus* of the *atom*, it may also be ‘strobing’ in and out of *4-dimensional spacetime* at the same ‘time’, though so quickly that it only ‘appears’ to be ‘wavefronting’ its way around the *nucleus*. And this could imply that *matter* is even more of an ‘illusion’ than the ‘illusion’ we thought it was, because *electrons* may be spending more ‘time’ outside of *4-dimensional spacetime* than in it. But again, this amount of ‘time’, though very small, gives the ‘illusion of an illusion’ that *matter* is ‘continuously solid’.

This also may mean that those supposedly ever-present and more easily locatable *quarks* in the *nucleus* that make up *protons* and *neutrons* and account for most of the *mass*, are really ‘strobing in and out of’ *4 dimensional spacetime* too, spending more time ‘missing in action’ than ‘present and accounted for’. But this all makes sense to me really, because it’s awesome and mindblowing—exactly the characteristics I would expect from the awesome and mindblowing God that I have come to **know**, and that you too will come to **know** increasingly **better** if you **continue** with this **study**. Remember Paul says about Jesus that,

For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions,

or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist [or “hold together”] [Col 1:16-17](#).

And I mean it’s becoming easier and easier to see how one day soon God will be able to make **all things** stop ‘holding together’. Jesus says,

Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. [Mat 24:35](#); [Mar 13:31](#); [Luk 21:33](#); [Mat 5:18](#); [Luk 16:17](#).

Brain broken? Mine gets ‘broken’ and ‘fried’ all the time. And it took me decades to get where I am. So if you’re like me and are not a genius, and want to more fully **understand** and **apply** all this **knowledge of God**, you must find within yourself a **gift** from God. And I mean you must experience **vehement desire** and **zeal** to **continue** to **study** God’s Creation like a committed **disciple**, and **apply** it **precept upon precept** throughout the whole Word of God from now on, as we will do throughout the rest of this **study**, and as everyone will do throughout the rest of **eternity** who enter The Kingdom of God. But the point is that growing in the **understanding** of God and His Creation should involve a little ‘smoke coming out of your ears’ from time to time. I mean as often you increasingly ‘handle’ it, and to the level that you can yet **bear it**. And don’t you now **know** you should **continue** to **study**, **work** and **press** to be **able** to do **bear** such **work** more and more, and not just about God’s Creation? But for now think of this **study** as one of the **ways** to **build you up** [Act 20:32](#), so you can eventually become **able** to ‘handle’ **strong meat** on any topic. See also [Psalm 90:12](#), [Proverbs 2:2](#), [22:17](#) and [23:12](#).

And sorry, but the **vehement desire** and **zeal** to **continue** to **study** like a committed **disciple** and **apply** this **knowledge** of God **precept upon precept** throughout the whole Word of God is a **gift of God**. The Apostle Paul **understood** that,

For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure
[Phl 2:13](#).

So it is no surprise that in the previous verse he warns us all to...

...work out your own salvation with fear and trembling [Phl 2:12](#).

And He means that you should be scared if you don’t have such **desire** to **obey** God, and even more so if you haven’t yet really sought **deep** enough into The Word of God to **know** what it is you are supposed to **fear** and **obey**.

But there is still another **deep** issue, ever growing in popularity, and which is often ‘extra dimensional’, that we should consider. I’m talking about *extraterrestrial life*. And I mean the kinds contained within *4-dimensional spacetime*, but also the kinds that are supposedly able to operate ‘outside’ of it. We will consider such *lifeforms* a little later in this section, and mostly in the next section, though, as you should **learn**, such a topic will have a way of continually ‘popping up’ for those who **continue** in The Word.

So getting back down to Earth, there is some comfort in people like Sir Dr. John Polkinghorn. He was a pioneer in the work leading to the discovery of the *quark*,

finally knighted for his service to the British Empire, but has since retired as a *scientist* to pursue his ministry as an Anglican priest. And his testimony is backed up by more than just **faith**. Throughout his career as a *scientist* he proved again and again that our Universe is nowhere near arbitrarily constructed, but remarkably, as he puts it, “fined tuned”, so that even the smallest ‘adjustment’ to any of the wide range of parameters it operates by would result in the end of *life* as we know it. About these incredibly long odds, he says,

Only a world whose forces are *very similar* [emphasis his] to the ones that we experience would be capable of producing complex life... This ‘fine tuning’ makes it clear that we don’t live in ‘any old world’; we live in a very particular Universe. And why is that; why are we so lucky? Or course religious belief offers you a very straightforward and attractive explanation.

Dr. Andreas (Andy) Albrecht is a *theoretical physicist cosmologist* presently teaching at UC Davis. In 1999, he and a colleague proposed, "A time varying speed of light as a solution to cosmological puzzles". And there is evidence that the *speed of light* is actually slowing down, a possibility with potentially disastrous implications for the Theory of Evolution, and suggesting instead a “varying speed of light cosmology” as an alternative to *cosmic inflation*. And Dr. Albrecht admits the “remarkable” construction of our Universe too, saying

One of the remarkable things is that when you add it all up, all these forces have to be exactly the way they are for life as we know it to exist. Change any one of them—dial the parameters—and something will go wrong—the planet will disappear, the Sun will shut down, the DNA will come unraveled. Some people call it the Goldilocks Paradigm — not too much, not too little, everything’s just right.

And examples of just how “just right” our Universe is to support *life* are abundant and increasing. To start with, it is calculated that our entire Universe itself is the just the right size and age (read, ‘in the right condition’) to *support life*. Apparently a *universe* either slightly less *massive* or more *massive* would be unsuitable for *human life*. It is also believed that even the slightest changes in the way the Big Bang occurred would make *life* impossible. Of course this is extrapolated from current ‘conditions’.

Dr. Robin Collins has a Ph.D in philosophy. His main interest is in exploring the difference between religion and science. But I would say he is a ‘qualified scientist’ too. He completed his triple major in Applied Mathematics, Physics, and Philosophy, at Washington State University, graduating summa cum laude (top of his class), with a 3.93 GPA. And in an interview in 2004 he observes,

Over the past thirty years or so, scientists have discovered that just about everything about the basic structure of the universe is balanced on a razor’s edge.

Indeed dozens of different characteristics of our Universe and its *physical laws* must be precisely “fine-tuned” for *physical life* to be possible. Some of these have come to be called *anthropic constants*, because changing any one of them even slightly

threatens the existence of *life*. These highly precise and interdependent 'environmental conditions' are part of what is known as the "Anthropic Principle"

Brandon Carter, the British mathematician who coined the term "anthropic principle" in 1974, noted the strange inequity of a *universe* that spends about 15 billion years "preparing" for the existence of a *creature*, mankind, but has only the potential to survive no more than 10 million years. Carter formalized this enormous imbalance between the apparent time required to produce the possibility for *human life* and the brevity of the survival of the *species* as the "anthropic principle inequality."

And another preeminent British mathematical physicist, Professor of Mathematics at the University of Oxford, Dr. Roger Penrose, expressed a kind of 'statement of faith' about this Anthropic Principle. In a documentary interview he concluded,

The extremely high level of fine-tuning astronomers and physicists discern powerfully suggests a purpose behind the universe.

So the *Anthropic Principle* is now the name used for the mounting evidence that the entire Universe is extremely "fine-tuned" or specifically designed to support *human life* on Earth. And it's not just a few broadly defined constants we're talking about here. No, there are more than a 100 (and counting) very narrowly defined and interconnected both fundamental *physical laws* or *constants* and 'environmental conditions' all working together for one "purpose" that strongly points to not just an 'intelligent Designer', but an ***infinite, omnipotent*** and 'omniscient' Designer and Creator.

Here are a few of those *constants* and 'balances' that show this design:

It is extrapolated that if the Universe had *expanded* at a rate one millionth more slowly than it did, or existed in a slightly less 'energetic condition', expansion would have stopped and the Universe would have collapsed on itself before any *stars* had formed. And if it had *expanded* faster, or existed in a slightly more 'energetic condition', then no *galaxies* would have formed. So the extrapolated rate of the Universe's *expansion* is an *anthropic constant*. Our preeminent *astrophysicist*, Dr. Stephen Hawking, for example, calculates that,

If the rate of expansion one second after the big bang had been smaller by even one part in a hundred thousand million million, the universe would have recollapsed before it ever reached its present size.

So it is also *evolutionists* that see *life* as only possible on this "razor's edge" rate of *expansion*, evidently 'originating' with a "razor's edge" precise amount of *energy*. But we can see that God made it perfectly 'balanced' to *support life* in whatever the timeframe.

Also the 'balance' between *matter* and *antimatter* needs to be precise to one part in ten billion for the Universe to grow and remain stable—no arbitrary 'tip of the scales' either.

For example, it has been calculated that if the average distance between the 200+ billion *stars* in our *galaxy* was altered slightly, *orbits* would become erratic, and there would be *extreme temperature variations* on Earth. By-the-way, traveling at *Space Shuttle* speed, or at about 5 *miles per second*, it would take over 200,000 years on average to travel from *star* to *star* within our *galaxy*.

And *galaxies* are *clusters* of *stars* often containing from millions to trillions of *stars*. And though it's unknown how many *galaxies* our Universe contains, some thinking it may be around a trillion—in the “visible” Universe, that is. But contrary to ‘popular thinking’, this great number of *stars* does not increase the chances for *extraterrestrial life*, because most *galaxies* are incompatible with *life*. In order for *life* to exist in a *galaxy*, it needs to meet several criteria. The following are just three of the “fine-tuned” characteristics a *galaxy* must have to *support life*.

The *Milky Way* is spiral-shaped. Of the three types of *galaxies*—*elliptical*, *irregular*, and *spiral*, the *spiral* type is most capable of hosting *human life*.

Our *Milky Way* measures 100,000 *lightyears* from end to end. However, if it were just a bit larger, or if we were a little closer to the center, or we were in a denser pack of *stars* within our *galaxy*, too much radiation and too many *gravitational disturbances* would prohibit *life* like ours.

And a stable Earth *orbit* that is necessary for *life* could not exist if our *galaxy* were slightly smaller. And a smaller *galaxy* is expected to offer inadequate heavy elements, such as *iron* and *carbon*, essential to *life*.

So our *Milky Way galaxy* meets these and many other conditions essential for *life*. Most others do not. And the same goes for our own *star* and its *planets*. Earth needs to revolve around a Sun that has just the right size, location, and conditions as ours does. But that's not all. We need other planets such as Jupiter and Mars to act as defense shields, protecting us from a potential catastrophic bombardment of *comets* and *meteors*, not to mention to be used by God for other awesome purposes, as we will see throughout the later sections of this **study**. We will also see how the Moon has been used by God as a shield, and likely will again. But now let's take a look at just a few more of the many conditions in our *solar system* that are just right for *life*.

If the Sun were much *redder*, or *bluer*, *photosynthesis* would be impeded, which is crucial to *life* on Earth.

If the *mass* of the Sun were a small percentage greater, it would burn too quickly and erratically to support *life*. And if it were smaller, its greater *flaring* would disrupt the Earth in a variety of ways.

If the *centrifugal force* (outward push) of *planetary movements* did not exactly balance the *centripetal* or *gravitational forces* (inward pull), nothing could be held in *orbit* around the Sun. This is another “razor's edge” *anthropic constant*.

If the Moon-Earth *gravitational interaction* were greater, *tidal effects* on the *oceans, atmosphere, and rotational period* would be too severe, and if less, *orbital changes* would cause an unstable *climate*. Either way, *life* on Earth would be impossible. Also, the Moon is just the right size to stabilize the Earth's *tilt* and is responsible for our seasons. If it weren't there, our *tilt* could 'swing widely' over a large range, making our winters 100 degrees colder and our summers 100 degrees warmer.

And as far as 'space aliens', if you listen to Coast to Coast AM, or just watch movies including this subject, you may believe that such 'aliens' have visited, or 'sent life' to Earth, or may even be presently interacting with us, having come from *galaxies* 'far, far away'. Or you may simply believe that the odds are that there is intelligent *life* on other *planets*. These ideas are not only popularized by Hollywood, but also by *evolutionists*. But the most recent evidence from *cosmology* tells a different story.

All indicators are now pointing to the fact that we live on an extremely "rare" *planet* perfectly positioned in an extremely "rare" *solar system*, ideally located in an extremely "rare" *galaxy*, within an 'extremely improbable' *universe*. So just how "rare" is our Earth?

If the Earth was merely 1% closer to the Sun, the oceans would vaporize. And if it was just 2% farther from the Sun, the oceans would freeze and the rain that enables life would be nonexistent.

If the rotation of the Earth took longer than 24 hours—all other conditions remaining the same—temperature differences would be too great between night and day. And if the rotation period were shorter, atmospheric wind velocities would be too great.

The 23-degree *axis tilt* of the Earth is just right for all other existing conditions. But if the *tilt* were altered slightly, with all other conditions remaining the same, *surface temperatures* would be too extreme.

On Earth, the *atmosphere* is 21% *oxygen*. This exact figure is an *anthropic constant* that makes *life* on Earth possible. If *oxygen* was 25%, fires would erupt spontaneously, if it was 15%, human beings would suffocate. And if there was too much of just one of the many gases which make up our *atmosphere*, our *planet* would suffer a 'runaway' *greenhouse effect*. On the other hand, if there were not enough of these *gases*, life on this planet would be devastated by cosmic radiation, among many other problems.

Every known *lifeform* depends on *water*. But unlike every other substance known to man, water's *solid* form—*ice*—is less *dense* than its *liquid* form. This makes *ice float*. If *ice* did not *float*, our *planet* would *freeze*. Other properties of *water* include its *solvency, cohesiveness, adhesiveness* and other *thermal properties*, all essential to *life*.

If *water vapor* levels in the *atmosphere* were greater than they are now, a 'runaway' *greenhouse effect* would cause temperatures to rise too high for *human life*. If they were less, an 'insufficient' *greenhouse effect* would make the Earth too *cold* to *support human life*.

If the *carbon dioxide level* were much higher than now, a 'runaway'

greenhouse effect would *overheat* the *planet*. And if the *level* were much lower, *plants* would be unable to maintain optimal *photosynthesis*, and the *oxygen level* would be too low.

Life on Earth *survives* because the *ozone level* is within the 'safe range' for *habitation*. So if the *ozone level* were much higher, there would be too little *ultraviolet radiation* for 'sufficient' *plant growth*. But if the *ozone level* were much lower, there would be too much *UV radiation* for 'sufficient' *plant growth*. In fact the *atmospheric composition* of exact *levels* of *nitrogen*, *oxygen*, *carbon dioxide* and *ozone* are each individually and all together *anthropic constants*. Change any one of them and *life* fails.

If the *atmosphere* was less *transparent*, not enough *solar radiation* would reach the Earth's surface. And if it was more *transparent* we would be bombarded with too much *solar radiation*. Of course less *transparency* with more *greenhouse gases* is supposedly 'balanceable', but a 'delicate balance' whatever the case.

And this 'transparency balance' relates directly to the Earth's *albedo*, which is the total amount of *light* 'reflected off' the *planet* versus the total amount of *light* 'absorbed'. If Earth's *albedo* were much higher, we would *freeze*. If it were much less, we would *overheat*.

Scientists also believe that if the *plate tectonic activity* were increased, *human life* could not be sustained due to the greater *greenhouse gas production*—because of increased *volcanic activity*—which would *overheat* the *atmosphere*. But you could imagine less *transparency* in such a circumstance, not that it would be likely to 'balance' in a *habitable range*. And if the *activity* was decreased, 'life-essential' *nutrients* would not be recycled adequately and the reduction of *greenhouse gases* could not compensate for increased *solar radiation* making it too *cold*.

And not only is *volcanic* and *earthquake activity* just right, so is the amount of *storm activity*. For example if *atmospheric discharges—lightning—*were greater, there would be too much 'fire destruction'. But if it were less there would be too little *nitrogen fixing* in the *soil* for optimal *plant growth*.

Also helping to provide our perfect amount of *lightning* is Earth's amazing *magnetic field*. If Earth's *magnetic field* was much weaker, our *planet* would be devastated by *cosmic radiation* over time. But if it was much stronger, we would be devastated by severe *electromagnetic storms*. And there are other insurmountable considerations concerning Earth's *magnetic field* we'll get to before were done with this section.

So *tectonic* and *seismic energies* are just right to 'balance' exact *levels* of *ozone*, *greenhouse*, and other *atmospheric gases*, but require just the *level* of *electromagnetic energy* Earth has too in order to keep it that way, including being a critical factor in *plant growth*. Still, we will see in the later sections that a time is coming when God will again balance **great and terrible** *seismic* and *volcanic activity* and the subsequent 'greatly increased' *greenhouse gases* with 'greatly decreased' *transparency*, or **thick darkness**, along with seemingly **wondrous** 'increased' *electromagnetic effects*, etc., and where *mountains* will *melt*, *rivers*,

lakes and even *oceans* will *boil*, as well as be far displaced, but at the same time a 'habitable balance' maintained, at least in the regions He wants it to be so, using his Creation, including 'perfectly balancing' all the rearranged *levels* of *forces* and *conditions* involved, just like He has done before, and as before, in order to 'burn up' **his enemies** (e.g., [Psa 97](#)) and **save...his people** (e.g. [Zec 9:16](#)).

But today, when *evolutionary cosmologists* consider our remarkable *solar system*, they acknowledge that if it was slightly different in just one of many, many ways, advanced *biological life* would be unsustainable. And it's no wonder why they so easily accept that we live in an infinite *multiverse*. It's because they know that their only chance to **deny** God is if there are an infinite number of other *universes* out there, all with different *physical laws*, and all with different quantities and compositions of *matter*, which supposedly help 'waters down the odds', so they don't have to admit that this Universe is precisely and specifically designed by a Creator God. And it's not enough to have a home *planet* that is "fine-tuned" to a "razor's edge". Our *solar system*, *galaxy*, and entire Universe must also be 'just right' for *human life* to be possible too.

Quantum physicist, astrobiologist and cosmologist Paul Davies, who did postdoctoral work under Sir Fred Hoyle at Cambridge University, in his 1990 book, *Other Worlds*, observes,

The conclusion must be that we live in a world of astronomical unlikelihood.

And in a *New York Times* opinion editorial in 2007, he maintains that the unchangeable, "elegant mathematical order" of our *physical laws* substantiates Christian theology, explaining,

...science has its own faith-based belief system. All science proceeds on the assumption that nature is ordered in a rational and intelligible way. You couldn't be a scientist if you thought the universe was a meaningless jumble of odds and ends haphazardly juxtaposed. When physicists probe to a deeper level of subatomic structure, or astronomers extend the reach of their instruments, they expect to encounter additional elegant mathematical order. And so far this faith has been justified.

Dr. Davies concludes,

...until science comes up with a testable theory of the laws of the universe, its claim to be free of faith is manifestly bogus.

Quantum cosmologist, Donald Page, of Princeton's Institute for Advanced Study, who was a doctoral student of and journal publisher with Dr. Stephen Hawking, has calculated that the odds against our Universe randomly taking a form suitable for *life* is one out of 10^{124} , a number beyond imagination, and not reasonable odds under any circumstances. It would be far easier, as Sir Dr. Fred Hoyle once imagined on a related subtopic, for 'a tornado to blow through a junkyard and assemble a flight-ready 747 jumbo jet'. And we'll talk more about this preeminent pioneer of modern *cosmology* next section.

But let's try and imagine these absurd odds. Picture all the grains of sand on all the beaches on Earth. Then mark one grain and hide it on one beach. The chance that a blindfolded person would ever pick that one particular grain their first try is about one out of 10^{20} —one in 100 billion billion. It's just not reasonable odds. But otherwise reasonable *scientists* say that the "likelihood" of a *Big Bang* event resulting in a 'life-supporting' *universe* like ours is many, many, many times more 'unlikely'. So when we consider the odds for the 'fine-tuning' of our *universe*, *galaxy*, *solar system*, and *planet*, we should keep in mind just how extreme—no, absurd really—these odds are. And all the *cosmic structures* and *substructures* of our Universe require unbelievably precise 'fine-tuning' down to the *subatomic level*. Such vast, extreme and minute precision must not be just 'intelligent design', but **omnipotent**, 'omniscient design'. I mean we're not just talking about the level of design of a Rolex, or a Mercedes-Benz, or even a 747 jumbo jet here. We're talking about design, and scale, and precision that's amazing beyond human design or imagination. And this is the kind of design that will **for ever** remain far beyond the ability of our greatest *scientists* to see the end of. Even Stephen Hawking, longtime preeminent professor of mathematics at the University of Cambridge, and presently research director at the Cambridge's Centre for Theoretical Cosmology, admits,

The remarkable fact is that the values of these numbers [anthropic constants] seem to have been very finely adjusted to make possible the development of life.

And remember Dr. Hawking has adjusted his prediction from late last century that a "theory of everything" would be confirmed by the end of the century, to one that now no longer expects such a revelation till the end of this newly begun century. At least he's moving in the right direction, as if he has a choice.

Michael Denton, who received his Ph.D. in Biochemistry at King's College London, and is presently a senior research fellow in *human molecular genetics* at the University of Otago in New Zealand, is more specific. He's not a *biblical creationist*, but nonetheless, because of this remarkable 'fine-tuning' now being discovered in all fields of *science*, he believes we are alone in the Universe, saying,

It seems ludicrous to claim that life exists on only one tiny speck in a universe of ten billion trillion stars. Yet, incredibly, Earth appears to sit alone in a hostile universe devoid of life...

Scientists are now confirming, more and more every day, that our Universe is specifically and precisely designed to support life on Earth, and that this design is indiscernibly more complicated and imperceptibly beyond the scale of anything man has imagined, let alone designed. So they are discovering, though not so much openly admitting, that our 'rare earth' is a *planet* with ever-growing numbers of improbable and interdependent 'life-supporting conditions' that make it a 'tiny oasis' in an otherwise 'inhospitable universe'. The case for this Anthropic Principle—that the Universe was specifically designed for mankind—is becoming so unavoidably clear that even 'watering down the odds' with an infinitely expanding *multiverse* cannot make its infinite number of 'random accidents' into a 'reasonable god'.

Peter Ward is a paleontologist and professor of Biology and of Earth and Space Sciences at the University of Washington, Seattle, whose past teaching posts

include the NASA Astrobiology Institute. Don Brownlee, also a professor of astronomy at the University of Washington, is the principal investigator for NASA's Stardust mission. These University of Washington professors conclude in their book in the year 2000, *Rare Earth*, that the *conditions* favorable for *life* must be so "rare" in our Universe that...

...not only intelligent life, but even the simplest of animal life is rare in our galaxy and in the universe.

And about their book, a *New York Times* book reviewer more or less agreed, reporting,

Maybe we are alone in the universe, after all.

In other words, the evidence is that Drs. Denton, Ward and Brownlee are convincingly right. Still, we will see that **scripture** and historical records indicate that we are not completely alone. In fact I suspect the descendants of 'real aliens' are living on our planet right now. No, it's not what you think, because you have likely never considered much of the **scripture** or evidence I speak of, since it naturally only **glorifies** God, and it is mostly hidden from **the world** and 'spiritually immature' Christians. But we'll talk about 'real', 'Hollywood-stereotype', 'space aliens' too.

However *astrophysicist* Dr. Jeff Zweerink, *cosmologist* and researcher at UCLA, later professor of Christian Apologetics at Biola University, is very clear about it in his 2008 book, *Who's Afraid of the Multiverse*, saying,

Although alien civilizations permeate science fiction literature and film, a wealth of scientific evidence discovered over the last half-century highlights Earth's unique capacity to support advanced and human life. Carbon based life places severe restrictions on the laws of physics and composition of the universe. Even with the proper physics the evidence indicates that life wouldn't be possible apart from the right kind of planet with just the right moon and just-right planetary partners orbiting a just-right star in a just-right galaxy.

And about the possibility of *non-carbon-based lifeforms*, Dr. Zweerink adds,

Given the laws of physics and fundamental constants of the observable universe, how "common" are planets capable of supporting complex life like human beings? A vast body of research establishes that the chemical complexity based on the element carbon dwarfs the complexity available from any other element. Since physical life requires a high degree of chemical complexity, the requirements should be restricted by those dictated by carbon-based life... Even with a billion trillion stars available in the visible universe, the probabilities stack up against finding even one planet capable of hosting advance life.

And He adds that this "continually accumulating evidence" only "drives these probabilities lower and lower." So yes, we are alone in the Universe, at least in the

way most people think about it. But we are not alone in ways most *scientist* don't usual consider.

Now Dr. Zweerink is a *biblical creationist* and *Christian apologist*, but I should also say that he is a *progressive creationist*, otherwise known as a *day-age creationist*, or *theistic evolutionist*, believing that the earth is billions of years old, but that *life* did not appear by 'natural forces' alone because it was God that formed different *lifeforms* in 'incremental' or 'progressive' stages, though really mirroring *atheist* Stephen J. Gould and Niles Eldredge's 'rehashed', 1972, Punctuated Equilibrium Theory—which we'll get to next section. So Dr. Zweerink attempts to reconcile the literal account of Creation in Genesis with 'modern scientific theories' (read, 'modern satanic propaganda', which is nothing more than ***science falsely so called***).

Though often worse than 'modern translations' of the Bible (see [RGT](#)), *progressive creationist* are not always 'off the mark'. Cosmologist Hugh Ross, a colleague of Dr. Zweerink, and also a *progressive creationist*, has done probably the most detailed calculations that help us begin to picture just how 'low' these probabilities are currently perceivable. He has calculated the probability that 122 both *fundamental* and *environmental constants* (so far) could exist for just one planet in our Universe by chance. Assuming there are 10^{22} planets in the Visible Universe—a very large and generous number—his answer is beyond convincing. There is one chance in 10^{138} —one chance in one with 138 zeros after it. Now it has been estimated that there are only about 10^{70} *atoms* in the entire Visible Universe, and only about 10^{80} *protons*. So for all reasonable purposes, there is virtually zero chance that any *planet* in our Universe would have the same 'life-supporting conditions' we have, unless like ours, God ***created*** it to somehow serve His purpose too. But the embarrassing efforts of Christians to reconcile the Theory of Evolution with the Bible will come up again in later sections.

Still and of course, the popular majority of *cosmologists* (read, the ***world***), skirt this issue of the unimaginable 'fine-tuning' of the Universe by imagining an infinite number of "pocket universes", each with a different set of *physical characteristics*, so that chance dictates that at least one would naturally manifest the 'absurdly unlikely' *characteristics* necessary for *human life*. This is what an *atheist*, faced with the evidence, is forced to 'believe' anyway.

But Dr. Ross also offers a comparison to explain how ridiculous such a belief—or 'faith'—really is. It goes like this. A gambler might conclude that an ordinary coin could land on heads 100,000 consecutive times if he rationalizes (read, fantasizes) that $2^{100,000}$ coins exist, each being flipped 100,000 times by $2^{100,000}$ coin flippers. Statistically, one of these coins could come up with heads 100,000 times. But the reason that such imagination is absurd is because the gambler would have no evidence for the existence of the other coins, coin flippers, or such a variety of results. And with the real sample size of just one coin and one coin flipper, the only rational conclusion to draw—if someone really did flip heads 100,000 times—is that the coin was "rigged" to land on heads.

So when no evidence can be found for the existence of other universes, let alone an infinite number of them, and with the evidence 'stacking up', however unpopular, that we're alone in this one, the only reasonable conclusion is that it is designed by an Omnipotent, Omniscient Designer-Creator. But there are other 'conditions' in our Universe, especially in our *solar system*, that will show us another dimension that has been misinterpreted in all these ***so-called models***. I'm talking again about *time*, which we'll get to shortly. We'll also be able to confirm in the next section that even an infinite amount of *time* won't help, and in the remaining

sections we'll discover that there's really no evidence that a lot of it ever existed in the first place. I mean, in the case of Planet Earth, that is.

But speaking about 'layered illusions', it's time to 'lay' yet another 'layer'. Remember when I said that *subatomic particles* could travel from point A to point B in less time than can be measured so that in some cases it's impossible to tell where they really are, and that they may be 'strobing in and out of' *4-dimensional spacetime* on top of that. Well, now it's time to take the 'red pill'. And I mean we're really going to take a **deep** 'dive down the rabbit hole', so to speak, because there is startling, no, unsettling evidence that our Universe is less substantial than the *standard model of particle physics*, and even than *string theory*, suggest. And sorry, I don't 'push the blue pills', because deception only leads to eventual **shame** or worse. But in case you're not yet near my age, or, appropriately enough, avoid popular media, I'm alluding to the character Morpheus and his analogy from the movie, *The Matrix*, a science fiction epic about a future time when the whole human race is subjugated by the 'distraction' of being installed in a *computer simulation*. Their oppressors are *artificially intelligent machines* that power themselves using captive human bodies to make *electrical power*. A little too far out? Not really. Some scientists today think it's possible, even likely, that 'God' may be a giant 'computer programmer', and we might be nothing more than His 'simulation'.

In the turn of the 21st Century's best-selling video game, *The Sims*, *software programmers* created, and are still improving, a world filled with digital people that are 'realistic simulations' of real people. The characters in this game are *digitally simulated* recreations of *humans*. The popularity of this game can be attributed to the empathy that is experienced by players of the game with these 'simulated characters'. But surely this empathy can only be as good as the *simulation*. In other words, the empathy experienced is naturally limited by how easily the experience is identifiable as a *simulation*. But these limits are disappearing as *computing power* increases. And the rate of increase seen in *computing power* in the past few decades shows no signs of slowing down. So the level of 'realism' of *computer simulations* is also increasing. On this path of *increased reality of simulations*, they should soon become as 'realistic' as 'real life'. This is where the separation between 'real lives' and *virtual simulations* becomes indistinguishable.

But are we there yet? Dr. Rich Terrell at the NASA Jet Propulsion Laboratory (JPL) and the California Institute of Technology has helped design missions to Mars, discovered several *moons* around our *outer planets*, and has been involved in the observations of distant *galaxies*. He believes we may already be living in a 'giant computer simulation'. And that the evidence for this is all around us. He believes,

For a god-centered universe one has to think... what are the requirements for God? God is an interdimensional being, connected with everything in the Universe, a Creator responsible for the Universe, and in some ways can change the laws of physics if He wanted to. I think those are pretty good requirements for what God ought to be.

And Dr. Terrell thinks that these requirements for God are a lot like what *programmers* do when they create *programs* for 'simulated environments'. He has also estimated how much *computing power* it would take to create our World. Using Moore's Law, that *computational power* doubles every 2 years to 18 months, and recognizing that more recently it has been doubling every 13 months, and considering that it is also estimated that the fastest *computers* on the planet are

now comparable to or even exceed the *computational ability* of the *human brain*—exceeding 1 billion billion operations per second, Dr. Terrell concludes,

Where it's taking us is that in the next year that will double. In the next decade that will increase by a factor of 500. So a decade from now our supercomputers will be about 500 times faster than the human brain.

And this means that *computers* will then be able to create "photo real" *simulations* of all that we see around us. But does that mean these *computers* will be able to populate these *simulations* with "thinking beings" like us? Dr. Terrell predicts,

If I can't tell the difference between a human being answering questions and a computer answering questions, then qualitatively they're equivalent, and if I believe the human is conscious and self aware, I must also believe the machine has the same qualities.

Of course, maybe he didn't see the movie, *Blade Runner*. Still, once *computers* have the power to *simulate artificially intelligent beings* inside a *photo realistic representation* of Planet Earth, the line between 'real life' and 'virtual simulation' will be arguably erased.

Dr. Terrell further pontificates, saying,

Suppose we have an enormous simulation, and we're simulating artificial intelligence [A.I.'s]. We created this Universe. We're able to change the laws of physics. We're able to... do all those requirements we put on God.

And he means that the A.I.'s will be able to experience 'miracles' provided by their *programmers*, just as some of us have experienced ***miracles*** provided by our God.

But there's another reason Dr. Terrell thinks that we might already be living in some kind of 'giant simulation'—that our Creator might already be using a 'supercomputer' with 'godlike powers' to 'simulate' us. His reason for believing this is found in the nature of *matter* itself. And yes, we're talking about another way that *matter* can be seen as even less substantial than we've already seen it to be.

It turns out that there is one sure way to identify a 'computer simulation'. Zoom in. Every *computer generated image*, no matter how detailed and realistic, breaks down into distinct *pixels* if you enlarge it enough. And by now you should realize that this is exactly what happens in the 'real world' too.

In the past century, *physicists* have discovered that not just *matter*, but also *space*, *energy* and even *time* are really made of tiny little 'pixels'—fundamental, individual *particles*, billions of times smaller than an *atom*. This is the foundation of *quantum mechanics*, and it applies to all known *matter* and *energy*. Dr. Terrell explains,

Look at the way the Universe behaves. It's quantized. It's made of pixels. And it's made of individual atoms. Space is quantized. Time is quantized. Energy is quantized. Everything is made of individual pixels, which means the Universe has a finite number of components,

which means that it has a finite number of states, which means it is computable.

The *theory of quantum mechanics* implies that it is possible that everything we see could really be produced by 'lines of code' inside a powerful 'supernatural computer'. But are there any signs that the Universe is actually being computed?

In the physics lab at Cal Tech, a near century-old experiment offers one way we can see a clear sign. This experiment shoots an *electron beam* through a piece of *graphite* with a screen set up behind. The background screen records how the *electrons* 'ricochet off' the *graphite's subatomic particles*. At this *subatomic level*, the pattern is not random, as might be expected, but is a *diffraction wave pattern*, which means the unseen *electron particles* in this *beam* are not behaving like *particles*, but more like a *wave—of energy*. Dr. Terrell interprets, concluding,

The experiment shows something really rather extraordinary, that matter, even though it behaves when you are looking at it, measuring it, as individual particles, when you are not looking at it, matter is diffuse. It spreads out; it doesn't have a finite form in the Universe.

These rules of *quantum mechanics* apply to all *subatomic particles*. When we look at them they are just 'dots'. When we look away, they lose their physical form and perform more like 'waves'. Dr. Terrell observes,

A different way of looking at that is to say... how parallel is this behavior with what I see in my Play Station 3 when I'm playing a video game... An example of that is in SimCity—it's an enormous city that I can navigate my way through every bit of it—because the Play Station video game gives me the frame that I need when I'm looking there. If I look somewhere else, it'll create that frame. Well, oddly enough the Universe behaves that way in reality. The Universe gives you what you're looking at when you're looking at it. When you're not looking at it it's not necessarily there.

And what Dr. Terrell means is that our World is 'pixilated'. And more than that, that it behaves as if it is 'computed' too. It behaves in the very same way our 'computer simulations' behave. It is there and substantial when you're looking at it, but reverts to a state that is, let's say, less substantial, when you're not.

And Dr. Terrell has gone still further in his extrapolations. He has tried to work out the probability that we might be living in a 'simulation'—to quantify the possibility that there is a God. Dr. Terrell asks,

The question is, how likely is something like that to happen? And how likely is it that it has already happened in our Universe? Now let's step back from that a little bit and say, well, you know the Universe is 13.7 billion years old, and here I am 50 years from basically being able to manufacture God. What's the probability that I would be so close to that threshold, and not be across the other side? It's one chance in 300 million that I would be that close. It's an extraordinary coincidence, and perhaps, more likely than not, maybe we are a

simulation on the other side of that threshold, and the deities that exist are our future selves.

So Dr. Terrell expresses 'faith' that our "deities" are simply us in the future, but also that we are soon to become the "deities" of future 'simulations'. And he goes so far as to call this point of view a comforting "religion". It is comforting to him because he sees in it that mankind has likely already evolved enough to become 'gods', and that we are therefore at some point on that road too. But Dr. Terrell's "religion" only comforts me in one way. It's show me another way that this World is not designed by God to last forever. But I am also comforted because I know what the future really holds—that the **new heaven** and **new earth** are coming, and that whatever it is, it will be designed to last forever, which might mean that we will never find out how small the 'pixels' really are. And I'm guessing that the **new heaven** will be significantly more substantial, though surely in ways we will never be able to get to the bottom of, ever. By the way, go to http://mountainvision.blogspot.com/2011_10_01_archive.html for a presentation of Dr. Terrell's 'faith', which is taken from the *Science Channel* series premier of *Through the Wormhole*, as other *scientists* from this section are.

And whatever the case, all these admittedly unconfirmed, continually-debated and regularly changed 'theories' are 'numbers games' really, and are shaped as desperate attempts to conform only to **worldly** perspectives that accommodate an 'incredibly old universe', so that such **deceivers**—and yes, any of them with any experience in this **deceitful** game should know it—may **deceive** the **many there be** [Mat 7:13](#) that hear them, and all so that the whole **world** may **deceive** themselves that God is not central in their lives. Because they don't really want to **know**, let alone **live** knowing that in the 'real world', it is **in God** that **we live, and move, and have our being** [Act 17:28](#), nor do they want to **live** with the **understanding** that that God **has created all things**, and that for His **pleasure they are and were created** [Rev 4:11](#). But these **deceivers** and those they **deceive** will participate in Satan's new agenda. His old agenda, when he was better known as **Lucifer** is on the way out.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! [Isa 14:12](#)

Most think this refers to Satan only after Armageddon, and it does refer to him then, but this 'transcending reference' originally refers to another earlier time when God **cut down** Satan, as we will see. And we will confirm this with 'visits' to many such occasions where God...

...having spoiled [Satan's] principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it [Col 2:15](#).

Again, this mostly refers to Jesus **on the cross**, but this is also God's 'transcendent Character'. So it is also how he brought down Satan's old agenda too. What was Satan's old agenda? We will more than expose it throughout the rest of this **study**. But now you should be beginning to see his new one—the worship of ourselves. This is an easy step from Dr. Terrell's "religion", for example. And we will 'spelunk' this 'rabbit hole' more in the next section. But you should also see by now that God's got such **deceivers** in His **infinite** trap, a trap that they can never, ever

escape from, because there is no end to it. It is as **unsearchable** as His **thoughts** and **ways**.

And besides, everyone agrees Newton didn't answer all the questions about the *forces* of God's Creation, and many now accept that neither Einstein nor Feynman did either. And remember that Sir Dr. Steven Hawking pushed his expectations of finding that ever-elusive "theory of everything" to the end of another century. Seeing the trend? There are innumerable yet to be discovered, higher plateaus of **understanding** to surmount. And I'm expecting that it's a matter of time before we not only "confirm" new, formerly unmeasurable forms of *matter* and *energy*, but also heretofore "undetectable" *dimensions* of *spacetime*. But surely the **end** of the complexity of our **infinite** God's Creation will not be found, because it never really can be, just as we will never have a truly **infinite** perspective as God does.

I mean remember when we use to think *elections* simply "orbited" the *nucleus* of *atoms*, like the Earth around the Sun, till *quantum mechanics* revealed that it's a lot more complicated than that. In fact, a lot more of the recent 'breakthroughs' in understanding of the more complex nature of the *atom* came when we began to better understand the complexity of the *electron's* movement 'around' the *nucleus*. And remember it's so complex that we now 'explain it' with a *theory* called the *uncertainty principle*, which, put simplify, says it's impossible to exactly determine the location, or coordinates, of a given *atomic electron* at any given time, because *electrons* evidently don't really 'move around' the *nucleus* like *particles*, but more like "waves", not to mention the limitations imposed by the 'digital' or 'pixilated' nature of all *matter*, *energy*, *space*, and even *time*, and that most of the 'time' the 'bulk' of it all may be 'sneaking off' into *extra dimensions* undetected. But this still means that it's really the unimaginable fast, unpredictable, and now also probably mostly 'insubstantial movement' of *atomic electrons* that give *matter* the illusion of being continuously *solid*. And most likely, if you're still reading, you've just surmounted at least a couple of 'new and higher plateaus of understanding' yourself. And I keep saying "probably", though we "probably" have 'scriptural rationale' for the existence of *extra dimensions*, but at least for unpredictable, undetectable, 'insubstantial, movement', not to mention 'miraculous Creation-manipulating power'. We know that Jesus 'walked on water', 'through doors and walls', 'disappeared', and 'floated up into the sky', among other miraculous behavior and acts, and that some of this activity happened before he escaped his tomb at His **resurrection**. But more to the point, soon we will be **like him** too. Certainly **all things...are and were created** by and for God and Jesus, but evidently for us too. (See again [Rev 4:11](#).)

By-the-way—and you really should **study RGT** to fully grasp what I'm about to say—the evidence of **scripture** implies that Jesus **put on** His present **immortal** body at The Resurrection, and that before that, while on the Earth, His **spirit** occupied a **body** like yours and mine, and that before that His **body** was immortal, but not like it is now. One way we **know** this is because the Apostle John tell us that when we are 'resurrected', at The Rapture, we will be **like him** too ([1Jo 3:2](#)). Then our **corruptible** bodies will become **incorruptible**, 'putting on' **immortality**—surely beneath Jesus, but **like him**. See again [1Corinthians 15:51-58](#). And I mention this because it shows us, and encourages us about what we have to look forward to. All this implies that in The Millennium, when we **put on immortality** and live on this Earth, that we, **like** Jesus, will 'operate' **like** He did when He was here last. But in the **new heaven** and **new earth**, I'm guessing they'll be **new**, more substantial and enduring *laws of physics*, because there'll be no more Sun or Moon, neither any stars, because we, along with God and Jesus, will illuminate the **new heaven** ourselves, (again, see [RGT](#)). And I'm guessing the **new heaven** and

new earth will operate with much more complex ‘laws of physics’ than we’re discovering now, which we’ll have an **eternity** to sort out, though, of course, never completely will. And this is more than encouraging, because it’s one way we can see the awesome, wild and amazing, neverending ‘rollercoaster ride’ of the **increase of knowledge** of which **there shall be no end**. And I mean that exactly like the Prophet Isaiah means it when he declares,

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this [Isa 9:7](#). (See also [Luke 1:33](#).)

And **no end** to the **increase of his government and peace** implies **no end** to the **increase of knowledge in a new heaven and a new earth** of unending complexity to explore and master at **higher** and **higher** levels **even for ever**. And if the **zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this**, we ought to be pretty excited about it too. In fact we should be so excited about it that we should already be preparing for it, don’t you think? One way to do that would be to continue with this **study**.

But still I’ve been holding back somewhat, because there’s some seriously bad news in all this for Christians too. The worst of it I see is because of Satan’s latest agenda to get us to ‘worship ourselves’, which is embraced and preached by both the **deceived** and **deceivers** who are **blinded** and **reprobate**, devoted to themselves, and who **deny** God or maybe just **deny** His **power** and **glory**, building on the idea that an infinite number of accidents given an infinite amount of time has ‘created’ everything. But such **doctrines of devils** [1Ti 4:1-2](#); [2Ti 3:1-7](#), coupled with their **flesh**-satisfying drive to **deceive** themselves that they can and do know “everything”, destroys and shames many, including Christians that **lose** their **full reward** [2Jo 1:8](#), or worse, who are **deceived** and **lost** because of such **false witnesses**. And instead of **fearing God**, ‘spiritually immature’ Christians fear such **beasts** [2Pe 2:9-22](#), because they are more afraid of being exposed as ignorant of the World’s ways than of God’s Word—fearing they will be exposed by the World as **Cretians**. And to add perspective, **cretins**, (the French spelling), referred to the bad reputation of its Christian population on the Island of Crete, when **Titus** was **bishop** there, but today refers to any “stupid, obtuse, or mentally defective person”, but also to Christians in general. See [Tts 1:10-14](#) and [3:15](#). But the real embarrassment will be fully revealed at **the judgment seat of Christ** at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, as this ‘worldly fear’ is presently pushing increasing numbers of Christians away from God.

One way you can see this for yourself, and in yourself, is to ask yourself—with sensitivity to The Spirit’s **work** in your **heart** and **mind**—if **you** are **ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you** [1Pe 3:15](#). But the odds are that your ‘best answers’, beyond **salvation**, remain mostly **ignorant** and a **shame**. And you don’t even know—or realize—that you really don’t know how to—let alone have a plan to—do anything about that but to ‘stay saved’ and make The Rapture, if even that. This is the **shame** that the Apostle Paul is speaking of when he says,

If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire [1Cr 3:15](#).

This would be nothing to show for your **salvation**, God willing you're even **saved** at all, because most that only depend on **the blood of Jesus** to keep them safe, aren't. RGT makes this clear too. And if you haven't gotten the point yet, maybe you never will in time to avoid this **shame** or **worse**. I mean you should see in this section alone that God will take those that are 'paying attention' **deep** into the detail of His Creation. Much too **deep** to really fully **understand**. And you should **understand** that God's endlessly complex Creation is really for us and about us—for giving us continuing glimpses into who He is—at least for those who will **for ever** be among The Immortal **sons of God** (Jhn 1:12; Rom 8:14,19; Phl 2:15; 1Jo 3:1-2).

So aren't you yet willing to show God that you're ready to **learn** how to pay **deep** attention to His Word—ready to acknowledge and reject what's naturally in your head—and become **worthy** to **receive** at least some **reward** and **glory** for your **work** in helping to prepare His **everlasting kingdom**? I mean He is much farther into you and your **ways** than you will ever be. And as part of that He has **created** for you the opportunity for unlimited potential. How **ashamed** are you going to be if you finally **awake** to this reality—too late—and most all you've done as far as true 'mind-transforming' **obedience** to Him and His Word has been to 'gulp buckets' of His **blood**, and not much else, because you were mostly satisfied with what was in your own head, and didn't really pay much attention to any of His **instruction** that could have helped not only **make you perfect**, but helped you to **save** and **make perfect** others too. And **little children**—those of you who have yet to seriously commit yourselves to such discipleship—stop confusing The Spirit's **work in spite** of you with The Spirit's **work through** you! Surely The Spirit will **work** God's will, and He will do it even through those whose **work shall be all burned**, who **receive no glory or reward**, and though they are nonetheless **saved**. And I mean you are still a **babe** if it is a **revelation** to you that all the **work** done by The Spirit in spite of you will only give God **glory**. And just as sure, only **work** with a mind **transformed** by The Word of God through The Spirit of God is really The Spirit working through you. And it's the **press toward a diligent, 'study-to-shew-thyself-approved-unto-God'** kind of **work** that gives both God and you **glory**, and you **great reward**. So let's get to **work** to avoid some of this kind of **shame**, shall **we**?

However for the sake of argument, we're going to suppose that nearly 14 billion years ago the Universe somehow 'began', or 'began again', and attempt to use observations from our present circumstances as points from which we can logically and reasonably work backward in time. I mean *evolutionists* today are satisfied to take the *speed of light* and of *cosmic structures* and extrapolate from their present *velocities* and *interactions* how long since 'it all began'. But I have already repeatedly observed that it would be no problem for God to **create** this Universe very near to its present state, and only a few thousand years ago, and that He may nonetheless have had a purpose for making it potentially capable of lasting indefinitely. This is not a problem for God, but an issue for us to **answer** from His Word. And we will. But there are problems for *evolutionists* who need almost unimaginable amounts of time to substantiate *organic evolution*. And there are problems for them with the timeline stretching into the distant past, especially in circumstance much closer to home and much nearer to the present. Most of these problems are not even dealt with, but 'swept under the rug', with surely any **lie, bribe, oppression** or **trap** in use as necessary to keep such 'problems' from the general public. And I mean there are some rather obvious ongoing natural processes that seem to indicate that the Earth must be much younger, or at least

operate much differently, than the more popular consensus. But first, of course and again, we should remind ourselves that the coming bigger and better *telescopes* may change perspectives about this timeframe—again—and I mean, once next generation astronomers adapt or even rewrite earlier ‘standard models’—again—being able to see more of God’s Creation than ever before. Because—again—they will literally fight over the fame and grant-funding that such ongoing ‘tug-of-wars’ bring. And anything goes, even ‘infinite multiple universes’—anything but a consistently **honest** interpretation of the evidence, which must only point to our **infinite, omnipotent** God. And certainly He is in no way deceiving us about His Creation. As King David recognises,

The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth [or ‘the sky shows’] ***his handywork*** [Psa 19:1](#).

And surely He made the *Universe* both bigger and smaller than the scope that man will ever have of it, at least by *telescopes* or *particle colliders*, because He says,

...my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts [Isa 55:8](#).

This means that a *telescope* as big as the Earth—or our *galaxy*—couldn’t begin to show us the ‘end of space’ and what’s in it, and a *particle collider* that spans the equator—or our galaxy—could only begin to answer our questions about ‘subatomic operations’. Remember that,

...the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet, Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? Hath not my hand made all these things? [Act 7:48-50](#); [Isa 66:1-2](#).

Or what *telescope* or *particle collider* will you build Him? I mean if God had a *telescope* or a *particle collider*, you should expect them to be bigger than His **footstool**, and **for ever** out of our reach.

So honestly and reasonably, we should focus more of our attention to the scale of the ‘house’ that we can build. And I mean we should focus most of our attention more ‘down to earth’, even when considering the near 14 billion years *evolutionists* think they have to explain away God. So let’s start by talking about a component of *evolutionary astronomy* probably the most suitable for being ‘swept under the rug’. That would be *space dust*. My research of the ‘popular modern scientific worldview’ was largely through several years of subscriptions to *Discover* magazine, along with a couple of years of *Science News*, reading them all from cover to cover. These ‘science digests’ are more for layman, than some others, but I gave up on them in 2011, feeling I had more than ‘done my homework’ in ‘popular’ (read, **principality and power**-policed) *evolutionary* ‘scientific thought’. I had certainly had enough of the continual ‘rethinking’ of *evolutionary* dogma due to ‘startling new discoveries’. I mean in virtually every issue, in one field of *evolutionary science* or another, ‘cutting edge’ scientists were reporting the need to “rethink” existing *evolutionary theories* because of the new insights forced by ‘new

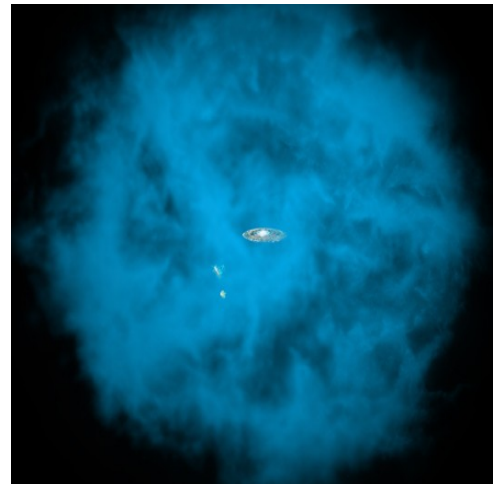
discoveries' from God's Creation. And much of the insight I have into the fraud, deception, and conspiracy supporting the Theory of Evolution—which is its best support—comes from these often laughable records. By this experience I have confirmed for myself that *evolutionists* commonly stick with or return to 'popular theories' that they know have been ruled out by new evidence. They do this sometimes just to avoid having no answer or explanation at all, but more often because the newer evidence more clearly points to our awesome Creator. So they often stick with what they know to be bogus or unsubstantiated in the 'faith' that they will later find evidence to 'rethink' a more acceptable but equally godless theory.

So what about *space dust*, for example? There was a 'startling admission' about it in the September 2008 issue of *Discover*. An article on page 11 reveals that likely fully half of the *visible mass* in the Universe is unaccounted for because the *light* that would enable us to see it is obscured by *interstellar dust*. Another article



suggested that we are not yet accounting for *space dust* at all—maybe another half of the mass of our known Universe—in any calculations that should involve this *mass*. Oops. And astronomers have recently used NASA's orbiting **Chandra X-ray Observatory**—eight time more powerful than any other *x-ray telescope* in operation, (picture, p.109)— to 'expose' that our Milky Way Galaxy is embedded in and dwarfed by a 'super-galactic' *halo* of *hot gas* and *cosmic dust* that extends for hundreds of

thousands of *lightyears* beyond what we used to think was the outer edge of our *galaxy*. The estimated *mass* of this *halo* (picture, p.109) is comparable to the *mass* of all the *stars* in our *galaxy*. Oops again. In other words, *dark matter* and *energy*—that was recently purported by some to account for over 90% of the *mass* of the Universe—has a little more help than originally thought, because *cosmologists* have recently both found and remembered that there should be significantly more "visible" *mass* accounted for in their equations than considered so far. Still evolutionists would need to 'find' and/or 'remember' much more 'overlooked' *mass* than all this for them to abandon their 'theories' about *dark matter* altogether.



And though apparently more of the *visible mass* in the Universe was 'overlooked' than not, and later acknowledged, such corrected oversights are commonly quickly forgotten—just 'swept under the rug'—only discernable at all if you notice the lowering percentages of *dark matter* being published. And usually *Discover* and *Science News* continually update all the topics they cover, following every step of every new discovery and insight that comes along on a monthly basis—even covering some conflicts within *evolutionary theory*. This one, however, for the many months I followed it thereafter, as many others like it, was not. And how is it that such 'methods' could be considered anything but **science falsely so called?** It's kind of like sending everything back to the drawing board without telling everyone what's happened. But in the *evolutionary sciences*, this is unavoidably common, because this really is not the 'godless universe' they want it to be, but God's Creation. So frequently their unnatural perspectives lead them to 'dead

ends', which, if they admit them at all, are eventually traded in for newer 'godless dead ends' that are remarkably quickly treated as if it's the way they thought it was all along.

And as part of this immoral agenda to preserve **ungodly** 'evolutionary doctrine', known popular 'bogus doctrines'—that those paying attention already know are compromised—remain popular, until acceptably 'godless' replacements are ready to take their place. And commonly, known 'bogus evolutionary doctrine' is also used to keep the less informed in line, and as a default whenever an apparently **godly** perspective is threatening to emerge. Because known 'bogus theories' are more tolerable than anything with even a hint of **glorifying God**. But finally, and only when these new, seemingly better 'doctrines' that retain the capacity to **deny** God surface and become stable, can the older 'bogus doctrines' finally be 'quietly retired'. But all 'dead-end', 'godless doctrine' is naturally unstable. So many old and established though 'known-to-be-bogus doctrines' often reemerge and are recycled.

And it's no wonder that *space dust* is overlooked in the calculations of the dynamics of the cosmos. Dr. Harold Urey helped 'sweep' that topic 'under the rug' in the 1960's. At my alma mater, Revelle College, University of California, San Diego, (UCSD is modeled after the multi-college Cambridge University), there is a science department building called Urey Hall, named for this famed *evolutionary scientist* and his wife. Dr. Urey, a world-approved, Nobel Prize-winning chemist, and contributor in the development of the first atomic bomb, is probably best known for his work at the University of Chicago before he moved to UCSD. This 'best known work' involved bamboozling the World into believing that it is possible for 'organic life' to have accidentally developed from 'non-living matter', but more specifically that *space* itself was richly filled with the "building-blocks of life". He was the founder of "cosmochemistry", a term he coined, predicting life was forming abundantly everywhere in the Universe. Besides what we've covered so far that now casts doubt on such possibilities, we'll get down to the basics of why this is really non-sense next section. But while he was at UCSD, there was a rather embarrassing 'dust-up' that he was involved in that helps **prove** that the Moon, and therefore the Earth, must be remarkably younger than *evolutionary theory* would ever allow.

Dr. Urey had a long-standing interest in *astronomy* and *astrophysics*. Just after WWII he collaborated with astronomer Gerard P. Kuiper on lunar studies in a relationship that began in admiration and fell into an intense rivalry that lasted the rest of their lives. The evidence of this is played out in the *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* at meetings and in correspondence. Dr. Kuiper argued from his perspective of the evidence that it was safe to land on the Moon, while Dr. Urey pointed to evidence that it could not be so. And of course Dr. Kuiper's perspective won out as the two scientists 'worked together' as co-investigators on the Ranger series of lunar impacting spacecraft in the early 1960's.

The issue for Dr. Urey was two-fold: *dust over time*. Like all *evolutionists*, he believed that *galaxies*, *solar systems*, *planets* and *life* itself had developed in turn, and that this required a vast amount of time for these chance occurrences to eventually take place, and that all this made a lot of *space dust* in the process. But in addition to the gross overestimation of *time*, Dr. Urey was apparently also misguided about the rate of build-up of this *dust* being pulled in by the Earth, and therefore also by the moon. Still, whatever the rate, and with so much time, this supposedly 'missing' *space dust* has remained a 'degenerative condition' for the Theory of Evolution long past the problems it caused for Dr. Urey. In fact, I would

now call it is a 'chronic constipation' in the 'bowels' of the *standard model of big bang cosmology*, regardless of how much it is still ignored.

Anyway, you could really blame it all on a *cosmologist* who will remain unnamed, who did experiments to determine the amount of *dust* falling from *space* to Earth every year. He used undergrads equipped with tweezers and microscopes to pick out and weigh suspected *cosmic particles* caught in a 'sticky substance' in the bottom of 'cake pans' left out in desert regions where there was virtually no wind. It was presumed that nothing could fall into these pans except what fell from *space*. From this tedious experiment our unnamed scientist extrapolated that quite a lot of *comic dust* was being captured by Earth's *gravity*. And His experiment was originally widely accepted as accurate. But later more 'refined investigations' reportedly determined this approach grossly overestimated the amount of *dust* actually falling from *space*.

In the meantime the 'space race' was going on. And the debate between Dr. Urey and Dr. Kuiper was going on too. Dr. Urey was evidently using these 'overestimations' about *cosmic dust* to warn NASA scientists that a moon landing would result in a disaster, because he believed that any spacecraft that landed would unavoidably sink irretrievably into well over 100 feet of *cosmic dust* that had—over billions of years—gently settled on the Moon. It was argued that the dust on Earth was regularly blown by wind or washed by water into the oceans, but that the moon had no processes to keep it from piling up.

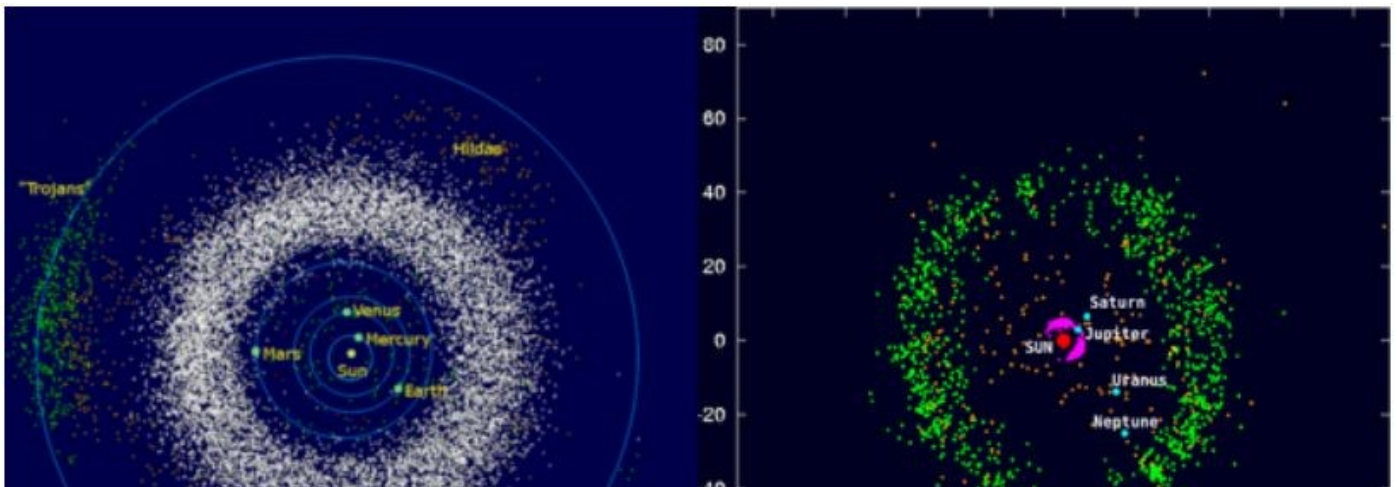
Well, you may remember from that famous photo of Neil Armstrong's footprint that the *dust* on the Moon is still quite shallow. Also contrary to what was expected, there is not much sediment on our oceans' floors either—at least worldwide. Still, any amount of *space dust* being captured by the Earth or the Moon over time should add up—especially if we're talking about billions of years. So there should be a lot more identifiable *space dust* or *cosmic dust* than we can presently account for. Though mostly ignored, to evolutionists this is a mystery. And though evolutionists don't want to know, we should want to know if there are some other processes we are overlooking that get rid of the *dust*. But really we can already assume that there isn't much because the Universe just isn't that old. Still, we will repeatedly confirm both of these *hypotheses* as we continue throughout this **study**—that the Universe is very young and that there are processes that have gotten rid of excess dust on both Earth and the Moon. And some results of Dr. Urey's 'best work' will come up again in the next section.

By-the-way, it has been calculated that at the rate rivers are presently 'washing' *sediment* into the *oceans*, that all *land* will be *underwater* in less than 20 million years. So if you're an *evolutionist* you have to believe that *land* is being 'pushed up' faster than this—though presently measurements do not bare this out. This is another mystery. Or there are some other processes we're overlooking that 'push land up' faster than presently. Or it's all still above water because the Earth really just isn't that old. But really both of these ideas are correct too.

And apparently it's easy to ignore a little 'missing dust', even a lot of it. But does it really matter that there's a lot more *visible mass* and less of the *invisible* kind than we thought? I mean I'm not going to quibble over the percentages of what holds us all together. Still, another thing we'll need to hold *evolutionary theory* together is an Oort Cloud, because without it you might get the wildly unpopular idea that God created this awesomely immense Universe 'out of nothing' just a few thousand years ago. Of course no one should expect that an Oort Cloud can really answer all the mysteries of our Solar System. What you should instead expect is that there's no end to how complicated and mysterious (read, 'beyond our understanding') it really is.

In 1932, Estonian *astronomer* Ernst Öpik postulated that *long period comets* originated in an orbiting cloud at the outermost edge of the Solar System. But it wasn't until the 1950's that this idea was revived by the Dutch astronomer Jan Oort. So some call this outer Solar System cloud the Öpik–Oort Cloud. But most just refer to it as the Oort Cloud. Remember also that in 1932 Dr. Oort brought to our attention that there must be “missing mass” in the Universe holding *galaxies* together. Today we call this missing mass *dark matter*. Maybe we should call it *Oort matter*, because so far both of these supposed phenomena are not directly observable. They are just popularly believed to exist because otherwise the Universe could not be as old—nor be sustained for much longer—as *evolutionists* want it to be.

The ‘glaring’ reason the Oort Cloud must exist is because there are way too many *comets*. The mystery is that thousands of them are circling our Sun including hundreds that also travel far outside the known limits of our solar system. You see, *comets* are not expected to last very long. Well, I mean not very long in terms of *evolutionary theory*—only thousands of years, not millions, let alone billions. The point is that for any *long period comets* to still exist—the ones that can travel far beyond Neptune—they would have to be regularly resupplied from a plentiful source somewhere ‘way out there’, or there wouldn't be any such *long period comets* left. This is why *evolutionary scientists* are sure of the existence of the Oort Cloud. And there are recently more reasons to believe as we will see. The same goes for *short period comets*—the ones that stay inside Neptune—except there are now more known potential sources of *short period comets* than you can ‘shake a stick at’, all right here in the observable Solar System. But it is assumed that the *orbits* of some *comets* must originate from the *hypothesized* Oort Cloud, maybe 100 AU or more



Blue chart: features the Asteroid Belt (the white donut-shaped cloud, also called the Main Belt to distinguish it from other asteroid belts) showing the Solar System from the Sun to Jupiter including the Hildas Asteroids (3 orange clumps of dots) just inside the orbit of Jupiter, the Jupiter Trojans Asteroids (green clump of dots) and the Near-Earth Asteroids (also white dots) inside the Main Asteroid Belt. Asteroids that lead or trail in the orbit of a planet are called *trojans*. All planets have *trojans*. A group of *trojans* is also called a *partial asteroid belt*. The group of *trojans* that leads Jupiter is called the Greeks (green dots). The trailing group is called the Trojans (also green dots).

Black chart: features the Kuiper Belt (green dots), the Outer Planet Trojans and the Centaurs (brown dots) showing scale in astronomical units (AU). The Main Belt is not shown. Neptune is about 30 AU from the Sun. Most of the Kuiper Belt is about 30 to 50 AU from the Sun. Mars and the Outer Planets (blue dots) have the most *trojans* (brown dots), and Jupiter the most (pink zones). However some of the brown dots between Jupiter and Neptune are *minor planets* called *centaurs* that have unstable, tilted and eccentric or elliptical orbits that are somewhere between the extremely eccentric orbits of comets and the nearly isotropic or circular orbits of the planets and most other asteroids.

from the Sun, (and outside the limits of both the **blue** and **black** charts, [p.112](#)), because their orbits reach beyond the Kuiper Belt.

Comets have a wide range of *orbital periods*, ranging from a few years to potentially hundreds of thousands of years. *Short-period comets*—the kind that *orbit* mostly within the planets—were first thought to mostly originate from the Kuiper Belt, the *orbiting belt* of *asteroids* ‘just outside’ the *orbit* of Neptune. (See again the **green dots** on the **black chart** on [p.112](#).)

The ‘former planet’ Pluto is now thought to be the largest “asteroid” or “planetoid” or “minor planet” discovered in this *asteroid belt* so far. But larger *asteroids*, like Pluto, are now also called “dwarf planets”. Pluto’s demotion from the status of simply a “planet” is the result of the fairly recent discovery that it is only one of thousands of *orbiting asteroids* in this *belt*. Two of Pluto’s biggest rivals in this *belt* include Haumea, about 1/3 Pluto’s size, discovered in 2004, and Makemake, 2/3 as big, discovered in 2005. And yes, the Kuiper Belt is named after Dr. Urey’s rival. But evidently Dr. Kuiper ‘edged in’ on someone else’s discovery too as this *asteroid belt* is also referred to as the Edgeworth-Kuiper Belt

Anyway, the *orbits* of *comets* are considered unstable. Essentially they are all on ‘collision courses’ with the Sun or a *planet*, or else to be ejected from the Solar System altogether by *planetary perturbations*. In *astronomy*, *perturbation* is the complex *motion* when one *massive body* is subject to *forces* other than the *gravitational attraction* of one other *massive body*. The other *forces* may include the lesser *attractions* to any number of additional *bodies*, *resistance* from *atmosphere*, and the ‘off-center drag’ caused by an ‘egg-shaped’ or otherwise *unspherical rotating body*. And we’ll see other kinds of *perturbations* too, and throughout this **study**.

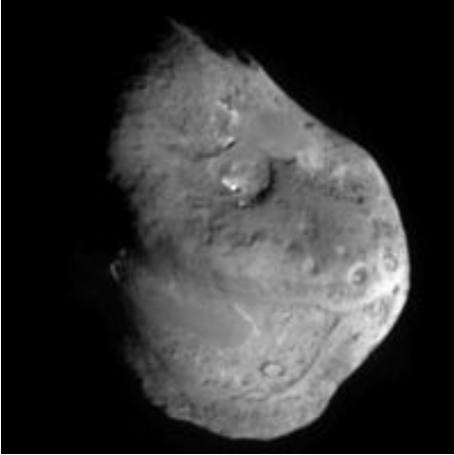
Also, *comets* are presumed to be predominantly *volatile* in composition, meaning they are thought to be made more of *ice* than anything else. And by *ice* I mean a variety of substances that *melt* and *boil* at relatively low *temperatures*. This is why they are classified as *volatile*. *Water*, *carbon monoxide*, *carbon dioxide*, *methane* and *ammonia* are probably the most common *volatiles* detected in *comets* which are believed to exist mostly as *ice*. Other *organic compounds* are also detected such as *methanol*, *hydrogen cyanide*, *formaldehyde* and *ethanol*. And *comets* are believed to be mostly *ice* because as they repeatedly approach the Sun, *radiation* apparently gradually *melts* then *boils* off these *volatiles* until the *comet* splits or develops an *insulating crust* that prevents further *outgassing*. But they are thought to be mostly *ice* because they must be mostly the leftover *hot gas* that eventually *condensed*, then *froze* into ‘clumps’ in the formation of our Solar System. This is the popular *theory* of how these supposed “dirty snowballs” came to look like ‘rocks’, anyway. But I’m guessing it will be soon confirmed that they are really—generally—mostly *rock* and that most of them therefore could not have been around as long as first thought and still be *outgassing* their beautiful *comas* with *tails*.

But it still stands to reason, in an ‘evolutionary mindset’, as Dr. Oort imagined, that a *comet* could not have formed while in its current *orbit*, and must have been held in an outer reservoir for almost all of its existence. But we will see that even this needs some ‘rethinking’ too.

Comet Borrelly ([p.113](#)), by-the-way, kind of looks like a ‘chicken drumstick’, huh? And it exhibits distinct *jets* of *hot gas*, yet the *comet* appears to be *hot* and *dry*. So it doesn’t seem to me to be *outgassing* by the *melting* of *ice* and the *boiling* of that *liquid* due simply to *solar radiation*. It’s one of the reasons the debate is now ongoing about how much



ice vs. rock is in a *comet*. In 2001, NASA's Deep Space 1 team, working at NASA's Jet Propulsion Lab, obtained *high-resolution images* of the surface. Besides the distinct *jets*, and it's *hot* and *dry* surface, they were "surprised" to find "no traces of water ice." However, it is further suggested that the *ice* is probably hidden below the *crust* because "either the surface has been dried out by solar heating and maturation or perhaps the very dark soot-like material that covers Borrelly's surface masks any trace of surface ice".



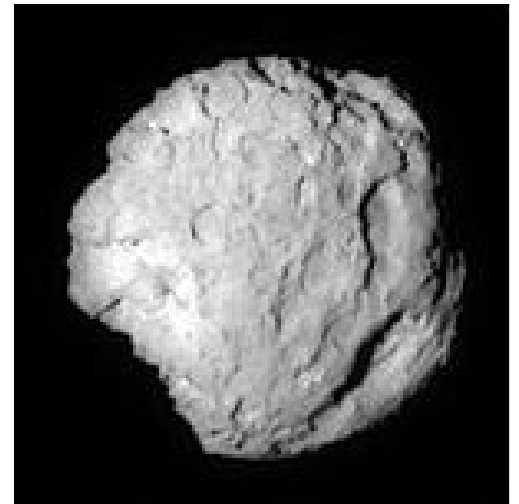
In July 2005, the Deep Impact probe "blasted a crater" so it could collect some of the resulting debris from...

Comet Tempel 1 (p.114), this being an effort to study its interior. The mission results suggested most of the comet's *ice* is below the surface, and that these reservoirs feed the *jets* that form the *coma* of the *comet*.

And there's another *comet* that's been closely observed to exhibit distinct *jets*, and *dry ice* too. The Stardust spacecraft, launched in February 1999, collected particles from the *coma* of this *comet* in January 2004, and returned the samples to Earth in a capsule in January 2006. It is named **Comet**

Wild 2 (p.114). Scientists at the NASA Jet Propulsion

Laboratory reported their astonishment at several of it's features including the number of *jets*, the existence of *jets* on the 'dark side' of the *comet* as well as on the 'light side', the ability of these *jets* to blow large 'chunks of rock' from the surface of the *comet*, and the fact that the *comet* is not a 'loosely cemented rubble pile', seen by its apparent ability to withstand 'significant bombardment' from other *asteroids*. All this means the *outgassing* may not be solely caused by *solar radiation*—that at least some of it may be caused by the 'internal dynamics' of the *comet* itself, and that the *comet* apparently formed under conditions of much greater *gravity* than the *comet* itself now provides. In other words, it appears to be 'a piece of a planet'. Also the materials retrieved demonstrate that the "comet dust resembles asteroid materials". These new results have also forced *scientists* to 'rethink' the nature of *comets* and their distinction from *asteroids*, not to mention how they came to be. And they sure look like 'asteroid-bombarded rocks', don't they? But why do so many of them have *impact craters* like our Moon? I mean they apparently aren't more or less 'sitting targets', nor have the *gravity* to pull in such 'bombardment'. So I'm thinking they were instead in some very 'heavy traffic' at some point, or points, in their past, as we will imagine further.



In April 2011 scientists from the University of Arizona discovered evidence for the presence of *liquid water* in Comet Wild 2. The specifics of this discovery shatter the existing mindset that *comets* never get *hot* enough to *melt* their 'icy bulk'. Again, this suggests that they are more likely 'pieces of planets', because it implies they may not be mostly *frozen ice*, but *condensed rock*, which may also imply some of them were 'spit' into *space* as 'blobs' of *liquid rock*, dragging with them some of the *atmosphere* from the *planet* that 'ejected' them. Really.

Currently NASA is developing a "comet harpoon" for returning samples to Earth. And at this writing the European Space Agency's Rosetta *probe* is en route to Comet

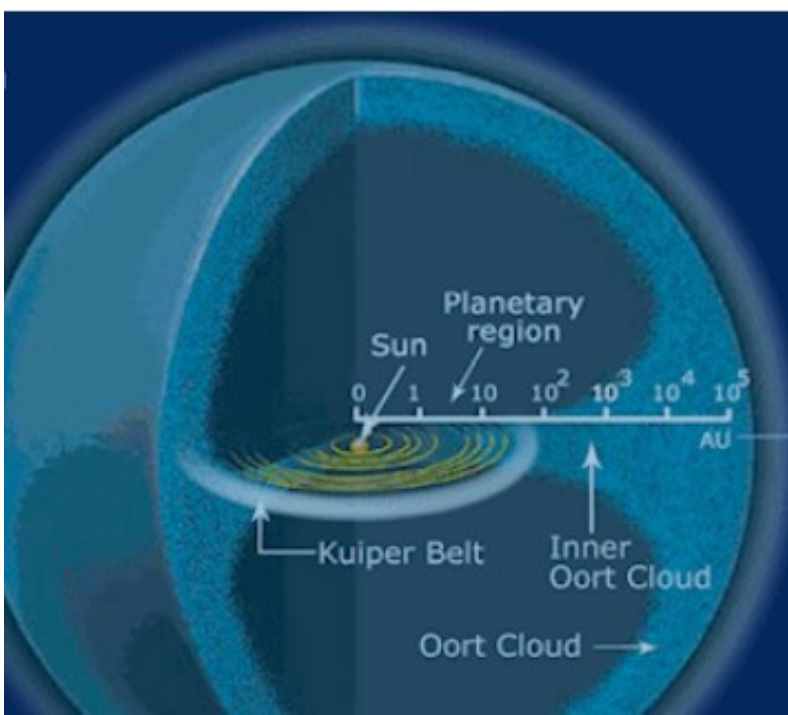
Churyumov–Gerasimenko. In 2014 Rosetta is scheduled to go into *orbit* around the *comet* and place a small “lander” on its surface. This comet is star-shaped and presently completes an orbit in about $6\frac{1}{2}$ years. And I say ‘presently’ because *comets* are regularly nudged from one *orbit* to another when they have close encounters with the *giant planets*. Before 1959 this particular *comet* had *perihelion distance* (closest to Sun and therefore to Earth) of about 2.7 *AU*—*astronomic units*. But in February 1959 a close encounter with Jupiter moved the comet's *perihelion* inward to about 1.3 *AU*, less than half the previous distance. By-the-way, 1 *AU*, or 1 *astronomical unit* is the distance from the Sun to the Earth. So 2.7 *AU*, for example, is 2.7 times the distance from the Sun to the Earth.

So you can see that there is a lot of ‘rethinking’ to do. And likely more and more as new evidence becomes available, and especially when some of those new ‘super telescopes’ come online. But in the next sections, with mostly just **scripture**, we will be **able to reveal** much more about all this than all those *telescopes* and a fleet of *space probes* ever could. So stay aboard.

Comets are often put into two main classes. There are *short period comets*—also called *ecliptic comets*—and *long period comets*—also called *nearly isotropic comets*, or just *isotropic comets*, meaning they tend to have ‘nearly circular orbits’. *Ecliptic comets* have relatively small *orbits*, below 10 *AU*, or out as far as the *giant planets*, and they remain mostly in the *ecliptic plane*, the same *plane* the *planets* revolve in. But most *isotropic comets* have very large *orbits*, thousands of *AU*'s, often traveling far outside the *giant planets*, and mostly *orbit* above and below the *ecliptic plane*, so they can be found in all parts of the sky. It was Dr. Oort that noticed that there was a peak in numbers of *nearly isotropic comets* with *aphelia*—their farthest distance from the Sun—at roughly 20,000 *AU*, which suggests a reservoir at that distance with a *spherical, isotropic distribution*—or like a round, fairly evenly dispersed ‘outer shell’ of *comets*. And it is suspected that the relatively rare *comets* with *orbits* at about 10,000 *AU* have probably gone through some number of *orbits* through the Solar System and have had their orbits ‘nudged’ and drawn inward by the *gravity* of the *planets*. By-the-way, it has been suggested that *objects* from the Oort Cloud should experience, just past *aphelia*, very small *accelerations*, on the order of 10^{-10} m/s^2 , falling within the realm of measurable Modified Newtonian Dynamics (MOND). But remember that accounting for the discrepancies in the *forces* that hold us all together by MOND ‘goes against the grain’. It's trying to

‘move in’ on *dark matter*'s ‘turf.’ Still, if correct, it should have significant implications regarding the formation and structure of the Oort Cloud—you know, some more of that ‘rethinking’—except remember that more *cosmologists*' paychecks are tied to *dark matter*, making it in their interest to ignore MOND as a valid *hypothesis*.

So again, *short period comets* are thought to originate from the distant **Kuiper Belt**, but there is now believed to be another source—the much less stable Scattered Disc—both of these intersecting



'reservoirs' *orbiting* the Sun mostly 'just outside' the *orbit* of Neptune. The Scattered Disc is not shown in this somewhat imagined [diagram of the Solar System](#) on [p.115](#) as its *asteroids orbit* in a wide range above and below the *ecliptic plane*, but generally about as far out as the Kuiper Belt. Some even consider these two systems to be just one. However they generally appear to have a different composition. There are also *long period comets* that are thought to originate from the supposed billions of *objects* that make up the [Oort Cloud](#). And the present 'thinking' is that there must be billions of *objects* in it so that there are reasonable odds that we will have hundreds of them caught as *long period comets* at any given time, as we presently apparently do. And this 'reservoir of objects' probably also contributes to the thousands of *short period comets*. It is imagined to be a "spherical...cloud" of evidently mostly *icy objects* that distantly surrounds the inner Solar System, though remember that *comets* that have been more closely observed usually appear more *rocky* rather than *icy*.

Long period comets are thought to plunge towards the Sun from the Oort Cloud because of *gravitational perturbations*, mostly by being pulled in by the *massive outer planets*. But they are also thought to be drawn in by the occasional "passing star" or by *tidal forces* in the Milky Way Galaxy. But occasionally *hyperbolic comets* pass through the inner Solar System—likely only once—before being thrown out into *interstellar space*. You can tell these 'one-time visitors' won't be back by their wide, *parabolic* or 'dish-shaped' trajectories, as opposed to the *elliptical* or nearly *circular orbits* of 'returning visitors'. And some of these 'returners' must come from a 'surrounding cloud', not just a 'narrow belt', which we'll speculate about further in [SECTION 7](#).

But as 'food for thought', suspected Oort Cloud *objects* (*OCO's*) have been discovered up to roughly 50,000 *AU* or nearly a *lightyear* from the Sun. This suggests the *cloud* at least reaches to nearly a quarter of the distance to Proxima Centauri, the nearest star to the Sun. This is about a 1,000 times farther away than the Kuiper Belt. And *evolutionists* must believe this "cloud" is there, and holding billions of *objects*, in order to regularly resupply the inner Solar System with short-lived *comets* over billions of years. *OCO's* are thought to be composed of mostly *ices* such as *water*, *ammonia*, and *methane*. But again, this hypothesis is not clearly supported by the *comets* that have been inspected at close range so far. They unquestionably contain such *ices*, but they actually appear to be more rocky than *icy*. But would God put billions of *icy objects* far outside the Inner Solar System to make *evolutionists* **believe a lie**?

Astronomers traditionally believe that in the 'early evolution' of the Solar System the *matter* composing the Oort Cloud formed closer to the Sun and was dispersed far out into *space* by the *gravitational* effects of the *outer giant planets*. However in a 2010 NASA Science article entitled, *The Sun Steals Comets from Other Stars*, NASA cites the "sophisticated computer simulations run by researchers at the Southwest Research Institute (SWRI)". NASA quotes them as saying,

We know that stars form in clusters. The Sun was born within a huge community of other stars that formed in the same gas cloud. In that birth cluster, the stars were close enough together to pull comets away from each other via gravity.

So *scientists* at SWRI and NASA think that the Oort Cloud is, at least partly, the product of an exchange of materials between the Sun and its 'sister stars' as they formed and drifted apart. But the outer Oort cloud could only be loosely bound to the inner Solar System, and thus it is more easily affected by the gravitational pull

both of *passing stars* and of the Milky Way Galaxy itself. These forces could occasionally 'dislodge' *comets* from their *orbits* within the *cloud* and send them toward the Inner Solar System. And though more recently it has been observed that most *short period comets* more likely come from the Scattered Disc, some still could have originated from the Oort Cloud, I mean, if God has or had some purpose for all this 'interaction'. And there are a few known *Trans-Neptunian objects*, *TNO's*, that are considered possible members of the Inner Oort Cloud. One of these *TNO's*, by-the-way, *orbits* 'backward' or *retrograde*, and near perpendicular to the *ecliptic*, or at a near 90 degree angle to the *plane* that most of the *planets orbit* in.

The *TNO* Sedna, until recently, had the longest orbital period of any known *large object* in the Solar System, calculated at around 11,400 years. Its *orbit* is extremely *eccentric* ('narrowly elliptical'), with an *aphelion* (farthest distance from the Sun) estimated at 937 *AU*—937 times the distance from the Sun to the Earth—and it has a *perihelion* (closest distance to the Sun) at about 76 *AU*. At its discovery it was approaching the inner Solar System at 89.6 *AU* from the Sun, and was the most distant object in the Solar System yet observed. But later Eris was detected by the same survey at 97 *AU*. So though some *orbits of long period comets* apparently extend farther than Sedna, they are presently too dim to be discovered except when approaching *perihelion* in the Inner Solar System. And even then, when Sedna, for example, would be at *perihelion* in mid 2076, the Sun would appear from that perspective as only a very bright star in its sky, and much too far away to be visible to the naked eye from Earth.

And besides these extreme *TNO's*, the Kuiper Belt and the Scattered Disc both lie beyond the *orbit* of Neptune. So these systems (or system) are said to reside in the Trans-Neptunian Region too, and these *asteroids* make up the bulk of the known Trans-Neptunian *objects* or *TNO's*. Kuiper Belt *asteroids* or "objects" have the additional designation of *KBO's*, while Scattered Disc *objects* are also identified as *SDO's*, though again, some *astronomers* view these two systems as just one and instead designate *SDO's* as Scattered Kuiper Belt *objects* or *SKBO's*. All these *TNO's*, with possibly some contributions from the Oort Cloud, are considered the source of most *short period comets*. But again, *long period comets*—*comets* whose *orbits* extend to the *outer giant planets* and beyond—are believed to mostly originate in the Oort Cloud. And those few "objects" that have been discovered far beyond the Kuiper Belt that are suspected of being in the Inner Oort Cloud are also called Oort Cloud *objects* or *OCO's*.

Now of course all this 'interaction' started after God *made the stars* on The 4th Day of Creation [Gen 1:14-16](#), so all of it doesn't need billions of years of backstory. In fact, I intend to **prove** that all this started less than 6,000 years ago. And I mean only a **fool** ([Psa 14:1](#); [53:1](#)) would think that it all had to happen over billions of years when God says a single day was sufficient to set it all in motion. Or does He? Actually **scripture** tells us that what we see in our Solar System is not just the result of God's **work** on one **day**. There was another 'big day' since that 4th day when God's **work** changed the operations of our Solar System, as we will **see** throughout this **study**. And there are such 'big and bigger days' still to come.

And let's 'feed our thoughts' about all this 'interaction' a little more. *Comets* are distinguished from *asteroids* by the presence of a *coma*, often including a "tail" or "tails". However, there are "extinct comets" that have apparently passed close to the Sun too many times and evidently have lost nearly all of their *volatile ices*, and now resemble *asteroids*. And *asteroids* are distinguished from *comets* in that they are thought to have formed in the Inner Solar System rather than in the Outer Solar System. However the discovery of Main Belt *comets* with *comas*—*orbiting* mostly in the *ecliptic plane* between Mars and Jupiter—and *centaurs* with *comas*—*orbiting*

mostly between Jupiter and Neptune, and mostly not in the *ecliptic plane*—have also helped to blur the distinction between *asteroids* and *comets*. As of January 2011 there are a reported 4,185 known *comets*.

Short period comets are generally defined as having *orbital periods* of less than 200 years. They usually orbit more-or-less in the *ecliptic plane* in the same direction as the *planets*. Their *orbits* typically take them out as far as the region of the 4 *giant planets*, Jupiter and beyond, at *aphelion*. For example, the *aphelion* of the 75-year *orbit* of Halley's Comet is a little beyond that of Neptune's. *Comets* whose *aphelia* are near the orbit of *giant planet* are called its "family". Such *families* are thought to arise from the *planet* that *captures* formerly *long period comets* into shorter *orbits*. (Note: *aphelia*, plural of *aphelion*, are the single points in each *orbit* where *objects* are at their farthest distance from the Sun.)

Most *short period comets*—those with *orbital periods* shorter than 20 years and *inclinations* of 20–30 *degrees* or less—are called Jupiter Family Comets. Those like Halley, with *orbital periods* of between 20 and 200 years and *inclinations* extending up to more than 90 *degrees*, are called Halley-type Comets. As of 2012, only 64 Halley-type Comets have been observed, compared with nearly 450 Jupiter Family Comets. At the shorter extreme, Encke's Comet has an *orbit* that does not reach the *orbit* of Jupiter. It completes an *orbit* in 3 years, and is known, along with others with such short *orbits*, as an Encke-type Comet.

But over a third of the known *comets* are thought to share a common origin. These about 1,500 comets are known as Kreutz Sungrazers, and about 500 of them are—or have become—*short period comets*. And by ongoing discovery their numbers are steadily increasing. The Kreutz Sungrazers are a family of *sungrazing comets*, characterized by *orbits* taking them extremely close to the Sun at *perihelion*. They are “believed to be fragments of one large *comet* that broke up several centuries ago and are named for German astronomer Heinrich Kreutz, who first demonstrated that they were related”. Several members of the Kreutz Family have become “Great Comets”—highly visible at *perihelion*—a few of which are occasionally visible in the daytime sky. The most recent of these was Comet Ikeya-Seki in 1965, one of the brightest *comets* in the last millennium. Many hundreds of the smaller Kreutz Family members, some only a few meters across, are being discovered since the launch of the SOHO Satellite in 1995. But none of these smaller ones survive *perihelion* passage. They crash into the Sun. Larger *sungrazers* such as the Great Comet of 1843 and Comet Lovejoy survive this passage. Kreutz Comets are being regularly discovered by amateur *astronomers* from observational transmissions available in real time on the Internet. And there is



an expectation that another cluster of these *comets* may begin to arrive in the Inner Solar System soon. A SOHO Satellite picture of a... **Kreutz Sungrazer** (🔊) plunging into the Sun is on **p.118**.

However all this represents only a tiny fraction of the total potential *comet* population. It is believed that the reservoir of comet-like bodies in the Outer Solar System may number near one trillion. The number visible to the naked eye presently averages roughly one per year, though many are faint and unimpressive. The particularly bright ones, the Great Comets, are much more infrequent.

Comets are known to range from about a 'football field' to about 30 miles across. Again, they are believed to be composed of *rock, dust, water ice*, and a variety of *frozen gases*, and are still popularly referred to as "dirty snowballs", though again, recent observations have revealed *dry, dusty* or *rocky* and *cratered* surfaces, suggesting, at least, that the *ices* are hidden beneath the *crust*. It is also thought that because of their *low mass*, *comets* do not become *spherical* under their own *gravity*, and thus have irregular shapes.

Comets also contain a variety of *organic compounds* such as *methanol, hydrogen cyanide, formaldehyde, ethanol* and *ethane*, and possibly more *complex molecules* such as *long-chain hydrocarbons* and *amino acids*. In 2009, NASA's Stardust mission confirmed that an *amino acid* had been found in the *comet dust* that was recovered. And in 2011, a NASA report based on studies of *meteorites* found on Earth suggested that DNA and RNA components may have been formed on *asteroids and comets* in *outer space*. We will reconsider this 'lively' evidence next section, and in later sections too.

The *tails* of *comets* generally point away from the Sun, but it's actually a lot more complicated than that. In the Outer Solar System, *comets* remain *frozen* and are extremely difficult to impossible to detect from Earth due to their small size. As a comet approaches the Inner Solar System, *solar radiation* causes the *volatile materials* within the *comet* to *vaporize* and 'stream out', carrying *dust* away with them. The 'streams' of *dust* and *gas* released from a large, unstable *atmosphere* around the *comet* called the *coma*, and the *force* exerted on the *coma* by the Sun's *radiation pressure* and *solar wind* cause an enormous *tail* to form, which points away from the Sun. Both the *coma* and *tail* are illuminated by the Sun and may become visible from Earth when a *comet* passes through the Inner Solar System.

The *comets* escaping *dust* reflects sunlight directly and the *gases* glow from *ionisation* including producing an *ion* or *type I tail*. Again, most *comets* are too faint to be visible without the aid of a *telescope*, but a few each decade become bright enough to be visible to the naked eye. But occasionally a *comet* may experience a huge and sudden outburst of *gas* and *dust*, during which the size of the coma temporarily greatly expands. This happened to **Comet Holmes** in 2007 (p.118). The 'streams' of *dust* and *gas* each form their own distinct *tail*, pointing in different directions. A *tail* of *dust* is also left behind in the *comet's orbit* often forming a curved *tail* called the *type II* or *dust tail*, and tends to follow *magnetic field lines* rather than an *orbital trajectory*. Sometimes a short *tail* pointing in the opposite direction to the *ion* and *dust tails* may be seen called the *antitail*. These were once thought as mysterious, but are now understood to be the end of the *dust tail* that only appears to project ahead of the *comet* due to our viewing angle.

While *comets* are relatively small, their *coma* may be larger than the Sun, and *ion tails* have been observed to stretch over 1 *AU* (the distance from the Sun to the Earth—nearly 100 million miles). And on a number of occasions *astronomers* have witnessed "tail disconnection events" where a *comet* loses its *tail*. This was seen, for example, in 2007 when the *ion tail* of Encke's Comet was completely severed while the *comet* passed through a *coronal mass ejection* of the Sun, as observed by the STEREO *space probe*.



Oddly enough, Jupiter Family Comets (*JFC's*) and *long period comets (LPC's)* are believed to fade at dramatically different rates. It is extrapolated that *JFC's* are active over a lifetime of about 10,000 years or about 1,000 revolutions while *LPC's* disappear much faster. Calculations on *LPC's* estimate that only 10% of them survive more than 50 passages at *perihelion*, while only 1% of them survive more than 2,000 passages. And this is why *astronomers* think there must be an Oort Cloud that must be very 'well-stocked' with potential *comets*.

But anyone should be able to see that *astronomers* need to get their stories straight. They say *comets* are mostly made of *volatile materials*, mostly *frozen gases*. Yet they also say that eventually most of the *volatile materials* contained in *comets* 'evaporate away', and the *comet* becomes a small, dark, inert lump of *rock* or *rubble* that can resemble an *asteroid*. I mean, doesn't that show that they're mostly *rock*? Otherwise, when the *ice* is all gone, it should be too, right? But



comets are also known to break up into fragments, as happened with Comet Schwassmann-Wachmann 3 starting in 1995. And it is thought that this breakup may be triggered by *tidal gravitational forces* from the Sun or a large planet, or by an "explosion" of *volatile material*, or for "other reasons not fully understood".

And there are *collisions*. Besides the regular *collisions* with the Sun by Kreutz Sungrazers. Comet Shoemaker-Levy broke into pieces and collided with Jupiter in 1994. The dark spots in this picture of [Jupiter on p.119](#) mark the major impact sites. The *comet* was *captured* by Jupiter in 1992 and it began *orbiting* till it finally broke up and its

pieces crashed into Jupiter's southern hemisphere. Scientists believe that *collisions* between *comets* and *asteroids* with *planets* and *moons* were common in the early Solar System, and looking at all the *impact craters* on the Moon, or on the surface views obtained from most other *objects* in our Solar System, how could they think differently? There have obviously been a whole lot of *collisions* happening all over the Solar System at one time or another. But how could there be so many in just 6,000 years? *Evolutionists* believe that many *comets* and *asteroids* *collided* into Earth in its early stages of the Solar System. Some also believe that the *comets* that 'bombarded' the young Earth—about 4 billion years ago—brought the vast quantities of water that now fill the Earth's oceans, or at least a significant portion of it. But what other 'resources' could they be used by God to supply, or resupply?

And again, the detection of *organic molecules* in *comets* has led some to speculate that *comets* or *meteorites* may have brought the 'precursors of life'—or even *life* itself—to Earth. And there are Near-Earth Comets and various *asteroids* whose paths cross Earth's orbit, though nothing is presently known to be on a 'collision course' with Earth in the calculable future. But the incalculable *perturbations* occurring all the time in our Solar System and *galaxy* could change that at any time. And it is also believed that more than likely that we will eventually have a significant *collision* with an *asteroid* rather than with a *comet*, assuming there really is a significant difference between them, other than more or less *volatile ices* and *gases*.

But during the 1980s, the introduction of the *charge-coupled device* in *telescopes* in combination with *higher-capacity computers* for *image analysis* allowed for more efficient deep-sky surveys than was practical using just *photography*. This led to a flood of new discoveries: between 1992 and 2006—over a thousand new *TNO's* were detected. So like the atom, there now appears to be no

end to the complicated construction and operations of our Solar System too, wouldn't you know.

The first Scattered Disc Object to be recognized as such was originally identified in 1996 by *astronomers* based atop Mauna Kea in Hawaii. Three more were identified by the same survey in 1999. But the first object discovered that was later classified as an *SDO* was found in 1995 by Spacewatch, a project now based at the University of Arizona that specializes in the study of *minor planets*, including various types of *asteroids* and *comets*.

As of 2011, over 200 *SDO's* have been identified. And although the numbers of *objects* in the Kuiper Belt and the Scattered Disc are supposed to be roughly equal, far fewer *SDO's* have been observed to date because, though their *orbits* swing as close to the Sun as most *KBO's*, they often extend far beyond the *orbit* of *KBO's* at *aphelion*.

So again, the Kuiper Belt was initially believed to be the source of the Solar System's *ecliptic comets*. However studies of the region since 1992 have revealed that the *orbits* within the Kuiper Belt are relatively stable, and that more *comets* likely originate from the more dynamic, less stable, Scattered Disc.

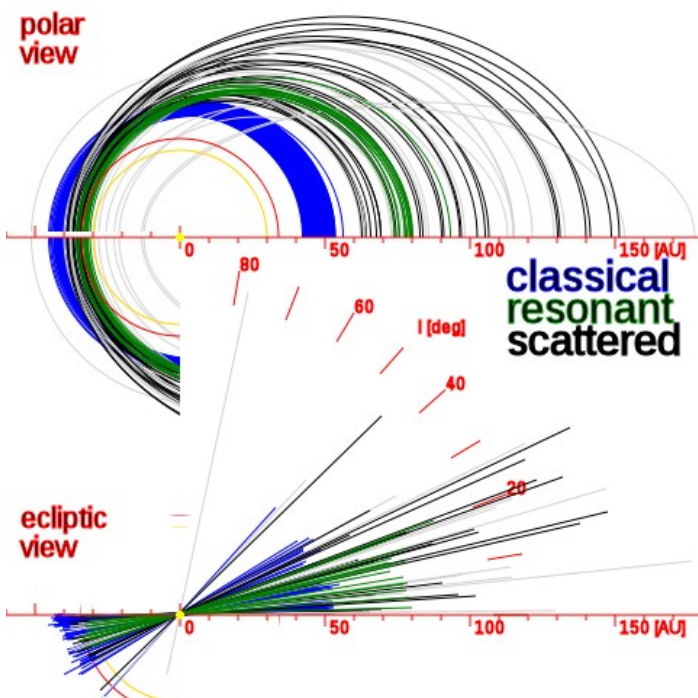
Centaur's are thought to be a dynamic intermediate stage between the Scattered Disc and the Jupiter Family. But there are some differences between *SDO's* and *JFC's*, even though it is thought that many *JFC's* may originate in the Scattered Disc. One general difference is that though Centaur's share a more *reddish* or *neutral*

coloration with many *SDO's*, their *nuclei* are *bluer*, indicating a fundamental *chemical* or *physical* difference. One hypothesis is that *comet nuclei* are 'resurfaced' as they approach the Sun by *subsurface materials* which subsequently 'bury' the older material.

The *eccentricity* and *inclination* of the **classical** and **resonant** Kuiper Belt Objects (*KBO's*) compared to the **scattered** population (*SDO's*) is shown in the diagram on p.120. The **red circle** is the *orbit* of Neptune. And you can see that the **scattered** *objects* travel up to nearly 5 times further from the Sun than Neptune, and at generally sharper angles away from the *ecliptic plane* of the *planets*.

The Kuiper Belt is a relatively thick *torus* (or "doughnut") of *space*, extending mostly from about 30 to 50 *AU*, and is generally thought to contain two main populations.

These are the *classical* Kuiper Belt Objects (*KBO's*) or "cubewanos", which move in *orbits* untouched by Neptune, and the **resonant** Kuiper Belt Objects, those which Neptune has locked into a precise *orbital ratio* including **3:2**, which means the *object* completes an *orbit* of the Sun twice for every 3 *orbits* of Neptune, and **2:1**, where the *object* goes around once for every 2 *orbits* of Neptune. These ratios, called *orbital resonances*, allow *KBO's* to avoid Neptune's *gravitational influence* and remain in stable *orbits*. Their *orbits* are stable because they never get close enough to Neptune to be *scattered*, *captured* or *perturbed* by its *gravity*. Those in **3:2 resonances** are known as "plutinos", because Pluto is the largest member of



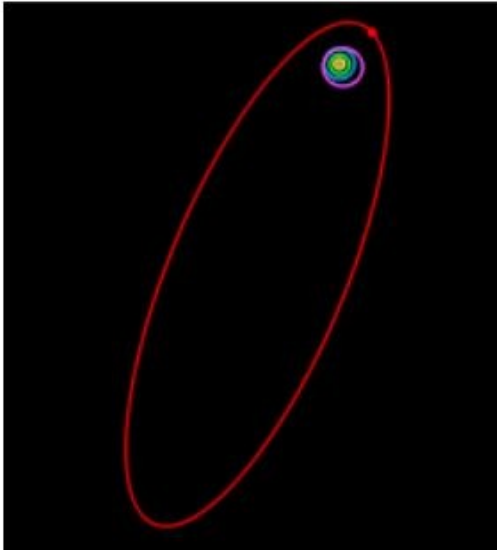
their group. The ones with in $2:1$ resonances are known as "twotinos", not to be confused with that brand of frozen pizza.

But unlike the Kuiper Belt *objects*, the Scattered Disc population can be disturbed by Neptune. Scattered Disc *objects* come within gravitational range of Neptune at their closest approaches (at around 30 AU), though again, their farthest distances reach several times beyond that. And you may already have guessed, as ongoing research suggests, that *centaurs*, orbiting mostly between Jupiter and Neptune, may simply be SDO's thrown into the inner reaches of the Solar System by Neptune, making them "Cis-Neptunian" (or 'inside Neptune') rather than Trans-Neptunian Scattered Objects. But some *objects* orbit between the conventional boundaries of *centaurs* and SDO's, blurring any distinction between them—not to mention that a few *centaurs* have been discovered to have faint *comas*—so that the Minor Planet Center (MPC), which officially catalogues all Trans-Neptunian Objects, now lists Centaurs and SDO's together in the same category.

Still the Minor Planet Center makes a clear distinction between the Kuiper Belt and the Scattered Disc; separating those *objects* in *stable orbits* in the Kuiper Belt from the *scattered orbits* of the Scattered Disc and Centaurs. However again, many *astronomers* see the Scattered Disc as not a separate population but as an outward region of the Kuiper Belt, calling them instead "Scattered Kuiper Belt Objects"—or SKBO's. And maybe you can now see that all the 'lines' are unavoidably 'blurred' by all these definitions.

Drs. Morbidelli and Brown propose, in a publication of the University of Arizona Press, that the difference between the Kuiper Belt Objects and Scattered Disc Objects is that SDO's "are transported...[by] encounters with Neptune", but KBO's experience no such close encounters. But they admit that this definition is 'pulled apart' over the age of the Solar System, since *bodies* "trapped in resonances" could "pass from a scattering phase to a non-scattering phase, and vice versa, numerous times"

And **TNO Sedna** is classified by the Minor Planet Center as an *SDO* instead of an



The orbit of Sedna (red) outside the orbits of Jupiter (orange), Saturn (yellow), Uranus (green), Neptune (blue) and Pluto (purple) *OCO*.



Scale comparison of some of the largest *TNO*'s and their moons with Earth

But its discoverer, Dr. Michael E. Brown, has suggested instead that it should be considered an Inner Oort Cloud Object—an *OCO*—rather than a member of the Scattered Disc, because, with a *perihelion distance* of 76 *AU*—putting its closest pass over 2½ times further away from the Sun than Neptune—it is too remote to be affected by the *gravitational attraction* of the *outer planets*. Under this definition, an *object* with a *perihelion* greater than 40 *AU* could be classified as outside the Scattered Disc, and a member of the Oort Cloud. And apparently we won't run short of conflicting definitions of our Solar System's *minor planets*. See the charts on [p.121](#).

And clearly Sedna (also charted on [p.121](#)) isn't the only such *object* to strain these definitions. 2000 CR₁₀₅, discovered before Sedna, and 2004 VN₁₁₂ also have *perihelia* too far away from Neptune to be influenced by it. This led to a discussion among *astronomers* about a new "minor planet set" called the *extended scattered disc*—*E-SDO*'s. And maybe they're not better described as Oort Cloud Objects but as *transitional objects* between the Scattered Disc Region and the Inner Oort Cloud Region. And more recently these *objects* have been referred to as "detached" or "distant detached objects"—*DDO*'s

So there is really no clear boundary between the Scattered and Detached Regions, except that the Scattered Region is known to be a very 'dynamic environment', because the *objects* in this region are still capable of being *perturbed* by Neptune—likely to eventually be pushed into the influence of one or more of the other *giant planets*, and from there further into the Inner Solar System. And this may have already happened numerous times, as we will see. And likely it is also true, given the ever increasing number of these *objects* being discovered over time, that we will find numerous other 'perturbable' *objects*. Not to mention that because of the *perturbations* of more "dynamic" *objects*, other *objects* that are now more

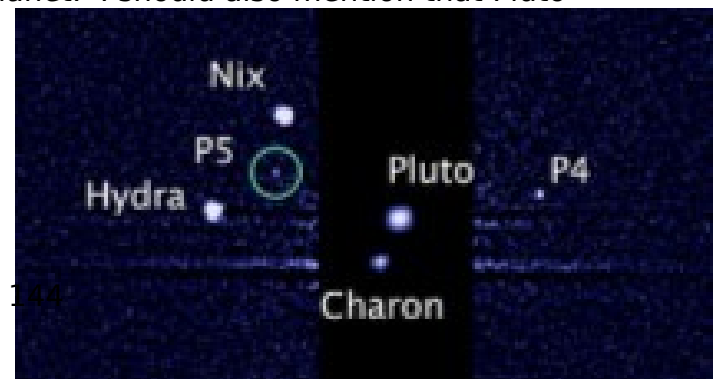
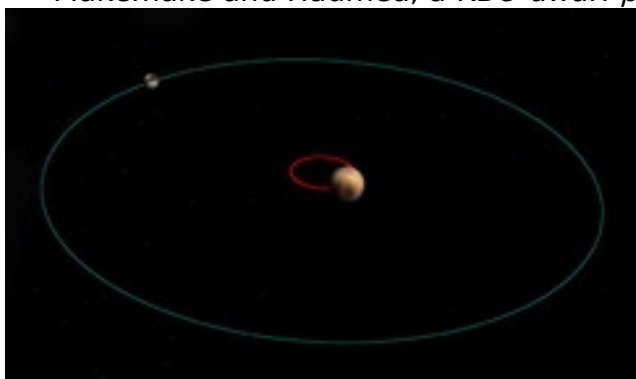
stable will become *perturbed* and more “dynamic”. And remember that unlike the more *stable KBO's*, the *orbits* of *SDO's* can be inclined over 40° from the *ecliptic*. And I mean this kind of ‘billiards game’ should eventually involve ‘every ball on the table’ at one point or another, including Earth. But we’re also going to see that the One ‘calling the shots’ has made many outrageously awesome—no, hardly believable—‘trick shots’ in this game before, as we’ll see in later sections. They only begin to become believable when you begin to get to know His unbelievably awesome works that He can and does **accomplish** simply using His Own **appointed...ordinances** [Jer 33:25](#).

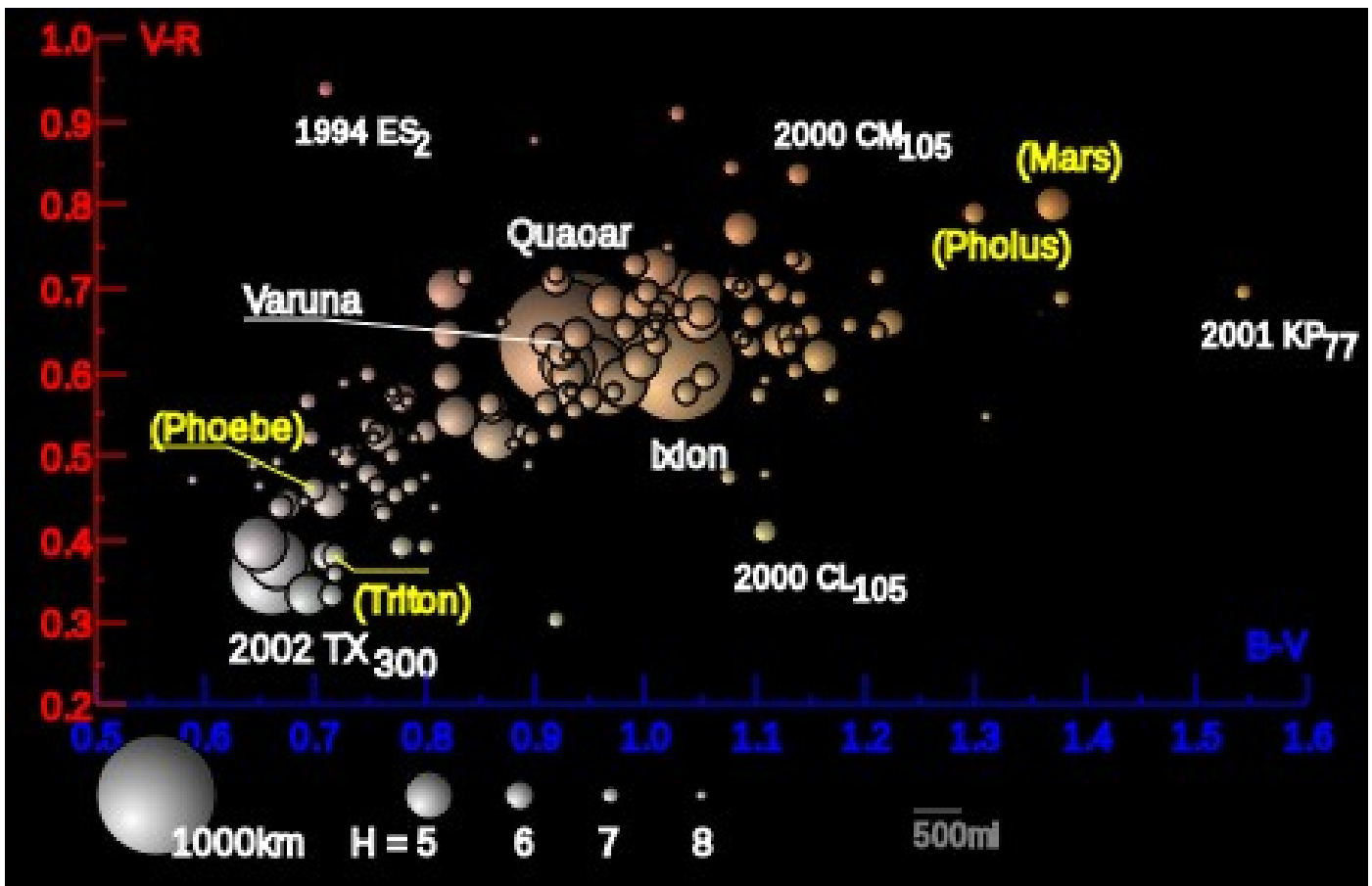
And what else about the composition of all these *objects* do we know? *Astronomers* have asserted—and expected—to find similar *compositions* within these “minor planet sets” that imply similar origins. The *infrared spectra* of Pluto and Eris, for example, both *stable KBO's*, show *signatures* for *methane*. And most *KBO's* and *SDO's* are believed to have *low densities* and to be composed largely of *frozen volatiles* such as *water* and *methane*. And *spectral analysis* of selected *KBO's* and *SDO's* has revealed *signatures* showing that they have similar compounds.

Astronomers also originally popularly supposed that the entire Trans-Neptunian population would show a similar *red surface color*, because they were believed to have originated in the same region and subjected to the same physical processes, and, I would add, this could be suspected even if it all happened in a 24 hour process on The 4th Day of Creation. Specifically, *SDO's* were expected to have large amounts of surface *methane*, ‘chemically altered’ into *complex organic molecules* by *energy* from the Sun. This would *absorb blue light*, creating a *reddish hue*. And most *KBO's* display this color as expected, but *SDO's* do not. Instead, they more commonly present a *white* or *grayish* appearance, which is classified as *blue, bluish gray* or *gray*.

One way *astronomers* attempt to explain their different appearances is by suggesting that ‘perturbable’ *SDO's* more readily expose their *whiter subsurface layers* during the more frequent *impacts* they have with other *objects*. Another suggestion is that it is related to the lesser *gravitational effects* on *scattered objects* because of their overall greater distance from the Sun. However Dr. Mike Brown, discoverer of the *SDO* Eris, suggests that this extra distance simply makes them colder, so that its paler color could be because its *atmosphere* of *methane* is *frozen* over its entire surface, creating a layer of *bright white ice*. And this would be why ‘splochey-looking’ Pluto, being closer to the Sun, would be *warm* enough that *methane* would *freeze* only onto *cooler, highly reflective regions*, leaving *non-reflective, heat-absorbing regions* bare of *ice*. And this might settle the issue if there were not numerous exceptions to this ‘distance rule’, where some closer object appear *white*, and ones further away appear *red*, not to mention that *densities* also very greatly.

For example, *KBO* Eris is estimated to be nearly equal in *diameter* to *KBO* Pluto, but Eris is calculated to be 27% more *massive* than Pluto, which added to the reasons Pluto lost its designation as a *planet*, and became, along with Eris, Makemake and Haumea, a *KBO dwarf planet*. I should also mention that Pluto





strays over 17° from the *ecliptic plane* in its *orbit*, has 5 *moons*, and that it is really a *binary planet system* because it *orbits* a point in empty *space* along with one of its 'moons', Charon, as they together *orbit* the Sun. The red and blue *orbits* depicted on p.122 are Pluto and Charon, along with a 'side view' of the 5 moons of Pluto, and evidently

all Pluto's *moons orbit* this same empty point in *space* too. And there are believed to be over 200 *dwarf planets* in the Kuiper Belt, and many more beyond it, including Sedna. There are also 3 candidates for this designation in the Main Asteroid Belt between Mars and Jupiter, Ceres being the largest. And some *moons* of the *giant planets* are big enough for this designation, as well as Earth's *moon*. And a few Centaurs are big enough too.

The diagram on p.123 shows the *color distribution of the TNO's*. The Inner Solar System Objects (I'll call them *ISSO's*) included in this diagram for comparison are Neptune's *moon* Triton, Saturn's *moon* Phoebe, the Centaur Pholus, and the Planet Mars, all indicated in yellow. The intent of the diagram is to show their comparable *colors*. And all the *objects* are classified as either "red" or "blue"—the *blue* ones otherwise described as "white", "grayish white" or just "gray". And again, this difference in *color* is believed to be related to the generally different *chemical compositions* and/or *physical states* of the *objects*.

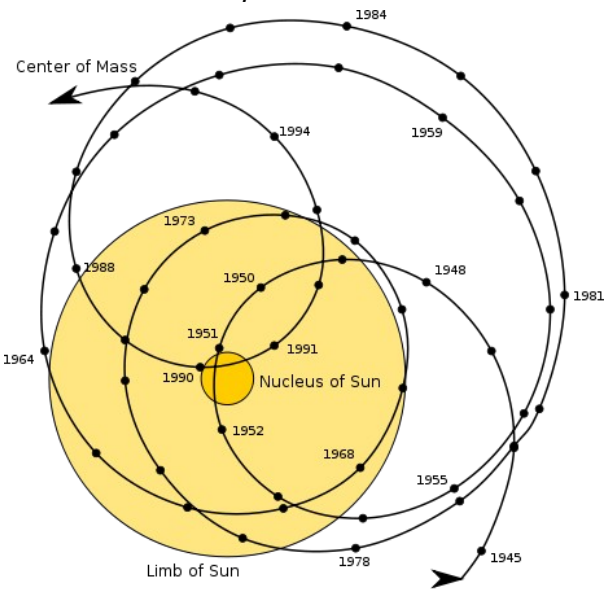
And remember that Centaurs are identified as *dynamic* (read, *perturbable*) *transitional objects* between the Scattered Disc and the Jupiter Family System. Centaurs are larger and smaller *minor planets* that *orbit* mostly 'between' the *giant planets*. They have *unstable orbits* because they cross—or have crossed—the *orbits* of one or more of the *giant planets*, and therefore apparently have short lifetimes. But despite the belief that many *JFC's* and Centaurs were originally *SDO's*, there are differences between them. And although the *centaurs* share a *reddish* or *neutral coloration* with many *SDO's*, the *objects* themselves are *bluer*, yet another

indication of some kind of *chemical* or *physical* difference.

Chariklo, the largest known [centaur](#) (as of 2012), with a diameter of near 160 miles, has a *highly eccentric orbit*. It *orbits* the Sun between Saturn and Uranus, “grazing” the *orbit* of Uranus. But Centaur 1995 SN₅₅, with a *perihelion* greater than Jupiter and an *aphelion* possibly beyond Neptune, may be bigger, possibly near 200 miles in diameter, though only observed for a short time in the fall of 1995. Due to this short observation arc, the estimated *orbit* of the *object* is uncertain, and is still considered *lost*. Nevertheless, from this limited perspective, the Jet Propulsion Laboratory (JPL) estimated that this *object* has an *aphelion distance* just inside 40 *AU*, while the National Optical Astronomy Observatory (NOAO) estimated it has an *aphelion distance* of 91 *AU*—potentially out to the Inner Oort Cloud. But this would make this *object* too far out to be a Centaur, and not far enough out to be a Distant Detached Object (*DDO*), making it possibly better described as an *E-SKBO*, or an Extended Scattered Kuiper Belt Object.

And Pluto is not the only *body* out there with an ‘exaggerated wobble’. *Wobble* is really the norm. This is because, within our *planetary system*, the *planets*, *dwarf planets* (the larger *planetoids*, in the class of *minor planets*), *asteroids* (the smaller *planetoids*, in the class of *minor planets*), *centaurs*, (mostly *orbiting* ‘between’ the *giant planets* though not so much in the same plane, including both larger and smaller *planetoids* in the class of *minor planets*), and *comets*, all *orbit* the

barycenter—or center of mass—of the Sun in elliptical orbits. Now you would think that this *barycenter* remains at the center of the Sun, but this is not exactly true. The ‘center’ that all *bodies* in our Solar System ‘orbit around’—including the Sun—‘drifts’, and as often as not, it is a point just outside the body of the Sun—kind of like Pluto, but not necessarily so extreme. In other words, even our Sun ‘wobbles’ around this *barycenter* as it is ‘pulled on’ by the ever-changing configuration of our entire *planetary system*. Surely the calculations of *supercomputers* and the observations of better *telescopes* have made such observations more recognizable. See such a calculation of our entire Solar System’s drifting *barycenter* in relation to the Sun diagramed in the chart on [p.124](#).



But some of the smaller *bodies* are also *gravitationally bound* to one or more of the *planets* or minor planets. They follow *orbits* around a drifting *barycenter* that is in or near the *object* they *orbit* while this *object orbits* the drifting *barycenter* that is in or near the Sun. And if you’re standing maybe you should sit down, as this might make you feel ‘a little wobbly’ too.

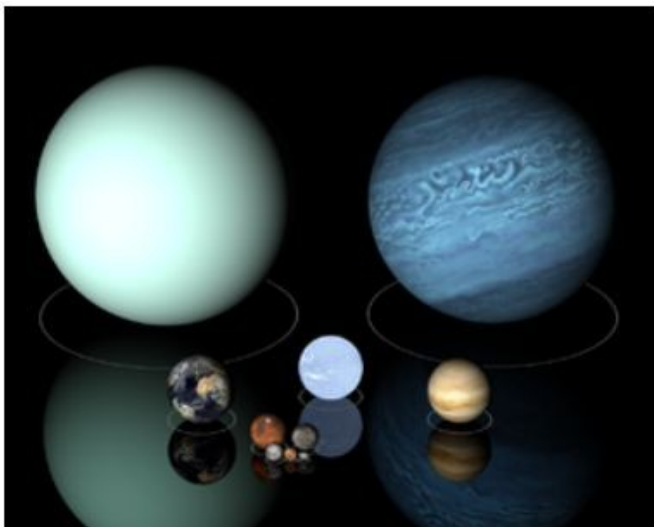
On top of that, because of what are called *mutual gravitational perturbations*, the *eccentricities* of *orbits* vary over time. The *eccentricity* of an orbit, among other things, can tell you how ‘elliptical’ the *orbit* is, or whether it is ‘elliptical’ at all. An *orbit* without any *eccentricity* would be ‘perfectly circular’. And higher *eccentricities* can indicate long *elliptical orbits*. But even higher *eccentricities* can imply some very strange *orbits* indeed. Such *orbits* may no longer be simply *elliptical*, because they may shift and even change directions in ways that are not easily described. *Resonance* is also a factor in most *orbits*. This is how often other *objects* occasionally pass close enough to exert a regular change in the *orbit*. The higher the

resonance, the more complicated the *orbit*. And Centaur *orbits* are among the most highly affected by one or more of the *giant planets*. But again, there are always exceptions to these rules straining these definitions and simplifications.

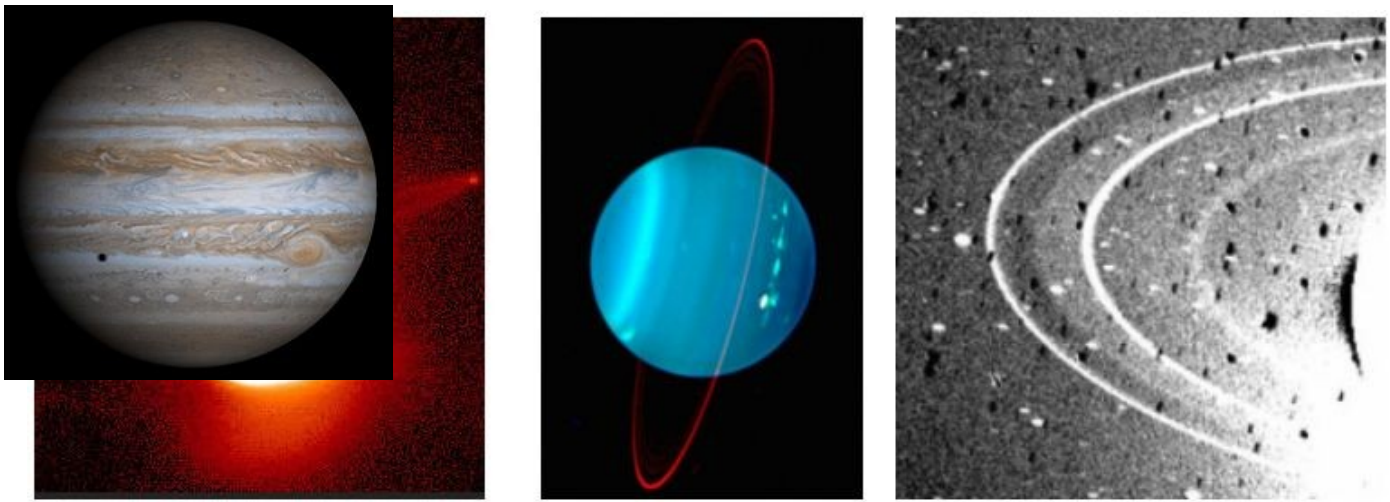


Still, *planets* seem to display the same *red* and *blue colors* of the various *minor planet sets*, and with all the 'irregularities' out there, this implies that at least some of the *minor planets* come from the *planets* themselves, including from the *giant planets*, with part of that identification coming from the *color* these various *red* and *blue minor planets* share with their 'parent planet'.

Mercury, a *blue planet*, is the smallest *planet* in the Solar System, and has the most *eccentric elliptical orbit* of the *planets*. Of course Pluto, which displays a *red color* and *orbits* in a 17° tilt off the *ecliptic plane*, held that honor, until it was recently 'downgraded' to a *dwarf planet*. Mars, also famously red, has the next largest *eccentricity*. And later in this **study** we would expect the same of noticeably *red* Venus, but it, along with the very *blue* Neptune, are the least *eccentric*, meaning their *orbits* are most nearly *circular*. Uranus, also *blue*, is unique in the fact that it doesn't *rotate* like the Sun or the other *planets*, but more 'barrels along' as it *orbits* the Sun, 'rolling on its side' so to speak, most of its 27 known small *moons*—the largest being half the size of Earth's *moon*—'barrel' around it in the same way, except there are one or two "unstable" *moons* presently under its influence. I expect it's 'rolling on its side' because at some time in the last few thousand years some *collision* or near *collision* has occurred with another *object* large enough to push it over on its side. Shake, rattle and roll! **Jupiter**, and it's now smaller—though visibly farther-reaching with its 'environs'—closest *giant* neighbor **Saturn** (p.125), also appear *red*. Jupiter now has 67 known moons, 16 of them with a diameter over 6 miles, and holds the largest *moon* in the Solar System, Ganymede,



which is a little larger than Mercury, but like the Earth's Moon and Mercury, looks *blue*, including being covered with *impact craters*, though unlike Mercury, apparently weighs less than half as much, implying it might have been a *volcanic bomb*, as opposed to being a fragment from the *collision* involving one or more larger *objects*, and evidently not a fragment of a *red planet*. And Jupiter has a variety of *red* and *blue satellites*. Saturn has 61 known *moons*. It too has a *moon* larger than Mercury, named Titan, except it appears red. And Saturn also has a variety of both *red* and *blue satellites*, including a group of 29 *moons* with



The rings of Jupiter (left), Uranus (center), and Neptune (right)

retrograde orbits—they *orbit* Saturn in the opposite direction of the rest of its *satellites*. Such “irregular” *orbits* are believed to be the result of these *satellites* being “gravitationally captured”, though many “regular” or *prograde orbits* may be the result of “capture” too. So you can see there are apparently some big groups of apparently related *satellites*. And it begs the question, “captured” from where? I’d guess some of them came from the debris from that *collision* of Uranus with whatever knocked it on its side, and that there have been other *collisions* on this scale elsewhere, the bigger, or more *inelastic* of which also resulted in the various *asteroid belts*. Titan, by-the-way, exhibits *retrograde rotation* too, meaning it *spins* in the opposite direction that Saturn does. And there are many *objects* in our Solar System that do this, including Venus and Uranus, and that is, they *spin* in the opposite direction that the Sun and most *planets* do, all implying that there must have been a few more of these larger scale ‘perturbations’. I mean what could ‘knock’ a *planet* into *spinning* in the wrong direction, let alone on its side? We’ll see in the later sections.

Charts of the color and scale of planetary objects: left—top row: Uranus and Neptune; second row: Earth, white dwarf star Sirius B, Venus; right (blowup of lower rows)—top: Mars and Mercury; bottom: Earth’s Moon, and dwarf planets Pluto and Haumea (p.125).

So the fact that some *planets* and *dwarf planets* have both *red* and *blue moons* implies how common the “capture” of *satellites* must be, even the *capture* of dozens of them at one time, and so many *captures* implies multiple *collisions* of larger *bodies* to ‘break’ these smaller pieces free to be *captured*, ‘eaten’, or just again ‘struck’ by other *objects* that they also come across.

And it’s not just Saturn, but all the *giant planets*—**Jupiter**, Saturn, **Uranus** and **Neptune**—have *rings* (photos, p.126). And evidently all spherical *objects* with *magnetic fields* can potentially have *rings*, including some of Saturn’s *moons* that do. And Saturn has a couple other unique aspects to its system of *moons*. It has two *moons* of the same size sharing virtually the same *orbit*. And like most the other *planets* that have *trojan asteroids* that *orbit* at points in front of and behind them as they *orbit* the Sun, (see again the chart on p.112), Saturn also has a couple sets of *trojan moons*, that *orbit* in front of and behind a couple of Saturn’s *moons* as they all together *orbit* Saturn. And all this is to prepare you to see that it’s more than just “unstable orbits”, “collisions” and “captures” causing the abundant ‘irregularities’ in our Solar System. I mean we will see that God is going to make some more amazing introductions of Himself in this little ‘meet-and-greet

theater' that He has **created**, just like He has done time and again in the past. And in many cases we won't have to leave too much solely to the imagination, because we have plentiful, specific, reasonably interpretable records of these past incredible interactions available. And you should be getting the idea that we are going to see that God has and will again use this *planetary system* of His with even more 'astoundingly complicated finesse', 'balance' and 'control' than you have likely ever considered—even far beyond human ability to imagine. But these **ways** of God should nonetheless leave you breathless, speechless, dumfounded, awestruck and overwhelmed, where fainting, collapsing and uncontrollable shaking should be expected and possibly unavoidable. And yes, just as the Prophet Amos, near 3 millennia ago, recorded God's challenge to His people to **prepare to meet thy God**, this **study** is an effort to **prepare** you for a similar introduction. I mean if you haven't experienced this kind of 'introduction' to God, one that should absolutely 'shake you to your very core', you really don't **know** Him as well as you think you do.

So I took you through all this evidence and speculation about *comets*, *asteroids* and *planets* to show you what those with a 'scriptural perspective' should already **know**. We have seen that *scientists*—read *evolutionists*—are finding fewer and fewer distinctions between *comets* and *asteroids*. And I mean it's just as likely that both *comets* and *meteors* are simply the result of *planetary interactions* and *collisions* involving some combination of *red* and *blue composition*, with or without available quantities of *gas* that later becomes *ice*. And the locations of the various *minor planet* 'sets', as well the abundant "irregularities" and other evidence of *collisions* observable with virtually every *planet* and/or their *moons*, suggest some number of major 'planetary encounters'. One or more of these 'major encounters' apparently produced the Main Asteroid Belt along with the many *trojans* 'herded' by Jupiter and Mars, even a few by Earth and Venus, and probably some of the shorter Jupiter Family Comets. Another 'encounter' or two may have produced some of the Centaurs and 'barrel-rolling' Uranus', and yet another the Kuiper Belt, as well as the Scattered Disc. Sure, some of these 'encounters' may have been the result of, or initiated by, *objects* entering the Inner Solar System from somewhere beyond, but we can now see the 'carnage' of these *collisions*, or near *collisions*. So there is evidence of numerous 'planetary-scale cataclysms' that God has instigated mostly for His People the Jews, but ultimately for all His soon to be Immortal Sons, so that at future spectacles the **hearts** of those who are 'paying better attention' will not be **falling them for fear** (e.g., [Luk 21:26](#); [Isa 13:7](#)), not even for the awesome **power** of God spoken of by Paul (and the Prophet Haggai), who says,

...Whose voice then shook the earth [at the Exodus]: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven [and that is, in The Great Tribulation] [Heb 12:25-29](#); [Hag 2:5-7](#).

And God tries to **comfort** and **prepare** His people for such spectacles, like when He says,

...Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them... [Jer 10:1-2](#).

So it's OK to feel 'shaken', as long as you're secure enough in Him to experience it without being 'shaken apart'. And all of this evidence—and some of the speculation—is intended to help you **better** withstand this 'shaking' to come, especially in **SECTION 5** through **12**, as we will see.

But we're still missing probably the most important perspective, which is God's. We'll go into that in more detail in [SECTION 4](#), but for now I want to bring to your attention a foundational principle of His that will help us **better understand** not only what's happened, but also what is going to happen. Remember from [RGT](#) we are depending on and expecting The Holy Spirit to **shew us things to come**, and we should continue to be **faithful to ask, seek, and knock**, in the process supplying ourselves with **questions** for God to **answer** for us, and though remaining **patient** for the **answers, believe** Jesus' **promise** that eventually the **knowledge** you **ask** for will be **given unto you**, and the **understanding** you **seek** you will **find**, and that if you **press** with **patience** and **faith** to **knock** on God's door, **knowledge, understanding, and wisdom** will be **opened unto you**. But sometimes God gives us **answers** before we even know there is a **question**, or how to frame it. This was the case with me and the last 'big' **revelation** I received in my pursuit of this topic that God **answered**, or really more corrected, improved and expanded my perspective about. It came to me in the early stages of the writing of this **study**. And the **revelation** is this. God, first of all, **created** the Earth for Adam and Eve, and apparently led them to **believe** that they could live **for ever** on the Earth He **created** if they would simply abstain from that 'forbidden fruit'. Of course we all know they didn't. And of course God must have known that this would happen. But the foundational perspective you need to **see** here concerns God's Character. He didn't fail. He really did offer them a permanent—**eternal**, if you will—home. And I finally realized why *evolutionists* are so easily misled to think that the Universe has been here so long. I mean, though it's only been here for a few thousand years, it **was created** for Adam and Eve to last **indefinitely**. So *evolutionists* misunderstand and 'cherry-pick' the evidence, seeing that the Universe still has characteristics that it was built to last **for ever**. But this is only the beginning of this **revelation** really. The ramifications will ripple throughout this **study**, and all the way into the **new heaven** and **new earth** before we're done.

But the next step is remembering that when Adam and Eve 'fell' things changed—dramatically, and that is, I knew that with **sin** that **the curse** 'entered' too, accompanied by **thorns...and thistles**, work **by the sweat of thy face**, 'traumatic childbirth', and evidently also all manner of other kinds of 'natural corruption', such as *entropy*—now also known as The 2nd Law of Thermodynamics—as well as other forms of *decay* and *destabilization* of the entire Creation. And I mean that I **understood**—by **revelation** of God—that He had changed the laws of His Universe, just like we will see that he is going to do again at the end of this World. There was also a major change of this 'nature' at the end of The Flood, and there will be another at the start of The Millennium too, that you should already be aware of, especially if you studied [RGT](#), and all these changes we'll take a little further down this road of **understanding**, especially in [SECTION 4](#) and [12](#).

The idea you should get for now is that at "The Fall", this Universe changed from a place that could last **for ever**, likely with continuing help from God, to one that could not. Evidently, along with the **curse**, *laws of entropy* 'entered', or they became more 'severe', and, as a result, the former 'permanent' Universe became one that could no longer last an unimaginably long time, though not as long—without some 'refueling'—as the **new heaven** and **new earth** that is coming **promises** to. But still the present Heaven and Earth is designed to last plenty long enough to **snare** those only looking to **deny** The Creator, or mislead those who rely too much on 'scientific knowledge' and not enough on **scripture**. But is there any **proof** in all this 'pudding'?

With the Apostle Paul's admonition to **prove all things**, we should be **able** to find plentiful evidence to support this **revelation** 'right in front of our noses', and I mean the **revelation** that this Earth can no longer last 'indefinitely', or at least that it is not able to support *life* 'indefinitely', certainly not anywhere near as long as *evolutionary scientists* think it can. And it should be 'provable' far beyond a reasonable 'shadow of doubt'.

Still, even most *evolutionists* understand that, with this Universe, *time* is limited. Our Christian *progressive evolutionary scientist*, Dr. Hugh Ross, reports,

Some researchers, for example, speculated that the human species might represent an anomaly, as late bloomers or a more fragile species among many possible intelligent life forms elsewhere in the cosmos. However, [Dr.] Carter and (later) astrophysicists [Drs.] John Barrow and Frank Tipler demonstrated that the inequality exists for virtually any conceivable intelligent species under any conceivable life-support conditions. Roughly 15 billion years represents a minimum preparation time for advanced life: 11 billion toward formation of a stable planetary system, one with the right chemical and physical conditions for primitive life, and four billion more years toward preparation of a planet within that system, one richly layered with the biodeposits necessary for civilized intelligent life. Even this long time and convergence of "just right" conditions reflect miraculous efficiency.

Moreover the physical and biological conditions necessary to support an intelligent civilized species do not last indefinitely. They are subject to continuous change: the Sun continues to brighten, Earth's rotation period lengthens, Earth's plate tectonic activity declines, and Earth's atmospheric composition varies. In just 10 million years or less, Earth will lose its ability to sustain human life. In fact, this estimate of the human habitability time window may be grossly optimistic. In all likelihood, a nearby supernova eruption, a climatic perturbation, a social or environmental upheaval, or the genetic accumulation of negative mutations will doom the species to extinction sometime sooner than twenty thousand years from now.

These figures demonstrate that the inequality is extreme. The survival time for advanced intelligent physical life is only a millionth as long as the time required to produce the conditions necessary for its survival.

Of course God says that all this 'preparation time' for "advance intelligent physical life" amounted to just 6 literal days, and remember it wasn't because He needed that much time. It was instead an example for us, to show us how we should **work** and **rest**. But we can see from Dr. Ross' report that even some *evolutionists* realize that this Universe is not presently operating in a way that can sustain 'intelligent life' very long. And now were ready to see why Dr. Ross' estimate of a 'less than' 20,000 year window, let alone a 'less than' 10 million year window, is so "grossly optimistic." And let's start with the 'core' of the problem.

Dr. Ross also admits his belief that the Sun "continues to brighten". This is a common belief among *evolutionists* because of the way they think the Sun formed and the way they think it 'burns' since then. A Christian *young-Earth creationist*, Dr.

Danny Faulkner, in an article published on the Institute of Creation Research (ICR) website, explains,

According to stellar evolution theory, the Sun (as have other stars) formed from the contraction of a cloud of gas and dust. Most of the material contracted to the center to form the Sun, while the small amount of the material left behind formed the planets, moons, asteroids, and comets. The contraction would have been driven by the release of gravitational potential energy until the conditions in the center of the Sun permitted the conversion of hydrogen into helium through nuclear fusion. While theoretical and observational questions remain [read, really 'disprove this model'], it can be assumed for purposes of discussion, that this model approximates the truth.

Assuming that thermonuclear fusion is powering the Sun, the Sun could shine for a very long time, because thermonuclear fusion is such an efficient source of energy. Calculation shows that it is capable of supplying the Sun's current luminosity for about ten billion years. It is believed that most stars are powered by the same sort of nuclear reactions in their cores, a situation that is referred to as the main sequence. The main sequence is thought to be a period of stability which represents the greatest portion of a star's long life.

Supposedly the Sun has been a main-sequence star since its formation about 4.6 billion years ago. This time represents about half the assumed ten-billion-year main-sequence lifetime of the Sun, so the Sun should have used about half its energy store. This means that about half the hydrogen in the core of the Sun has been used up and replaced by helium. This change in chemical composition changes the structure of the core. The overall structure of the Sun would have to change as well, so that today, the Sun should be nearly 40% brighter than it was 4.6 billion years ago.

The problem Dr. Faulkner is referring to is called "the early faint star paradox". Specifically, this means that with the Earth's present *atmosphere* the Sun would not have been bright enough 4 billion years ago to support *organic evolution* as presently supposed. So *evolutionists* imagine that the Earth's *atmosphere* has somehow been 'regulated' over time to maintain a *climate* and *temperatures* optimal for *organic evolution*. Originally then, it is supposed that the *atmosphere* had to be more *oxidizing*, meaning there was little to no *oxygen* in the *atmosphere*, except in the form of water, and an abundance of *greenhouse gases* to capture and hold *heat* so that the dimmer Sun would be sufficient to keep the *planet* as warm as it is today. And though there is no known process to account for this 'regulation', the *atmosphere* would have needed to keep in step with the brightening of the Sun over time—losing *greenhouse gases* and gaining *free oxygen*—in order to maintain a *stable*, 'life-sustaining' *climate* and *temperatures*.

Dr. Faulkner calls this precise 'fine tuning' of the *atmosphere* over time "nothing short of miraculous". But others call it implausible, even getting 'mystical' about it. *Chemist* Sir Dr. James Lovelock and *microbiologist* Dr. Lynn Margulis co-developed the Gaia Hypothesis or Theory or Principle. This "theory" proposes that *organisms* 'interact' with their *inorganic* surroundings on Earth to form a 'self-regulating',

complex system that contributes to maintaining the conditions for *life* on the planet. So, the *biosphere*—consisting of Earth's *crust, oceans, atmosphere*, and all 'living things'—constitutes a sort of 'super organism' that has 'evolved'. According to the "hypothesis", *life* has developed in such a way that the *atmosphere* has been altered to 'protect living things' from the increasing *brightness* of the Sun.

Of course this is not a widely popular view since it is not as much *scientific* as *mystical*. And it's mostly *mystical* because there is no evidence or known 'mechanisms' to support this 'atmospheric regulation'. It's simply more 'reasonable' to 'believe' that *organic* and *inorganic materials* can somehow 'cooperate' to 'regulate' the *atmosphere*—by some 'spiritual means'—than to 'believe' that the *atmosphere* has 'regulated' itself so precisely for so long by 'accident'. Of course, though most *evolutionists* reject the Gaia Hypothesis, they generally readily accept that somehow this necessarily precise, continuous 'regulation' occurred at least by 'accident', because the alternative is to give up on *organic evolution* altogether, and that is, those of them that are not simply **liars**, who privately and more reasonably admit that the 'theory' that this 'regulation' happened is ridiculous, and that they therefore have no explanation for how the conditions for *organic evolution* that they require could have existed.

But remember all this is just a distraction. This 'regulation process' did not take place, or if it did it happened within a 24 hour period on The 4th day of Creation less than 6,000 years ago. And remember that Dr. Faulkner admits that "theoretical and observational questions remain" about whether *thermonuclear fusion* is powering the Sun at all. This is because there's 100,000 gallons of 'clean' evidence that it is not, and that the Sun could in no way keep up its 'main sequence' even 10 thousand years, let alone 10 billion.

The evidence really shows that the Sun is shrinking, fast. You may have heard of the *proton-proton chain reaction*—that *thermonuclear fusion reaction* that is believed to be responsible for the Sun's long-lasting power, allowing the Sun to recycle its *energy* again and again and therefore last billions of years. But this "theory" is beyond just having some "theoretical and observational questions", because it would be more appropriately referred to as **fraud**. And it has been that way since the 1970's, around the time Dr. Lovelock introduced his Gaia Hypothesis. The glaring problem is that in this 'theoretical' *proton-proton chain reaction* lots of *neutrinos* are expected to be produced. Remember that *neutrinos* are one of the 6 "flavors" of *leptons*, the most well-known "flavor" being the *electron*. Anyway, we know the Sun ain't nowhere near producing the quantity of *neutrinos* needed to substantiate the *proton-proton chain reaction theory* (underlined slang and double negation 'contentiously intended').

This has been known since the 1970's because Dr. Raymond Davis and his colleagues at Brookhaven National Laboratories measured the quantity of *neutrinos* coming from the Sun. He constructed a 100,000 gallon tank and filled it with a common cleaning fluid that contained *chlorine*. *Neutrinos* that passed through this tank should have converted some quantity of the *chlorine* to *argon*. The tank was buried 4,850 feet in the ground in a mine in South Dakota to shield it from extraneous *radioactivity*, but not out of reach of tiny *neutrinos*, supposedly racing toward the Earth from 'nuclear-powered explosions' in the Sun. The experiment began in 1968. Over a decade later Dr. Davis was still not detecting the anticipated amount of *argon*. In fact, many times he found little or no *argon* in the cleaning fluid. *Neutrinos* are simply not coming from the Sun as they would be if the Sun truly burned by "recycling nuclear reactions". The Sun must instead be simply burning up its fuel and thereby shrinking. This matter was originally referred to as the "mystery of the missing solar neutrinos", and later by "the neutrino crisis".

In the time I spent reading science digests over the last decade I learned that there are other deep-mine-shielded experiments ongoing to prove various hypotheses that would allow for a longer-lasting Sun, among other things. And you must know that we would all hear about it if someone finally came up with real evidence that the Sun could indeed burn for billions of years —just like you've heard about the *proton-proton chain*. Again, such a long lifespan for the Sun and other *stars* is accepted simply on the basis that *organic evolution* would be impossible otherwise. But inconveniently enough, there is much more evidence that the Earth is not providing a long, 'life-sustaining' *environment*.

In 1980, *young-Earth creationist* Dr. Russell Akridge, in an article published at the ICR website, reported that,

...[Dr.] John A. Eddy (Harvard -Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics and High Altitude Observatory in Boulder) and [Dr.] Aram A. Boornazian (a mathematician...), have found evidence that the sun has been contracting about 0.1% per century... corresponding to a shrinkage rate of about 5 feet per hour." The diameter of the sun is close to one million miles, so that this shrinkage of the sun goes unnoticed over hundreds or even thousands of years. There is no cause for alarm for us or for any of our descendants for centuries to come because the sun shrinks so slowly. Yet the sun does actually appear to shrink. The data [Drs.] Eddy and Boornazian examined spanned a 400-year period of solar observation, so that this shrinkage of the sun, though small, is apparently continual.

What does the shrinkage of the sun have to do with creation and evolution? The sun was larger in the past than it is now by 0.1% per century. A creationist, who may believe that the world was created approximately 6 thousand years ago, has very little to worry about. The sun would have been only 6% larger at creation than it is now. However, if the rate of change of the solar radius remained constant, 100 thousand years ago the sun would be twice the size it is now. One could hardly imagine that any life could exist under such altered conditions. Yet 100 thousand years is a minute amount of time when dealing with evolutionary time scales.

Dr. Akridge went on to qualify these calculations observing that because of the changing balance of *solar forces* over time, "...the rate of shrinkage would have been greater in the past than it is now". And he points to one certainty, that at least some, if not all of the Sun's *energy* comes from its *gravitational self-collapse*, so that not all of its *energy* could be coming from *thermonuclear fusion*, if any. This discovery greatly alters all calculations on the *evolution* of the Sun, because *evolutionists* attribute nearly 100% of the Sun's energy over the supposed past 5 billion years to *thermonuclear fusion* by the *proton-proton chain reaction*.

Dr. Akridge concludes,

The discovery that the sun is shrinking may prove to be the downfall of the accepted theory of solar evolution. All accepted theories of the evolution of the stars are based on the assumption that thermonuclear fusion is the energy source for the stars. If this

assumption is unjustified for our own star, the sun, it is unjustified for the other stars too. The entire theoretical description of the evolution of the universe may be at stake. With the stakes that high, it is no wonder that the experimental evidence for the shrinkage of the sun is "explained away" by evolutionists. Evolutionists claim that the sun probably undergoes temporary shrinkages and expansions as small fluctuating oscillations on its overall regular evolutionary development. They point to other cyclic solar occurrences such as the 11-year sunspot cycle on the surface of the sun. This claim is made in spite of the evidence that the shrinkage rate of the sun has remained essentially constant over the past 100 years when very accurate measurements have been made on the size of the sun. Less accurate astronomical records spanning the past 400 years indicate the shrinkage rate has remained the same for the past 400 years.

So again, the present 'realistic duration' of the our Sun's *main-sequence*—the period in which it can support *life*—appears to be just thousands of years, not the millions, let alone the billions required for *organic evolution*. But can we get any further 'down to Earth'? Sure we can.

Dr. Ross also mentioned that "Earth's rotation period lengthens" over time. And this should be easily enough measurable. You just need an extremely accurate clock. And it turns out that atoms have the most regular vibrations available. So the new *standard* of timekeeping, since 1967, has become the *caesium* (US - *cesium*) *atom clock*, defining the second with unequaled accuracy. This clock has been able to tell us that the Earth's *rotation rate* is slowing at about $\frac{2}{3}$ of a *second per year*. That would mean that in about 90 years the *rotation* of the Earth will have slowed by about 1 minute. But since the *caesium atom clock* has only been keeping track since 1967, and since there have only been 24 "leap seconds" added to correct the time from 1972 through 2012, let's be conservative, and make the math easier, and say this 'merry-go-round' called Earth is only slowing down 1 minute every 100 years. In 6,000 years the rotation will have slowed by one hour—to about 25 hour days. But in a little over 150,000 years the days would be near 50 hours long, becoming too hot by day and too cold by night, where apparently even the 'goddess Gaia' couldn't 'regulate' the *atmosphere* to save us. Of course, just half a million years ago 'she' would have had another problem. Then the Earth would have been spinning so fast that that it would be like living under a strobe light. Weeeeeee!

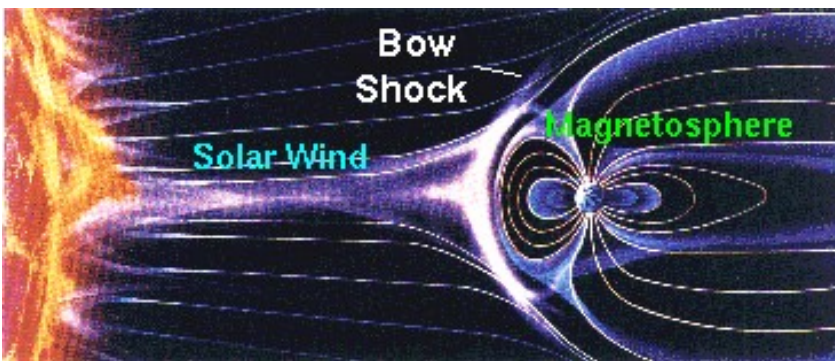
Of course none of this ever happened or will happen because God OBVIOUSLY **created the heavens and...earth** about 6,000 years ago. But we will see that the length of days has changed—only slightly—a number of times in the past 6,000 years, especially in **SECTION 9** through **11**. And there's no end to the **proof** that Earth is only a few thousand years old. For more examples, check out ICR's web page at <http://www.icr.org/recent-creation>. But I'm going to limit this exploration to just two more topics, the first being *magnet Earth*.

God **created gravity** to govern His Creation, as well as the *strong* and *weak atomic forces* for that purpose too. These *forces* are some of the *physical laws* God is referring to when He says,

...I have...appointed the ordinances [or laws] of heaven and earth... [Jer 33:25-26](#).

Magnetism is also one of these *laws*. And some of its vitally important purposes are easy to recognize. We know that the *force* of the *solar wind* blows away the surface dust and *volatile gases* of comets as they pass close enough to the Sun. So what does the *solar wind* do to the Earth? The answer is nothing, because the Earth is a *magnet*, and it's *magnetic field* shields it from the *solar wind*.

If you have ever handled *magnets* you know about *magnetic fields*. All *magnets* have them. When you place one close enough to *metal* you can feel it 'pulling' even before the *magnet* touches the *metal*. And the closer it gets, the stronger the 'pull'. This 'pulling area' surrounding a magnet is its *magnetic field*. But you also know—if you have handled two *magnets*—that some sides of a magnet "attract" each other, and others "repel" each other. They can actually push themselves away from each other within the range of their *magnetic fields*. *Magnetic rail trains* work this way. Weighing hundreds of tons, they are lifted into the air to glide along with *magnetized* wheels above *magnetically repelling tracks*, and systematically also pulled along too by 'segmented' *magnetic attraction*, much like a *caterpillar* walks.



And the Earth is a giant *magnet* with a giant *magnetic field*. A *planet* or *star's* *magnetic field* is called a *magnetosphere*. *Suns* that apparently have *magnetospheres* that are 100's of times stronger our Sun's are called *magnetic stars*. They are believed to have very violent atmospheres—kinda like a blender, except they are also

extremely *hot*. Fortunately the Earth's and our Sun's *magnetospheres* are powered 'just right', not destructively strong nor too weak to protect us. Earth's *magnetic strength* is perfect to divert the *solar wind* around *her* much like air flows around an airplane wing. The *solar wind* does distort the Earth's *magnetosphere* somewhat, creating what is called *bow shock*, (see the 'not to scale' diagram on p.132), but it is sufficient to withstand the *solar wind*. Without it, the Earth *atmosphere* would be slowly blown away. So *life* on Earth would be impossible without its 'just right' *magnetic field* protecting its *atmosphere*.

But there is something else about *magnets* you probably know. If you have ever used a 'refrigerator magnet' for a long time, you know it get weaker and weaker over time, and that there comes a time when it will no longer hold what it used to. Eventually, it will not be able to hold anything at all, and finally it will not even be able to hold on to the refrigerator. This is a *law* of *magnetism* too. All *magnets* behave this way. An exception to this is *electrically-powered magnets*, called *electromagnets*. Their strength remains constant because they are powered by *electricity* from an external source. But *natural* or *permanent magnets*, that don't have an external power source, get weaker over time in the same way *radioactive materials* lose their *radioactivity* over time. This process is called "half-life decay". And it means that in equal amounts of time both *magnets* and *radioactive materials* lose exactly half their *energy*. This is another of God's *ordinances* [or *laws*] **of heaven and earth**, where once a *magnet* has lost half its energy, it will take exactly the same amount of time for half the remaining *energy* to be lost, and so each time that same amount of time passes, another half the remaining strength is lost. At the end of 2 half-lives, for example, there will remain $\frac{1}{4}$ the power, and

after 3, $\frac{1}{8}$ the original strength, and so on, until a *magnetic field*, or *radioactivity*, becomes too weak to detect.

From measurements of the Earth's *magnetosphere* taken since 1835, and with the increasing accuracy of these measurements since then, the "half-life" of Magnet Earth has been calculated to be about 1400 years. The Jet Propulsion Laboratory's Magsat *satellite*, designed especially to study Earth's *magnetic properties*, orbited the Earth between October 1979 and June 1980, and made available some of the most accurate evidence leading to this conclusion. It helped confirm that Earth's *magnetic field* is *decaying* at this "rapid" rate. Since then several *satellites* have contributed to the available data, but unfortunately, *evolutionary scientists* dominate the use of their instruments, only looking for data that 'chases' their imaginary *theory* that they nonetheless 'believe' has to be true, or the Earth, let alone the Universe, could not be anywhere near as old as it needs to be to allow for *organic evolution*.

The late Professor Emeritus at the University of Texas, El Paso, Dr. Thomas Barnes, also a past President of the Creation Research Society, championed the research that led to the conclusion that the Earth's magnetic field was in "relatively rapid decay", and therefore evidently not supported by any significant external—or internal—power source. This happened back in the 1980's. Some of Dr. Barnes' conclusions, and defenses, are explained in the following excerpts from his articles, *Depletion of Earth's Magnetic Field*, and *Earth's Magnetic Age: The Achilles Heel of Evolution*, both presently published at the ICR website. These excerpts contain some insertions of my own, mostly just for clarification.

...The earth's magnetic field is due to a huge electric current, billions of amperes (a unit for measuring electrical energy), circulating in the core of the earth. But the main complication lies in the fact that there are a multitude of extraneous sources which produce distortions in the magnetic field. As a consequence, the earth's magnetic field is very complex. The instability sometimes shows up as tremendous magnetic storms, blocking out transoceanic radio transmissions. There are all kinds of anomalies resulting from distortions in the magnetic field. There are many unpredictable variations in the magnetic field with time and location.

Navigators do not depend on their magnetic compass as much now as in early days. When navigators do use the magnetic compass they have up-dated magnetic charts to provide corrections for gross deviations in the earth's magnetic field from place to place over the globe. This helps them correct their bearings for "false" directions indicated by the compass, but the charts cannot correct for all the distortions.

In spite of all the distortions of the magnetic field there are modern data-reductions methods of taking an epoch of worldwide data and "washing" out the "noise" (distortions) and obtaining the basic field. The basic field is that field produced by the current circulating in the core of the earth. This basic field is called the *dipole field*. It is similar to the magnetic field of a single magnet located near the center of the earth and having a north and south pole, hence the name *dipole*. It is sometimes referred to as the earth's main *magnetic field*. The dipole magnetic field is the magnetic

field of interest in this paper.

It is known [though presently widely ignored] that the earth's magnetic field is decaying faster than any other worldwide geophysical phenomenon. A comprehensive ESSA [Environmental Science Services Administration] Technical Report gives the values of the earth's magnetic dipole moment (the vector which gives the strength and direction of the magnet) ever since Karl Gauss made the first evaluation in 1835. The evaluations have been made about every 10 or 15 years since then [up to the 1980's]. Each evaluation required accurate worldwide readings over an epoch (a year or so) and special mathematical reduction to "wash" out the "noise." These reliable data clearly show this relatively rapid decay. The [ESSA] report stated that on a straight line basis the earth's magnetic field would be [measurably] gone in the year 3991 A.D. [or in about 2,000 years.] But decay is exponential and in this case has a half-life of 1400 years.

A relatively recent NASA satellite preliminary report [from the Magsat *satellite* that orbited in 1979 and 1980] shows a rapid decay in the earth's magnetic field... The present rate of loss is seven billion kilowatt hours per year. The earth is running out of that original energy it had in its original magnetic field... The total physics of this problem is formidable but it has been solved...

Sir Horace Lamb came up with the equivalent of this equation in 1833. ...statistical analysis of the data yields a half-life of 1400 years. [Dr.] Lamb did not have a good value for the conductivity and therefore could not make a good prediction, but he did know that it would last for thousands of years, and that it was a plausible explanation of the earth's magnetic field. It is still the only good [or complete] theoretical/mathematical explanation. Now it can be used to evaluate the electric conductivity of the core of the earth, because the data show a 1400 year half-life. The value of the electric conductivity of the core is... a very reasonable value for molten iron under the temperatures estimated for the earth's core...

Working backwards in time many thousands of years, this equation yields an implausibly large value of the magnetic field and of the electrically generated heat stored in the earth's core. (See ICR Technical Monograph: *Origin and Destiny of the Earth's Magnetic Field*.) A reasonable postulate was shown therein to yield an upper age limit [of Earth's magnetic field] of 10,000 years.

To protect their long-age chronology, evolutionists hold to a reversal hypothesis [including *dynamo theory*]. The magnetic field is said to have remained at essentially the same value during geologic time, except for intervals in which it went through a reversal, dying down to zero and rising up again with the reverse polarity. The last reversal is supposed to have taken place 700,000 years ago [and more recently there is some site evidence of one about 40,000 years ago, though all these 'estimates' use *evolutionary geologic timescales*].

The reversal hypothesis [including *dynamo theory*] has no valid theoretical support... [as]...acknowledged in a ... [late 70's] Scientific

American article: "*No one has developed an explanation of why the sign reversals take place. The apparent random reversals of the earth's dipole field have remained inscrutable*" [Feb. 1979, p.125.] Neither are there [since then] any dependable data to support the reversal hypothesis. Reference has already been made to the multitude of magnetic disturbances, "noise," that make it so difficult to evaluate the earth's magnetic dipole moment, even when using absolute measurements over the whole earth. Yet it is absolutely essential that one evaluate the earth's magnetic moment if he is to claim to know the state of the earth's magnet at that time.

The tremendous amount of data on magnetic anomalies is important in exploration because they are evidences of the nonuniformities where one might expect minerals [that become independently *magnetically charged*], etc. But they are useless insofar as history of the earth's dipole magnet is concerned... [Its "signal" is the one that must be isolated.]

The only valid theoretical mathematical explanation and the only tenable data support the conclusion that the earth's magnetic field was created with a sizable amount of original magnetic energy and has been continuously decaying ever since and that it is headed for extinction in a few thousand years. Looking backwards in time there is a limiting age because there is a limit as to how much magnetic energy the earth could have had originally. Reasonable postulates as to the maximum magnetic field the earth could have had limit its age to a few thousand years.

The reversal hypothesis [with *dynamo theory*] which has been proposed to extend the magnetic field back billions of years has neither a valid theoretical /mathematical basis nor real observational support. The paleomagnetic data upon which it depends for support does not correlate with the state of the earth's magnetic field, namely its magnetic moment...

[So again]... the presumed dynamo theory has no substantive theoretical basis and no definitive [real] predictive value. Its presumed reversal mechanism has admittedly remained inscrutable [read, 'mystical']. The presumed supporting paleomagnetic data [from independently magnetized geological formations, etc.] contributes to the noise, not the signal [which produces Earth's *dipole magnetic field*]. [*Dynamo theory*]... does not even check with the decay of the earth's dipole field during the time in which that is accurately known, ever since Gauss' evaluations.

The game is up for the evolutionist if he acknowledges that the earth is only a few thousand years old. To avoid being completely wiped out he knows that he must fight with all his might, fair or foul, against this scientific theory and supporting evidence of a young magnetic earth-age. It is no wonder that [my principle adversary, Dr.] Dalrymple, his ACLU sponsor, and the nine additional noted evolutionists whom he acknowledges gave him review support on his

article, have made such a desperate effort to conceal this Achilles heel of evolution, the scientific evidence of a very young earth.

Of course, and as Dr. Barnes indicated, *evolutionist* did not sit still for such conclusions back in the 1980's. They fought back, vigorously, and with the help of both well funded legal organizations and 'vivid imaginations', because they had, nor now have, any real *scientific data* or *observations* to support them. And ignoring the evidence is not usually the only tactic *evolutionists* use to retain control of popular opinion. Besides the 'behind the scenes' **wickedness** of **evildoers**, they commonly distract us with a 'seemingly plausible fantasy'. Plausible, except that again the evidence, necessarily ignored, is completely against it. Nowadays, this 'theory' (read, 'subterfuge') that misleads us into thinking that Magnet Earth has protected Earth's *atmosphere* for billions of years—is called *magnetohydrodynamics* or *MHD*.

And remember in the case of the 'shrinking Sun', the 'theory' (again read, 'subterfuge') is that *thermonuclear fusion* is extending the life of the Sun. But also we've known since the 1980's that this cannot be true because we are not detecting the *neutrinos* that should be coming from the Sun as a result, not to mention that such a process would require continually 'regulating' the Earth's *atmosphere* to balance it with the Sun's ever-increasing *brightness*, and that everyone involved knows there is no such ongoing 'regulation' that can be 'scientifically accounted for'. So the Gaia Principle, or just a 5-billion-year period of precisely controlled, complicated but 'accidental atmospheric regulation' to accommodate the Sun's increasing *brightness*, along with the otherwise 'long-lasting and stable', though undetectable, *thermonuclear fusion* supposedly sustaining the Sun, has allowed the billions of years needed to, with astounding complications, 'accidentally evolve life' on Earth. Doesn't sound so scientific when you put it that way, huh?

In the case of Magnet Earth, *magnetohydrodynamics*, also known as *dynamo theory*, along with *reversal theory*, are the two unaccounted for processes that are believed to work together to extend the life of Magnet Earth. Simply put, the *molten iron* 'swirling around' the Earth's *core*, kept moving by the Earth's *rotation*, supposedly creates a long-lasting *electromagnet*. So they would lead us to believe that the *rotating* Earth is the 'external power source' that creates the *magnetohydrodynamics* happening inside the Earth. They want us to believe that the 'swirling' *fluid iron* produces this ongoing *electromagnetic effect* and thereby sustains Earth's *magnetic field*, which is essential to protect Earth's *atmosphere*. Sounds good, except to prove this *model* we should be able to measure that the magnetic field is *stable* and not in "rapid decay". But as we have already seen, THE MAGNETIC FIELD IS IN RAPID DECAY, confirmed by increasingly accurate measurements since 1835. But present computational *MHD computer-generated models* act like real, observed *magnetic fields*—as long as you ignore the *decay*—and some *evolutionists* have little doubt that *magnetohydrodynamics* will eventually offer a *model* compatible to the Earth's *magnetic field*, though they have not yet found one. And how can they? All these *models* ignore the data that the Earth's *magnetic field* is in RAPID DECAY. They only test *models* of 'stable', 'very slowly fading' *electromagnets*. And their 'very-slowly-fading' *models* rely on Earth's *rotation* for 'external power'. But they also overlook or ignore the fact that Earth's *rotation* has been shown to be significantly slowing over time. So *evolutionists* might be able to show the necessary 'stability' of their model if it weren't that their 'external power source' for *magnet* Earth is also measurably in 'rapid decay'. And the only way they can offer a 'stable model' is to ignore certain inconvenient

realities, as they commonly do. Again, both Earth's *magnetic field* and its *rotation rate* are accurately measured to be in 'rapid decay', though both must be *stable* for *MHD* and *dynamo theory* to work as *modeled*.

But this is really only half the fantasy. Multiple *lava flows* over time in the same regions commonly reveal that the *magnetic fields* in those regions have repeatedly *reversed*. Dr. Barnes, et al, point out that *magnetic charge* can be *reversed* locally and independently and the processes and mechanisms for such *reversals* are known. But this answer is not that satisfying because the incidence of such detected multiple *reversals* is remarkably widespread, arguably global, though quite a 'jumble', (puzzle reference also intended). The result is that *evolutionists* are able to use this unsolvable 'jumble' to distract us into missing their subterfuge about our *magnetic field's* longevity. This 'jumbled' but pervasive pattern of multiple layers of *reversals* encompassing literally the entire crust of the Earth is the 'smoke-and-mirrors' distraction that is successfully used by *evolutionists* to mislead us all into accepting that it is these *reversals* that somehow maintain the stability of our *magnetic field*. So again, to succeed they must ignore the clear and accurate evidence that *dipole magnet* Earth is in "rapid decay", and that their main 'external power source', Earth's *rotation*, is rapidly decreasing too. But to distract us from these facts they have exactly what they need—a mystery. In this mystery they hide all the flaws of their theories. And supported by a mostly sympathetic media (read, **the world**), they control most sources of funding, and they oppress dissenters through their dominant role in academia, including monopolizing available *scientific instruments* that might otherwise rightly be used to expose their fraudulent theories, but are instead more often used for investigating fantasy, while they promise that once the mysterious processes and mechanisms that cause these *reversals* are discovered, we will all understand Earth's supposed billions of years of *magnetic stability*, and will be embarrassed that we did not see it all sooner. And so the **rulers of the darkness of this world** operate under the **spiritual wickedness in high places**. See again [Eph 6:11-12](#).

So it is in their imaginative 'mathematical models' and in the mystery of all these *magnetic reversals* where *MHD evolutionists* hide, claiming that anyone that challenges their 'theories' needs to offer a better one, but at the same time considering themselves the 'righteous and true stewards' of 'scientific knowledge' simply because the solution is not accounted for. But again, the real reason is that the existing solution that actually does account for the available data is unthinkable. Nevertheless in later sections, using more of that 'unthinkable' data from actual, documented observations, we will be able to expose a lot of this mystery, including some corrections of Dr. Barnes 'scripturally limited' perspective too.

I could also mention another 'theory' of how Magnet Earth maintains its charge. And I will because it is based more on real *science* than on 'imaginary models'. This *theory* was brought to our attention by the *physicist* and *chemist* Dr. Marvin Herndon, a Ph.D. in *nuclear chemistry* from Texas A&M University. Between 1975 and 1978 he engaged in postdoctoral work at UCSD under Nobel-Prize-winner Dr. Harold C. Urey, (did I mention he won the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1934 for the discovery of *deuterium?*), and Dr. Hans E. Suess, the co-discoverer of the *shell structure* of the *atomic nucleus* (for which R. Suess' collaborator, Dr. J. Hans D. Jensen, won a share of the 1963 Nobel Prize in physics). And Dr. Herndon, priding himself on having less bias and agenda and more skill than most *scientist*, and having paid attention to the available data coming out of the Earth, proposed some presently very generally unacceptable, or what he would call "political incorrect" ideas. Turns out that a byproduct of *nuclear fission reactions*, certain *isotopes* of

helium, have been detected in *lava flows* on opposite sides of the Earth. He thinks that this means that “at the center of Earth there is a naturally occurring nuclear-fission reactor, five miles in diameter, that provides the energy needed to generate and sustain the geomagnetic field”. Of course he too ‘believes’ that it just has to be there or there is no way we could have survived, let alone ‘evolved’. But we will see that whether there is—or was—a ‘nuclear reactor’ in Earth’s Core or not, there are other means of producing such global *radioactivity* to consider.

But at the risk of making it too difficult to keep a ‘train of thought’ going—which I am clearly not too worried about—I should add that Dr. Herndon also asserts—contrary to Dr. Velikovsky, though not likely aware of this opposition—that the Earth is not a ‘simple’ *asteroid*. The later, by the way, supposed that Earth was a *comet* originating from Saturn, and that Venus originated from Jupiter, which we’ll sort out in the rest of this **study**. Contrarily, Dr. Herndon suggests that Earth used to be a *gas giant* like Jupiter and Saturn, and that in the past, at a time when the Sun had a ‘big bad wolf’ phase, it ‘huffed and puffed’, *expelling a stronger solar wind* than we experience today, and it ‘blew’ most the *gas* off former *gas giant* Earth, leaving only the *rocky*, though mostly *molten core*. One of the reasons he thinks so is that the Earth, and other planets, are too *hot*, and that the *heat* produced is the result—over billions of years—of the slow decompression of Earth’s now exposed *core*, causing *earthquake* and *volcanic action* that drive *plate tectonics*. But this is not really what is ‘driving’ *plate tectonics*, as we will see. However, all these ideas of Dr. Herndon make more sense than most others, as they use a higher degree of ‘real science’, except they are all connected to finding a reason to explain how we could have been here billions of years. And we will continue to see that there is no reason to think so, and that ‘theories’ attached to such a timescale are at best far detached from reality.

And what needs to be exposed on this subject—things presently unknown to both *evolutionist* and *creationist*? It is that most of this mysterious ‘jumble’ of *magnetic charge* in Earth’s crust has been caused directly by God for **good** and **righteous** reasons. And I mean it is not just the result of ‘random natural processes’ started by Him, but more the ‘amazingly precise orchestration’ of His Creation, by Himself, to accomplish His specific **purposes**. But again, unfortunately, the reasons for the present condition of Earth’s *crust* are largely or entirely misunderstood, even by *young-Earth creationists* who know something about it. And this **ignorance** is now being successfully used by *evolutionists*, including for ostracizing some of their own, but all surely directed and coordinated with the help of **spiritual wickedness in high places**, and that is, to defeat *creationists*. And I mean contrary to what most *young-Earth creationists* think, the Flood of Noah alone doesn’t explain the half of it. But neither do the additional ‘contributions’ of Venus and Mars tell the whole story either, as we will see.

And Dr. Barnes, like many other *creationists*, believes that the Earth was given its *original magnetic strength* at Creation less than 10,000 years ago—really about 6,000 years ago according to **scripture**. But this is where most *creationists* ‘run astray’, because again, this is not all God has to say on the matter. He tells us both through His Creation and in His Word that He has used His Creation to bring **great judgments** and do **wondrous** and **terrible works** on the Earth on multiple occasions over the **ages** of the last 6,000 years. Remember the Apostle Paul, referring to the one of the final **great judgments** that is still to come, and quoting the Prophet Haggai, sums up the reason why God repeatedly judges the World in this way, saying,

See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they [past sinners] **escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: Whose voice then** [in the past] **shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And this word,** [from the Prophet Haggai] **Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain** (see also [Ex 6:6](#); [Psa 66:5](#); [106:21-22](#); [Hag 2:6-7](#); [20-23](#)/[Heb 12:25-26](#); [Isa 2:10-21](#); [24:17-23](#); [Eze 38:19-20](#); [Joel 3:16](#)).

More specifically, what needs to be exposed is that all these past **judgments** involved

Magnet Earth in close interaction with Magnet Venus, and later with Magnet Mars, and likely before all that, with at least one other *magnetic planet*—at this point I’m guessing Mercury—all happening in the just 6,000-year history of God’s Creation. And we—Dr. Velikovsky, you and I—will specifically identify in a precise timeline—with descriptions of effects all over the planet, the ‘planetary agents’ of over a half dozen **wondrous** and **terrible works** of God from the past. And finally we will review and expand the picture offered in the last **study** that, according to Jesus, is still coming and **shall be** ‘the greatest cataclysm of all time’. And I mean that, though mostly ignored by the World, the evidence from both history and **scripture**, and also Creation, is clear. The several interactions the Earth has had with other planet-sized, *dipole, ball magnets* have caused what Dr. Barnes has perceived as a significant amount of “noise”, that he and his colleagues do not really fully **understand**, because, far beyond ‘normal’ *geomagnetic* and *geoelectric* created “noise”, these ‘planet to planet’ *magnetic* and *gravitational* ‘interactions’ have repeatedly *reversed* Earth’s *magnetic poles*, while shifting its *axis*, adjusting its *orbit*, and ‘stirring up’, ‘flipping’, ‘twisting’ and ‘contorting’ Earth’s *crust* in ways that go far beyond what Earth could do to herself on **her** own. And it is the **purpose** of this **study** to fully account for all of this before we’re done, especially in **SECTION 5** and beyond.

And are you starting to see a pattern here? You should also be **able** to **see** more specifically how the **principalities and powers** manipulate mankind with fantasies that, because they are not really interested in the **truth**, they mistake or misrepresent as reality, and thereby they will,

...go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken [Isa 28:13](#)
(see also [Isa 24:17](#)).

Because surely and indeed, it is plain to those who can **see** that,

...the god of this world [Satan] **hath blinded the minds of them which believe not...**[in Jesus] [2Cr 4:4](#).

But I should emphasize about here that a Jew, who was an agnostic at best, and a co-founder of Hebrew University in Jerusalem, the late Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, though he was a type of *evolutionist*, uncovered the evidence that is foundational to this **study**. He did an exceptionally thorough job in proving from the available *paleontological, archaeological* (including the Bible) and *geological* evidence that the 4 or 5 of the most recent “ice ages”—that most *evolutionists* insist span a period of hundreds of thousands of years—were really all begun and completed

within the last about 3500 years—since the Exodus of the Jews from Egypt—and transpired in less than 1,000 years altogether. He also reveals the multiple *gravitational* and *magnetic inter-actions* of the Earth with both Venus and Mars, as recorded in antiquity, including *scripture*. And I recommend you eventually consult his work that is central to this topic, or at least, *Worlds in Collision* and *Earth in Upheaval*. And we will see how this version of history is not only possible, but thoroughly provable, and that as usual, *evolutionary theories* rely too often on fantasy while, necessarily, ignoring, misinterpreting and/or distorting the available evidence. And we'll make all this clear throughout this *study*. But next we're going to 'slay' yet another of the Theory of Evolution's 'fantasy dragons', the one oppressing us all to believe that the Earth's *rocks* and *fossils* are millions to billions of years old. And we'll do it with just one 'targeted blow'.

Outspoken Christian and *6-day creationist*, Dr. Jonathan Henry, after receiving his Masters in Chemical Engineering from the University of Alabama, worked in the oil industry. He later acquired his PhD in Chemical Engineering from the University of Kentucky, and apparently responded to a call from the Lord to teach, as he is presently on the faculty of Clearwater Christian College in Florida. My perception is that God called him to be a qualified witness to find and to 'hit' this 'bull's-eye target'. He is indeed qualified as someone who can find and weigh the evidence on the question of the age of Earth rocks.

But are you ready for it? Surely there are some people who want the information that can truly defeat the Theory of Evolution once and for all with just one 'targeted blow'. Such evidence exists, but it's not 'child's play' to *understand* it. Or as the Apostle Paul would put it, it's not *milk*, but *strong meat*. And most of the people I know aren't really ready for such 'absolutely conclusive' evidence, because they aren't really committed to know God beyond an 'spiritually immature perspective'. You want to *know* and be *able* to defend *the truth* that God *created* this Universe less than 6,000 years ago? Grow up. Commit to growing in *the knowledge of God*. And expect that this must be accompanied by literally endless *study*.

I made mention in the last *study*—speaking for God—that most Christians are like that fabled king, who wanted his counselors to teach him all the World's knowledge, and all while he was standing on one foot. Most who profess to want to *know God* are not so different from this king. They want brief, simple, childish answers. But God is not so simple. He is *infinite* and *omnipotent*. But He nonetheless wants us to get to *know* him more and more *for ever*. This is why if you really want to *know God*, you must become a *disciple* who will commit to *continue* to *study* the primary means He has given us to get to *know him*—His Word. Because, to put it simply, everyone to some degree knows that it will take *for ever* to get to *know* God. But few seem to act as if they realize that He wants us to start doing that now, and that it is to *work* to improve your *knowledge of God*, because in doing so we will *for ever* be striving for *precepts* about Him that are *over our heads!* And every *revelation* that makes *precepts* that were formerly 'over our head' finally 'understandable' to us in turn set us up to become ready for the next *revelations* of God, and ones that are ever *higher* and *higher*.

So this is where, *if* you want to proceed with *understanding*, you'll have to meet certain requirements, and become part of a 'select group'. And I am talking about being a 'spiritually mature' or *perfect* Christian who has that *vehement desire* to, as the Apostle Paul puts it, *in understanding be men*. And I don't mean you should be *able* to *understand* everything in the following report with one reading, but that as a *disciple indeed* you need to proceed with the commitment that you will not cease to pursue whatever *understanding* you are

lacking until the **revelations** come—until what is appropriately called ‘full understanding’ comes. This means you may need to do additional research and study—apart from this **study**—to get up to speed.

And do you get it? This ‘full understanding’ is just another beginning really, as all ‘spiritually mature’ Christians already **know**. But the **vehement desire** to **study** and **work** to reach such ‘plateaus’ of **revelation** and **understanding** would be one of the indicators that you are **approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed**, in your ‘eternal quest’ and commitment as one of the **disciples indeed**. Because **indeed**, using the following report to **continue** the process of **rightly dividing the word of truth—to understand the word of God** on a higher level than ever before—is our true focus and goal. So are you really ready to aim for such a **mark**? Such a ‘bull’s-eye’ is clearly ‘marked’ in the following report. And this particular ‘target’ we are now aiming at has a name. It’s called a **polonium halo**. And they’re not that hard to find. There are trillions of them dispersed throughout Earth’s primordial, original **rock**.



This report by Dr. Jonathan Henry concerning the existence of **uranium** and **polonium halos** [photo, p.139]—which is the *microscopic spherical* ‘discoloration’ of **rock** due to **radioactive decay**—proves that Earth **rocks** are at most only a few thousand years old, and that they must have been “supernaturally and quickly” **created**, the evidence of this published by Dr. Henry at

<http://www.creationconcepts.org/index.html>. From the homepage, click the “Technical” button on the top bar, then scroll down and click the [HALOS PDF](#) Download file for the entire report. And there are many more reports of his at his site that help to establish that the Earth and the Universe are, in actuality, very young—just a few thousand years old. But we will see that there is also a lot of available evidence that Dr. Henry is missing too, and not just new evidence and conjecture. And yes, by conjecture I mean ‘evolutionary conjecture’ that is too often purely subterfuge. But what I really mean is that Dr. Henry’s perspective is surely limited to the idea that the ‘geological condition’ of the Earth’s **crust** since Creation was only seriously disrupted because of The Flood of Noah alone. And though this **cataclysmic flood** did significantly impact Earth’s **crust**, we will see that it is not even half the story, and that several other ‘impacts’ have occurred, and some or all of them were arguably greater in magnitude—**geologically**—than what occurred during The Flood.

But don’t be confused, I am thankful for the advantage I have to ‘stand’ on Dr. Henry’s ‘shoulders’, and by doing so have gained a corrected, improved and expanded perspective, just as he did from standing on the shoulders of his predecessors. But I know that if God grants me fellowship with any ‘continuing disciples’, that we together will inevitably have an increasingly more corrected, improved and expanded view of His unendingly awesome Creation **throughout all ages, world without end. Amen**. See [Eph 3:14-21](#).

In Dr. Henry’s report entitled *Polonium Radiohalos*, he re-raises a question from one of the original researchers of **polonium halos**, **nuclear physicist**, Robert V. Gentry. Mr. Gentry received his master’s degree in **physics** from the University of Florida, but was later forced to abandon the doctoral program at the Georgia Institute of Technology when his thesis was rejected solely on the basis that it was on the subject of **young-Earth creationism**. Mr. Gentry asked,

...Was it possible that the Precambrian [or original] granites were not the end product of slowly cooling magma, but instead were rocks God created when He spoke this planet into existence?

Good question, huh? Excerpts from Dr. Henry's report, as well as vindication for Mr. Gentry, along with my many clarifications [in blue], offering the bulk of the proof of this fact, as well as exposing much of the subterfuge offered by *evolutionists*, follow. Dr. Henry explains and concludes,

Conventional theory says that granites formed slowly over millions of years [by cooling from liquid to solid]. ...[But every polonium halo] is testimony that the Precambrian rocks were created supernaturally and quickly as solid rock rather than cooling over eons...

Mr. Gentry, who was one of the most attacked *creationists* by *evolutionists*—a 'badge of honor', really—asked,

Could it be that the Precambrian granites were the Genesis rocks of our planet?... Doubtless there were trillions of polonium halos scattered throughout the Precambrian granites around the world [that testify to the truth of this].

And Mr. Gentry...

...identified the Precambrian granites as primordial (or Genesis) rocks because they (1) contain the [primary] polonium halos, (2) are the foundation rocks of the continents, and (3) are devoid of the fossils seen in sedimentary rocks.

Mr. Gentry concluded,

An instantaneous creation of the granites collapses several billion years of earth history to almost nothing... The billions of years believed necessary for the earth to evolve from some nebulous mass simply evaporate when confronted by such evidence. The essential time element needed for evolution to occur just vanishes.

And Dr. Henry observes that...

This dilemma was not Gentry's private concern, but was generally recognized. [Dr.] Kazmann described the dilemma. "[There] is the presence of primordial polonium [Po-218], with a half-life of 3 min. that has etched halos in granitic, [which is] crystallized rock. This poses a challenge to uniformitarian [read, evolutionary] concepts in that, essentially, there is an apparent contradiction between the long time needed to cool and recrystallize these rocks and the short half-life of polonium (3 min.)."

So because *polonium halos* begin to form in granite in minutes, and because the rocks would have to be already *solid* for this “discoloration” to occur, and since there would be no *polonium* left to make any marks if there were ‘millions of years of cooling’ required for the *rock* to form, then *evolutionists* need another ‘cover-up’. Dr. Henry includes Mr. Gentry’s summary of this subterfuge, who said,

...the reason for the various attempts to account for Po halos [Po being the *chemical symbol or abbreviation for polonium*] by some sort of secondary process is quite simple: the half-lives of the respective Po isotopes are far too short to be reconciled with slow magmatic cooling rates for Po bearing rocks such as granites ($t_{1/2} = 3 \text{ min}$ for ^{218}Po).

So since there was no clear evidence that all *polonium halos* could be *secondary*—that is, that somehow *polonium* found its way inside *rock* after it became *solid*—and since their existence implies that Earth *rocks* are actually very young, then the strategy—as usual—became to deny the known observable facts and data, considering it ‘too fantastic’ to be acceptable, or to simply ignore the very existence of *polonium halos*, and remove them from the conversation.

Dr. Henry cites evidence of this “impasse”, that *evolutionary scientists* fraudulently created, reporting,

[Dr.] Feather, unable to deny the existence of primordial Po halos, yet unwilling to acknowledge their chronological implications, summed up the impasse: “Two suggestions have been made [that either Po halos are primordial or secondary]... Because these two suggestions appear to exhaust the logical possibilities of explanation, it is tempting to admit that one of them must be basically correct, but whoever would make this admission must be fortified by credulity of a high order.” Naturally, evolutionists objected to the chronological implications of Po halos. [Dr.] Moazed and colleagues argued against the existence of primary Po halos. They began by saying, “Our measurements do not support the polonium halo hypothesis. We cannot definitely rule out the existence of polonium halos,” a most significant admission, considering their intense desire to do exactly that, “but it appears that there is no evidence requiring, or even firmly suggesting, their existence.”

Dr. Henry summarizes the deceptive strategy of this ‘cover-up’, revealing,

[Dr.] Moazed et al. thus wanted to believe that primary polonium halos do not exist. Next, they stated that their objections to primary Po halos were motivated by the chronological dilemma the halos present to the conventional earth history.

And Dr. Henry also quotes *evolutionist* Dr. Henderson, who admitted,

It was realized very early that their existence would cause apparently insuperable geological problems since the relevant polonium half-life is of the order of minutes [at least for Po-218]. Polonium halos would require

[in 'evolutionary fantasy'] that polonium atoms become part of the inclusion within minutes of the formation of the polonium and that in this very short time the polonium must be so far removed from the parent uranium mass that its presence or location is no longer evident.

In other words, Dr. Henderson admits that, in his 'evolutionary mindset', for *primary polonium halos* to have a chance to exist at all—"primary" meaning the *polonium* was in the *rock* from moment it became *solid*—then the *polonium* must somehow immediately and mysteriously be 'transported' inside the *rock* and 'far away' from the host *uranium* it comes from and *decayed* from as soon as the *polonium's* cycle of *radioactive decay* is initiated. Poof! Like magic (read, like God speaking). But this is no real chance, is it. Dr. Henderson clearly indicates here that such an immediate 'transportation' of *polonium* inside *rock* is too fantastic to be believed. I mean this is even out of Gaia's 'league'. But as you should expect by now, this is only the beginning of the fantastic rationalizations (read, subterfuge) by *evolutionists* to protect the Theory of Evolution from the existence of these tiny *polonium halos*.

Dr. Henry explains,

Aside from the chronological issue, [Dr.] Moazed et al. objected to polonium halos based on uncertainties in halo size, claiming that "polonium halos" could be reinterpreted, as least sometimes, as uranium halos [with *half-lives* not in minutes, but as long as 4.5 billion years]. Thus according to Moazed et al., the very existence of Po halos was debatable.

But the main argument of Moazed et al. was to object to Gentry's claim that polonium halos contain no concentrations of uranium. They claimed that Gentry's ion microprobe analysis was incapable of distinguishing uranium concentrations in the halo centers from the background level. Gentry had therefore overlooked uranium concentrated at the polonium halo centers. This meant, according to Moazed et al., that the so-called polonium halos were actually uranium halos, and the halos of polonium discoloration would therefore have formed over geological time, not rapidly.

But Dr. Gentry showed these objections by Dr. Moazed and his colleagues to be no better than wishful thinking. Dr. Henry reports,

...in the words of evolutionist [and Dr. Velikovsky supporter, Dr.] Ralph E. Juergens, "Gentry turned their attack aside." Gentry recalls, "In preparing my reply to the Moazed et al. report I spent months studying uranium and polonium halos, both in mica and in another mineral, fluorite. ...Fluorite sometimes occurs along with mica in the so-called granitic pegmatites—regions within granites where crystals of different minerals can be quite large (several feet long in certain instances). The polonium halos in fluorite are virtually identical to their counterparts in mica. Sometimes they occur along tiny cracks and fissures [where *polonium* might have entered after the rock formed] and sometimes in regions free from mineral defects [where there is no

identifiable way for anything to have gotten in after the rock was formed].

Polonium halos in fluorite in defect-free regions are significant because this mineral does not exhibit the perfect cleavage property of mica. Since no cleavages exist for uranium solutions to have flowed in a laminar fashion [as a thin layer of sedimentary rock] through fluorite crystals, this excludes the possibility that polonium halos in defect regions could have originated secondarily from uranium daughter radioactivity... A number of new experimental techniques were incorporated into my response to the 1973 report of Moazed et al... I elaborated on a new standard for halo-size measurements to show conclusively that polonium halos are easily distinguished from uranium halos by their ring structure. Electron-induced, X-ray fluorescence analyses of selected uranium and polonium halo centers confirmed this difference: the uranium halo centers showed considerable amounts of uranium and only a small amount of lead, whereas the Po halo centers showed only lead..."

And this shows that the *uranium* must have been all *decayed* to *lead* before the cycle of *polonium decay* began. Dr. Henry continues,

In his response, Gentry again raised the implications of the Po halos: "It is ... apparent that Po halos do pose contradictions to currently held views of Earth history. ...The question is, can they be explained by presently accepted cosmological and geological concepts relating to the origin and development of Earth?"

Meanwhile, Gentry made a new discovery, that, "spectacle halos pose extreme difficulties for long chronology." The so-called "spectacle" halos were two well defined polonium halos next to each other like the lenses in eyeglasses, but distant from a "significant uranium source" in the rock. "It was extremely improbable that two halos could have formed in such proximity by uranium atoms migrating from a distant uranium source, "so it was extremely unlikely that the "spectacle" halos could have been secondary. Their evident primordial origin thus made a sharp challenge to (1) conventional chronology and (2) conventional theories of granite formation [and that is, that it *cooled from liquid to solid* over eons of time as opposed to being instantly formed *solid* by God's 'voiced command'].

Dr. Henry concludes,

Critics responded to these conclusions... (1) by expressing faith in the conventional chronology, (2) by questioning whether polonium halos exist, and (3) by devising ad hoc theories [or theories "lacking... justification"] to explain all polonium halos as secondary.

And Dr. Henry offers more evidence, adding,

Critics, [Drs.] Meier and Hecker... ran tests to measure halo diameters, concluding that

Po halos could not be confused with uranium halos. "Therefore, the existence of polonium halos should no more be questioned." Nevertheless, most critics continued to claim that all Po halos must really be secondary halos from uranium decay, so Gentry defined necessary conditions for secondary Po halo formation. Gentry "began to contemplate where secondary polonium halos might have formed, realizing that the first requirement was an abundance of uranium to supply the secondary polonium halos... I was seeking geological specimens that were (1) high in uranium, (2) capable of having allowed rapid movement of secondary polonium atoms, and (3) possessing microscopic-sized capture sites for those polonium atoms... These special requirements brought to mind [the fact] that pieces of wood, partially turned to coal, some as large as logs, had been found in certain uranium mines in western states... The evidence suggested the wood had been in a water-soaked, gel-like condition at some earlier period in earth history. At that time solutions rich in uranium had passed through the wood, thus permitting the accumulation of uranium at certain sites with an affinity for that element. Secondary [polonium] halos had then formed around those uranium centers."

Dr. Henry notes,

Creationists had long maintained that virtually all coal formed from deposits laid during the flood year about 2500 BC.

And this is close to true. Actually The Flood more likely occurred closer to 2350 BC, and such *irradiated coal formations* were likely to occur not only in that cataclysm, but also in about half a dozen others that followed over the next about 1650 years. These other cataclysms included deluges that were apparently somewhat less 'global' than in The Flood, yet they likely involved greater "upheaval" of Earth's *crust* than in The Flood, all of which will be explained in much greater detail in the later sections. But Dr. Henry notes Mr. Gentry's nonetheless correct significant conclusion, who said,

On the basis of the flood model these formations were deposited within a few months of each other only a few thousand years ago... The coalified wood specimens...might have been parts of trees that were growing immediately prior to the flood.

I would add that The Flood could have only been responsible for some of these very many and often very large, 'cataclysm-level formations', all of which occurred between about 2350 BC to a little beyond 700 BC—a period of around 1650 years that ended about 2650 years ago. And surely all these cataclysms are ignored by scientists and historians alike, even ignored by way too many that call themselves Christians, and yes, in some cases purposefully ignored, though Christians more often tend to explain all the evidence with just The Flood, as is evident in Dr. Henry's report. About this 'Flood Model' Dr. Henry asks,

Was there evidence in the coalified wood that this scenario was correct? Indeed there was, for [Mr.] Gentry found that, unlike granite, coalified wood is rich in secondary Po-210.

More specifically, Dr. Gentry found that,

In a number of the coalified wood thin sections I discovered secondary polonium halos in greater numbers than secondary uranium halos... [The] polonium halos in these specimens were of only one type—those that had formed from the accumulation of ^{210}Po . Why were the other types of Po halos missing?... [The] ^{210}Po atoms lived long enough (half-life of 138 days) for them to be captured from the infiltrating uranium solution before they decayed away. In contrast, the other two polonium isotopes, with half-lives of minutes or less, decayed away before they could accumulate at the tiny polonium capture sites.

So, the missing *Po halos* in *coal* are evidence against *secondary Po halos* existing in *granite*, for the same reasons they are not found in *coalified wood*. I mean if the shorter-lived *polonium isotopes* could not separate in time from *uranium* and leave only their marks in *wood* or *coal*, then it would be unable to do so by such *secondary* means in *granite* either.

Dr. Gentry commented,

Nature had provided the most favorable conditions for producing secondary polonium halos, namely, an abundant uranium supply coupled with high mobility. Yet even under these optimum conditions only one type of polonium halo had formed. These experimental data provided an insurmountable obstacle to the idea of a secondary origin of polonium halos in granites. That is, if only one polonium halo type could form secondarily under the best natural conditions, what was the scientific basis for theorizing that all three types could form secondarily in the granites? In these rocks [- further 'nailing shut' this 'coffin',] both the high uranium content and the rapid transport capability were missing.

Also Dr. Henry reveals the significance of *dual polonium halos*.

The Po-210 halos in coal show that coal formed very rapidly. [Dr. Gentry reported,] "Most of the secondary ^{210}Po halos in coalified wood exhibited elliptical rather than the circular cross-sections typical of halos in minerals. How were these unusual [elliptical] halos produced? ...[These] halos first formed as spheres and hence initially had a circular outline, just as the halos in minerals. However, as pressure from overlying sediments increased, the gel-like wood was easily compressed, thus leading to development of the elliptical halos... [A] vital piece of scientific data relates to the question of how much time elapsed from the formation of the circular polonium halos to the time of compression. The length of this period would have remained

uncertain had it not been for the discovery of 'dual' polonium halos... These 'dual' ^{210}Po halos...in Triassic and Jurassic specimens [or in layers of sedimentary rock supposedly millions of years old, where dinosaur fossils are found], exhibit both a circular and elliptical outline. ...[The] halo centers, composed of lead and selenium, could also have captured another uranium daughter, ^{210}Pb . Since this isotope of lead decays with a half-life of about 22 years to ^{210}Po , a second ^{210}Po halo could develop within about 20 years after the first one had formed. If there was no deformation of the wood, then both halos would remain circular and they would exactly overlap. Or if the wood was deformed after about 20 years, then both halos would be compressed into an elliptical shape and they still would overlap. However, if deformation of the wood occurred within just a few years after the introduction of the uranium, then only one ^{210}Po halo could have been compressed because only one (from ^{210}Po) had then formed. Several years later another circular halo could develop (as ^{210}Pb decayed to ^{210}Po) and superimpose on the elliptical halo... From this sequence a very relevant conclusion emerges: only a few years elapsed from the introduction of the uranium to the time when the wood was compressed."

Now there's a **revelation** made possible by God's **ordinances of heaven and earth** that should come as a 'flood' to your senses. But neither should it have all 'washed through' just yet. Dr. Henry further explains how these *dual polonium halos* must have been formed in a single event. He quotes Mr. Gentry as saying,

If there was no deformation of the matrix between these periods, the two ^{210}Po halos would simply coincide. If, however, the matrix was deformed between the two periods of halo formation, then the first halo would have been compressed into an ellipsoid and the second halo would be a normal sphere. The results would be a 'dual' halo... The widespread occurrence of these dual halos in both Triassic and Jurassic specimens can actually be considered corroborative evidence for a one-time introduction of U [uranium] into these formations, because it is then possible to account for their structure on the basis of a single specifically timed tectonic [or 'earth-moving'] event.

However this doesn't really limit such occurrences to just one "tectonic event", though most 6-day, young-Earth creationists tend to think of just The Flood of Noah as the only cause. And Dr. Henry agrees with Mr. Gentry concluding,

This one-time event is most easily correlated with the Flood of Noah.

Indeed it is much more difficult to 'correlate' such 'radioactive timestamps' with over half a dozen catastrophic events, all occurring in about 1½ millennia, and all starting with The Flood of Noah. But if you remain **patient** and **diligent**, we shall. And by the way, I can actually clearly identify 8 of these events in both **scripture** and historical documentation, including The Flood, with a couple others coming during a period of such 'regular upheaval' that, though they are not difficult to pinpoint in time, they are yet to be identified by me as 'correlating' to any known

historical events. And if you think understanding *polonium halos* is complicated, you're in for a growing experience where **patience, faith, diligence**, nay, 'discipleship', will be required if you are to eventually reach **perfect understanding** of such **revelations**. And as **promised**, there's more of the **many infallible proofs** to come.

Dr. Henry shows how *uranium/lead ratios* in *dual halos* reveal recent formation, saying,

A high ratio of U-238 to Pb-206 in minerals would mean that the uranium has not had much time to decay to lead, i.e., the minerals are young. This is what [Mr.] Gentry et al. found, namely, extremely high U/Pb ratios for uranium halos in coal...

For example, according to Mr. Gentry,

...if the $^{238}\text{U}/^{206}\text{Pb} = 27,300$ value is indicative of the formation time of the radiocenter, this is more recent by at least a factor of 270 than the minimum (Cretaceous) and more recent by a factor of 760 than the maximum (Triassic) geological age estimated for the introduction of U into the logs.

Dr. Henry explains what this means, saying,

Since the coal samples were from the Colorado plateau, conventionally dated [by '*evolutionary fantasy*'] at some 55 million to 80 million years, these results conservatively imply that the upper limit on the age of this coal is of the order of 55 million / 270 = 204,000 years to 80 million/760 = 105,000 years. Thus, the true age of the coal is [in the ballpark] of thousands of years. [But] The true age is less than the conservative upper limit range mentioned above [of 204,000 years].

Mr. Gentry concluded,

Such extraordinary [*U/Pb ratio*] values admit the possibility that both the initial U infiltration and coalification could possibly have occurred within the past several thousand years.

Dr. Henry exposes less conservative evidence too. He mentions the report of Dr. Raphael G. Kazmann, professor of Civil Engineering at Louisiana State University, who cited, using Dr. Gentry's work, even more extreme *U/Pb ratios*, and summed up the 'chronological implications', saying,

[Since] the deposits from which the coalified wood was obtained are considered to be of Cretaceous age, and possibly of Jurassic or Triassic age, the ratio between ^{238}U and ^{206}Pb [in halos] should be low. Instead a number of such halos have been found with uranium-lead ratios ranging from about 2200 to over 64,000. If isotope ratios are to be used as a basis for geologic dating, then presently accepted ratios may be too high by a factor of 10,000, admitting that the ages

of the formation are to be measured in millennia [or in just thousands of years - not millions]. Thus the ages of the entire stratigraphic column [or the 'make-believe' *geologic or geological column*] may contain epochs [such as the Cretaceous, Jurassic and Triassic that are 'laid' in] less than 0.01% the duration of those now accepted...

And Dr. Henry interprets what this .01% means, declaring,

This means that coal conventionally dated at 80 million years would have a true age of less than 8000 years, and 200 million-year-old coal is really less than 20,000 years old. These conclusions bring the age of coal close to the range of biblical chronology.

Of course this is the conclusion that *evolutionists* must avoid at all cost, including at the cost of their **honesty** and **integrity**. And by-the-way, this **revelation** came in the middle of the "neutrino crisis", you know, that crisis near the end of the 70's when the scientific community was discovering that not near enough *neutrinos* were coming from the Sun to account for the *proton-proton chain reaction* that would allow for an age of the Sun in billions of years. Both of these "shocks" to the Theory of Evolution are topics of a letter from Dr. Kazmann to Mr. Gentry, dated January 27, 1977. See it at the Earth Science Associates webpage, <http://www.halos.com/book/ctm-04-d.htm>, the linked address to it on p.145.

And Mr. Gentry didn't stop in Colorado. His results were corroborated in the *Chattanooga shale* found in Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama and Georgia. And additional examination of the *Colorado plateau* deposits located in Colorado, Wyoming, Utah and New Mexico showed that,

The coalified wood in these sediments ranges in size from finely divided intergranular fragments visible with a hand lens to entire tree trunks many feet long and still having attached branches and roots. The larger pieces of coalified wood are compressed or un-compressed, black or brown in color, and may or may not contain siliceous, calcitic, or dolomitic fillings [kinds of sand or dirt] replacing the original pithy cores of the trunks. Some coalified fragments are still flexible when first collected but become brittle when dried.

In other word, as Dr. Henry puts it,

...the material appears to have been suddenly, recently buried.

But overwhelming evidence disproving The Theory of Evolution is never enough to sway those who **hate** the **truth** and **deny...God**. However Dr. Henry gives further proof for them to ignore and hide, further defying a 'conventional evolutionary explanation', telling us that,

Organic material in [Alaskan] oil formations also appear new, not old. The North Slope of Alaska has vast reserves of oil that oil companies began extracting in the 1970s. Lindsey Williams was Chaplain to the Trans-Alaska Oil Pipeline workers, and recounts the following story: "Though the ground is frozen for 1,900 feet down from the surface at

Prudhoe Bay, everywhere the oil companies drilled around this area they discovered an ancient tropical forest. It was in frozen state, not in petrified state. It is between 1,100 and 1,700 feet down. There are palm trees, pine trees, and tropical foliage in great profusion. In fact, they found them lapped all over each other, just as though they had fallen in that position... The finding of underground tropical growth is not hearsay, for I have personally watched these palm trees and other types of tropical plants being brought to the surface... One day I watched as a pine cone was brought up from a well (although not considered tropical, they apparently grew together in historic times) [or 'washed' together], and when we first saw it, it looked just exactly as it would look on a young pine tree today. It was closed, and we put it in an office on the premises of Atlantic Richfield. We simply put it on the desk and left it. The next day we came back and the pine cone had opened up. You could quite clearly see the seeds on the inside of the cone. This was ...after thousands of years of being in a frozen state, hundreds of feet beneath the surface. [And] I...have palm fronds in my home which were brought up from some 1,700 feet below the surface..."

And by-the way, Dr. Henry informs us that *synthetic coal*—indistinguishable from the real thing—has been made at the Argonne National Laboratory in less than one year using the same kind of *clay* found interlaced with most real *coal*, which really already proves that *coal* can be quickly produced naturally. Also, he reports that,

...the Sasol coal-to-oil conversion plant near Johannesburg, South Africa, converts 120,000 metric tons of coal to 160,000 barrels of oil every day; 40 million metric tons are converted to oil annually.

This means that another supposedly 'long process', the conversion of *coal* to *oil*, could have happen very quickly, and quite naturally. You just need a lot of *water* to 'pile up' *forests* full of *wood* very quickly with some *sand* and/or *dirt* mixed in. But a little less water, after 'great conflagration'—all encompassing fire—would also work quite well, as we will see.

Dr. Henry concludes his report by saying,

Polonium radiohalos in Precambrian [that is, 'originally created'] granite show (1) that the earth was not molten when first formed; therefore (2) that the naturalistic origins scenario for the solar system called the "nebular hypothesis," in which the earth and other planets began as molten "proto-planets," is false; and (3) that the Precambrian granites did not form from a melt, and are not truly igneous but are "creation rocks" existing as solid from the beginning. Two facts reinforce the conclusions that Precambrian granites did not form naturalistically from a melt: (1) that the naturalistic origin of granite remains unknown, and (2) that Precambrian granite has not been synthesized in the lab from a melt [despite the most recent subterfuge to the contrary].

The "dual" polonium halos in coal show that the coal formed rapidly. [1] The high U/Pb ratios in polonium halos in coal show that the coal formed recently and has an age of the order of millennia [or thousands of years], in line with biblical chronology, and (2) that the coal formed most likely in a single catastrophe, most easily identified as Noah's Flood [though we will identify other even more recent catastrophes too]. Two additional facts reinforce the conclusions that coal formed rapidly and recently: (1) that coal and other fossil fuels can be synthesized rapidly, suggesting that rapid formation was possible for natural deposits; (2) that organic matter unearthed from coal deposits and oil wells is sometimes unpetrified and appears fresh and undecayed, suggesting rapid, recent burial. As Chemical and Engineering News commented, "Polonium has had a minor flare of celebrity in debate between creationists—who believe the universe, Earth, and the life upon it were created some 6,000 years ago during a seven-day period... [and] those who subscribe to the Big Bang theory. Physicist Robert V. Gentry, a creationist, contends that... the radioactive decay of this element could form [halos] only if granites were created [solid]. Not surprisingly, mainstream geologists refute Gentry's idea. They say these halos weren't caused by polonium [but] are due to the decay of other elements with a longer half-life... Neither the creationists or Big Bangers are budging...

But **we** will also see that neither works with near all the evidence available, and in many cases by choice, and in some cases this includes *creationists*—'scripturally immature' ones, that is.

But Mr. Gentry did his part well. Despite his funding being cut off by the National Science Foundation in the early 80's—really again only because he was a *creationist*—he soldiered on into the 90's with his God-glorifying research. But *evolutionists* consider themselves finally and fully vindicated by experiments late last decade that determined 'something like' *granite* could be produced in the laboratory—evidence of *granite* supposedly presently being produced naturally—while not really answering any other objection of Dr. Gentry's reasonably, or even honestly, and, according to Dr. Henry, only responding to him with 'name-calling' and attempts to 'bury truth' in already discredited detail (<http://www.creationconcepts.org/resources/HALOS.pdf>).

Since 2008, *evolutionists* are now arguing that there is evidence of newly forming *granite*—of some kind, and that different *densities* of *granites* could result in varying sizes of *halos*, and that *scientist* now better understand how *alpha particles* travel through rock, and that there appears to be *halos* in some new formations of rock, and that Gentry's data has become 'outdated', and that he was a *physicist*, not a *geologist*—all 'observations' that purposely leave further testable clarification in these matters unexplored, or they are really just subterfuge since they don't really answer the cases where *primary* or *primordial polonium halos* appear to exist. But along with all this, it has even been recently 'seriously' argued that,

For this [that is, Dr. Gentry's] hypothesis to be accepted, it must be testable. [<http://www.talkorigins.org/faqs/po-halos/gentry.html>, fifth paragraph; see also the NCSE polonium halo page at <http://ncse.com/rncse/30/5/origin-polonium-halos>, both links on p.147.]

You see *evolutionists* in general have no problem employing a double standard. They insist that any evidence that contradicts their 'faith' must be testable—and ignore or just ridicule any such evidence that exists—while also insisting that their conclusions do not require the same scrutiny. And such **so-called** 'scientists' are doubly **hypocrites** because they find and even invent untestable objections to *creationist theories*, while refusing and ignoring the testing that would actually further confirm or disprove the Young-Earth Theory. And all the while trying to keep their 'theories' both 'just over our heads' and 'buried in detail' so that it's really too much work to determine that it's all just subterfuge in an attempt to buy time, bad pun intended.

And yes, it's that bad. And since The Spirit has recently twice reminded me of a Psalm of David that applies to such behavior, I'll share some of it now.

O LORD my God, in thee do I put my trust: save me from all them that persecute me, and deliver me: Lest he tear my soul like a lion, rending it in pieces, while there is none to deliver... Oh let the wickedness of the wicked come to an end; but establish the just: for the righteous God trieth the hearts and reins. My defence is of God, which saveth the upright in heart. God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day. If he [the wicked] turn not [from wickedness], he [God] will whet his sword; he hath bent his bow, and made it ready. He hath also prepared for him[Self] the instruments of death; he ordaineth his arrows against the persecutors. Behold, he [the wicked] travaileth with iniquity, and hath conceived mischief, and brought forth falsehood. He made a pit, and digged it, and is fallen into the ditch which he made. His mischief shall return upon his own head, and his violent dealing shall come down upon his own pate [another word for head] [Psa 7:1-2...9-17](#).

Indeed, in the *evolutionary sciences*, such **wickedness, iniquity, mischief, falsehood**, and **pit-digging** happen **every day**. But surely God is **angry** about all this too, and again has literally **prepared...instruments of death** that **he ordaineth...against** such **persecutors**. And we will specifically identify God's **instruments of death** throughout this **study**, including the ones **prepared** and **ordained** [read, **prophesied**] for the present-day, **wicked, mischief-making, pit-digging persecutors** before we're done.

So, billions of years are required for *organic evolution* to take place. No one argues that. But we have already sufficiently **proved** that only a few thousand years are available, though most are ignoring, denying and/or **wickedly** distorting or hiding this fact. But if you can 'shelve' the issues we've raised against the Theory of Evolution so far, for the sake of being able to continue the argument, we will see that all the time in the World would never be enough anyway.

And are you feeling up to speed? You need to be, and not just with the *science* but also with the **scripture**. And I'll try not to bother you about it again, but until you're sure you have a 'working knowledge' of everything in each section, you're not ready to go on. And you need to be fine with starting over as many times as necessary until you get it all—including doing some side research on your own where my explanations aren't working for you. Not that just taking a break and letting it 'stew' awhile is a bad idea either. I do it all the time as I **press toward the mark**. But if you're not getting a lot of this material, it would probably be

better if you started with—or go back and get better **exercised** in—[The Raptures of The Great Tribulation](#), before you come back to this **study**. And, full disclosure, as explained in [RGT](#), proceeding beyond this point only puts you ‘higher’ on Satan’s ‘hit list’. You have to **understand** that the more you **press toward** the **truth**, the more you make Satan as angry **as a roaring lion** who will be **seeking to devour** you more than ever, and more than most others. This is primarily because that by this kind of discipleship you **prepare** yourself to really do him some hurt. So only those that feel ‘up to speed’ should **continue**, and only if you are truly more **afraid** of God than Satan. That would be someone who **understands** what Jesus means when He counsels,

...fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell [Mat 10:28](#).

These would be the ones who not only say, but sing, as King David does...

The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? the LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell. Though an host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident. One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD, and to enquire in his temple. And now shall mine head be lifted up above mine enemies round about me: therefore will I offer in his tabernacle sacrifices of joy; I will sing, yea, I will sing praises unto the LORD [Psa 27:1-6](#).

Could you really **not fear** in the face of an army? And do you really want to **dwell** with God that badly? Sure, we’ve climbed several ‘plateaus’ of **understanding** already, but we’ve really only just started. So if you’re already winded, you should probably spend some more time at the ‘base camp’—[RGT](#)—before you try to climb this ‘Everest’ we’re now staring up at. And I mean if you’re really a **disciple indeed**, you very well may **fall** and be **destroyed** if you **continue** up this way too quickly. But if you feel ready, by all means, let’s **press** onward and upward.

If someone saw a car on the freeway from Los Angeles to Las Vegas in Las Vegas they might guess that the car came from LA, and that, if traveling at the speed limit, it might have been in LA a little less than 4 hours ago; (I used Google Maps). Of course it may also just carry a resident of Las Vegas using that freeway. The point is that you can look at this Universe in a similar way. Looking at the present state of our Universe, considering its dimensions, and judging by the *speed of light*, you might guess that it ‘originated’ from an ‘incident’ several billion years ago, and far, far away. But since nothing is impossible for our **omnipotent** and **infinite** God, you could also just as well assume that God **created** this Universe pretty much in this state 6,000 years ago, and that is, in a period of 6 literal days. So which is it? The correct answer is best given with [Genesis 1](#) added to the ‘road map’ of time that the rest of **scripture** defines since then. And those that use Genesis 1 to say that God ‘started’ the Universe billions years ago aren’t really paying close enough attention to this ‘map’, that is, to the entire Word of God. Uh-huh, they’re ‘lost’, at least in this sense, Christian or not. And I mean if the ‘days’ in

Genesis 1 are really symbolic for “long ages”, then God messed up big time, because He tells us in these verses that He creates the **earth** and its **waters** a full 3 “days” before the Sun and stars. Oops. He then creates *plant life* a whole “day” before He creates the Sun. Another oops. He also creates **every living creature... which the waters brought forth** on the same day as **every winged fowl**, and these the “day” before **land beast[s] of the earth**, getting at least the *birds* (if not also *insects*) out of ‘accepted evolutionary order’ too. Oops yet again. And I mean such *theistic* or *progressive evolutionists* agree neither with God nor the Theory of Evolution. Genesis 1 alone makes clear that God **created** the entire Universe, and all the *life* in it, in 6 literal days, and the details added in the second chapter only fit a literal week too.

But a fair question remains, why did God **create** the Universe to look like it was so old—like it could have been operating for billions of years when it’s really only been here about 6,000? The early chapters of Genesis have a good answer for this too. And that would be that God **promised** Adam and Eve that they would never **die** ([Gen 2:17](#)). Being true to His Word—even though Adam and Eve were not—is why God made a Universe that could have been ‘sustained’ **for ever**, and whatever the case, shows how **omnipotent** and **infinite** He is. So he likely did indeed **create** a ‘permanently sustainable’ Universe. And I mean despite all the present evidence that it can’t last **for ever**, it’s apparently only **sin** that stopped God from maintaining it **for ever**. He had to show us that He was sincere and able to deliver on His **promise** to Adam and Eve, even if He knew that they would fail. But failure is a characteristic of our nature, not God’s. So He naturally must have shown Adam and Eve His **infinite, omnipotent**, and ‘omnipresent’ nature, creating a ‘potentially eternally sustainable’ Universe, one that still exists, though now in its **cursed** and ‘dying’ form, I mean, unless you think He couldn’t ‘hold it all together’ indefinitely if He wanted to. And are you forgetting His **promise** to make the next one that way too? Uh-huh.

So evidently many Christians who have trouble believing that **God created** a Universe that’s much, much older than it looks, somehow don’t have trouble believing that it won’t last near as long as it looks like it can. I mean, many Christians have no trouble believing Jesus when He says, **heaven and earth shall pass away**. And surely God could make this present Creation last **for ever** if He wanted, and He can make the coming **new** one ‘appear’ as quickly as He’s going to make this present one ‘disappear’. And He can fulfill His **promise** that the next one will have **no end** too. So this one’s present state doesn’t so simply tell us how old it is or how long it will last, just that God is **omnipotent, infinite, great and terrible**, and is **able** to do some mind-bogglingly **wondrous works**. And we will see that this includes His **instruments of death** too.

But He does seem to have given us some mixed clues. From some of the most distant *stars* that we can see by telescope, *light* supposedly takes many billions of years to reach us. But on the other hand the many short-lived *comets*, the shrinking Sun, the slowing *rotation* of the Earth, its *decaying magnetic field*, *fossils* and *coal*, *polonium halos* in Genesis rock, etc., seem to indicate that we couldn’t have been here that long. But it’s really a lot more complicated—and awesome—than all this. Still, it’s plainly enough established in His Word that He **created** this Universe in 6 literal days about 6,000 years ago—though a more ‘mature level’ of **study** of His Word can reveal a lot of apparently mixed messages there too. So we’re going to need a much bigger and more detailed picture. And surely there is no limit to the detail we could discover. And we should **know** that no matter how complicated the picture gets, there is no question whether He could make it all

'appear' or 'disappear'. But again, it's a case that will never be completely closed, just as He is passed **searching...out** [Job 11:7-9](#). See also [Isa 40:28](#).

For example, there is now evidence that, kind of like the *gas laws*, that supposed *constants* like the *speed of light*, the *rate of radioactive decay*, etc., can change in certain extremes, or when sufficiently influenced by various *forces* and *phenomena*, like *solar flares*, or substantial *gravity wells*. Uh-huh. Here we go again. And I mean that this 'game' is designed by our infinite Creator. And since I'm not 'up to speed' on the real ramifications of such relatively new observations, I'll have to—for now—leave the follow-up on such new 'game-changers' to you.

Still, we haven't closed the case for the Theory of Evolution yet either. I mean it is still widely thought to still have some 'life' in it. But in the next section we'll see this remaining 'life' as easily 'snuffed out' as how this section 'stopped its clock'. And I mean we're going to have to dispense with the imaginary **so-called** "hopeful monsters" before we start to correct, improve and expand our perspective of the God's 'real game plan'. So here we go.

SECTION 3 Rejecting The World and Accepting God, Part 2: Organic Evolution

So now we want to look at the *evolutionist's* story about how *life* started on Earth. And remember that means we have to ignore that it's impossible that the Sun has been burning long enough to make that happen, because it's shrinking and not producing any *neutrinos*, which means it's not really burning by *thermonuclear fusion* that would allow its *main sequence*—its 'life-supporting period'—to last the billions of years that is considered necessary for *life* to 'accidentally start', let alone gradually 'evolve' on Earth to where it is today.

Of course accepting this 'fairy tale' about the Sun also includes ignoring the "early faint star paradox"—that near the imagined beginning of such a *main sequence* the Sun would have been mostly *hydrogen* with little *helium* and would not have burned as bright as it does today. And we have to accept, or really pretend, that in the supposed 4 to 5 billion years since it's ignition it must have brightened about 40% due to the 'natural' exchange of *hydrogen* for *helium* in its core that would occur as a result of *thermonuclear fusion*, which would also require that Earth's *early atmosphere* must have had very little *free oxygen*, but instead mostly *greenhouse gases* like *carbon monoxide* and *dioxide*, *methane* and *ammonia* that would hold *heat*, or the Earth would have been too cold to foster and propagate *life*. In other words, Earth must have originally had an *oxidizing atmosphere*, meaning the *oxygen* must have been held in *compounds* like *water*, *carbon monoxide* and *dioxide*, *methanol*, *ammonium hydroxide*, the many *iron oxyhydroxides* (including common *rust*), etc., so that there would be limited *atmospheric free oxygen* that more readily releases *heat* into *space*, and instead mostly *greenhouse gases* that tend to hold the heat from escaping into space, this condition needed to keep the *planet* warm enough in the *light* of the supposed much dimmer Sun of the 'mis-imagined' distant past.

And though it is supposed that increasing *plantlife* and *photosynthesis* would have slowly increased the amount of *free oxygen* in the *atmosphere* over time, we are also ignoring that there is no known mechanism to regulate the necessarily precise and slow exchange of *greenhouse gas* to *free oxygen* over time as the Sun gradually brightens, which would be necessary to avoid both *over-heating* and *excessive freezing*, and that all this should be a problem in the development of *life* throughout the entire Universe. Well, except that Gaia might help 'regulate' that, and that 'she' must have had a lot more influence than previously imagined.

And we also have to ignore the rate of our *decaying magnetic field* because, extrapolating backward in time, the *electromagnetic energy* of the Earth only thousands of years ago would have literally *liquefied* the *planet*, and not long before that, *vaporized* it. This same *electro-magnetic decay* applies to the Sun too really, and evidently to all the *stars* and *planets* in the Universe. Let's call this the 'early magnetic field paradox'. But despite the clear evidence that Earth's *magnetic field* is relatively quickly decaying—as all 'non-externally-powered' *magnets* do—*evolutionists* have to believe that Magnet Earth has somehow always remained within its present range of 'just right' strength—for billions of years—or *evolution* would not be possible. And at the present strength of Earth's relatively quickly *decaying magnetic field*, it is nonetheless still within a very narrow range that is 'just right' for *shielding* Earth's *atmosphere* from being 'blown away' by the *subatomic particles*—the *solar wind*—'blasting' it from the Sun. And we now know that *atmospheric lightning*, also made possible by the 'just right' strength of Earth's *magnetic field*, is necessary for "fixing nitrogen" in the *soil* which is essential for

plantlife. So really it would be easier to assume that the Earth-goddess Gaia has had her eye on the stability of Earth's 'just right' *electromagnetic energy* too, as well as on the *electromagnetic energy* of every *planet* and *star* in the Universe, among other 'natural phenomenon'. Busy girl.

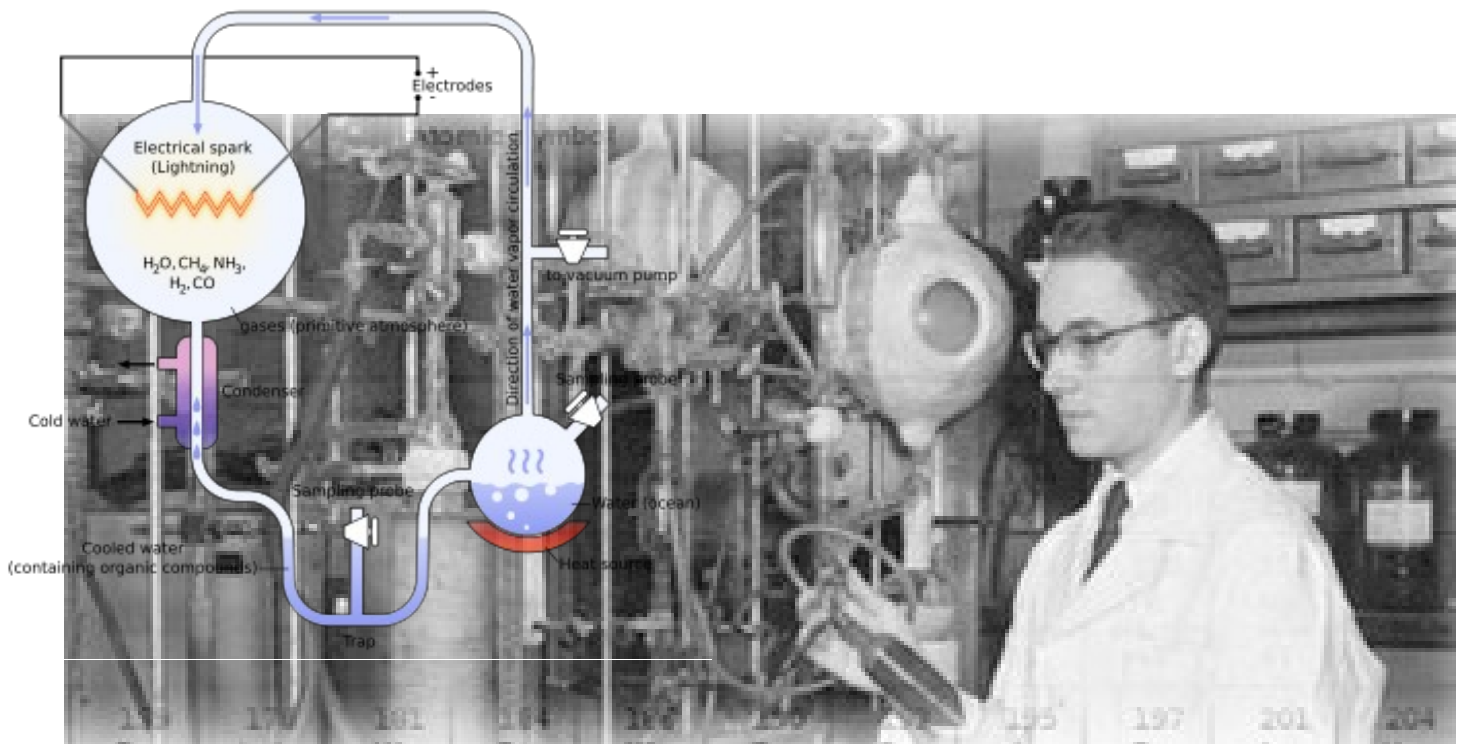
But of course we will never come to a complete **understanding** of everything that Earth's *magnetic field* does for us to make *life* as we know it possible on Earth. Why? Because its Creator is **infinite**. So you must instead come to the **revelation** that any part or aspect of His Creation is **past finding out** ([Job 9:10](#); [Rom 11:33](#)). And He is **faithful** to show anyone that will **ask, seek** and **knock** that this is the **truth** ([Mat 7:7-8](#)).

So Earth's 'fabled' *early atmosphere*, 'mis-imagined' by *evolutionists*, with the Sun's weaker *solar radiation*, minus the *particles* needfully diverted by Earth's *magnetic field*, supposedly provided the 'perfect environment' for making the "building-block" *molecules of life*. And we're going to proceed as if we've accepted that the Sun has been burning for near 5 billion years, and that Gaia or 'sheer accident' has 'regulated' and kept the *atmospheric temperature* 'just right' to 'support and evolve' *life*, and that the *electromagnetic energy* has remained at the 'just right' level, generating the 'just right' balance of *shielding* and *lightning*, etc., along with the evidently innumerable (see again [Job 9:10](#)) other necessarily 'just right', 'razor's-edge-balanced' *forces* and *phenomena* that unendingly provide **faithful...testimony** of God's **infinite** nature.

So, we will concede, really for the sake of exposing **evil** and **evildoers**, that irrationally long, long ago, in a world way too far, far-fetched, an *oxidizing atmosphere* became part of a 'perfect recipe' for a 'life-starting' "primordial soup". That would be the 'water' on the Earth that became filled with the "building blocks of life", where it is supposed that *lightning* in the *oxidizing* or *reducing atmosphere* produced these "building-block" *molecules*, so that *life* could begin, in time, with *random*—or Gaia directed—*collisions* of just the 'right' *molecules* inside this 'watery soup'. But excuse me, I really mean mostly just the 'left' *molecules*, as we will see.

Oh, and we have to ignore the fact that the *primordial rocks* on Earth, supposedly the ones providing the bowl for this "primordial soup", have been 'polonium clocked' to be only a few thousand years old. Yeah, I know. It's really asking too much to proceed with such an unreasonable, irrational, impossible 'flight of imagination'. But **so called** 'credible scientists' do it every day. And we need to keep in mind that there are good reasons to indulge them for one last section of this **study**. Besides exposing mortal **evil** and **evildoers**, it can also help in exposing the **wickedness** and **devices** of the real **rulers of the darkness of this world**.

And speaking of **so called** 'credible scientists', do you remember Dr. Harold Urey, the *cosmochemist*? He's the guy who expected to find *life* in *space* pretty much everywhere, and had that 'dustup' with Dr. Kuiper about the Moon program. It turns out that one of his students, when He was still at the University of Chicago, had his feet more 'on the ground'. His name was **Dr. Stanley Miller**. Using the imaginary conditions that somehow must have existed in



the *early atmosphere* of Earth, he developed an experiment supposedly showing how “building-block” *molecules* formed, now known as the **Miller-Urey Experiment**. The experiment involves the boiling of *water* and then mixing the *water vapor* with a variety of *greenhouse gases* and other *molecules*, then exposing this *gas* to *sparks* to simulate *lightning*, then *condensing* the *gas* back into *liquid* and catching it in a trap at the bottom of the system. And it did produce some of the basic “building-blocks of life”, including a variety of *amino acids* used in the construction of *protein molecules*, a large and essential component of *life* (photo & diagram on p.153-4).

But there is something they will never tell you about this experiment, because this fact alone is sufficient to **prove** that it is statistically impossible that *life* could be created by the *random collisions* of such “building-block” *molecules* in such a “primordial soup”. The fact is that, statistically, only half the time they expect to get them ‘right’... or ‘left’. And those are impossible odds.

The word for it is *homochirality*. And you’ve likely never even heard of it because it would be devastating to the Theory of Organic Evolution if it was too widely known, though, thanks to *creationist* sources, I’ve known about it for near 25 years. It turns out that *protein molecules*—arguably one of the most important and essential “building-blocks of life” are *homochiral*. This means that all of the *components of life* discovered so far contain strictly “left-handed” or “right-handed” *molecules* such as “left-handed” *amino acids* and “right-handed” *sugars*. A *molecule* is *chiral* if it naturally forms in two configurations, each a mirror image of the other, the two versions called “right” and “left-handed” *enantiomers*. And many *organic carbon-based molecules* are *homochiral*, meaning they can exist as just “left-handed” or just “right-handed” *enantiomers*. Most significantly, the ‘bricks’ of *living organisms*, *protein molecules*, are always only either “left” or “right” *enantiomers*, never both. So this could be considered a case where God’s reveals His sense of humor. And since *homochirality* is such a pervasive and essential aspect of *life*, the joke is on *evolutionists*, because “right” or “left-handed” *enantiomers* attach themselves to their ‘mirror-image’ partners just as easily, but just one “right-handed” *amino acid molecule* in any construction that requires all “left-handed” makes it *toxic* or useless as a “left-handed” *component*, and vice versa. Again, they all have to be one way or the other. And the ‘simplest’ *protein*

molecule is 'constructed' of well over a hundred *amino acid molecules* connected in a *chain*, but most are made of several hundred of them or more. And again, the long *chains of amino acid molecules* in all *protein molecules*—the 'bricks of life'—are all homochiral molecules, being either all "left-handed" or all "right-handed", the vast majority "left-handed".

The punch line is that the *amino acids* found in the trap of the Miller-Urey Experiment were about half "left-handed" and half "right-handed", evidently showing that under such 'natural' conditions "left" or "right" *chirality* is 50-50, otherwise known as a *racemic mixture*. This makes the odds of getting just 100 "left-handed" *amino acid molecules* all together unreasonable—really impossible. It would be like blindly trying to pick a green marble 100 times in a row out of an equally mixed bag of red and green marbles. Or it would be like flipping a coin to land on heads 100 times in a row. For the first flip the odds would be 50-50 or $\frac{1}{2}$. But the second time the odds would be $\frac{1}{2} \times \frac{1}{2}$ or $\frac{1}{4}$. Such odds climb very steeply very fast with additional trials. The odds of flipping heads 100 times is in the ballpark of 10^{32} or a billion, trillion, trillion to one. That's a 1 with 32 zeros following. So even 100 *random, 'accidental' amino acid molecule collisions* in the supposed "primordial soup" every second could only result in a viable, 100-*molecule amino acid chain* once every 10^{22} years, or once every 10 billion trillion years, which is well over 9 billion trillion years longer than the Universe is supposed to be old.

This is not reasonable. But even more laughable is that this is a gross oversimplification. Remember that this doesn't even make one full *protein molecule*. And remember that if each *protein molecule* were a brick, it would take an Empire State Building full of them to make one "single-cell" or *unicellular organism*. And remember *protein molecules* are not made of just one kind of *amino acid molecule*. There are around a dozen to two dozen different kinds found in any given *lifeform*, so that it's more like a mixed bag of red and green marbles where the marbles are also numbered, and you not only have to pick all green ones, you must also pick them in the right order too. And of course *protein molecules* aren't the only *biopolymers* found in all *living organisms* that present this obstacle. Besides *protein molecule polymers*—linearly connected molecules—there are even longer odds for *DNA* and *RNA biopolymers*. I mean you've probably heard about the equally precise order and variety of *molecules* in each cell's *spiral helix strand of DNA biopolymer molecules*, with the exception that such *biopolymer strands* are much, much longer than *protein molecule polymers*. For *evolutionists* this is not so much a 'bag of marbles' as a 'can of worms'. So the construction and parts of all *cells* are a continual and increasing annoyance to *evolutionists*, because surely we will never even find the final number of all the parts, let alone ever solve all the intricacies of their constructions.

By-the-way, a lot of attention was brought to *chirality* during the *thalidomide* 'drug disaster' of the late 1950's and early 60's. Turns out that one of the *homochiral* forms had therapeutic benefits for pregnant women, but the other form caused shocking fetal abnormalities and birth defects. Not so funny.

And any calculations we do will ultimately become grossly oversimplified as we learn more and more about 'just' *unicellular organisms*. The real odds only get unimaginably worse as more details are discovered. But such odds were considered back in the early 1980's, even with the help of the 'supercomputers' of that time. And the conclusion of an elite member of England's scientific community, who actually did the math, originally reported in the *Daily Express* on August 14, 1981, and in the article in *Nature, Hoyle on Evolution*, November 12, 1981, that,

"There must be a God."

More specifically, in a *New Scientist* article, *The Big Bang in Astronomy*, on November 19, 1981, he said,

The notion that not only the biopolymer [*DNA, RNA, and protein molecules*] but the operating program of a living cell could be arrived at by chance [or by the *accidental collisions of atoms and molecules*] in a primordial organic soup here on the Earth is evidently nonsense of a high order.

Yes, he means that the ‘accidental formation’ just a single *protein molecule* is “nonsense”, even ridiculous, because it is beyond statistically impossible. These statements are from Sir Dr. Fred Hoyle. How did he know?

Educated at Cambridge, he ultimately became the founding director of the Institute of Theoretical Astronomy at Cambridge in 1967, where he recruited the likes of Dr. Stephen Hawking and others at the top of this field. It was later named the Institute of Astronomy, Cambridge. Through Dr. Hoyle's leadership this institution quickly became one of the premier groups in the world for *theoretical astrophysics*. But though Dr. Hoyle had coined the term “Big Bang theory”, he did it to mock it, because he was opposed to it, and is instead known for his briefly popular “Steady State theory”. And though he ‘lost’ this ‘war’, the other side could not have won without him. This is made clear from testimony from Dr. John Gribbin.

Dr. Gribbin earned his Ph.D. in astrophysics from the University of Cambridge in 1971, and worked as a research student of Dr. Hoyle at the Institute of Theoretical Astronomy. He later became a science writer, and a visiting fellow in *astronomy* at the University of Sussex. A 2002 article in *The Spectator* described Dr. Gribbin as “one of the finest and most prolific writers of popular science around”. The topical range of his “prolific” writing includes *quantum physics*, biographies of famous scientists, *human evolution*, and the *origins of the Universe*. And he, like Sir Dr. Hoyle, is also known as a writer of science fiction. About a dozen of Dr. Hoyle’s 40 books were science fiction novels.

But I tell you all this about Dr. Gribbin to add ‘gravity’ to whatever ‘force’ his opinion of Sir Dr. Hoyle may have. Dr. Gribbin wrote of His former professor in an obituary entitled, appropriately enough, *Stardust Memories* in 2005, revealing that,

In the popular mind, if Hoyle is remembered it is as the prime mover of the discredited Steady State theory of the universe. “Everybody knows” that the rival Big Bang theory won the battle of the cosmologies, but few (not even astronomers) appreciate that the mathematical formalism of the now-favoured version of Big Bang, called inflation, is identical to Hoyle's version of the Steady State model.

The *Steady State theory* holds that the Universe is ever expanding and that *matter* is being continuously created to keep the *mean density of matter in space a constant*. Yeah, kind of sounds like *Big Bang inflation*, huh. And although Hoyle was forced to alter some of his conclusions, he persistently sought to make his *theory* consistent with new evidence. Of course, according to Dr. Gribbin, it now is. But those that look a little closer can see that ‘science’ is really more a matter of ‘faith’ and ‘politics’, because it was really Dr. Hoyle’s ‘faith’ that eventually pushed him to the background.

The following is a 'statement of faith' from Dr. Hoyle's book, *Our Place in the Cosmos*, 1993. He believed that,

The creationist is a sham religious person who, curiously, has no true sense of religion. In the language of religion, it is the facts we observe in the world around us that must be seen to constitute the words of God. Documents, whether the Bible, Qur'an or those writings that held such force for Velikovsky, are only the words of men. To prefer the words of men to those of God is what one can mean by blasphemy. This, we think, is the instinctive point of view of most scientists who, curiously again, have a deeper understanding of the real nature of religion than have the many who delude themselves into a frenzied belief in the words, often the meaningless words, of men. Indeed, the lesser the meaning, the greater the frenzy, in something like inverse proportion (p.14).

And though I could site some hypocrisy, even blasphemy, and certainly some lack of 'fact-checking' in Dr. Hoyle's 'statement of faith', my general response is, amen. Surely 'the facts' of God's Creation are to be given our complete attention. But they can be confusing, even baffling to otherwise 'sincere scientists' who misidentify the capabilities of The Creator. And I mean, despite 'the fact' that no one has been able to come to any 'complete scientific conclusion' since the beginning of the present era of "modern science", *evolutionists* still expect to find such conclusions—or think in some cases that they already have. Too many *creationists* do too. I mean if you're looking for an end in God's Creation anywhere, you're 'lost', or at least 'waylaid'.

And I should mention that Dr. Hoyle is at the least slandering Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky here. I have at this point read 3 of his works, two of them more than once, and one of those I almost entirely copied, to enhance my study of it. And one of his works relies on scientific 'facts' better than any kind of *cosmologist* can, because it examines *testimony* of leading *geologists* and *paleontologist* worldwide to support the idea that there is abundant and undeniable evidence for a 'universal flood', as well as for other 'global cataclysms', all in the relatively recent past. His other works do the work of 'syncing' *historical documentation* and *testimony*, including the Bible, with this geological and paleontological evidence. Besides, Dr. Velikovsky did not represent himself as a 'man of faith'. He was a *psychologist*. However since he was a Jew, I expect he will get another chance to change his mind about his **faith**, as explained in [RGT](#). So, **shame** on Dr. Hoyle for this slander. Of course his **shame** for discrediting The Word of God will be worse.

Still Dr. Hoyle was honest enough to admit he is 'clueless'. It is recorded in *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations* that he said,

There is a coherent plan to the universe, though I don't know what it's a plan for.

And indeed **understanding** God's plan and **infinite** capabilities are prerequisite to having a real 'clue', and otherwise leads to simply embarrassing 'conclusions' and 'behavior', or worse. And indeed the only 'conclusion' we can come to is that with God, there are no final conclusions. And along with this reality, the **divers** and **manifold temptations** of this World make hypocrites or worse of **so called scientists** who ignore what Sir Dr. Hoyle called "the facts we observe in the world", which he heavy-handedly identifies as "blasphemy" against The Creator, while he apparently could not see such shortcomings in himself.

But Sir Dr. Hoyle got some glimpses of God's capabilities with what 'faith' he did have. He remained an 'evolutionist', as do some Christians, but he held to the belief that there must be an 'intelligent creator' behind the process, and he continually put that **faith** to the test. An early paper of Dr. Hoyle's made use of this conviction. In trying to work out the routes of *stellar nucleosynthesis*—this is the imagined *chemical processes* by which *stars* 'form', 'burn' and finally 'die'—he expected that, since it had been recognized that the odds of producing enough *carbon* in the *Big Bang* are 'slim to none', one particular *thermonuclear reaction*, the *triple-alpha process*, which could generate enough *carbon*, would require the *carbon nucleus* to have a very specific *resonance energy* if it was to work. And the *triple-alpha process* is the only known process by which *stars* 'could' produce the abundant amount of carbon found in the Universe, this 'abundance' thought to be necessary to eventually 'evolve life'. And one of the limitations is that this process is only expected to work at the end of a *star's main sequence*, when its increasing *collapse* generates sufficient *heat* to encourage it. So this 'short-lived' process was not expected to be able to produce the 'abundance' of *carbon* that now exists in this Universe unless the *nuclear energy* of *carbon atoms* was precisely suited to facilitate the *reactions* required. Based on these considerations, Sir Dr. Hoyle made a prediction of what the *energy levels* in the *carbon nucleus* had to be, which later experiments proved to be correct. This *energy level* is now called the Hoyle State.

But little did Dr. Hoyle know at the time, in 1957, that the abundance of *neutrinos* that were also expected to be irradiated from the Sun as part of this process were not forthcoming. But surely at some point he became aware of the "missing solar neutrinos". I can't say at what point Sir Dr. Hoyle's 'faith' became 'open hypocrisy' and therefore 'blasphemy' by disallowing and/or denying this fact, or instead, just hypocrisy by omission, because I haven't yet discovered if or when he recanted on the whole issue of *stellar nuclear fusion*, including where appropriate for his work on the *triple alpha process*. I mean if he is expecting a 'conclusion' that explains *evolution* in this case, he should have admitted he had none, because "the facts of this world" do not support it, and because only "words" are available to suggest that his 'conclusions' at least used to be possible—but only before The Fall, certainly not in the present 'unsteady state' of this Universe. And I mean that Sir Dr. Hoyle's 'pre-discovery' really shows something else—that while surely the *carbon atom* itself is specifically and precisely designed to integrate into God's entire plan, it does not—or no longer—serves the purpose Sir Dr. Hoyle expected it should. But the "words" tell me—I mean The Word of God—that His plan used to be to sustain the Universe indefinitely, and at this time Sir Dr. Hoyle's expectations might have applied, though God knew it would be a 'process' that **sin** would corrupt. So in this case I can't say how the specific *nuclear energy* of *carbon atoms* is still essential to *life*, maybe no more than Sir Dr. Hoyle can. But 'everybody knows'—though no one is telling—that it can't be for *carbon* production by *thermonuclear reaction* in 'dying' *stars*—at least not anymore—not since The Fall. But I'm sure this remaining 'precision' in the *carbon atom*—as in every other *element*—has absolutely essential purposes, surely very many of them yet to be discovered. And I have already told you at least some of what God's plan is, though Sir Dr. Hoyle admitted he can't tell you anything about it. And we will look much more specifically into God's plans, including into "those writings that held such force for Velikovsky", in the following sections.

So despite *solar neutrinos*—and *scientists* in general—not being 'forthcoming', I expect the 'faith' of Sir Dr. Hoyle remained at least a hidden motivation for some of his later work that does **prove** the existence of God. Indeed he calculated some correct 'conclusions'—correct 'conclusions' being those that are not 'final

conclusions'. And he had the help of his colleague and former student at Cambridge, Dr. N. Chandra Wickramasinghe, ultimately Professor and Chairman of the Department of Applied Mathematics and Astronomy at Cambridge's University College. Their joint work on the *infrared spectra of interstellar grains* (read, *spectral analysis of space dust*) led to Panspermia Theory. This *theory* supposes that *cosmic dust* in *space* and in *comets* is partly *organic*—formed by 'accidental collisions' at the *molecular level* 'elsewhere'—and that *life* on Earth was 'seeded' from *space* rather than arising solely through Earth-based *abiogenesis* or *biopoiesis*. These terms are synonyms that identify a process by which *living organisms*—aided by contributions from *space* or not—are thought to develop from *nonliving matter*. According to this *theory*, conditions were such that, at one time in Earth's history, *life* was 'created' from *nonliving material*. During this process—with whatever 'alien' assistance—*molecules* slowly 'grouped', then 'regrouped', forming ever more efficient means for *energy transformation* and becoming capable of *autopoiesis*, and that is, capable of *reproduction*.

Such a theory, originating from such men, is ironic really. I mean for years Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe collaborated, with the aid of Cambridge 'supercomputers', on the question of the probability of the 'accidental origin' of the 'first life form'. And this would not be just 'elsewhere', but anywhere. Taking into account all the conditions and requirements to "evolve" *life* on Earth known at the time, they calculated that the odds were 'much, much more than' $10^{40,000}$. That's 1 with 40,000 zeros following—unimaginably impossible! But, they also considered that if there were 100 billion *galaxies* in the Universe, each with 100 billion *stars*, and assuming that each has at least one planet like Earth near every star—an unrealistically generous assumption favoring *evolutionists*—then they supposed it might be statistically possible. But again they were surprised to find that the chances were still essentially zero. They were able to knock off far too few zeros. And they became convinced that the idea of the 'accidental formation' of the 'first cell' anywhere in the entire known Universe was not reasonable. Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe concluded that *life* could not have *evolved*, therefore it must have been somehow 'created' (see Genesis 1), and therefore that, "There must be a God." Of course, I'm sure some people think Gaia offers a remedy to this impossibility too, anything or anyone but the God of The Bible and His Son. And of course our increased understanding of the complexity of *life*, since Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe's research, has only added many more zeros than they were able to knock off. And of course there is no end to the growth of this dilemma for *evolutionists*.

Making these impossible, unimaginable odds a little easier to understand, Sir Dr. Hoyle said in a November 12, 1981 *Nature* article, that,

The chance that higher life forms might have emerged in this way [accidentally] is comparable with the chance that a tornado sweeping through a junk-yard might assemble a Boeing 747 from the materials therein (p.105).

And a couple years later both Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe published in their book, *The Intelligent Universe*, the same but more detailed metaphor, saying,

A junkyard contains all the bits and pieces of a Boeing 747, dismembered and in disarray. A whirlwind happens to blow through the yard. What is the chance that after its passage a fully assembled

747, ready to fly, will be found standing there? So small as to be negligible, even if a tornado were to blow through enough junkyards to fill the whole Universe (1983, p.19).

In their 1981 book, *Evolution from Space: A Theory of Cosmic Creationism*, Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe testify,

Life cannot have had a random beginning... The trouble is that there are about two thousand enzymes, and the chance of obtaining them all in a random trial is only one part in $10^{40,000}$, an outrageously small probability that could not be faced even if the whole universe consisted of organic [or “primordial”] soup [emphasis mine].

And this further reveals, if these are the odds just for the ‘accidental formation’ of all the *enzymes* necessary for *life*, that the odds for *life* are much, much worse than $10^{40,000}$, one reason being that we must multiply this unendingly ‘worse’ number with Dr. Ross’ ever-escalating odds that all the *forces* and *conditions* of the Universe emerged ‘just right’ to support it. Talking about a single ‘needle’ in just two of an endless number of ‘infinitely large haystacks’. And Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe seemed to get it, because they conclude, in *Evolution from Space*, that,

Once we see...that the probability of life originating at random is so utterly miniscule as to make it absurd, it becomes sensible to think that the favorable properties of physics on which life depends are in every respect deliberate... It is therefore almost inevitable that our own measure of intelligence must reflect... higher intelligences... even to the limit of God... such a theory is so obvious that one wonders why it is not widely accepted as being self-evident. The reasons are psychological rather than scientific (p.141, 144 and 130).

So I’m guessing that Sir Dr. Hoyle’s apparent ‘vitriol’ for ‘sham creationists religions’ probably comes from how so many ‘creationists’ have mischaracterized him as agreeing with ‘fundamentalist Christianity’. Turns out that His ‘revelations’ that showed him that the inception of *life* on Earth was impossible, and must have had ‘intelligent help’, only led him to ultimately look to *space* for that necessary and unaccounted for help. This can only mean that he not only ignored the “missing neutrinos”, which indicates there is not enough ‘help’ anywhere in the Universe, but he also seems to have ignored his own statements that indicate that a Universe full of ‘primordial soup’ could only provide “absurd” odds to create *life anywhere*.

So apparently Sir Dr. Hoyle remained **blind** to “the facts of this world”—seeing only the ones he wanted to see. He ignored the “missing neutrinos”, plus the odds he himself calculated. This shows us that you can **prove** the existence of God, but that such **proofs** are only visible if you are **transformed by the renewing of your mind**. And it is a ‘cosmic tragedy’ that such **proofs** come from someone who wouldn’t believe the evidence he himself discovered. I think what Jesus said about the **rich man** in [Luke 16:19-31](#) applies here. Jesus relays that **Abraham** told this **rich man**, who at the time is **in hell...in torments** that he would not—even if he could—send someone to his family to warn them about their likely ultimate fate **in hell**, finally concluding,

If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

And I mean that evidently people are even less ***persuaded*** when God shows them undeniable evidence that He is ***creator***.

And remember I also showed you how the Theory of Organic Evolution progressed under the control of colleges like The University of California, San Diego, a multi-college system modeled after Cambridge, and how professors there and everywhere hide that their foundational experiments actually prove the opposite of what they teach. Sure, this is “psychological rather than scientific” too. And we will see that they would all do at least a little better by consulting Dr. Velikovsky’s work. I mean at least he was a *scientist* who examined an ‘integrated perspective’ of both *evolutionary science* and *history* as a *psychologist*. But according to the Apostle Paul, I am too kind here, since really all schools, including many ‘Christian’ ones, along with ***the whole world***, at least to some degree, are ***blinded*** [2Co 4:3-4](#), and therefore ***deceived*** [2Ti 3:13](#).

And of course part of what I mean is that now no *evolutionists* will do this math anymore, because it would only make their case unimaginably further not worth their efforts, unless they also were ready to acknowledge some kind of a ‘god’ involved. Of course even supposed ‘evolved alien lifeforms’ had to start somewhere in some kind of ‘primordial soup’—which is impossible, right? So we really need a bona fide ‘god’, at least to start things off. Sounds close to what Sir Dr. Hoyle was saying, but not so close as to expect the ***salvation*** of his ***soul***.

But you should no longer ‘wonder’, as Sir Dr. Hoyle did, why such ***blindness*** is pervasive. The Apostle Paul explains it succinctly, saying,

But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world [Satan] hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them [2Co 4:3-4](#).

Paul’s clear explanation of the reasons of this ‘universal’ ***blindness*** is as follows:

This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness [Eph 4:17-19](#).
(See also [1Co 2:14](#).)

But remember it’s also Paul that says that such ***blind***, ‘dark-hearted’ ***fools*** are nonetheless ***without excuse***, saying,

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools... [Rom 1:20-22](#).

But I should add that the **lost** are not the only ones that Paul says are **not able** to see **truth**. Certainly **carnal** Christians are nearly as easily **deceived** precisely because they are **not able to bear** much of **the truth** ([1Co 3:1-3](#)), certainly not enough to make it through this **study**. And yes again, I mean only **disciples indeed** need **continue**.

Still Sir Dr. Hoyle also gets close to **the truth** when he explains his reason for retiring from Cambridge in 1972. He confesses,

I do not see any sense in continuing to skirmish on a battlefield where I can never hope to win. The Cambridge system is effectively designed to prevent one ever establishing a directed policy—key decisions can be upset by ill-informed and politically motivated committees. To be effective in this system one must for ever be watching one's colleagues, almost like a Robespierre [‘double agent’] spy system. If one does so, then of course little time is left for any real science.

Indeed all evidence that **God created** is actively abused without substantiation, or simply ‘swept under the rug’, and evidently not just at Cambridge, but most everywhere, and often even by ‘committee’. But at least Sir Dr. Hoyle admits here that no “real science” is going on at Cambridge University, and that this is often because of “ill informed and politically motivated” behavior. Of course this is where Sir Dr. Hoyle is too kind, because surely Paul would say it’s really more satanically **blinded...minds** with **blindness of...heart** ‘given over to’ **lasciviousness** (read, dishonest, deceptive, malicious, presumptuous, excessive, outrageous, and shameless behavior, and all with unbridled lust). And Paul adds that by such means they **work all uncleanness**—both physical and moral—**with greediness** See again [2Co 4:3-4](#) and [Eph 4:17-19](#).

So it’s no wonder that,

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools [Rom 1:20-22](#).

Such **fools** have been **promised** by God that Satan shall **deceive** them ([1Jo 5:19](#); [Rev 12:9](#)). This is also sufficiently **proved** in the last **study**, though we will further confirm it in this one.

And by-the-way, most even ‘true Christian schools’—who by their level of ‘spiritual **immaturity**’ handle too little of God’s Word God’s way—are of little to no help, and are more often as big a hindrance to this **blindness** as are those who are totally **blind**. Such are the ‘spiritually **immature**’ in Christ. And maybe you knew that Cambridge used to be a ‘Christian university’. Why do you think it isn’t anymore? And do you think that there’s a ‘Christian school’ on God’s **green** Earth not headed in the same direction? This is certainly the problem Peter warns us of in His [second epistle](#), especially in the [second chapter](#), and Paul ‘puts in a nutshell’, warning,

But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived [2 Tim 3:13](#).

Lord have **mercy**.

And still there are a couple of insights from Sir Dr. Hoyle that are of some use to the ‘sighted’ (read, ‘spiritually mature’). On one occasion he wrote to say that *life* could not have originated on Earth but was—and still is—transported here on *comets*. This is the version of Panspermia Theory he worked on with Dr. Wickramasinghe. On another occasion he claimed that a certain component of *life*

was the result of small particles of *bacteria* and *viruses* descending through the Earth's *outer atmosphere* during the winter months. He observed that patterns of winter *epidemics*, and in particular of *influenza*, spread according to where individuals lived and worked rather than by direct contact with other people, suggesting a *viral agent falling through the atmosphere*. And though he openly discredited Dr. Velikovsky, we will eventually see how he unwittingly or secretly agreed with Velikovsky's earlier 'Word-based' conclusions in this case.

So Drs. Urey and Miller, and Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe believed in "building blocks of life", and that they must be plentiful at least somewhere. But Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe, from the odds they calculated, also insisted that there must have been at least a little help from an 'intelligent creator', though, oddly enough, looked for that help coming from *space dust*, *asteroids* and *comets*, reasoning that *life* could never have started here, and that it must have been 'seeded' here from 'somewhere' and by 'someone' out there. And they evidently had to 'turn a blind eye' to even consider this *theory*. Remember that Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe published the findings of their calculations of the odds of *life* forming 'accidentally' anywhere. And remember the 'universe-sized junkyard' with the 'tornado-built jumbo jet' metaphor they use to explain these odds, and also, closer to the point, how a universe full of "organic soup" only offers "outrageously small" (read, impossible) odds of *life* 'starting' anywhere anytime. And with all we've learned about the 'simplest cells' since then, these odds are now much, much worse. Picking just one 'specially-marked' *atom* hidden randomly in the Universe out of the all the *atoms* in the entire Universe would be 'easy as pie' in comparison. And this should remind us again of the calculations of Dr. Ross—of the equally 'outrageously small likelihood' of the present supposedly 'accidental construction' of the Universe itself. I mean it's worth repeating that if you assume 'evolutionary fantasy' to be correct, you would really have to *multiply* the 'likelihood' of the 'accidental formation' of this Universe by the 'likelihood' of the 'accidental formation' of the 'first cell' for something beginning to represent the 'real odds', now wouldn't you.

But really there's an endless number of impossible 'multipliers', an ***infinite*** number of them, because our God is ***faithful*** to show anyone interested in ***searching***, for whatever the reason, that he is ***infinite***. And ***Job*** knew this thousands of years ago. He asked and then answered,

Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection? It is as high as heaven; what canst thou do? deeper than hell; what canst thou know? The measure thereof is longer than the earth, and broader than the sea [Job 11:7-9](#).

And of course we're able to expand Job's metaphor now and say that it is longer than the Milky Way, and broader than the Universe. We might even eventually be able to say that it's longer than our local, *extra-dimensional* 'bubble', and broader than the Multiverse. Because surely God is still infinitely bigger than that. I mean if you don't yet expect that we will eventually be able to expand this metaphor too, you're not getting the 'big picture' of Who God ***is***.

Surely anyone ***searching*** to ***find out God*** with ***integrity*** will discover that,

Great is our Lord, and of great power: his understanding is infinite [Psa 147:7](#).

But just as plainly, ***the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not***, including ***the minds*** of *evolutionists*, so that such 'long' odds are ignored, or if not completely ignored, they are ***blinded*** to believe they have found acceptable "building-blocks of life" in *space dust* and/or from *asteroids* and *comets*. And sure they're expecting that the whole Universe consists of such *dust*, *asteroids* and *comets* that are all rich in *organic compounds*, kind of like 'a whole universe full of organic soup', except no one you're ever likely to hear about will ever do this increasingly annoying math anymore.

And what is the latest subterfuge? I found a November, 2010 *Discover* article that sums it up nicely. The cover offers the provocative question, "Did Life Begin in Space?", and the article, beginning on page 38, is entitled, "Cosmic Blueprint of Life", and subtitled, "Chemical reactions brewing between the stars may have jump-started biology on Earth, and all across the Universe". The summary of this subterfuge is given in the article's first paragraphs. Author, Andrew Grant, explains,

In the latest scientific version of Genesis, life begins, paradoxically, with an act of destruction. After 10 billion years of guzzling the hydrogen in its core, a sun-size star runs out of nuclear fuel and becomes unstable. It goes through a series of convulsions and expels a shell of searing-hot atoms—including hydrogen, carbon, and oxygen. The star fizzles into an inert cinder, and its atoms drift off, seemingly lost in the interstellar gloom.

But next the story takes a surprise turn, from destruction to construction. Some of those rogue atoms float into a nearby gas cloud and stick to fine grains of dust there. Even at a frigid -440 degrees Fahrenheit, the atoms bump and crash into each other, merging to form simple molecules. Over millions of years, one relatively dense region of the cloud begins to collapse in on itself. An infant star takes shape at the center. In the surrounding areas, temperatures rise, molecules evaporate from their icy dust grains, and a new round of more intricate chemical reactions begins.

Then comes the most wondrous [read, 'unimaginably impossible'] part of the whole tale. Those reactions weave the simple atoms of hydrogen, carbon, and oxygen into complex organic molecules. Such carbon-bearing compounds are the raw material for life—and they seem to emerge spontaneously, inexorably, in the enormous stretches between the stars...

What's the evidence for this "tale"? Mr. Grant reports,

Recent observations show that nebulae throughout our galaxy are bursting with prebiotic molecules. Laboratory simulations demonstrate how intricate molecular reactions can occur efficiently even under exceeding cold, dry, near-vacuum conditions. Most persuasively, we know for sure that organic chemicals from space could have landed on Earth in the past—because they are doing so right now. Detailed analysis of a meteorite that landed in Australia reveals that it is chock-full of prebiotic molecules.

And of course such 'evidence' implies—or has **deceived** many to 'believe'—that *life* has been 'distributed' virtually 'everywhere'. But though the article gives credit to the Miller-Urey Experiment, the author is also prepared to admit that because the experiment only produced 'building blocks' of *protein* and not of *DNA* and *RNA*, that this experiment really only "supported the opposite view", that such 'primordial conditions' on Earth could not have produced all the "building blocks' necessary to account for *life*. Mr. Grant also admitted, while at the same time incorrectly referring to 'evidence' of Earth's supposed early *oxidizing* or *reducing atmosphere*, that the Miller-Urey Experiment "erred", confessing that the 'mix of gases' used was wrong, and updated 'mixes' actually create another barrier to the formation of *prebiotic molecules*. And of course there is no mention of *chirality*, or the odds involved.

But why such admissions? Because they don't need the Miller-Urey Experiment anymore. They have a new one that eliminates a couple of the 'natural obstacles', though plainly not all of them. And this one finally vindicates Sir Dr. Fred Hoyle, who the article offers some credit as a pioneer in this work, also recalling his and Dr. Wickramasinghe's Panspermia Theory.

This new acceptance of Sir Dr. Hoyle, et. al., actually started in the late 1960's when *cosmologist* started to find the *radio signatures* of a variety of *organic chemicals*. Up to that time it was most popularly believed that *space* was "too cold and too low density to form [*prebiotic*] molecules". But it was finally realized that if such *organic molecules* were in *space*, such *charged* and therefore *rotating molecules* could be expected to emit characteristic *radio signals* that could be detected by *radio telescopes*. And they started finding "dozens [of kinds] of organic molecules" in *nebula* everywhere. And so the new field of "astrochemistry" was born. And maybe you noticed that this term avoids reminding us of Dr. Harold Urey, who originally coined the term, "cosmochemistry", showing that 'the guard had changed', again.

The next step went from *radio telescopes* to *infrared telescopes* and from looking for 'free-floating' *gas* to looking for 'gas-inundated' *dust*. This was when, in the early 70's, they started looking for evidence that *grains* of *carbon* and *silicon*—*space dust*—had *collided* with and 'interacted' with *gaseous organic chemicals*. Mr. Grant informs us that,

They [the *gaseous organic chemicals*] would freeze there instantly [upon contact with the *grains* of *space dust*] ...creating another kind of environment in which chemical reactions, driven by starlight, could take place. At temperatures just a few degrees above absolute zero, the molecules would still vibrate. These vibrating *molecules*—just like the rotating *dipolar* ones...observed—could absorb and emit *radiation*...[and new, more complex *organic molecules* were expected to] show up not in radio... but in *infrared wavelengths* [with characteristic *spectrographic signatures*].

And this thinking was vindicated by a team of *cosmologists*, the legacy of Dr. Harold Urey, at UC San Diego. Using a variety of *infrared telescopes* aimed at *interstellar dust clouds*, they found the *spectrographic signatures* of *frozen methanol*, *ammonia* and *water*. And I'm guessing these particular UCSD scientists referred to such work as "cosmochemistry", as they probably did some of the associated work in the labs of Urey Hall. This wouldn't be more than a 'minor turf war', though a real one. And remember that Dr. Urey's multi-college UCSD campus is patterned after Sir Dr. Hoyle's multi-college Cambridge campus.

By the mid 1970's, the *cosmologist* that founded and led the charge to find *complex organic chemicals spectrographically*, Dr. Mayo Greenberg of the University of Leiden in the Netherlands, decided he wanted more conclusive laboratory evidence for all this too. So he hired a recent U.C. Berkley graduate, Dr. Louis Allamandola, to attempt to 'recreate' the *starlight-powered reactions* that were evidently taking place on the *microscopic surfaces* of *grains of space dust*. And so the 'next generation' Miller-Urey Experiment was born. (And yeah, there is a pun there for a certain audience).

Dr. Allamandola built a chamber that could be *depressurized* to a near *vacuum* and *cooled* to near *absolute zero*. A *plasma lamp* was used to simulate *starlight*. And the chamber was filled with a mixture of simple *gases* that were known to exist in *interstellar gas clouds*. Trials at Leiden and later at NASA's Ames Research Center revealed,

...not only that some chemical reactions really occur at extremely low temperatures, but also that these reactions produce other reactive chemicals, thereby providing the spark for more molecular hookups. Ultraviolet radiation splices things up as well: It heats the grains and breaks up some of the molecules into reactive fragments, which in turn bond with other fragments to form new kinds of molecules.

More recent versions of what I will call the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment, (though Allamandola did use the assistance of another colleague), yield dozens of *prebiotic molecules*, including the same *amino acids* Drs. Miller and Urey found, and more besides, but also 'building blocks' of *DNA* and *RNA*, that were completely missing in the Miller-Urey Experiment. But of course, though there is no mention of it, the *amino acids* collected were surely a *racemic mixture*, and that is, including both *right* and *left-handed enantiomers*. And surely the same problem presented itself with the *DNA* and *RNA* too.

And of course this is when someone should say, in a firm, resolute voice, 'STEP AWAY FROM THE UNIVERSE-SIZED BAG OF MULTICOLORED, NUMBERED MARBLES !!!' But overlooking the odds, again, from this point *evolutionists* now expect that such *molecules* are surely 'picked up' by passing *comets* or *asteroids* that ultimately, one way or another, and likely somehow 'aiding' in the process, deposit them on nearby *planets*. And the new 'next generation' *telescopes* like ALMA and the TMT should help sort some more of this out, but never all of it, of course, and only if the odds of constructing real *organic molecules*, let alone a *single-celled organism*, are ignored. Remember God designed this Universe so that it could never be completely understood in any 'field of view'. But we will see that there is a lot more *life* out there than most *astrochemologists* or *cosmochemologists* are expecting to confirm. And I'm not just talking about 'space aliens' and/or 'supernatural beings', though most of the **proof** of this is found in 'words' about God's Creation that cannot be presently directly observed, though there is an 'Earth-full' of physical evidence to consider concerning this topic.

And I mean that we will see that there are a variety of *lifeforms* that *live* in *space*. And there are people who believe in one or more of the various kinds, but few **know**, let alone **believe** in, **all** the kinds, mostly because of varying degrees of **ignorance**. So here's where I assure you, for God, that 'aliens'—of quite a variety—are 'real', though some of them only masquerade as something they are not, while others are not clearly recognized for what they really are. But how is the existence of *alien life* even possible? Some of it God **created** to serve Him directly, others for His original purpose to sustain this Universe indefinitely, some just for

judgment, and a minority He **created** to ultimately serve to **deceive** those who **love not the truth**. The ‘angels’ and ‘aliens’ you’ve surely heard of include **Michael** and **Gabriel** and a **host** of others who look after us all, as well as **Satan... and his angels**, who, by masquerading in a variety of ways, including **transforming themselves** into ‘space aliens’, use supposedly ‘plausible identities’, ‘advanced technologies’, and/or **powers** in order to either pretend to shield us from **evil** and **harm**, or just plain **deceive** and **harm** us. And these later kinds of ‘aliens’ are really only ‘plausible’ if you **believe** in *evolution* over billions of years. And I mean if **Satan** will really be the one who **deceiveth the whole world** as God **promises** by **prophecy** in [Revelation 12:9](#), then one of the things this **liar** will do to **deceive** us all is try to get us all to ‘believe’ that there are ‘superior’ and/or ‘ascended alien’ *lifeforms* in the Universe, as, if you’ve been paying attention at all, is clearly what he’s trying to do. The **antichrist** is also **prophesied** to be...

...after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved [2Th 2:9-10](#).

So I’m just saying at this point that all this ‘evolutionary fantasy’ is more than likely to play a big role in what Jesus calls **the end of the world**. I mean don’t you think that people will be **deceived** by the ‘evolved’ and/or ‘transcended’ various types of ‘space aliens’ **manifested** by the **working of Satan**? Surely this is why **Satan... and his angels** masquerade in such ways even now, as well as ‘channel’ through ‘mediums’ and ‘spirit guides’, and increasingly so. But we’ll consider all this some more before we’re done with this **study**, including some ‘workings’ of ‘aliens’ that you’ve probably not thought of before. These are the kind that likely used to be involved in sustaining this Universe, until The Fall—and I mean sustaining ‘habitable conditions’ on Earth—but also have and are now still able to play a role in God’s both past and future cataclysmic judgments—the kind that the likes of Drs. Hoyle and Urey would be looking for if they had as much respect for certain ‘words’ as they say they do for ‘the facts of this world’.

So before we get to all that, let’s give the *origin of life* and Darwinian Evolution—now including Neo-Darwinian Evolution—the chance that they by no means deserve. I mean, beyond the ‘impossible odds’, we’re going to take a deeper look at just how impossible it really is that *life* formed as *evolutionists* say it did, because this does have the benefit of further illuminating some of the **devices** of Satan, as well as some of the ‘awesomeness’ of God.

It was decades before the work of Drs. Urey, Miller, Hoyle and Wickramasinghe, in the 1920’s, that Aleksandr Oparin and John Haldane independently concluded that if the supposed *primitive atmosphere* was *reducing* or *oxidizing*—where little or no *free oxygen* was available—and if such an *atmosphere* was exposed to *lightning*, then a wide range of *organic compounds* could be expected to come into existence. Dr. Oparin thought that such *organic compounds* would also lead to even more *complex compounds*. He imagined that the collection of such *compounds* in water would form *colloid aggregates* called “coacervates”. From that point it is supposed that such “coacervates” might absorb additional *organic compounds* to feed itself, the “fittest” of these eventually transforming themselves into the first *lifeforms*. And of course a certain amount of ambiguity makes anything easier to believe.

Dr. Haldane's ideas about the *origin of life* were very similar and equally ambiguous, though he complemented Dr. Oparin's *theory* proposing that the 'primordial sea' served as a vast *chemical* laboratory powered by *solar energy*. The *oxidized atmosphere*—without *free oxygen*—and the combination of *ultraviolet radiation* from the weaker Sun, with *carbon dioxide* and *ammonia* in the *atmosphere*, all worked together to rain down *organic compounds* into the seas. And this was thought to lead to abundant *organic monomers* ('incomplete' *amino acid chains*, and 'incomplete' *DNA* and *RNA strands*), and next to *polymers* (*protein molecule chains*, as well as, eventually, somehow, *DNA* and *RNA strands* too). And Dr. Haldane thought that groups of *monomers* and *polymers* finally began working together when, somehow, surrounded by a lipid (or fat) 'membrane', and that 'further developments' eventually led to the 'first living cells'.

Yeah, it's the details that ruin this 'fable', because now we know that it's not that 'simple'. However since *astrochemologists* are finding a greater variety of such *molecules* that are the 'building blocks' for *cell membranes* in *space*, *evolutionists* now act as if the puzzle is nearly solved. But it can never be that simple with God's **creation**. The reality is that the more recently discovered 'facts of the world' reveal that the idea of a 'simple cell'—of any kind—is just another 'evolutionary fantasy'. In other words, there's no such thing because even the 'simplest' *cells* are unimaginably complex in both construction and operations, and as we learn more about them, always increasingly so.

To get a more current glimpse of this 'unending complexity', I have preferred the work of Australian *botanist* and *creationist* Alex Williams. His article that I am condensing here was challenging for me at first, requiring patience with repetition before I more fully understood his 'cutting edge' contribution. But of course Mr. Williams can't take all the blame for the difficulty in **understanding** the presentation of his work. It's really much more God's doing, and to Mr. Williams' credit that he can help 'nonprofessionals' grasp the **depth** of this complexity at all. And I'm going to try to help him out with that too.

And by 'cutting edge' I mean that Mr. Williams' presentation is so far advanced beyond classic Darwinism that it will be sufficient to make the presentation of the 'whole story' of *organic evolution* more selective. But we will be exploring, or really exposing this story throughout this section, and to some extent throughout the rest of this **study**. And Mr. Williams offers a good picture of where we are right now, and hopefully I make it at least a little easier to grasp than he did. So I recommend you **soldier** through, with **diligence**, however easy or difficult it is for you, and with as much repetition as necessary. Because that's all that's really irrelevant. I mean God has given most of us a lifetime to get 'on track' and **growing** in His **purpose** for our lives, so that how long it takes is not as much the issue. And I mean that the ongoing **press** for **the mark to know** and **serve** God **better** is all that will ever count in the end. And our aim here is **understanding** God better by **understanding** His Creation better. And every part of this **study** ultimately becomes just a primer to entice you to **study** the topics further, endlessly really. I mean since God is **infinite**, the **proof** that He exists is "endless" and **for ever** forthcoming for those paying better attention, though Mr. Williams alone provides more than enough **proof** that the 'simplest life' must be God's **handywork**.

Alex Williams is a Research Associate at the Western Australian Herbarium specializing in the *taxonomy* (or *classification*) of *grasses*. He and his family attend St Matthews Anglican Church, in Shenton Park, a suburb of Perth on the southwest coast of Australia. He has spent most of his professional life as a *botanist*, but has also done more than a few years of missionary work. His undergraduate degree at the University of New England includes a double major in *botany*, then honours

work concerning Australian *grasses*, followed later by a Master of Science degree, with Honours, from Macquarie University in Sydney. This degree was in *radioecology*—the *environmental migration of radioactive isotopes*. He afterward became the Australian representative to a United Nations' International Atomic Energy Agency coordinated research program between 1976 and 1980 with an international reputation that led to his writing the review paper in his field at an international symposium in 1981. After that the UN invited him to head an international group to produce a book, *The Behaviour of Radium in Waterways and Aquifers*. He also led a larger international group of scientist that produced *The Environmental Behaviour of Radium* in 1990. He was elected to membership in the Australian Institute of Biology in 1989. And though he doesn't have a PhD, these two books alone could be considered more valuable to his field than all the doctoral dissertations of the 'doctors' he led in the completion of them. His more current work includes his discovery of several new *species*, and revisions of *grasses* and *genus* (read **kinds**) of various *grasses* of Australia.

And surely he sees God in all aspects of his professional work, because Mr. Williams received his Certificate in Theology from Moore Theological College in Sydney, and began missionary work in 1989, including a 'trial run' to India in 1990. Alex gained a Diploma in Christian Studies at Tabor College in Adelaide in 1991. He added an Associate Diploma from the Bible College of South Australia in 1992, specializing in missiology. He and his wife served with the Anglican Mission to Seamen at Dampier in Western Australia from 1993-96 and moved to Perth in 1997 to continue his studies including acquiring a Licentiate in Theology from the Australian College of Theology.

Again, his key areas of scientific expertise are in *botany*, *radioecology*, *radiochemistry* and *statistics*, and he is published in all these areas. But a personal interest in *cosmology* and 'popular science writing' also led to his more recent book, *Dismantling the Big Bang: God's Universe Rediscovered*, co-authored with physicist Dr. John Hartnet, his colleague from the University of Western Australia.

But though Mr. Williams was brought up in the Anglican Church he was never taught *six-day creationism*. For much of his life he accepted *evolution*, but first began to doubt it in 1970 when he had to teach Louis Pasteur's work refuting the theory of *spontaneous generation*. He realized that if 'life only comes from life' and not from *non-living matter*, then the first *life* must have been specially **created**. At the time however, he had no way of pursuing the matter.

It was not until he later encountered the *Creation Research Society* and the *Creation Science Foundation* (now *Creation Ministries International*) that his thinking began to change. When he read Dr. Duane Gish's book, *Evolution: The fossils say No!*, and Dr. John C. Whitcomb and Dr. Henry Morris's book, *The Genesis Flood*, he found new validation that *evolutionary theories* did not fit the facts of science, so he abandoned them and adopted *six-day creationism* and the 6,000-year biblical timescale.

By-the-way, it is widely accepted that Drs. Whitcomb and Morris' book, *The Genesis Flood*, launched the *Creation Research Society* in 1963, as well as Dr. Morris' *Institute for Creation Research* in 1972. Ken Ham, a well-known *young-earth creationist* and founder of *Answers in Genesis*, said *The Genesis Flood* was the book that made it possible to "really launch the modern creationist movement around the world."

But again, by-the-way, it was Dr. Whitcomb's doctoral dissertation that *became The Genesis Flood*, except that he was persuaded by Dr. Morris to drop the connections provided by Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, and instead rely only on Dr.

Morris, who admittedly rejected Dr. Velikovsky out of hand, and that is, simply due to his lack of acceptance in the scientific world. And to oversimplify, as did Dr. Morris, he accounts for all geological upheaval by Noah's Flood alone. This is a great error. And I should add that he didn't really correctly understand even that cataclysm, as we will see. So to Dr. Morris' ultimate **glory** and **reward**, he was instrumental in launching the *creationist movement*, but to his eventual **shame**, he is also responsible for 'hamstringing' it from the start, and as it has been ever since.

Of course all of us, like Dr. Morris, who **press** toward a **high calling**, fail in this way to some extent. And the only way any of us can avoid a lot of this **shame** is by the never-ending hard **work** motivated by **diligence**, **vigilance** and that **vehement desire** to **continue** to **grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ** as we **run the race, fight the good fight, strive to enter in, and press toward the mark** to correct, improve and expand our **knowledge of God** continually and forever. And this requires that we all must **grow in grace**, and further that we give **grace** to others as they **grow**, though remaining responsible to **consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works**, necessarily continually exposing **error** and every **lie** of the **devil**. And only **if** we are found with this attitude and commitment, **fervent in spirit, serving the Lord**, will we be **able** to avoid some of this otherwise unavoidable **shame**.

But remember Jesus said.

All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him. Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light [Mat 11:27-30](#).

And through the Prophet Isaiah, speaking of how and to whom He will **teach knowledge**, The Father said,

This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing... [Isa 28:9](#).

God also calls to us all, through Isaiah, raising his voice for all to hear, saying,

Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you... [Isa 55:1-3](#).

So **comforted**, ever on we go.

The specific article of Mr. Williams I will be condensing and clarifying is entitled, [*Lifes Irreducible Structure-part 1—autopoiesis*](#) from [*Creation.com*](#), a ministry of Creation Ministries International. The article is summarized by Mr. Williams as follows:

1. Autopoiesis (self-making) is universal and therefore essential to life, so it [including each and every supposed 'step of life'] is required at the *beginning* for life to exist and is thus not the *end* product of some long naturalistic process [read, *organic evolution*].
2. Each level of the autopoietic hierarchy [the supposed steps of life] is separated from the one below it by a "Polanyi impossibility", so it cannot be reduced to any sequence of naturalistic causes. [More specifically, each supposed 'step of life' is individual and impossible to 'naturally derive', and none of them 'naturally' lead to the next 'higher step'.]
3. There is an unbridgeable abyss between the autopoietic hierarchy [starting with the supposed 'first step' toward a complete cell] and the 'dirty mass-action chemistry' of the natural environment. [In other words, the first supposed 'step', from 'unorganized non-living molecules' to any 'organized organic structure', is the most impossible step of all.]

Mr. Williams starts by revealing the inadequacy of the traditional case for "intelligent design", summarizing,

The commonly cited case for intelligent design (ID) goes as follows: 'some biological systems are so complex that they can only function when all of their components are present, so that the system could not have evolved from a simpler assemblage that did not contain the full machinery. This definition is what biochemist and Senior Fellow at Discovery Institute's Center for Science and Culture [Dr.] Michael Behe (pronounced 'beehee') called *irreducible complexity* in his popular book *Darwin's Black Box* where he pointed to examples such as the blood-clotting cascade and the proton-driven molecular motor in the bacterial flagellum. However, because [Dr.] Behe appealed to *complexity*, many equally complex rebuttals have been put forward, and because he claimed that only *some* of the aspects of life were irreducibly complex, he thereby implied that the majority of living structure was open to naturalistic explanation. As a result of these two factors, the concept of intelligent design remains controversial and unproven in popular understanding.

So, Mr. Williams has to be more comprehensive to **prove** the existence of God's *universal intelligent design*. He prepares us for this by saying,

In this article, I shall argue that *all* aspects of life point to intelligent design, based on what European polymath [read, 'genius'] Professor [Dr.] Michael Polanyi, FRS (Fellow of the Royal Society of London), in his 1968 article in *Science* called "Life's Irreducible Structure". Polanyi argued that living organisms have a machine-like structure that cannot be explained by (or reduced to) the physics and chemistry

of the molecules of which they consist. This concept is simpler, and broader [or more comprehensive] in its application, than [Dr.] Behe's concept of irreducible complexity, and it applies to all of life, not just to some of it.

And what is *life* to a Darwinist? Mr. Williams explains,

Biologists universally admire the wonder of the beautiful 'designs' evident in living organisms, and they often recoil in revulsion at the horrible 'designs' exhibited by parasites and predators in ensuring the survival of themselves and their species. But to a Darwinist, these are only 'apparent designs'—the *end* result of millions of years of tinkering by mutation and fine tuning by natural selection. They do not point to a cosmic Designer, only to a long and 'blind' process of survival of the fittest. For a Darwinist, the same must also apply to the origin of life—it must be an *emergent* property of matter. An emergent property of a system is some special arrangement that is not usually observed, but may arise through natural causes under the right environmental conditions. For example, the vortex of a tornado is an emergent property of atmospheric movements and temperature gradients. Accordingly, evolutionists seek endlessly for those special environmental conditions that may have launched the first round of carbon-based macromolecules [organic monomers and polymers] on their long journey towards life. Should they ever find those unique environmental conditions, they would then be able to explain life in terms of physics and chemistry. That is, life could then be *reduced to* the known laws of physics, chemistry and environmental conditions.

But this is just a bunch of Polanyi, if I can 'put words' in Mr. Williams' mouth, because he describes how Dr. Polanyi shows that such hoped-for and supposed forthcoming *emergence properties* can be of no avail, saying,

...[Dr.] Polanyi argued that the form and function of the various parts of living organisms *cannot* be reduced to (or explained in terms of) the laws of physics and chemistry, and so life exhibits [not just *irreducible complexity*, but also] *irreducible structure*. He did not speculate on the origin of life, arguing only that scientists should be willing to recognize the impossible when they see it: [Dr. Polanyi observed,]

"The recognition of certain basic impossibilities has laid the foundations of some major principles of physics and chemistry; similarly, recognition of the impossibility of understanding living things in terms of physics and chemistry, far from setting limits to our understanding of life, will guide it in the right direction."
[*Life's irreducible structure, Science, 1968, Vol.160, p.1312*]

So despite the fact that evolutionists are not in the habit of admitting the impossible, even when it is proven to be so, Mr. Williams intends to go beyond an explanation of the *irreducible complexity of life*, to show us—as clearly as he can in

one “paper”—the *irreducible structure* of life. He begins by making his readers mindful that,

To understand Polanyi’s concept of irreducible structure, we must first look at *reducible* structure. [For example]...snowflakes...illustrate reducible structure. Meteorologists have recognized about eighty different basic snowflake shapes, and subtle variations on these themes add to the mix to produce a virtually infinite variety of actual shapes. Yet they all arise from just one kind of molecule—water. How is this possible?

When water freezes, its crystals take the form of a hexagonal [6-sided] prism. Crystals then grow by joining prism to prism. The elaborate branching patterns of snowflakes arise from the statistical fact that a molecule of water vapour in the air is most likely to join up to its nearest surface. Any protruding bump will thus tend to grow more quickly than the surrounding crystal area because it will be the nearest surface to the most [water] vapour molecules. There are six ‘bumps’ (corners) on a hexagonal prism, so growth will occur most rapidly from these, producing the observed six-armed pattern.

Snowflakes have a *reducible* structure because you can produce them with a little bit of vapour or with a lot. They can be large or small. Any one water molecule is as good as any other water molecule in forming them. Nothing goes wrong if you add or subtract one or more water molecules from them. You can build them up one step at a time, using any and every available water molecule. The patterns can thus all be explained by (reduced to) the physics and chemistry of water and the atmospheric conditions.

To now understand *irreducible* structure, consider a silver coin. Silver is found naturally in copper, lead, zinc, nickel and gold ores—and rarely, in an almost pure form called ‘native silver’... The crystal structure of solid silver consists of closely packed cubes. The main body of the native silver nugget has the familiar lustre of the pure metal, and it [takes] on a shape that reflects the available space [crack and crevices] when it was precipitated from groundwater solution...

Unlike the case of the beautifully structured snowflakes, there is no natural process...that could turn the closely packed cubes of solid silver into round, flat discs with images of men, animals and writing on them. Adding more or less silver cannot produce the roundness, flatness and image-bearing properties of the coins, and looking for special environmental conditions would be futile because we recognize that the patterns are man-made. The coin structure is therefore *irreducible* to the physics and chemistry of silver, and was clearly imposed upon the silver by some intelligent external agent (in this case, humans).

And what does this have to do with Dr. Polanyi. Mr. Williams interprets,

Whatever the explanation, ...the irreducibility of the coin structure to the properties of its component silver constitutes what I shall call a '*Polanyi impossibility*'. That is, Polanyi identified this kind of irreducibility as a naturalistic impossibility, and argued that it should be recognized as such by the scientific community, so I am simply attaching his name to the principle... Polanyi pointed to the machine-like structures that exist in living organisms... [including] lever[s], cogwheel[s] and...coiled spring[s]. Just as the structure and function of these common machine components cannot be explained in terms of the metal they are made of, so the structure and function of the parallel components in life cannot be reduced to the properties of the carbon, hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, phosphorus, sulphur and trace elements that they are made of. There are endless examples of such irreducible structures in living systems, but they all work under a unifying principle called 'autopoiesis'.

So here we're going to 'cut to the chase', and 'catch and kill' any chance of *reductionism*—that *life* can be *reduced* to *laws of physics and chemistry*. Dr. Williams identifies this 'lifeless prey' by explaining,

Autopoiesis literally means 'self-making'...and it refers to the unique ability of a living organism to continually repair and maintain itself—ultimately to the point of reproducing itself—using energy and raw materials from its environment. In contrast, an *allopoietic* system... such as a car factory, uses energy and raw materials to produce an organized structure (a car) which is something *other* than itself ([not] a factory).

Autopoiesis is a unique and amazing property of life—there is nothing else like it in the known universe. It is made up of a hierarchy of irreducibly structured levels. These include [from bottom to top]: [Step 1] components with perfectly pure composition, [Step 2] components with highly specific structure, [Step 3] components that are functionally integrated, [Step 4] comprehensively regulated information-driven processes, and [Step 5] inversely-causal meta-informational strategies for individual and species survival (these terms will be explained shortly). Each level is built upon, but cannot be explained in terms of, the level below it. And between [even] the base level ([Step 1] perfectly pure composition) and the natural environment, there is an unbridgeable abyss. The enormously complex details are still beyond our current knowledge and understanding, but I will illustrate the main points using an analogy with a vacuum cleaner.

Yeah, that's right, time to 'Suck it up'. But really by now I **hope** you're more getting 'sucked in'. And I mean you need to go through this material as many times as you need to till you experience the latter metaphor. And I also mean that here Mr. Williams is not so much going to take us 'down the rabbit hole', but 'up the airstream'. He remembers,

My mother was excited when my father bought our first electric vacuum cleaner in 1953. It consisted of a motor and housing, exhaust fan, dust bag, and a flexible hose with various end pieces. Our current machine uses a cyclone filter and follows me around on two wheels rather than on sliders as did my mother's original one. My next version might be the small robotic machine that runs around the room all by itself until its battery runs out. If I could afford it, perhaps I might buy the more expensive version that automatically senses battery run-down and returns to its induction housing for battery recharge.

Notice the hierarchy of control systems here. The original machine required an operator and some physical effort to pull [or push] the machine in the required direction. The transition to two wheels allows the machine to trail behind the operator with little effort, and the cyclone filter eliminates the messy dust bag. The next transition to on-board robotic control requires no effort at all by the operator, except to initiate the action to begin with and to take the machine back to the power source for recharge when it has run down. And the next transition to automatic sensing of power run-down and return-to-base control mechanism requires no effort at all by the operator once the initial program is set up to tell the machine when to do its work.

If we now continue this analogy to reach the living condition of autopoiesis, the next step [for the vacuum cleaner] would be to install an on-board power generation system that could use various organic, chemical or light sources from the environment as raw material. Next, install a sensory and information processing system that could determine the state of both the external and internal environments (the dirtiness of the floor and the condition of the vacuum cleaner) and make decisions about where to expend effort and how to avoid hazards, but within the operating range of the available resources. Then, finally, ...install a meta-information (information about information) facility with the ability to automatically maintain and repair the life system, including the almost miraculous ability to reproduce [or in this case, completely reconstruct] itself [including manufacturing the new materials it needs to do so]—autopoiesis.

Notice that each level of structure within the autopoietic hierarchy depends upon the level below it, but it cannot be explained in terms of that lower level. For example, the transition from out-sourced to on-board power generation depends upon there being an electric motor to run. An electric vacuum cleaner could sit in the cupboard forever without being able to rid itself of its dependence upon an outside source of power—it must be imposed from the level above, for it cannot come from the level below. Likewise, autopoiesis is useless if there is no vacuum cleaner to repair, maintain and reproduce. A vacuum cleaner without autopoietic capability could sit in the cupboard forever without ever attaining to the autopoietic stage—it must be imposed from the level above, as it cannot come from the level below.

The autopoietic hierarchy is therefore structured in such a way that any kind of naturalistic transition from one level to a higher level would constitute a Polanyi impossibility... [In other words, higher levels depend on lower levels, but cannot explain or participate in their origin. And the origin of all 5 levels can only come from a level beyond autopoiesis. This would be the 'God-level'.]

And this brings a different meaning to when Jesus says ***ye are gods*** to ***the Jews*** in [John 10:34-38](#). There He was referring to what ***Satan*** said to Eve about ***the knowledge of good and evil*** [Gen 3:5](#). But evidently it is also 'godlike' to *mint* silver coins and *build* assembly-line cars, because their existence, including all levels of their existence, can only be explained by a 'higher intelligence'.

Still, and evidently, the 'first step', when it comes to living things, is 'a doozey'. Mr. Williams introduces this "unbridgeable abyss", saying,

Most origin-of-life researchers agree (at least in the more revealing parts of their writings) that there is no naturalistic experimental evidence directly demonstrating a pathway from non-life to life. They continue their research, however, believing that it is just a matter of time before we discover that pathway. But by using the vacuum cleaner analogy, we can give a solid demonstration that the problem is a Polanyi impossibility right at the foundation—life is separated from non-life by an unbridgeable abyss.

Getting 'down and dirty', Mr. Williams digs at the very foundation of Evolutionary Theory about the Origin of Life, revealing,

The 'simple' structure of the early vacuum cleaner is not simple at all. It is made of high-purity materials (aluminum, plastic, fabric, copper wire, steel plates, etc.) that are specifically structured for the job in hand and functionally integrated to achieve the designed task of sucking up dirt from the floor. Surprisingly, the dirt that it sucks up contains largely the same materials that the vacuum cleaner itself is made of—aluminum, iron and copper in the mineral grains of dirt, fabric fibres in the dust, and organic compounds in the varied debris of everyday home life. However, it is the difference in form and function of these otherwise similar materials that distinguishes the vacuum cleaner from the dirt on the floor. In the same way, it is the amazing form and function of life in a cell that separates it from the non-life in its environment.

Naturalistic chemistry is invariably 'dirty chemistry' while life uses only 'perfectly-pure chemistry'. I have chosen the word 'dirty chemistry' not in order to denigrate origin-of-life research, but because it is the term used by Nobel Prize winner Professor Christian de Duve, a leading atheist researcher in this field. Raw materials in the environment, such as air, water and soil, are invariably mixtures of many different chemicals. In 'dirty chemistry' experiments, contaminants are always present and cause annoying side reactions that spoil the hoped-for outcomes. As a result, researchers often tend

to fudge the outcome by using artificially purified reagents [like in the Miller-Urey Experiment, for example, and probably also in the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment too]. But even when given pure reagents to start with, naturalistic experiments typically produce what a recent evolutionist reviewer variously called 'muck', 'goo' and 'gunk'—which is actually toxic sludge [emphasis mine]. Even our best industrial chemical processes can only produce reagent purities in the order of 99.99%. [But] To produce 100% purity in the laboratory requires very highly specialized equipment that can sort out single molecules from one another.

Another crucial difference between environmental chemistry and life is that chemical reactions in a test tube follow the Law of Mass Action. Large numbers of molecules are involved, and the rate of a reaction, together with its final outcome, can be predicted by assuming that each molecule behaves independently and each of the reactants has the same probability of interacting. In contrast, cells metabolize their reactants with single-molecule precision, and they control the rate and outcome of reactions, using enzymes and nano-scale-structured pathways, so that the result of a biochemical reaction can be totally different to that predicted by the ['down and dirty'] Law of Mass Action.

In other word, the 'down and dirty' *reactions* in *environmental chemistry* are a 'riot' compared to the 'entirely orderly' *molecule by molecule controlled reactions* of *life*. And there is really no comparison, just as there is no comparison between a vacuum cleaner and what it vacuums up.

But really all the ***so-called*** 'steps' in the 'hierarchy of life' could be considered increasingly impossible, because each must be added to the next, though all of them are needed at the beginning, and all of them only adding to—or multiplying together—the impossibly long odds. Mr. Williams illustrates this, saying,

The vacuum cleaner analogy breaks down before we get anywhere near life because the chemical composition of its components is nowhere near pure enough for life. The materials suitable for use in a vacuum cleaner can tolerate several percent of impurities and still produce adequate performance, but nothing less than 100% purity will work in the molecular machinery of the cell...

The property of life that allows it to create such perfectly pure chemical components is its ability to manipulate single molecules one at a time. The assembly of proteins in ribosomes illustrates this single-molecule precision. The recipe for the protein structure is coded onto the DNA molecule. This is transcribed onto a messenger-RNA molecule which then takes it to a ribosome where a procession of transfer-RNA molecules each bring a single molecule of the next required amino acid for the ribosome to add on to the growing chain. The protein is built up one molecule at a time, and so the composition can be monitored and corrected if even a single error is made.

And *organic molecules* aren't just 100% pure. According to Mr. Williams they are 'amazing' beyond comprehension in complexity of structure, design and function. He also brings up the frequent necessity of "left" or "right" *enantiomers* of *chiral molecules*, showing particularly how impossible it is to make just one *protein molecule*. He thinks,

Life contains such a vast new world of molecular amazement that no one has yet plumbed the depths of it. We cannot hope to cover even a fraction of its wonders in a short article, so I will choose just one example. Proteins consist of long chains of amino acids linked together. There are 20 amino acids coded for in DNA, and proteins commonly contain hundreds or even thousands of amino acids. Cyclin B is an averaged-size protein, with 433 amino acids. It belongs to the 'hedgehog' group of signaling pathways which are essential for development in all metazoans [*multi-cellular organisms*]. Now there are 20^{433} (20 multiplied by itself 433 times) = 10^{563} (10 multiplied by itself 563 times or 1 with 563 zeros following) possible proteins that could be made from an arbitrary arrangement of 20 different kinds of amino acids in a chain of 433 units. The human body—the most complex known organism—contains somewhere between... 100,000 and... 1,000,000 different proteins. So the probability...that [just one] average-sized biologically useful protein could arise by a chance combination of 20 different amino acids is about... $1/10^{567}$. And this assumes that only L-amino acids [left-handed *enantiomers*] are being used—i.e., perfect enantiomer purity. [This makes unimaginable odds unimaginably more unimaginable.]

For comparison, the chance of winning the lottery is about...[$1/1$ million] per trial, and the chance of finding a needle in a haystack is about...[$1/100$ billion] per trial. Even the whole universe only contains about 10^{80} atoms, so there are not even enough atoms to ensure the chance assembly of even a single average-sized biologically useful molecule. Out of all possible proteins, those we see in life are very highly specialized—they can do things that are naturally not possible. For example, some enzymes can do in one second what natural processes would take a billion years to do. Just like the needle in the haystack, out of all the infinite possible arrangements of iron alloy (steel) particles, only those with a long narrow shape, pointed at one end and with an eye-loop at the other end, will function as a needle. This structure does not arise from the properties of steel, but is imposed from outside.

But *water* inside a *cell* is just *water*, right? Wrong, it functions in a way inside the *cell* that it does nowhere else. Explaining yet another "paradox" in the Theory of Evolution, Mr. Williams maintains,

There is an amazing paradox at the heart of biology. Water is essential to life, but also *toxic* [emphasis his]—it splits up polymers by a process called hydrolysis, and that is why we use it to wash with. Hydrolysis is a constant hazard to origin-of-life experiments, but it is

never a problem in cells, even though cells are mostly water (typically 60–90%). In fact, special enzymes called hydrolases are required in order to get hydrolysis to occur at all in a cell. Why the difference? Water in a test tube is free and active, but water in cells is highly structured, via a process called ‘hydrogen bonding’, and this water-structure is comprehensively integrated with both the structure and function of all the cell’s macromolecules...

Mr. Williams quotes Emeritus Professor of Applied Science, London South Bank University, Dr. Martin Chaplin, FRSC (Fellow of the Royal Society of Chemistry), from his article, *Do we underestimate the importance of water in cell biology?*, where he asserts,

The hydrogen-bonding properties of water are crucial to [its] versatility, as they allow water to execute an intricate three-dimensional "ballet", exchanging partners while retaining complex order and enduring effects. Water can generate small active clusters and macroscopic assemblies, which can both transmit and receive information on different scales (*Nature Reviews Molecular Cell Biology*, 2006, Vol.7, p.861–866).

And Mr. Williams adds,

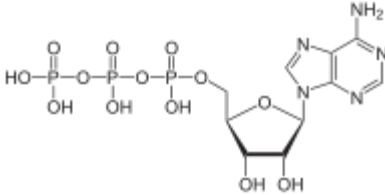
Water should actually be first on the list of molecules that need to be specially configured for life to function. Both the vast variety of specially structured macromolecules *and* their complementary hydrogen-bonded water structures are required *at the same time* [emphasis again his]. No origin-of-life experiment has ever addressed this problem.

Maybe we could call this the ‘early toxic water paradox’? In fact I think Mr. Williams is implying that it’s appropriate to divide Step 2, “components with highly specific structure”, into at least 2 important steps. Using his terms, let’s call Step 2 “water-structure” that is “highly structured” and “comprehensively integrated”, which would have to be available before, Step 3, *cell* “components with highly specific structure” could survive at all.

But these are only the ‘baby steps’. Mr. Williams next takes us to Step 3, which is now Step 4, “components that are functionally integrated”, telling us that,

It is not enough to have specifically structured, ultra-pure molecules, they must also be integrated together into useful machinery... ATP synthase [for example] is a proton-powered molecular motor. Protons... from inside the cell...move through the stator mechanism [*stationary structure*] embedded in the cell membrane and turn the rotor... which adds inorganic phosphate to ADP to convert it to the high-energy state ATP...

...[So this] spectacular...tiny proton-powered motor...produces the universal energy molecule ATP. [But it really does double duty.] When the motor spins one way, it takes energy from digested food and converts it into the high-energy ATP, and when the motor spins the other way, it breaks down the ATP in such a way that its energy is available for use by other metabolic processes.



ATP or *adenosine triphosphate* (diagram, p.175) is made and used in *cells* as a *coenzyme*. It has been called the "molecular unit of currency" for *intracellular energy transfer*. *ATP* 'transports' *chemical energy* within *cells* for *metabolism*, and that is, to 'fuel' it. It is one of the end products of *photophosphorylation* (only 'credentialed scientist' should attempt to repeat this term '3 times fast') and *cellular respiration*, and is used by *enzymes* and *structural proteins* in many *cellular processes*, including *biosynthetic reactions*, *motility* or *mobile energy consumption*, and *cell division*.

Pondering the "complexity" of the "enormous array" of 'organic machines' that produce such 'diverse' but 'fully integrated units of functionality', Mr. Williams also observes,

...A can of stewed fruit is full of chemically pure and biologically useful molecules but it will never produce a living organism because the molecules have been disorganized in the cooking process. Cells contain an enormous array of useful molecular machinery. The average machine in a yeast cell contains 5 component proteins, and the most complex—the spliceosome, that orchestrates the reading of separated sections of genes—consists of about 300 proteins and several nucleic acids.

By-the-way, notice that *heat* like *sunlight* and *lightning* may create some *organic compounds*, but that same *heat* is simultaneously at work to make sure that such *compounds* stay, as Mr. Williams might put it, 'disorganized'. I mean you should notice here that *lightning*, *starlight*, and other forms of *heat* are at least as effective in 'disorganizing' *organic molecules* as making them. In contrast, *cells* operate with 'complex', 'informationally organized', 'diverse' but 'fully integrated' machines'. And they are 'alive', so that their "amazing array" of "spectacular molecular machinery" can directly or indirectly correspond and interact with each other. And this is a 'big step', but is it enough? Considering the prospects of such a 'flying leap' over such a formidable 'abyss', Mr. Williams answers,

It is still not enough to have spectacular molecular machinery—the various machines must be linked up into metabolic pathways and cycles that work towards an overall purpose. What purpose? This question is potentially far deeper than science can take us, but science certainly can ascertain that the immediate practical purpose of the amazing array of life structures is the survival of the individual and perpetuation of its species. Although we are still unravelling the way cells work, a good idea of the multiplicity of metabolic pathways and cycles can be found in the BioCyc collection. The majority of organisms so far examined, from microbes to humans, have between

1,000 and 10,000 different metabolic pathways. Nothing ever happens on its own in a cell—something else always causes it, links with it or benefits or is affected by it. And all of these links are multi-step processes.

All of these links are also ‘choreographed’ by information—a phenomenon that *never* occurs in the natural environment. At the bottom [or foundation] of the information hierarchy is the storage molecule—DNA. The double-helix of DNA is ‘just right’ for genetic information storage, and this ‘just right’ structure is beautifully matched by the elegance and efficiency of the code in which the cell’s information is written there. But it is not enough even to have an elegant ‘just right’ information storage system—it must also contain information. And not just biologically relevant information, but brilliantly inventive strategies and tactics to guide living things through the extraordinary challenges they face in their seemingly miraculous achievements of metabolism and reproduction. Yet even ingenious strategies and tactics are not enough. Choreography requires an intricate and harmonious regulation of every aspect of life to make sure that the right things happen at the right time, and in the right sequence, otherwise chaos and death soon follow.

Recent discoveries show that biochemical molecules are constantly moving, and much of their amazing achievements are the result of choreographing all this constant and complex movement to accomplish things that static molecules [by ‘down and dirty’ “Mass Action”] could never achieve. Yet there is no spacious ‘dance floor’ on which to choreograph the intense and lightning-fast (up to a million events per second for a single reaction) activity of metabolism. A cell is more like a crowded dressing room than a dance floor, and in a show with a cast of millions!

First, I don’t want to forget to point out that in this passage this is the second time Mr. Williams implies he is unaware that we will never finish “unraveling the way cells work”. Such perspectives are at least somewhat ‘spiritually immature’, because, even if only compartmental, they show lack of **understanding** and a propensity to **error**, in that they show at least some **blindness** of God’s ‘universally expressed infiniteness’ through His Creation.

But at least he also implies further and ongoing complications of the original ‘5 steps to life’ and how they add—or multiply—additional ‘unbridgeable abysses’ on this metaphorical ‘dance floor’. I mean that Step 4, “comprehensively regulated, information-driven processes”, is expanded by Mr. Williams here to at least 4 steps. So with the addition of the “water-structure” step added to Step 2, and again using Mr. Williams terms, we’ll identify Step 5 as the ‘machinery arrays’ that are ‘interlinked’ by “pathways and cycles”, requiring Step 6, ‘availability’ of “‘just right’ information storage system[s]”, which require that these systems contain, Step 7, “biologically relevant information” including “brilliantly inventive strategies and tactics to guide their seemingly miraculous achievements of metabolism and reproduction”. And this should be enough to sustain *life*, right? No, still not even close. I mean we’re still at least one more “unbridgeable abyss” away. And the next ‘step’, renumbered as Step 8 at this point, is mindboggling really. Mr. Williams attempts to ‘boil it down’ to the *Law of Cause and Effect*, saying,

The Law of Cause and Effect is one of the most fundamental in all of science. Every scientific experiment is based upon the assumption that the end result of the experiment will be caused by something that happens during the experiment. If the experimenter is clever enough, then he/she might be able to identify that cause and describe how it produced that particular result or effect.

Causality always happens in a very specific order—the cause always comes *before* the effect... [and the *effect* is always identified as consequence of the *cause*].

In living systems however, we see the universal occurrence of *inverse* causality. That is, an event is the cause of [another] event, but it exists or occurs after the event it causes [not before]. It is easier to understand the biological situation if we refer to examples from human affairs. In economics, for example, it occurs when behaviour now, such as an investment decision, is influenced by some future event, such as an anticipated profit or loss. In psychology, a condition that exists now, such as anxiety or paranoia, may be caused by some anticipated future event, such as harm to one's person. In the field of occupational health and safety, workplace and environmental hazards can exert direct toxic effects upon workers (normal causality), but the anticipation or fear of potential future harm can also have an independently toxic effect (inverse causality).

Darwinian philosopher of science Michael Ruse recently noted that inverse causality is a universal feature of life, and his example was that stegosaur plates begin forming in the embryo but only have a function in the adult—supposedly for temperature control. However most biologists avoid admitting such things because it suggests that life might have purpose (a future goal), and this is strictly forbidden to materialists [read, *atheists*].

The most important example of inverse causality in living organisms is, of course, autopoiesis [the ability to reproduce]. We still do not fully understand it, [and here again, Mr. Williams seems to be assuming that sometime in the future we eventually “fully” will,] but we do understand the most important aspects [or so he thinks we do—kind of like Newton might have thought he ‘understood gravity’—but if you’ll pardon these personally unavoidable interruptions, let’s get back to Mr. Williams’ quite helpful *work*]. Fundamentally, it is meta-information—it is information about information. It is the information that you *need* to have in order to keep the information you *want* to have to stay alive, and to ensure the survival of your descendants and the perpetuation of your species.

This last statement is the crux of this whole paper, so to illustrate its validity lets go back to the vacuum cleaner analogy. Let’s imagine that one lineage of vacuum cleaners managed to reach the robotic, energy-independent stage, but lacked autopoiesis, while a second makes it all the way to autopoiesis. What is the difference between these vacuum cleaners? Both will function very well for a time. But as the Second Law of Thermodynamics begins to take its toll,

components will begin to wear out, vibrations will loosen connections, dust will gather and short circuit the electronics, blockages in the suction passage will reduce cleaning efficiency, wheel axles will go rusty and make movement difficult, and so on. The former will eventually die and leave no descendants. The latter will repair itself, keep its components running smoothly and reproduce itself to ensure the perpetuation of its species.

But what happens if the environment changes and endangers the often-delicate metabolic cycles that real organisms depend upon? Differential reproduction is the solution. Evolutionists from Darwin to Dawkins have taken this amazing ability for granted, but it cannot be overlooked. There are elaborate systems in place—for example, the diploid to haploid transition in meiosis [*cell division*], [or] the often extraordinary embellishments and rituals of sexual encounters provide offspring with variations from their parents that might prove of survival value. [And remember that Jacob, when tending sheep for Laban, changed livestock color by placing poplar branches where animals came to **conceive**

10 Steps to Life (abridged & imaginary)	
Step	Name of Step
1	Components with perfectly pure composition
2	Highly specific, comprehensively integrated water-structure
3	Cell components with highly specific structure
4	Comprehensive, machine-driven, information-regulated processes
5	Systematic integration of machinery arrays
6	Operational information storage systems
7	Brilliant strategic and tactical operational information
8	Meta-information storage systems
9	Predictive repair and maintenance meta-information
10	Differential reproduction capability

([Gen 30:25-43](#)).] To complement these potentially dangerous deviations from the tried-and-true there are also firm conservation measures in place to protect the essential processes of life (e.g. the ability to read the DNA code and to translate it into metabolic action). None of this should ever be taken for granted.

In summary, autopoiesis is the information—and associated abilities—that you *need* to have ([including] repair, maintenance and differential reproduction) in order to keep the information that you *want* to have (e.g., vacuum cleaner functionality) alive and in good condition to ensure both your survival and that of your descendants. In a parallel way, my humanity is what I personally value, so my autopoietic capability is the repair, maintenance and differential reproductive capacity that I have to maintain my humanity and to share it with my descendants. The egg and sperm that produced me knew nothing of this, but the information was encoded there and only reached fruition six decades later as I sit here writing this—the inverse causality of autopoiesis.

So apparently we need also to expand the original Step 5, “inversely-causal meta-informational strategies for individual and species survival”. And again using Mr. William’s terms, let’s call the next step, that would be Step 8, ‘meta-information storage capability’, which would facilitate Step 9, ‘anticipatory and adaptable repair and maintenance meta-information’, ultimately including the final Step 10, “differential reproduction”, or the ability to reproduce a range of physical characteristics, but selecting those that are best suited to the environment and conditions at hand. See my complete chart of the **10 Steps to Life**—though actually it’s abridged and imaginary—on [p.178](#).

And I think Mr. Williams would finally agree that given unlimited time, with continued “deeper”, more detailed analysis, we could identify a seemingly “endless” number of steps. But I think he may be giving too much credit to the ‘biological processes’ of *autopoiesis*, even as he seems to give too much credit to the *scientific method* for the ability to come to ‘final’, let alone just ‘deeper’ conclusions, though evidently he means only eventually. And what I mean is that he seems to be missing the **spirit of man** here. This is a ‘part’ of our ‘make-up’, arguably the most important part, and one that we will keep **for ever**, because it will be ‘transferred’ to our new **incorruptible, immortal** bodies at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church. And I mean that surely this ‘part of our being’ stores ‘information’ in ways that will never be observed in this World, only experienced, as Mr. Williams admits he has done too, though, understandably enough, apparently misidentifying the ‘source’ of this information. And I say apparently, because he is likely forgetting—likely compartmentalizing—that he **believeth** that he will not lose the ability to enjoy such **revelations** after he **dieth** and his **spirit** is separated from his present body, during the time he awaits the use of his **transformed, incorruptible, immortal** body at The Rapture. And admittedly, most of my **faith** on this issue comes from The Word of God, but not all. And if this has occurred to you before, and you have asked God about it, then you likely already **know** that there are ‘facts of this world’ available about the ‘afterlife’. I touch on a few of them in the last **study**, including a source for further consideration. And yes, that source is a doctor, a board-certified, card-carrying *cardiologist* actually. But I also mean that if you **ask, seek** and **knock**, God will answer, whatever the issue or question, and that is, if you’re really paying attention. Because surely it’s not just to me that God reveals such “deeper” **revelations**.

But before any of you ‘raise your hands’ and start ‘shouting amens’, I’m going to give Mr. Williams a pass on his fixation on Darwinism. I mean even though he denounces it, he apparently continues to think like one, at least somewhat. And the only problem with this really is that he is likely also forgetting—or just not connecting—**why** he should. I mean I’m guessing that since he’s become a *creationist* it’s probably never occurred to him that it’s OK to think like a *Darwinist*, at least in some respects. So are you wondering in what respects thinking like a Darwinist could be OK for a *young earth creationist*? What Mr. Williams, and probably most of you are forgetting—again—is that God indirectly promised Adam and Eve ‘eternal’ or ‘permanent’ **life** before The Fall. So you may need to read through Mr. William’s article again, to see how he ‘sees’ in the *irreducible structure* of *cells* some really ‘long-term resilience’, the kind that involves maintenance, repair, and reproduction, along with the ability to ‘predict’ favorable characteristics, that would be required for a really ‘long haul’, as opposed to now when such “miraculous achievements” are only needed in the short term to temporarily withstand **the curse**.

But Mr. Williams, to whom I am now forever in his debt for his **work**, correctly concludes that this is enough evidence alone to **prove** the existence of an

'Intelligent Designer' of *life*. And because of his **work** I am now better **able** to conclude that God apparently originally designed *life* to maintain, repair, and reproduce itself indefinitely, until **the curse** 'cooked' this 'pot' somewhat, and The Flood 'watered it down' a little more, as we will see. I mean I can now better **see** that, before The Curse, God originally **created** this Universe to last indefinitely, because there are innumerable **ordinances** still in operation that once supported the 'permanent resilience' of the former 'operations' of His Creation that are still detectable in its present 'decaying' form. See [Job 38:33](#), [Psa 119:90-91](#), [Jer 31:35-36](#) and [Psa 102:25-28](#).

But don't be confused. Though I accept that Mr. Williams' perspective implies that all *living cells* are overwhelming evidence that God **created** an abundance of *species* to be able to survive indefinitely, I am not saying that I expect that *species* have ever 'evolved' since then in any *evolutionary* sense, I mean except by *variation*, and that is, only within their own *species*, or as the KJV puts it, **after their kind**. And our present 'understanding' of *genetics*, more specifically of the *differential reproductive capability* of *DNA*, makes clear not only that all *species* are limited to *reproducing after their kind*, but also that there is unlimited possibility for *variation*, but only within each *species*, because of the 'infinite possibilities' provided by the 'operational' and 'meta information' that all *DNA molecules* store. And this is first and foremost **word**. Moses records that on **the third day** of Creation our 'infinitely creative' **God said**,

Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so [Gen 1:11](#).

And on **the fifth day**,

...God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good [Gen 1:21](#).

And on **the sixth day**,

...God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good [Gen 1:25](#).

And finally, evidently later on **the sixth day**,

God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them [Gen 1:27](#).

And of course we get some backstory to **the sixth day** in [Genesis 2](#).

So the **word** is, that God **created** all *species* to *reproduce only after their kind*. And maybe you've heard about some of the evidence for this. One example leading to this conclusion is the *mule*. These creatures show us that *horses* and *donkeys* must actually be different **kinds**, because the *offspring* of the two, a *mule*, cannot reproduce. I also saw a cross between two **kinds** of *whales* at Sea World, an amusement park in San Diego, California, that were *sterile* too. So apparently, 'similarity' between two **kinds** may make one *generation* of *reproduction* possible,

but such 'similarity' cannot result in *offspring* that can *reproduce*. This is common knowledge. God made *species* that could only continue to *procreate* **after their kind**.

And Darwin's **so-called** "tree of life" is not really seen in Genesis 1. I mean the '6-day process' doesn't fit a scenario where the supposed 'first cell' gathers together other 'cells' and eventually 'organizes' and 'mutates' itself into a 'fish', then later an 'amphibian', which later 'crawls out on land' and becomes a 'reptile', then finally somehow 'mutates' into 'birds' and other 'land animals'. No, God 'throws a wrench' into these 'gears of thought' by **creating birds** the same day he creates *fish*, and the day before *land animals*. Of course many *evolutionists* have since admitted that there is no *fossil* evidence of the 'gradual transition' between *species*, and preach instead that there were somehow 'big jumps' of *evolution* that left behind the large 'gaps' in the *fossil record*. We will be exposing this perspective throughout the rest of this section anyway.

So whether you accept that there were 'jumps' or not, God's **word** is not compatible with *evolutionary theory*, and not just because it mis-orders the origins of our Universe and Solar System compared to **scripture**, but also because *Darwinian* 'progress up the tree of life'—that I described in the last paragraph—is seriously 'out of order' with God's Word too. And God makes plain in the first chapter of Genesis that it is impossible that *species* could 'evolve' at all, because, besides making it clear that they all *reproduce* only **after their kind**, He wants us to **believe** that *plants* existed on the 3rd day before *sunlight* was **made** on the 4th **day**, and besides that *birds* were **created** with *fish* a **day** before all other *land animals*, He also wants us to **believe** that the Earth was **created** a full 3 **days** before the Sun, Moon, and all the stars. Of course some Christian *creationists*, trying to agree with *evolutionists*, actually think they make sense of all this by declaring that **days** are 'long ages of time', some even inserting an 'additional age' into these '7 ages', all of which only makes the given order more nonsensical.

Yet people 'believe' in the Theory of Organic Evolution because of the falsely represented Miller-Urey Experiment. And when, if ever, it is entirely cast out, they will be **deceived** to instead 'believe' the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment, even though it is already known to erroneously (read, to purposely and conspiratorially) ignore at least *chirality*, as well as the 'disorganizing effects of heat', not to mention the 'mindbogglingly impossible odds' of constructing supposedly 'simple building-block' *organic molecules*, such as *proteins*, *DNA* and *RNA biopolymers*, there being far too few *atoms* in the entire known Universe to begin to consider it less than "absurd". But what are some of the other reasons why people in general, including *scientists*, believe in *organic evolution*? As you should by now expect, all the 'reasons' unavoidably include some degree of fantasy, misrepresentation, and fraud, because there are really not any better reasons.

And by-the-way, before I move on I should clarify that another problem with the Miller-Urey Experiment is that it 'cheats' by 'unnaturally' protecting the *organic compounds* from being 'cooked' by the *heat* of the *sparks*, isolating them in a trap after they are formed, and not allowing them enough time to break down, as they always otherwise do. *Oxygen* is also deliberately removed from Miller's apparatus because its presence alone destroys *amino acids*. And *geological evidence* from a host of *scientists* since the mid-1960's now indicate *oxygen* was always present on Earth, and possibly (read, likely) in greater concentrations than we experience today. We'll talk more about that 'likelihood' in **SECTION 4** and **5**, but we do know that *oxygen* is now produced by *photolysis of water vapor* in the *atmosphere*, where *hydrogen* escapes *gravitation* into *space* and *oxygen* thereby increases in concentration. And more recently it is thought that the most probable content of

the *early atmosphere* included *water, carbon dioxide, nitrogen* and *hydrogen*—very different ingredients than Dr. Miller used. And *hydrogen* could have been present only in small concentrations, because, again, it can escape Earth's *gravity*, while *ammonia* and *methane*, two of Miller's ingredients, would have been destroyed by *ultraviolet light* from coming the Sun. In 1983, Dr. Miller himself reported that if *carbon monoxide* is added to the 'current model', plus a large proportion of *free hydrogen*—which did not likely exist—then only *glycine*, the 'simplest' *amino acid*, could be formed, and that only in trace amounts. But you never heard about that, did you.

I have not yet found as many problems with the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment, though again, *chirality, heat*, and our ever-growing 'understanding' of the complexity of just 'building-block' *biopolymers* present obstacles that are overwhelmingly unreasonable enough to abandon the idea that 'interstellar iceboxes' that could be 'invaded' by *meteors* could ever result in even a single *protein molecule*, anywhere. And I mean that if **I** know this, then **so-called** 'professionals' in this field must know that such 'experiments' provide no reasonable support for any *theory* of *abiogenesis* or *biopoiesis*. Remember these are both names for the *theory* of the process by which *living organisms* are thought to develop from *nonliving matter*. And this is also sometimes still referred to as *spontaneous generation*. But despite the demonstrated failure of this *theory*, biology textbooks, popular scientific magazines, and other media continue to mislead the public into thinking that the Miller-Urey Experiment remains 'credible evidence' for *evolution* to this day, though now they are prepared to 'fall back' on the not yet as deeply discredited Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment should Dr. Miller's efforts finally be widely exposed as a complete failure. And besides, I'm expecting a switch to an emphasis on the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment for another reason. And its weaknesses will become irrelevant. Because, nonsensically, that imagined 'process' will have help. And I mean 'alien' help, as, **God willing**, we'll eventually see. Of course, any transition—from Miller-Urey to Allamandola-Greenberg—at any given institution will likely involve a 'power struggle' to **steal** funding and **vainglory**.

And naturally, **so-called** 'experts' in this field—of how the 'first cell' could have 'evolved'—rarely discuss it publicly. But apparently the world's leading *evolutionists* know the problem. For example, plenty of *sedimentary deposits* exist within the classified Late Precambrian and Cambrian *strata*—the lowest that contain *fossils*. In Africa and Australia, *geologists* have discovered *sediments*, dated by 'evolutionary conventions' at over three billion years old, which contain *fossilized single-celled organisms*. The lack of "intermediates"—the "links" that are expected in the 'evolutionary development' of the 'first cells', of course, are not found. Only ones that are 'fully developed'—and still beyond our ability to fully understand—are found. And surely many of these are "living fossils" since they can be still be found alive today in the exact same form—or will soon be discovered to be so. And of course the problem with "living fossils" extends all the way up Darwin's "tree of life", including evidence used for the existence of 'ape-men'. The problem for *evolutionists* is that 'ancestors' that are supposedly millions of years old (humans), let alone billions (cells), show no evidence of 'evolution' at all. Talk about a problem.

Also *phylogenic trees*, (or **kinds** of trees), based on *DNA* comparison contradict those derived from *RNA* analysis. In other words, surprise!—'evolutionary development' cannot be established by the *DNA* and *RNA* in the supposed 'evolution of trees'. And *protein phylogenies* (or 'type') analysis has only added to the confusion. For example, a 1996 study using 88 *protein sequences* grouped

rabbits with *primates* instead of *rodents*, and a 1998 analysis of 13 *genes* in 19 *animal species* placed *sea urchins* among the *chordates* (*animals* with a *dorsal spine* and 'cord' *nervous system*), and another 1998 study based on 12 *proteins* put *cows* closer to *whales* than to *horses*. And the point is that God is not a **deceiver**. He **created all things** as to leave no doubt that they did not 'evolve' from lower to higher levels in any way, because from whatever 'angle' you look at it, the evidence is against that 'theory'.

And Instances of *molecular sequences* incompatible with 'evolutionary theories' are well known to *creationists* and certain *evolutionist*. For example, *antigen receptor proteins* of *sharks* and the *llama/camel family* have the same unusual *single chain structure*, so that this must be explained away as 'convergence', another 'smoke screen' we will identify a little later.

But I don't mean that *evolutionists* in general are openly admitting all these problems. It's the opposite really. A 1999 booklet published by the National Academy of Sciences, though its authors may simply be duped, lies outright, proclaiming,

As the ability to sequence...DNA has improved; it has also become possible to use genes to reconstruct the evolutionary history of organisms... The evidence for evolution from molecular biology is overwhelming and is growing quickly.

Again, this is an outright **lie**. But empty claims, like all other declarations of *evolutionists*, are made without or against actual evidence, as their **master the devil** requires of them, and whether they **know** they are serving **him** or not. References for the above studies and quote can be found, however, in the *Creation.com* article linked here (<http://creation.com/what-biology-textbooks-never-told-you-about-evolution-f12>).

By-the-way, this problem of the lack of evidence to support the 'evolution' of the 'first cell' is not new. This is made clear by Luther D. Sunderland, B.S. from Penn State University, an *aerospace engineer* and an Associate Fellow in the American Institute for Aeronautics and Astronautics, as well as being elected to the engineering honor society Tau Beta Pi, who has authored many published articles and papers on *aviation*, and holds a number of patents in his field, and was involved for 30 years with the research and development of automatic flight control systems (autopilots) for a number of aircraft. But evidently his real work involved being the author of *Darwin's Enigma*, as he made it his job for over 20 years to intensively study the 'scientific evidences' relating to *theories* on *origins*. He appeared frequently on radio and television and lectured over 500 times on three continents to civic organizations, state and congressional legislative committees, science teachers' organizations and many universities about this topic. He assisted the New York State Board of Regents in a study of how *theories* on *origins* could legally be taught in public schools. Why this 'build-up' of Mr. Sunderland? On July 27, 1979, he taped an interview with Dr. David Raup, Dean of the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago. This interview was later transcribed and authenticated by them both.

Mr. Sunderland told Dr. Raup,

Neither Dr. Patterson [of the British Museum of Natural History] nor Dr. Eldredge [of the American Museum of Natural History] *could give me any explanation of the origination of the first cell.*

Dr. Raup, from the city where earlier Drs. Miller and Urey did their 'groundbreaking work' in this field, replied,

I can't either.

So, since we can see that the Allamandola-Greenberg Experiment is already seriously 'inconclusive' at best, and considering what Mr. Williams has contributed, and what *DNA*, *RNA* and *protein*, etc., are revealing, there is really no explanation for the origin of this mythical 'first cell', except in Genesis. And the problem is only, of course, growing, and so much so that 'certain evolutionists' have conceded and abandoned this course for another tack, as we will see.

But *evolutionists* have other 'smokescreens', including a field of *evolutionary science* that is still popular in high school textbooks, that if not simply laughable as *science*, is, like the dating of *fossils*, literally 'loopy'. I'm talking about the still popularly accepted 'circular reasoning' of *homology*. *Homology* is defined as the similarity in *organisms* due to 'common ancestry', which 'circles around' to become 'proof' that *homology* is evidence for 'common ancestry'. The *bones* in *vertebrate limbs*, for example, whether *bat*, *porpoise*, *horse* or *human*, follow a similar pattern. Ignoring all evidence to the contrary, *evolutionists* jump to the conclusion that such 'similarities' are 'inherited' from a 'common ancestor', and are 'loopy' enough—or deceptive enough—to claim that the 'proof' of this is that they appear to be 'similar' in some ways. But *evolutionists* are inconsistent in applying this argument, as many features that appear remarkably 'similar' are clearly not the result of a 'common ancestor'. Had 'common designs' arisen from a 'common ancestor', the *genetic information* responsible for *reproducing* those features in an *offspring* would show a discernible pattern. This is very often not the case.

Sir Dr. Gavin Rylands de Beer, FRS (Fellow of the Royal Society of London), was a British *evolutionary embryologist*. He was Director of the British Museum of Natural History, President of the Linnean Society, and received the Royal Society's Darwin Medal for his studies on *evolution*. However he is quoted as pointing out that,

The fact is that correspondence between homologous structures cannot be pressed back to similarity of position of the cells in the embryo, or of the parts of the egg out of which the structures are ultimately composed, or of developmental mechanisms by which they are formed' (*Embryos and Ancestors*, 3rd ed., Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1958, p.152.)

Sir Dr. De Beer finally asked,

What mechanism can it be that results in the production of homologous organs, the same 'patterns', in spite of their not being controlled by the same genes? I asked this question in 1938, and it has not been answered (Homology: An Unsolved Problem, Oxford University Press. 1971, p.16).

So *homology* is 'a bunch of baloney', but still taught in high school textbooks. But when 'similar structures' in *organisms* are the result of completely different *DNA*, *evolutionists* still in this fight sidestep this problem by naming it "convergence". *Convergent evolution* is the independent *evolution* of similar features in *species* by dissimilar *DNA*. The phenomenon of *convergence* is supposed to 'create' *analogous structures*—*organic structures* that have similar *form* or *function* or appearance, but

are actually *genetically* very different, and not present in their last supposed 'common ancestor' in their *groups*. The *wing* is a classic example of *convergent evolution* in action. In other words, the evidence is clear that *flying insects, birds, and bats* all 'evolved'—or really were **created** to have'—the capacity of *flight independently*. They are believed to simply have "converged" on this useful *trait*. So it is believed that nature 'finds a way' to develop useful *traits* one way or another. Or maybe Gaia is responsible for this too. I'm sure you could find a PhD or two to support the idea that she's been at it again, anyway. Whatever the case, more and more 'similar traits' are no longer thought to be 'ancestral' but just *analogous* or 'similar'. Again, this means that though they have 'similar appearance' and *structure* and *function*, they have completely different *DNA*. But there are also now known to be *homologous structures*, which have similar *DNA*, but not necessarily 'similar appearance' or *structure* or *function*.



Example of *convergence*: Two succulent plants, *Euphorbia* (left) and *Astrophytum* (right) are not at all related *genetically*, but are believed to have independently 'converged' on the 'fittest' body form. Pictures, [p.183](#). See how God is?

Other 'evolutionary mumbo jumbo' still popularly believed concerning *genetics* is seen in the example of *chromosomal aberrations* in *Drosophila*, otherwise know

as *birth defects* in the common *fruit fly*. *Evolutionists* would use *radiation* and *chemicals* to create *birth defects* in the *offspring* of *fruit flies*. And since the *lifespan* of these *fruit flies* was measured in hours, many *generations* could be examined to supposedly show that *genetic mutations*, though entirely use-less and otherwise mostly clearly detrimental, were nonetheless 'proof' that 'evolution' took place.

For example, *evolutionist* and *geneticist* Dr. Ed Lewis famously showed that three strains of laboratory-bred, *mutant, fruit flies* could be further *interbred* to produce *four-winged flies*. However they never tell you that in all cases the 'balancers' required for *flight stability* in the third *thoracic* (body) *segment* were 'replaced' by two new *wings*, rendering these *wings* useless. And textbooks today, though occasionally acknowledging that *mutations* are normally 'bad' or 'harmful', regularly claim (read **lie**) that that they could be occasionally 'good' or 'useful', and that the 'good' and 'useful' ones would facilitate the increasing complexity of *species* by *natural selection*. What the textbooks don't tell you is that there is still no example of a new species arising by such mutation, nor of any mutation that is not useless and/or harmful. And this should not be confused with *genetic variation* within *species* which our Australian **brother**, Mr. Williams, has already explained is 'miraculously' built into our *cells*. I mean you have to **understand** that neither the 'good mutations' that *evolutionists* say happen, which are expected to 'create' new and more 'evolved' *species*, nor the amazing God-designed capability of *genetic variation*, which each *species* (read, **kind**) uses in *reproduction*, will, according to God, ever result in a *new species* that is capable of *reproducing* itself.

And there's more deception involved with this *four-winged fruit fly* in textbooks. Any acknowledgement of a problem with the *wings* is most likely vaguely referred to as *flight instability*, when really it results in complete inability to fly altogether. This is because there are no *muscles* attached to this 'extra set' of *wings*, making these 'new creatures' completely *non-aerodynamic*—they absolutely cannot fly. So they could not survive nor mate in purely natural conditions. It may be a 'new

structure', but it comes with no functionality. God is 'a tough act to follow', **creating** unlimited *variations* of 'ideal' *structure and functionality together*, but limited to the boundaries He has established for each **kind**.

But to get a little closer to seeing **his thoughts**, and **his ways**—a neverending journey, remember?—it is now known that the particular *gene* involved with the *four-winged mutation* in *fruit flies* is appropriately called *ultrabithorax*. It is a huge and very complex *gene* which is composed of several "subunits", most of which are involved in regulating when and where the gene is 'turned on' in the *embryo*. This *gene* 'regulates' an 'integrated network' of *genes* responsible for 'flight-balancing development'. And it is this entire hierarchy of *genes*, and not just the one, that had to 'evolve' in order to be a 'good mutation'. This is a simple example why 'good mutations' are statistically impossible—as God has otherwise already made clear. Indeed the odds of a single, 'good', 'new gene' arising by chance *mutations* is statistically 'zero', and is even more unlikely than 'accidentally' forming a *protein biopolymer*, but both occurrences are unimaginably far more likely than a completely 'structurally integrated' and 'functional network' of *genes* ever forming by 'mutation'. And when I say "ever", I mean if the Universe were many, many times older than it is presently misrepresented to be, it would not begin to be long enough to realistically improve the odds.

And **deceiving, wicked, evil evolutionists** know this, whether they are enforcing this **oppression** on us, or expressing their **hatred** of God, or whether they are **oppressed** themselves to do so. And **Lord, have mercy** on the **ignorant** and/or **deceived**. I mean for decades these tortured *fruit flies* have remained in textbooks as 'proof' of *evolution*, really only proving that they still have no real evidence to support this **so-called** 'theory'.

By-the-way, such 'experiments' were tried on other *organisms* that *reproduce* quickly, and a couple of German *scientists* oversaw an incredible number of *lifecycles* with *genetic mutations*—attempting to find 'that one good mutation'. But like the elusive 'missing link' *fossils*, they never really confirmed a single one, though they did win a Nobel Prize for trying, which they were nice enough to share with Dr. Lewis.

But false evidence still used to support the Theory of Organic Evolution goes all the way back to its foundation. Charles Darwin discovered a variety of *species* of *finches* (*small birds*) on the Galápagos Islands. These *birds* are distinguished mainly by *beaks* 'adapted' to different foods. However the evidence derived from these *birds* actually indicates the opposite of what *evolutionists* would prefer.

But rather than dealing with the specifics of this 'beak controversy', I'm going to 'cut to the chase', to an example of 'vocal opposition' to the Theory of Organic Evolution found in a 1999 National Academy of Sciences booklet, where a U.C. Berkeley law professor, Phillip E. Johnson, challenges the 'theory' in an article published in the *Wall Street Journal* also in 1999. Now Mr. Johnson is not a 'scientist', but a lawyer and philosopher. But since the Theory of Evolution is really more a 'philosophy' than 'science', it's worth considering his perspective on the issue. As a lawyer he concluded from the evidence that,

When our leading scientists have to resort to the sort of distortion that would land a stock promoter in jail, you know they are in trouble.

Surely the 'popular version' of the Theory of Organic Evolution is a case he would not try. And as a philosopher he concluded,

Today authoritarian rules ban the hypothesis of intelligent design from scientific discussion and fiercely suppress it by lawsuits. A genuinely confident scientific culture that was making continual progress in confirming its theories and solving problems would not need or want to rely on intimidation to silence dissent. It may require many long years of struggle before the hypothesis of real design in biology will be able to receive a fair hearing, but the day of that fair hearing will arrive, and eventually people may wonder how a materialist theory as shaky as Darwinism was able to captivate so many minds for so long... I am still convinced that the possible role of intelligent causes in the history of life will eventually become a subject that leading scientists will want to address in a fair-minded manner. For now, the influential scientific organizations are passionately committed to explanations that consider only material [read, 'accidental'] causes, so they reject out of hand any suggestion that intelligent cause may also have played some role. It seems that supporting materialism [read, *atheism*], rather than following the evidence to whatever conclusion it leads is their prime commitment [read, 'faith'] ([*Intelligent Design in Biology: the Current Situation and Future Prospects*](#); *Think*, The Royal Institute of Philosophy Journal, February 19, 2007, also Casey Luskin, [*Phillip Johnson Gives State of the Debate Report in Think Philosophy Journal*](#), *Evolution News and Views*, February 21, 2007).

So it's no wonder that textbooks are still 'stacked' with 'evidence' supposedly supporting *organic evolution*, all of which is now known to be bogus. Some of the more common examples that we have not already dealt with include 'similar looking' *embryo development*, *archaeopteryx*, and *pepper moths*. And of course 'bogus evidence' offered with only *materialistic* or *atheistic* 'faith' is nothing. However when *evolutionists* finally—more popularly—start to accept 'intelligent design' as a factor in their *theories*, all their present difficulties will melt away. Though the 'intelligences' that they're even now starting to consider as responsible for *evolution* will require no less 'imagination' than they've been forced to use so far, as we will see.

So maybe the best questions about this pervasive, scandalous, propaganda-filled, 'highly and darkly spiritually-powered', and that is, 'satanically-orchestrated cover-up' are, 1) 'what do scientists know', and 2) 'when did they know it'? And it's not really 'old news' because too much of the 'popular media' still continue to treat failed 'evolutionary theories', even the ones near a century old, as still valid. So as we continue our 'climb' up Darwin's still widely accepted but imaginary *evolutionary* "tree of life", we should try to keep these questions in mind.

Darwin's belief that *characteristics* 'acquired' during the *lifetime* of an *organism* that could be passed on to *offspring* is now classified, among other designations, as Lamarckism, a concept popularized by Jean-Baptiste de Lamarck near the turn of the 19th Century. *Species* were thought to vary over vast periods of time until the divergence became great enough to produce new *species*. And separate *phyla* (a *group* that is supposed to be 'genetically related') would eventually develop from a 'common ancestor'.

Professor de Lamarck, by-the-way, was Botanist Royal of France—until the French Revolution when references in titles and institutions to the monarchy were

dropped. He became a professor as well as Secretary of Professors at the famous botanical museum, *Jardin des Plantes* (directly translated, 'Garden of the Plants'), which Professor de Lamarck himself renamed from the original Jardin du Roi (Garden of the King), again, because of the Revolution. He was Keeper of the Herbarium at the museum before he was appointed Curator and Professor of Invertebrate Zoology at the French Museum of Natural History.

But a little later, in the mid-19th Century, in Czechoslovakia, formerly Bohemia, now The Czech Republic, an Augustinian friar and Abbot of St. Thomas Abbey—ultimately becoming the abbey and school's leader—Gregor Johann Mendel, experimenting with the propagation of *sweet pea flowers*, discovered the Laws of Genetic Inheritance, which did not become widely known until a while after the turn of the 20th Century. From 1840 to 1843, before he became Friar Mendel, he studied *practical and theoretical philosophy*, and *physics*, at the University of Olomouc Faculty of Philosophy, the second oldest institution still operating in The Czech Republic. While there he was influenced by—besides "reformed" Lutheran Protestantism—the Natural History and Agriculture Department head, and then Dean and Rector of the University, and the head of the science departments, Dr. Johann Karl Nestler, who conducted extensive research of *hereditary traits of plants and animals*. After becoming a friar, from 1851 to 1853, at the University of Vienna, Mendel continued his education under Christian Doppler—yes, the same famous for originally explaining what was later called the "Doppler Effect". And Friar Mendel returned to teach Physics at St. Thomas Abbey, where he also did his *genetic experiments* in the abbey's gardens. He also studied *astronomy* and *meteorology*, founding the 'Austrian Meteorological Society' in 1865.

And though initially very controversial, Mendel's 'Theory of Genetics' was ultimately integrated with the Chromosome Theory of Inheritance by a PhD from Johns Hopkins University, and later Nobel Prize winner, Dr. Thomas Hunt Morgan in 1915, these *theories* together becoming the foundation of *classical genetics*, and also the accepted means of *evolution*, or for the 'progress up' the **so-called** "tree of life" toward the 'increasing complexity of life'. But the problem from this beginning has been that there are, to say the least, a large number of 'inconsistencies' between this supposed *neo-Darwinian* "tree of life" and the *fossil record*.

For example, *evolutionist* now consider that *fossils* from the Burgess Shale in Canada, the Sirius Passet in northern Greenland, and the Chengjiang in southern China, dated as 'geologically contemporary', hold a vast range of complex, fully developed *organisms* with no evidence of earlier 'ancestors'. And since 'dating conventions' are commonly adjusted to agree with the timescale required by the Theory of Organic Evolution, they identify the "Cambrian Explosion"—containing the lowest and therefore supposedly the most 'primitive' *fossils*—as about 530 million years old, and presume it lasted a maximum of 5-10 million years. But there are *fossils* of all 32 mammal orders found in this lowest and deepest of *strata*. The problem is that there shouldn't be anything this 'advanced' that 'low'. And even in the 'most primitive' *mammal specimens* found in these locations, these *species*...

...already have the basic ordinal characteristics [e.g., chewing mouthparts, eye sockets, skeletal structure that protects internal organs and systems, etc.], and in no case is an approximately continuous sequence from one order to another known. In most cases [read, all cases] the break is so sharp and the gap is so large that the origin of the order is speculative and much disputed.

And do you think this has really changed since originally discovered? This is a quote from American *paleontologist* Dr. George Gaylord Simpson from his 1944 highly influential work, *Tempo and Mode in Evolution*, Columbia University Press, p.105-6. He was Professor of Zoology at Columbia University, and Curator of the Department of Geology and Paleontology at the American Museum of Natural History from 1945 to 1959. Next, he was Curator of the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Harvard University from 1959 to 1970, and a Professor of Geosciences at the University of Arizona until his retirement in 1982. I tell you all this because this is the man that some think was the most influential in advancing the Theory of Evolution in the 20th Century. His works could also be called the 'backbone' of Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory or Neo-Darwinian Synthesis Theory. Developed in the late 1930's through the 1940's, this *synthesis* is the joining together of ideas from several *biological specialties* supposedly accounting for the widely accepted 'upwardly ascending tree of life', which supposedly represents the story of *evolution*. And it is still the predominant paradigm in *evolutionary biology* today, though now increasingly under fire. Rejecting the *Lamarckian-Darwinian* idea of *inheritance* of 'acquired' *characteristics*, Modern Evolutionary Synthesis or Neo-Darwinism Synthesis imagines that *evolution* was 'driven' by *natural selection*, and that this *mechanism* 'acted' on *variations*, which supposedly occur with the additional help of *genetic mutation*, *genetic recombination*, and/or *chromosomal crossovers*. And we'll hear more from Dr. Simpson later in this section.

But even Charles Darwin admitted in the opening paragraph of Chapter 9 of *Origin of Species*, that,

...the number of intermediate varieties [that should show the 'progress' of *evolution* 'up the tree'], which [Darwin supposes] have formerly existed on the earth, [must] be truly enormous. Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links? Geology assuredly does not reveal any such finely graduated organic chain [or 'tree of life']; and this, perhaps, is the most obvious and gravest objection which can be urged against my theory.

Mr. Darwin also admitted,

Firstly, why, if species have descended from other species by insensibly fine gradations, do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms? [And] Why is not all nature [still] in confusion instead of the species being, as we see them, well defined? (*The Origin of Species*, 1859, 1st ed. reprint, Avenel Books, 1979, p.205).

And further he concedes,

When we descend to details, we cannot prove that a single species has changed; nor can we prove that the supposed changes are beneficial, which is the groundwork of the theory." (*The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin*, Vol.1, p.210.)

And still further, as Dr. Simpson later agreed,

There is another and allied [or connected] difficulty, which is much more serious. I allude to the manner in which species belonging to several

of the main divisions of the animal kingdom suddenly appear in the lowest known fossiliferous rocks (*The Origin of Species*, p.348).

And Darwin, in advance, acknowledged the failure of Neo-Darwinian Synthesis too, recognizing,

The abrupt manner in which whole groups of species suddenly appear in certain formations, has been urged by several palaeontologists—for instance, by Agassiz, Pictet, and Sedgwick [all of whom we will hear from again later]—as a fatal objection to the belief in the transmutation [‘evolution by mutation’] of species. If numerous species, belonging to the same genera or families, have really started into life at once, the fact would be fatal to the theory of evolution through natural selection [including by ‘mutation’] (p.344).

He also confessed there is really no story as to how life started, granting that,

To the question why we do not find rich fossiliferous deposits belonging to these assumed earliest periods prior to the Cambrian system, I can give no satisfactory answer (p.350).

Adding,

The case at present [for the entire ‘theory of evolution’] must remain inexplicable, and may be truly urged as a valid argument against the views here entertained [in *The Origin of Species*] (p.351).

Charles also foresaw that,

If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed, which could not possibly have been formed by numerous successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down (p.179).

But when it comes to foresight, Royal Society President, Sir Isaac Newton had ‘clear vision’ on this topic over a century and a half before Royal Society Fellow, Charles Darwin, ever did. In 1704, Sir Isaac wrote,

Was the eye contrived without skill in opticks, and the ear without knowledge of sounds? (*Opticks*, 1704, reprint, McGraw-Hill, 1931, p.369–370).

And it really doesn’t get any better after Darwin, worse actually. You should by now expect this, because the more we learn, the more we should **know** and **understand** that we are the **creations** of an **infinite, omnipotent, wondrous** Creator God who will be **faithful** by His Creation to reveal Himself as such. So besides ‘simple’ **ignorance**, the only ways to avoid this reality is to **lie, deceive** and **deny**, or worse, as clear and increasingly complicated evidence of this is unendingly and unavoidably discovered.

And we don’t even have to take God’s **word** for it. Dr. Frank B. Salisbury, an American *plant physiologist* who served as head of the Utah State University

Department of Plant Science, received his PhD from the California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech), and taught for eleven years as a professor at Colorado State University before joining the faculty of USU. He also coauthored the best-selling textbook, *Plant Physiology*. Dr. Salisbury argues that there is evidence of God having **created** life. He has written extensively on the subject and one of his more recent works is entitled, *Case for Divine Design*. On the subject of the *evolution* of the variety of different kinds of eyes, he acknowledged,

It's bad enough accounting for the origin of such things [as eyes] once, but the thought of producing them several times according to the modern synthetic theory makes my head swim. (*Doubts About the Modern Synthetic Theory of Evolution, THE AMERICAN BIOLOGY TEACHER*, September 1971, p.338.)

I should add that Dr. Salisbury is a LDS 'Christian'. But I hope you don't think your denomination has too big 'a leg up' on his in such matters. Or even that your preferred 'Christian scientist' does. In **truth**, I have yet to identify a single denomination that is not full of 'Church players' and 'erroneous doctrine', nor one led by 'fully qualified' (read, **perfect** or fully 'spiritually mature') **shepherds**. To our **shame**, a 'spiritually mature' **understanding** of the state of the entire Church today must only make the true **friends** of Jesus **weep**. And I mean you have to get over your denomination—which ever it may be—before you'll be **ready** to **truly** and fully **follow** Jesus.

And still there are many 'leading scientists', much more recently, that have commented on the staggering complexity of the *human eye*. But what apparently most of them do not appreciate —like Dr. Salisbury—is how many diverse types of eyes there are, each of which add to the problem for *evolution's* "tree of life". One of the strangest examples is a 'multiple-lensed' *compound eye* found in *fossilized worms*. This is 'strange' to *evolutionists* because it is not expected that such a supposedly 'low lifeform' should have such a *complex* and *highly developed eye*. See Dr. Donald G. Mikulic, et al., *A Silurian Soft-Bodied Biota* [a type of worm], *Science*, Vol. 228, May 10, 1985, p. 715-717.

Another even more 'strange' example is found in some kinds of *trilobites*, a 'thumb-size', supposedly *extinct*, 'sea-bottom creature', supposedly all buried in The Flood, as no 'survivors' have been found relatively recently. *Evolutionists* claim they were a very early form of *life*. But some *trilobite eyes* also had or have *compound lenses*. And it was—and possibly still could be—a 'sophisticated design' for 'eliminating image distortion', also known as *spherical aberration*. Today, only the 'best cameras' and *telescopes* contain *compound lenses*. Not that they could compete with the *trilobite*. Their eyes had or have 280 *lenses*, allowing *vision* in all directions, day and night. Famous Harvard Professor and *evolutionist*, Dr. Stephen J. Gould, admitted that,

The eyes of early trilobites, for example, have never been exceeded for complexity or acuity by later arthropods. ... I regard the failure to find a clear 'vector of progress' [read, 'progress up the tree of life'] in life's history as the most puzzling fact of the fossil record (*The Ediacaran Experiment, Natural History*, Vol.93, Feb.1984, p.22-23).

Dr. Gould also 'throws in the towel' on Neo-Darwinism, conceding,

Of what possible use are the imperfect incipient [or initial] stages of useful structures? What good is half a jaw or half a wing? (*The Return of Hopeful Monsters*, 1977, p.23).

The idea of the Hopeful Monster Theory, by-the-way, is that *genetics* somehow makes possible that ‘a fish laid an egg’ and ‘out hatched a reptile’, and later ‘a reptile laid an egg’ and ‘out hatched’, in one case, ‘a bird’, and in others, various ‘land animals’, which in turn ultimately led to some ‘land animal giving birth to a monkey’, and finally ‘a monkey giving birth to an ape-man’, which ‘evolved’ into our ‘first human ancestor’. And are we to assume that such ‘well-timed’, ‘monstrous mates’ also became available in order to ‘propagate’ these ‘new species’? Silly question, I guess. Still in all such cases these would be ‘monsters’ compared to their ‘ancestors’, but ‘hopeful’ since they are the supposed ‘steps up’ in the ‘complexity of life’ or the ‘growth upward’ in the “tree of life”. And this *theory* supposedly accounts for all the ‘gaps’ and lack of ‘transitional forms’ in the *fossil record*. And certainly Dr. Gould helped lead the way by reviving Dr. Richard Goldschmidt’s ‘monster of a theory’, though settling on a major ‘extension’ to it, and with that adjustment distanced himself from Dr. Goldschmidt, which we will get to before we conclude this section. Whatever the case, it’s alive!—but possibly also ‘planted’ here by ‘aliens’ and/or *comets*—at least in the imaginations of some *evolutionists*, as we will eventually see.

I mean we should remember that in that recent *Discover* article, Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe are finally starting to be vindicated decades after their *theories* were proposed. And maybe you’d like to know that they tried to vindicate a Royal Society Fellow, William Paley, author of *Natural Theology*, originally published in 1802. This work by Paley, which contains many powerful arguments for a **creator**, is a classic in scientific literature. He was the one to popularize the analogy that compared the operations of the Solar System with a ‘well-designed clock’. And it’s fair to say that he is the father of the *teleological argument*, now more commonly referred to as “intelligent design” or “creationism”. But most nowadays avoid him altogether by skipping to the fact that, because it was written in 1802, his work is ‘out of date’. But according to recently vindicated Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe, not so. They compared RSF Darwin’s ideas with contemporary RSF Paley’s, concluding,

The speculations of *The Origin of Species* turned out to be wrong, as we have seen in this chapter. It is ironic that the scientific facts throw Darwin out, but leave William Paley, a figure of fun [read, ridicule] to the scientific world for more than a century, still in the tournament [or ‘still in the running’] with a chance of being the ultimate winner (*Evolution from Space: A Theory of Cosmic Creationism*, Simon and Schuster, 1981, p.96-97).

And all *evolutionists*, whether Christian or not, admit that they need a lot of time for the growth of the *evolutionary* “tree of life”. And they say they believe that a process lasting billions of years took place. But what else do they say? So that you can see that I’m not making any of this stuff up, let’s ask some more past ‘top doctors’ in various fields of *evolution* since Darwin what they say. What was the state of the *theory of evolution* when it was *synthesized*? Was there ever any validity to it originally, or anytime thereafter? The following is a brief survey of

some of the—as Mr. Williams might put it—“more revealing parts of their writings” on this subject.

Previously mentioned renowned *evolutionists*, Dr. Simpson admitted early on that,

In spite of these examples, it remains true, as every paleontologist knows, that *most* new species, genera, and families [yes, read, all], and that nearly all [or really entirely all] new categories above the level of families, appear in the record suddenly and are not led up to by known, gradual, completely continuous transitional sequences. (*The Major Features of Evolution*, 1953, p.360).

Distinguished American *vertebrate paleontologist*, longtime Curator of Vertebrate Paleontology at the American Museum of Natural History, Professor Emeritus of Vertebrate Paleontology at Columbia University, and prolific researcher and author, Dr. Edwin H. Colbert, along with His colleague at Columbia, professor of Geology, Dr. Marshall Kay, likely never seriously considered the significance of their observation in their 1965 article in *Science* magazine, *Stratigraphy and Life History*, when they asserted,

If there has been evolution of life, the absence of the requisite fossils [ones that should show the ‘upward progress of evolution’] in the rocks older than the Cambrian [the lowest *fossiliferous rock*] is puzzling (Vol.736, p.102-103).

Dr. Ronald R. West, Ph.D. from the University of Oklahoma, is a *palaeobiologist*, a branch of *paleontology* that deals with the *origin, growth and structure of fossil animals and plants as living organisms*, also known as *paleobiology*, and also Professor of Geology with adjunct faculty appointment in Biology at Kansas State University. Dr. West’s career likely began ‘circling the drain’ when he was found to say,

Contrary to what most scientists write, the fossil record does not support the Darwinian theory of evolution because it is this theory (there are several) which we use to interpret the fossil record. By doing so, we are guilty of circular reasoning if we then say the fossil record supports this theory (*Paleontology and Uniformitarianism, Compass*, Vol.45, May 1968, p.216).

And remember Chicago’s Dean of the Field Museum of Natural History, Dr. Raup? He didn’t ‘jerk us around’ on this issue either. He gets specific about the lack of evidence for “gradual evolution”, saying,

Instead of finding the gradual unfolding of life, what geologists of Darwin’s time, and geologists of the present day actually find is a highly uneven or jerky record; that is, species appear in the sequence very suddenly, show little or no change during their existence in the record, then abruptly go out of the record, and it is not always clear, in fact it’s rarely clear [read, never clear], that the descendants were actually better adapted than their predecessors. In other words, biological improvement is hard to find (*Conflicts Between Darwin and*

Paleontology, Bulletin, Field Museum of Natural History, Vol.50, 1979, p.23).

Dr. Ernst Mayr was honorary Alexander Agassiz Professor of Zoology, Emeritus, at Harvard University. He was the recipient of numerous honorary degrees and awards, and one of the 20th Century's leading *evolutionary biologists*. He was also a renowned *taxonomist*, 'tropical explorer', *ornithologist* (bird scientist), and *science historian*. His work contributed significantly to Modern Evolutionary or Neo-Darwinian Synthesis Theory. But he maintained,

What one actually found was nothing but discontinuities: All species are separated from each other by bridgeless gaps; intermediates between species are not observed... The problem was even more serious at the level of the higher categories (*Animal Species and Evolution*, 1982, p.524).

Of course if "intermediates...are not observed", anywhere, the "problem" at "higher categories" could not be "more serious", just equally 'problematic'.

The well-known Harvard professor and *evolutionist*, Dr. Gould, contributed,

All paleontologists know that the fossil record contains precious little [read, nothing] in the way of intermediate forms; transitions between major groups are characteristically [read, always] abrupt. Gradualists usually extract themselves from this dilemma by invoking the extreme imperfection of the fossil record (*The Panda's Thumb*, 1980, p.189).

He also stated,

The absence of fossil evidence for intermediary stages between major transitions in organic design, indeed our inability, even in our imagination, to construct functional intermediates in many cases [read, all cases], has been a persistent and nagging problem for gradualistic accounts of evolution (*Is a New and General Theory of Evolution Emerging?*, 1982, p.140).

And that "Emerging" **so-called** "New Theory", to which the title of Dr. Gould's 1982 book refers, has been named, Punctuated Equilibrium Theory. This 'theory' is his and Dr. Niles Eldredge's 'makeover' of the 1933 Hopeful Monster Theory. And though they eventually did a lot of 'grumbling' about this comparison, even 'raged' about it, they really have no grounds to deny their original connection to it as we will continue to see.

Dr. Niles Eldredge, by-the way, is an American *biologist*, *paleontologist*, and *evolutionist*, who, along with Dr. Stephen Jay Gould, proposed the Theory of Punctuated Equilibrium in 1972. Dr. Eldredge studied *anthropology* at Columbia University under Dr. Norman D. Newell, Professor of Geology, and Chairman and Curator of Invertebrate Paleontology at the American Museum of Natural History. Dr. Eldredge also began his work at the American Museum of Natural History, and graduated *summa cum laude* ('with highest praise'—for the highest GPA). And he continued research at the museum that he had started as an undergraduate while enrolled in Columbia University's doctoral program. After completing his PhD in 1969, he was asked to stay on at the museum as an Assistant Curator, a few years

later becoming Associate Curator, and altogether after a decade, Curator, a post he kept until recently. He was also an Adjunct Professor at the City University of New York, his specialty being the *evolution* of *mid-Paleozoic* “lens-faced” *trilobites*. Remember they are that group of supposedly *extinct arthropods* with amazingly ‘advanced’, ‘multi-lensed’ *eyes*, that are dated, using *evolutionary* “circular reasoning” between about 550 and 250 million years ago.

‘Upstart’, Dr. Ian Tattersall, a British-born American *paleoanthropologist* and a Curator Emeritus with the American Museum of Natural History, who originally trained in *archeology* and *anthropology* at the University of Cambridge, and earned his PhD from Yale University in 1971, along with his coauthor Dr. Eldredge testify that,

We are faced more with a great leap of faith... that gradual progressive adaptive change underlies the general pattern of evolutionary change we see in the rocks... [as we are without] any hard evidence (*The Myths of Human Evolution*, 1982, p.57).

And they add,

The record jumps, and all the evidence shows that the record is real: the gaps we see reflect real events in life’s history—not the artifact of a poor fossil record (p.59).

Uh huh. Except this ‘real record’ really shows that God **created** all things, and about 1650 years later ‘violently submerged’ it all in a global, ‘muddy flood’, leaving most of His formerly *living creation fossilized underground* everywhere, both high and low, in the resulting ‘settling’ *sediments*. And the evidence of this in the *ground* is so clear it really doesn’t take much **faith** to accept. However, what Drs. Eldridge and Tattersall are ‘imagining’ would take a great deal more ‘faith’. And this would be ‘faith’ in Punctuated Equilibrium Theory.

But it occurs to me that it would be more ‘believable’ if Gaia, or some other ‘evolved and/or ascended being’, were assisting with the ‘monstrous transitions’ these *evolutionists* claim they see ‘recorded’ in the *fossil record*. Otherwise it’s just an ‘impossible-to-believe’, ‘unending series’ of ‘arguably miraculous’, ‘monstrous accidents’. In fact ‘believability’ of this ‘theory’ was so doubtful that Dr. Stephen Jay Gould, who was more involved with ‘popular science’ than Dr. Eldredge, was forced to ‘backpeddle’, back at least a little way toward Gradualism, or toward ‘slower big jumps’, as a result. And it certainly resulted in some of that ‘grumbling’, or ‘raging’, too, especially at *creationists*. We’ll bring all this into better focus before we’re done with this section.

Dr. Steven M. Stanley, an American *paleontologist* and *evolutionary biologist*, probably best known for his research ‘documenting’ the ‘evolutionary process’ of *punctuated equilibrium* in the *fossil record*, is a witness that,

The known fossil record fails to document a single example of phyletic [‘change of **kind**’] evolution accomplishing a major morphologic [or “form and structure”] transition (*Macroevolution: Pattern and Process*, 1979, p.39).

And he later wrote,

The fossil record itself provided no documentation of continuity—of gradual transition from one animal or plant to another of quite different form (*The New Evolutionary Timetable: Fossils, Genes and the Origin of Species*, 1981, p.40).

And he also admits that *evolutionists* ‘play favorites’ against the ‘evidence’ on this issue, revealing,

The known fossil record is not, and never has been, in accord with gradualism. What is remarkable is that, through a variety of historical circumstances, even the history of opposition has been obscured... "The majority of paleontologists felt their evidence simply contradicted Darwin’s stress on minute, slow, and cumulative changes leading to species transformation." [And]...their story has been suppressed (p.71).

Dr. Arthur Newell Strahler was Professor of Geosciences at Columbia University, who in 1952 developed the “Strahler Stream Order” system for classifying *streams* according to the power of their *tributaries*. Dr. Strahler was largely responsible for the shift in *geomorphology* from *qualitative* to *quantitative methodologies* during the mid-20th Century. *Geomorphologists* seek to understand why *landscapes* look the way they do, to understand *landform history* and *dynamics* and to predict changes through a combination of field observations, physical experiments and *numerical modeling*. *Geomorphology* is practiced within *physical geography*, *geology*, *geodesy*, *engineering geology*, *archeology* and *geotechnical engineering*. This broad base of interest contributes to many research styles and interests within the field. In his experience, Dr. Strahler noticed,

Absence of the transitional fossils in the gaps between each group of fishes and its ancestor is repeated in standard treatises on vertebrate evolution... This is one count in the creationists’ charge that can only evoke in unison from the paleontologists a plea of *nolo contendere* [no contest] (*Science and Earth History*, 1987, p.408).

More recently, Dr. Rudolf A. Raff, Professor of Biology, Indiana University, who received his PhD from Duke University in 1967, and is known for research in *evolutionary developmental biology*, and as the Director of the Indiana Molecular Biology Institute, and his colleague, Dr. Thomas C. Kaufmann, Distinguished Professor, Department of Biology, who specializes in [Genetics and Genealogy](#), Evolutionary Studies, and Molecular Biology, are together still professing that,

The lack of ancestral or intermediate forms between fossil species is not a bizarre peculiarity of early metazoan history. Gaps are general and prevalent throughout the fossil record (*Embryos, Genes, and Evolution: The Developmental-Genetic Basis of Evolutionary Change*, 1991, p.34).

And they also say,

Gaps between higher taxonomic levels are general and large (p.35).

Even more recently, Dr. Jeffrey Hugh Schwartz weighed in. He is a *physical anthropologist*, Professor of Biological Anthropology at the University of Pittsburgh, and a fellow and President of the World Academy of Art and Science (WAAS) from 2008-2012. Dr. Schwartz' research involves the methods, theories, and philosophies of *evolutionary biology*, including the origins and diversification of *primates*. He has studied and analyzed *human* and *primate skeletons* and *archeological remains*, focusing much of his research on *dentofacial* (teeth) *morphology*. He has done substantial fieldwork and museum research in the collections of major museums around the world. And he still maintains,

Given that evolution, according to Darwin, was in a continual state of motion ... it followed logically that the fossil record should be rife with examples of transitional forms leading from the less to more evolved... Instead of filling the gaps in the fossil record with so-called missing links, most [read, all] paleontologists found themselves facing a situation in which there were only gaps in the fossil record, with no evidence of transformational evolutionary intermediates between documented fossil species (*Sudden Origins*, 1999, p.89).

And at the turn of this new century, we are still hearing from scientists like Dr. Robert L. Carroll, *vertebrate paleontologist* who specializes in Paleozoic and Mesozoic *amphibians* and *reptiles*, who received his PhD from Harvard, was a fellow of the Natural History Museum in London, afterward a Curator and finally Director of the Redpath Museum of Natural History at McGill University in Montreal, Canada, where he was also appointed an honorary Professor of Zoology, saying,

What is missing are the many intermediate forms hypothesized by Darwin, and the continual divergence of major lineages into the morphospace [gaps] between distinct adaptive types." (*Towards a New Evolutionary Synthesis, Trends in Evolution and Ecology*, Vol.15, Jan. 27-32, 2000, p.27).

And veteran *evolutionist*, Dr. Ernst Mayr, Professor Emeritus, Museum of Comparative Zoology at Harvard University, summarizes his century-spanning career reaffirming his stand against traditional 'naturally selective' Neo-Darwinism, saying,

Given the fact of evolution, one would expect the fossils to document a gradual steady change from ancestral forms to the descendants. But this is not what the paleontologist finds. Instead, he or she finds gaps in just about every [or really, just every] phyletic series (*What Evolution Is*, 2001, p.14).

And then there's the perspective of Dr. Henry Gee, [British](#) *paleontologist* and *evolutionary biologist*, senior editor of *Nature*, the leading scientific journal. Dr. Gee completed his PhD at Fitzwilliam College, Cambridge, and afterward joined *Nature* as a reporter in 1987, afterward becoming Senior Editor, Biological Sciences. In an interview in 2002 he observed,

People and advertising copywriters tend to see human evolution as a line stretching from apes to man, into which one can fit new-found fossils as easily as links in a chain. Even modern anthropologists fall into this trap... we tend to look at those few tips of the bush we know about, connect them with lines, and make them into a linear sequence of ancestors and descendants that never was. But it should now be quite plain that the very idea of the missing link, always shaky, is now completely untenable (*Face of Yesterday, The Guardian*, Thurs. July 11, 2002).

Professor of Geology and Paleontology at Harvard, Dr. Stephen J. Gould, who could be identified as the original leader of this growing group of *evolutionists* that altogether abandon traditional 'slow mutation' and 'natural selection' as significant *evolutionary mechanisms*, heralds this 'resurrected perspective', declaring.

A mutation doesn't produce major new raw (DNA) material. You don't make a new species by mutating the species. (*Is a New and General Theory of Evolution Emerging?*, Lecture at Hobart and William Smith College, Feb. 4, 1980.)

So where are we now? 'Mutation' has proven to be no longer a factor in *evolution*, but *survival of the fittest* is still on the table, while '*natural selection*' is also off. And Dr. Gould later more specifically exposes the problem with 'mutation', explaining,

But how do you get from nothing to such an elaborate something if Evolution must proceed through a long sequence of intermediate stages, each favored by natural selection? You can't fly with 2% of a wing ... How, in other words, can natural selection explain these incipient [or initial] stages of structures that can only be used (as we now observe them) in much more elaborated forms? ... one point stands high above the rest: the dilemma of incipient stages (*Not Necessarily a Wing, Natural History*, Oct. 1985, p.12-13).

And let's call this the 'early useless mutation paradox', just for the fun of it. And Dr. Gould doesn't stop there; later he concludes,

The most famous such burst, the Cambrian explosion, marks the inception of modern multicellular life. Within just a few million years, nearly every major kind of animal anatomy appears in the fossil record for the first time... The Precambrian record is now sufficiently good that the old rationale about undiscovered sequences of smoothly transitional forms will no longer wash (*An Asteroid to Die For, Discover*, Oct. 1989, p.65).

And yeah, *gradual micromutational evolution* is a 'horse' long passed 'beat dead'. Nonetheless it's still 'beat' as if there's still some 'life' in it, because it's still controversial, and newsworthy, to 'beat it'. Yet this 'senseless punishment' is lessening, and to some degree in favor of Dr. Gould's *theory*, Punctuated Equilibrium, that at least 'better fits' the evidence of the *fossil record*.

However, it will eventually be helpful to point out here that Dr. Gould was perfectly able to discern that even short distances between *fossils* in *strata*—even a few feet or inches—were nonetheless supposed to represent ‘great periods’ of *time*. Late in this section, and in later ones, we’ll see that this very observation, if made honestly and reasonably, which *evolutionists* never do, is a sufficiently impossible ‘paradox’ to entirely invalidate all *theories of evolution* all by itself.

But if “smoothly transitional forms will no longer wash”, what will? In other words, what will the final refinements to Satan’s ‘propaganda campaign’ concerning *origins* be? These answers will not completely ‘wash out’ in this section, because there are some ‘out-of-this-world’ perspectives explained in the remaining sections, that are not easily anticipated, and that need to be **understood** before this ‘load’ reaches the ‘spin cycle’.

And though we’re long passed more than enough **proof** to reject Modern Evolutionary Synthesis or Neo-Darwinian Synthesis—or more specifically, passed *gradual evolution* by *micromutation* and *natural selection*—we’re going to take the opportunity to practice a little more **patience**, because we’re going to walk through some additional “more revealing” eyewitness testimony from ‘top evolutionists’ in their fields about their various perspectives of this imaginary ‘climb up’ Darwin’s “tree of life”. But this is not just for **patience**, nor just for the fun of it, but more to reveal the **devices** of our **adversary the devil**. So, going back to the ‘root system’ of this ‘make-believe tree’, to the imagined *evolution* of *plants*, let’s hear from *paleobotanist*, Dr. Chester A. Arnold, Ph.D. from Cornell University, on the Faculty of Botany at the University of Michigan, there professor and curator of the collection of *fossil plants*, also a member of many learned societies, and author of *Introduction to Paleobotany* published in 1947. Among *creationists*, he is famously quoted as admitting,

As yet we have not been able to trace the phylogenic history of a single group of modern plants from its beginning to the present.

And of course this is still the case, but this only when real evidence is considered, which is increasingly rare. But also supporting this rarely-made evidence-based case, and acknowledging that any opposition to it is prejudiced, is *botanist* Dr. Edred John Henry Corner, FRS (Fellow of the Royal Society) and Professor of Tropical Botany at the University of Cambridge in the late 1960’s and early 1970’s. He is also famously quoted among *creationists* as confessing,

...but I still think that to the unprejudiced, the fossil record of plants is in favor of special creation.

Now there’s a ‘more revealing moment’ for you.

But some *evolutionists* still believe that somehow *single-celled* or *unicellular organisms* grouped themselves together to eventually become complex systems of *cells* like *insects*, though we have already heard it admitted that there is no *fossil* evidence of this. And Dr. Frank M. Carpenter, PhD from Harvard, and curator of *fossil insects* at the Harvard Museum of Comparative Zoology for 60 years, also called “the most influential *paleoentomologist* [*fossil insect scientist*] of his generation”, said that,

There is, however, no fossil evidence bearing on the question of insect origin; the oldest

insects known show no transition to other arthropods (*Fossil Insects*, 1952, p.18).

By-the-way, he's saying there are no 'transitional connections' to any arthropods. *Arthropods*, since I wasn't more specific about them earlier, are *invertebrates*—no *backbone*—usually with *exoskeletal shells*, having *segmented bodies* and *jointed limbs*, including *insects*, *spiders* and the previously mentioned, presumed *extinct trilobites*. And technically no, *spiders* aren't *insects*. But they do share another commonality with *insects* and *trilobites*. They all appear in the *fossil record* 'out of nowhere'. But being all **created** by God, how else could they 'appear'?

And you should guess that it only get 'fishier' from here. One of the 'top scientist' attempting to trace the *evolution* of larger 'pre-fish' *organisms*, Dr. Derek Ager, Professor of the Department of Geology, Imperial College, London, came clean, confessing,

It must be significant that nearly all the evolutionary stories I learned as a student... have now been 'debunked'. Similarly, my own experience of more than twenty years looking for evolutionary lineages among the Mesozoic Brachiopoda [supposed 'pre-fish' *organisms*] has proven them equally elusive (*The Nature of the Fossil Record, Proceedings of the Geological Association Journal*, Vol.87, 1976, p.132).

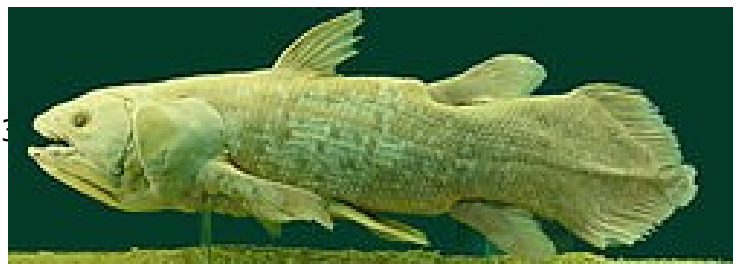
And you can imagine Dr. Ager here with a 'clothes pin on his nose'. I mean he's not just saying that *Darwinian fish evolution* 'stinks'; he seems to be backing off from the 'stench' of the whole 'tree', bottom to top. *Brachiopoda*, by the way, are supposed to *evolve* before *fish* in Darwin's 'tree of life' because they are any of a group of bottom-dwelling *marine invertebrates*, meaning, as *evolutionists* would put it, they have not yet developed an *internal skeletal system*, as *fish* later allegedly did. But continuing to hope against hope, as Dr. Ager probably nonetheless does, is there any evidence that those *internal skeletons* in *fish* evolved? I guess it's possible that Dr. Ager never heard of Dr. J. R. Norman, though a contemporary of his, and also in London. I mean he was in the Department of Zoology at the British Museum of Natural History, which, though in the same block in the South Kensington district as Imperial College, it is fully, though directly, all the way across the street. Anyway, Dr. Norman had earlier disclosed that,

The geological record has so far provided no evidence as to the origin of the fishes... ("*Classification and pedigrees: fossils, A History of Fishes*", 3rd ed., edited by Dr. P. H. Greenwood, John Wiley & Sons, 1975, p.343).

I mean we can at least 'hope and hope' that these two didn't know of each other.

So next we want to know the 'expert testimony' of how *life* 'beyond' *fish* 'evolved'? As usual,

a lack of real evidence is no real problem for most of these 'experts', except for the occasional 'gems' that can be 'dug out' showing some of their 'more revealing' confessions. And I mean that, as usual, it is only with 'empty bravado' that they can claim that *amphibians* 'evolved' from *fish*. But the story goes that the 'intermediate stage'—*organisms* just



lower than 'full-fledged' *fish*—are classified as *crossopterygii* or, more generally, *sarcopterygii*, otherwise known as *lobe-finned fish*. The most famous supposed example of one of these 'intermediate forms' is the *coelacanth* (p.197) Another popular one is the *lung fish*. These are *fish* with *fins* that work like 'paddles' that are believed to be the 'forerunner of legs'. And such *crossopterygii* supposedly 'evolved' into *rhypidistii*, the first *amphibians*, *lobe-finned animals* capable of living in water but also on land. And *rhypidistii* evidently 'evolved' into *tetrapods*, which are *amphibians* with *legs*, such as *toads* and *frogs*. Anyway, this is how they say the 'tree grew' at this stage. But FRS and Fellow of the Geological Society, and Fellow and President of the also prestigious Linnean Society of London, Sir Dr. Errol White would disagree, saying,

But whatever ideas authorities may have on the subject, the lung-fishes, like every other major group of fishes that I know, have their origins firmly based in *nothing* [emphasis his], a matter of hot dispute among the experts, each of whom is firmly convinced that everyone else is wrong ... I have often thought of how little I should like to have to prove organic evolution in a court of law. (*A Little on Lung-Fishes, Proceedings of the Linnean Society of London, Vol.177, Presidential Address, Jan. 1966, p.8*).

And evidently he's not the only "expert" to disagree.

The Linnean Society of London, by-the-way, also previously mentioned, is the world's oldest active biological society. Founded in 1788, the Society takes its name from the Swedish naturalist Carl Linnaeus, whose *botanical, zoological* and library collections have been in its keeping since 1829. Now in its third century, the Society continues to play a central role in the documentation of the world's *flora* and *fauna*—as Linnaeus himself did. Members are drawn from all walks of life, and represent the full range of professional scientists and amateurs alike with an interest in natural history. The Fellowship is international and includes world leaders in various branches of *biology* who use the Society's premises and publications to communicate new advances—or propaganda—in their fields. The Society promotes the study of all aspects of the *biological sciences*, with particular emphasis on *evolution, taxonomy, biodiversity* and *sustainability*. It encourages and communicates 'scientific advances' in these and associated fields through its three world-class journals, special publications, meetings and website. And such is the 'expertise' and 'evidential authority' with which President Sir Dr. White spoke.

Christian Dr. Jerry Bergman, PhD in Biomedical Science, Wayne State University, later obtaining another PhD in Human Biology from Columbia Pacific University, a Fellow of the American Scientific Affiliation and of the American Scientific Association, and a member of the National Association for the Advancement of Science, added an interesting 'line' in this 'stream of thought' when he recently said,

About 80% of all known fossils are marine animals, mostly various types of fish. Yet there is no evidence of intermediate forms. "The most common explanation for the total lack of fossil evidence for fish evolution is that few [read, no] transitional fossils have been preserved. This is an incorrect conclusion because every major fish kind known today has been found in the fossil record, indicating the completeness of the

existing known fossil record (*The Search for Evidence Concerning the Origin of Fish, Creation Research Society Quarterly*, Vol.47, 2011, p.291).

So 80% of *fossils* are *fish* and there are no examples of 'intermediate forms'. Of course there aren't. So needless to say, there is an 'Earth full of problems' with the story of the 'evolutionary development' of *fish*. One of these is that the *crossopterygii* (*lobe-finned fish* that live entirely in water) and the *rhpidistii* (*lobe-finned amphibians* that live both in and out of water)—which should follow the *crossopterygii* in the *evolutionary* 'scheme of things'—evidently both lived at the same time, since their *fossils* have been dug up in the same *strata*. And they are both originally thought to have become *extinct* millions of years ago, a long process where *rhpidistii* are said to have 'evolved' into *amphibians*, during which time the *crossopterygii*, including the *coelacanth*, should have died out. Except that the *coelacanth* was found alive and apparently unchanged less than a hundred years ago. This 'unearths' some unfortunate contradictions for *evolutionists*, because if *time* is necessarily a 'driver' of *evolution*, then surely *time* should have had an effect on these supposed 'pre-fish' and 'pre-amphibian' *species*. But the supposed billions of years of time since their first appearance in the *fossil record* does not help support *evolutionary* claims, because these supposedly ancient and allegedly *transitional forms* have not changed whatsoever to the present day.

Another problem is that not only are *amphibians* found in the same layers of rock as *sarcopterygii* (the general term for *lobe-finned fish*), but also 'out of order' in *strata*, sometimes below those of *fish*. Still we should already expect that *evolutionists* will tend to ignore their 'out of order' issues, even as they will overlook the complete lack of real *physiological evidence* that any *evolution* took place, at least other than in their 'more revealing moments', that is.

And for a more direct example, Professor Dr. Earnest Albert Hooton, a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford University, ultimately appointed to their Department of Anthropology, and a lifelong member and short term president of the *American Association of Physical Anthropologists*, expressed his 'blind faith' in the *evolution of fish* in his 1946 book, *Up From the Apes*, saying,

Just how fins developed into limbs is still a mystery—but they did.

And this is also a good example of some of that 'empty bravado' I mentioned earlier.

However others are simply perplexed. *Paleoichthyologist* (*fossil fish*) Dr. Barbara J. Stahl, hailed by her college, Saint Anselm, as one of the premier *evolutionary biologists* of the 20th Century, admitted that in cases where *fossil fish* are found in *layers* below *amphibians*—or even when found buried in the 'right order'—the *fish*, according to Dr. Stahl,

...show no evidence of developing the stout limbs and ribs that characterized the primitive tetrapods...

Later adding,

Since the fossil material provides no evidence of other aspects of the transformation from fish to tetrapod, paleontologists have had to speculate how legs and aerial [or *atmospheric gases*] breathing evolved...

(*Vertebrate History: Problems in Evolution*, McGraw-Hill, 1974, p.148 and 195).

But yes, this is just a moment's relapse, because this *evolutionist's* book on these 'problems' with the *theory of evolution* was just one of her contributions over the course of her career that spanned the second half of the 20th Century, because her ability to overcome the endless perplexity with 'bravado' and/or just 'simple faith', remained intact throughout her career. Nonetheless, here you have a proclaimed top *evolutionary* 'fossil-fish doctor', plus a president of the *American Association of Physical Anthropologists*, admitting that there is no *physiological evidence* of fish 'evolving', saying, or implying, that speculation of 'scientist' on that subject is the only 'evidence' that they did. Indeed, you have to come to **understand** that to the *evolutionist*, even to some Christian *evolutionists*, speculation from the 'right source' is 'evidence', and that is, only if it agrees with their imagined 'theory'. Otherwise, it's not.

And other 'top evolutionist' bear a striking resemblance to 'mobsters', who have no problem in letting any and all incriminating evidence 'swim with the fishes', making real evidence harder to find than Jimmy Hoffa. So we might as well move onto *animal evolution*.

Dr. Ruben Arthur Stirton received his Ph.D. at Berkeley, became Curator of Fossil Mammals at the Museum of Paleontology, and finally Director of the Museum of Paleontology, as well as Professor and Chairman of the Paleontology Department. The University of California (Berkeley) Museum of Paleontology website honors his work, writing,

Stirton's important scientific contributions are the careful descriptions and systematic analyses of fossil material, including precise determination of its geological occurrence; use of faunal assemblages for stratigraphic correlation; and studies of evolutionary changes in morphology of various mammalian lineages.

(<http://www.ucmp.berkeley.edu/about/history/rastirton.php>, paragraph 6.)

So I guess he looked long and hard. What did he conclude? After the career outlined above, he published his 'surviving faith' in *evolution*, saying,

There is no direct proof from the fossil record [that *reptiles* 'evolved'], but we can readily hypothesize the conditions under which it came about (*Time, Lice and Man*, 1957, p.416).

Strange. All that "careful...systematic analysis of fossil material"—in a career that spanned more than a quarter century by that point, by-the-way—and he comes up 'empty'. Well, strange only to those committed to denying that God **created all things**.

But I'm also guessing you're seeing the pattern here. And speaking of patterns, this brings us to Dr. Paul B. Weisz, *biologist* from Boston University, and Richard N. Keogh—credentials unknown to me, except they published together, *The Science of Biology*, evidently originally in 1963, with the 5th edition coming out in 1982, which I have found still available online. But I would expect the quote I found from the 1963 edition is no longer in the 1982 edition, nor likely in any other of the later editions. And you can see why this 1963 edition, not to mention all information

about these 'mystery men', has been apparently actively expunged from the internet, when you hear their quote. Evidently not knowing they would rue the day that they published it, they nevertheless expressed their 'faith' that,

The first and most important steps of animal evolution remain even more obscure than those of plant evolution (*The Science of Biology*, McGraw Hill, 1963, p.732).

I mean if you can find a copy. And I mean it should be difficult to find one. And when looking for a hard copy of any sources containing such 'incriminating evidence', expect the 'crime scene' has been tampered with. It's safest to expect that later editions of such sources have been 'wiped' of originally overlooked 'incriminating information'. And the point is that, naturally, all the quotes in this exposé make the authors, or at least their publications, a lot harder to find. They are only easier to find from *creationists'* sources, though, naturally again, such quotations often come with little to no information about the source, other than the name. And really we're seeing a couple of patterns here. First and again, it is my observation that those that blunder by exposing the weakness of the *theory of evolution* often meet with 'ostracization', 'black-balling', and some to degree, if not completely, 'confinement in obscurity'.

Remember that *paleontologist* and *evolutionary biologist*, Dr. Steven M. Stanley, said,

...the history of opposition has been obscured...

And this is often true even when that opposition is unintentional from devoted *evolutionists* who did not mean to discredit the *theory*. And many of the quotes in this exposé, especially the last several, are apparently good examples of this.

But it is also an example of the pattern that *evolutionists* in one field, while admitting they have no evidence to support their conclusions, still expect that *evolutionists* in other fields have all their 'proof' supposedly 'neatly packaged' and 'tied with a bow'. And I mean that evidently our 'mystery men', Weisz and Keogh, didn't know about the earlier (and previously cited) conclusion of University of Michigan *botanist* Dr. Chester A. Arnold, who published in his textbook, *Introduction to Paleobotany*, that,

As yet we have not been able to trace the phylogenic history of a single group of modern plants from its beginning to the present.

So again, many *evolutionists*, while inadvertently exposing their 'empty hands' in their field, often at the same time reveal their 'faith' that *evolutionists* in all other fields must have 'mountains of proof' firmly 'in hand'. And a rereading of this *study* so far, and reading further on, will expose

other quotes of other *evolutionists* who fall into this pattern.

Also now somewhat obscure, like many of the other scientist quoted in this exposé, Dr. Homer William Smith was a scientist they couldn't completely erase. He was a *physiologist* and a popular advocate for science in his day, who spent most of his career at New York University School of Medicine, his research focusing on the *kidney* where he co-discovered *inulins*, a group of naturally occurring *polysaccharides* produced by many types of *plants*. But he is another formidable *scientist* that it is harder to find information about because he openly admitted,

As our present information stands, however, the gap remains unbridged, and the best place to start the evolution of the vertebrates is in the imagination (*From Fish to Philosopher*, Little, Brown, and Co., 1953, p.26).

Here again is that insidious pattern connected with the *theory of evolution*, not to mention with the World in general, which is that *evolutionists* are often perfectly convinced that their “imagination” provides all the evidence they need, even when it’s contrary to real evidence.

Continuing this ‘flight of fancy’, we come to Dr. William Elgin Swinton, an American *paleontologist* and *zoologist* that ultimately attained membership in The Royal Society of Canada. He began his work at the British Museum of Natural History in London, leaving there to obtain his doctorate at the University of Glasgow. After serving in WWII, he taught at the University of Toronto while continuing to collaborate with the British Museum of Natural History, for which he was one of their specialist in *dinosaurs*. He also began collaboration with The Royal Ontario Museum of World Culture and Natural History in Toronto, as well as with the Ontario Science Center. Though his work went on for half of the last century, Dr. Swinton is now quite well hidden, and most likely because he wrote such things as,

The origin of birds is largely a matter of deduction. There is no fossil evidence of the stages through which the remarkable change from reptile to bird was achieved (*British Museum of Natural History, Biology and Comparative Physiology of Birds*, A.J. Marshall, editor, Vol.1, Academic Press, 1960, p.1).

And evidently somewhere in this same volume, Dr. Swinton adds,

...there are still monumental problems that remain to be settled about the succession of life. This is especially true of the birds.

So I’m guessing Dr. Swinton’s book was originally ‘black-balled’, until a ‘cleaned’ version of the same title from the same year was released as Vol.2. Also, I expect this is true because I was also only able to find the above limited information about Dr. Swinton in French or German. It was the information about him in French that I personally translated and paraphrased above. And finding such information only in foreign languages in cases like this is not uncommon either, though telling. But Dr. Swinton’s quote is common on *creationists’* websites, though, again, also commonly found with little or no information about him. And again, all of this is much too common to be just coincidence, and much too successful to be just the ‘wrestling’ of mortal men. Yes, I’m invoking again [Eph 6:10-20](#).

Such **wicked** and **covert** ^{H5643} ‘horseplay’ is also evident with Dr. Tracy I. Storer, PhD from Berkeley, who was the Assistant Curator of Birds, also Field Naturalist at the Museum of Vertebrate Zoology at Berkeley, before moving to the University of California, Davis, founding their Zoology Department, and where he was memorialized there with the construction of Storer Hall, now housing a program that is reported to be among the “top five in the nation”. But he has become ‘informationally obscure’ otherwise because he was careless enough to admit in the textbook he authored that,

The real origin of horses is unknown. (*General Biology*, 1957, p.216).

So there we have it, 'straight from the horse's mouth', not to mention surely from every other *fossilized horse*, or part thereof, ever dug up.

But this brings us to another argued aspect of the false paradigm of the Theory of Evolution, which is the debate as to whether 'evolution' is "directed" or "undirected". In other words, some *evolutionists* have 'evolved' to become more 'fervent' **idolaters**, as well as 'self-idolaters', and that is, to 'regard' *human beings* as the 'divinely pre-ordained goal' of the 'evolutionary process', or as "directed", as opposed to how others see it, including Darwin himself, as only a naturally "undirected" or 'random' or 'accidental process'. A brand of this "directed" process works for some Christian 'creationists' who argue in favor of Progressive Evolution or Theistic Evolution. Still, it all falls apart with the evidence for 'horse evolution' from the fossil record, because this supposedly naturally "directed" or "undirected" 'evolution'—that should always and in either case be 'upward' and 'increasing in complexity'—is not found to be so, this being most notable in the record of animals, and especially in the debate about the 'evolution of horses'.

For example, what *evolutionists* have 'unearthed' shows that the expected trend toward larger size is not seen in "extinct side-branches", some of which actually reverse direction and became smaller. And the evidence in general actually shows that 'irregularities' contradicting 'upward movement' is more the rule. Another example is that the *extinct* smaller version of the horse, *Miohippus* (meaning 'small horse'), appears in the fossil record before—or was buried in *strata* beneath—the also *extinct* *Mesohippus* (or 'middle horse'). This is out of order. But the 'small horse' is also found buried in *strata* above the 'middle horse' too. And we will confirm much more than the most obvious reasons from **scripture** why such 'decrease' and 'disorder' should be expected. And of course I'm talking about the natural result of the 'rough and tumble washing machine cycle' that was The Flood of Noah, and its other consequences, but also about the other significant, widespread *inundations* that followed, which contributed further to all this 'disorder', as we will much more specifically confirm in the later sections.

But all this 'misdirection' only ends up being useful to the *evolutionist*—their ever-changing, constantly rewritten story providing distraction that keeps earlier stories from being exposed. So as new contradictions to their existing, newly-adjusted story are 'dug up'—or not 'dug up', as the case may be—they naturally endeavor to make previous contradictions appear irrelevant as they 'rethink' the 'evolution of horses', and 'dogs', and most all other animals, again and again. And I mean you should recognize this painfully unrelenting but unavoidable 'rethinking process' as another pattern in the behavior of *evolutionists*.

One illustrator of this point is Dr. Gerald Allan Kerkut, a noted British *zoologist* and *physiologist* who attended the University of Cambridge where he earned a doctorate in *zoology*. He went on to establish the Department of Physiology and Biochemistry at the University of Southampton where, though frequently temped with offers from other prestigious Universities, he remained throughout his career. At Southampton he became Professor of Physiology and Biochemistry, and went on to become the Dean of Science, Chairman of the School of Biochemical and Physiological Sciences, and Head of the Department of Neurophysiology. But in 1953. Dr. Kerkut more or less 'shot his career in the foot' by publishing his book, *The Implications of Evolution*.

In this book Dr. Kerkut pointed out some existing 'unsolved problems' and 'points of concern' in the Theory of Evolution. He referred to seven 'evolutionary assumptions' which he felt lacked sufficient 'evidentiary support'. Creationists have naturally taken these points as evidence against the Theory of Evolution, and

interpreted them to support their own claims, kind of like I'm doing throughout this exposé. An example of this from Dr. Kerkut's 'crippling misfire' is that he admitted,

The evolution of the horse provides one of the keystones in teaching of evolutionary doctrine, though the actual story depends to a large extent upon who is telling it and when the story is being told. In fact one could easily discuss the evolution of the story of the evolution of the horse (*The Implications of Evolution*, Pergamon Press, London, 1960, p.144).

Uh-huh, he's not only telling us that the "story" is different for every 'storyteller', but that their 'rethinking' of their 'storylines' is a 'regular and routine practice'.

And we shouldn't forget the 'forgotten, dead and buried' Dr. Nils Heribert-Nilsson. Though cited by Dr. Velikovsky—and surely to some degree because of that—His work is mostly ignored if not entirely unknown today, though I expect he may eventually be revived from the dead too, I mean, as Drs. Goldschmidt, Hoyle and Wickramasinghe are starting to be. He was a Swedish geneticist and Professor of Botany at the University of Lund in Sweden, and a member of the Royal Swedish Academy of Sciences. Two years before he died, Dr. Nilsson finished a two volume work entitled *Synthetische Artbildung* ("Synthetic Speciation"). In this work Dr. Heribert-Nilsson wrote,

My attempts to demonstrate Evolution by an experiment carried on for more than 40 years have completely failed. At least, I should hardly be accused of having started from a preconceived antievolutionary standpoint...

He asserted further that,

It may be firmly maintained that it is not even possible to make a caricature ['a cartoon'] of an evolution out of paleo-biological facts. The fossil material is now so complete that it has been possible to construct new classes, and the lack of transitional series cannot be explained as being due to the scarcity of material. The deficiencies are real, they will never be filled (*Synthetische Artbildung*, Verlag CWK Gleerup Press, Lund, Sweden, 1953, p.1185 and 1212).

Throughout his career, Dr. Nils Heribert-Nilsson was not a *creationist scientist*, but founder of an *evolutionary hypothesis* called *emication*, which is described in the *Quarterly Review of Biology* as follows:

...at various periods in geological time, violent revolutions [or 'cataclysms'] have destroyed all the earth's biota [or *life*], only to have living forms reconstituted by a sudden coming together of organic molecules to form gametes [*sperm* or *eggs*] possessing the capability of developing into some highly complex form such as a pine tree, and elephant, or a man.

So this is apparently another version of the Hopeful Monster Theory which was proposed by geneticist Dr. Goldschmidt in 1933. In 1954, in a review of Dr. Heribert-Nilsson's *opus magnum* ("great work"), *Synthetische Artbildung* ("Synthetic

Speciation"), in *Science* magazine, Joel Hedgpeth summarizes the thesis of this "elegantly printed two-volume opus" as follows:

The concept of evolution as a continuously flowing process can be proved only on Lamarckian lines, [not by *natural selection*] since "evolution and Lamarckism are inseparable because they include the same fundamental ideas." There is no proof from the data of genetic recombinations or mutations to support the generally accepted concept of evolution; therefore, evolution is not occurring at this time. Nor does it seem to have occurred in the past, since the fossil record is the result of piling up and preservation of world biota during the periods when the nearness of the moon [read instead, of Venus or Mars] induced tremendous tidal action (the "Tethys sea") and freezing at high latitudes because of the pulling of air toward the equator hastened such preservation. During these revolutionary periods there was resynthesis of the entire world biota by gene material or gametes along the same basic lines (hence, there is no point to phylogenies [where "links" supposedly show 'development of species'], since the similarities of organic life are due to the synthetic activity of similar "gametes"); this process is termed "emication" (Review of *Synthetische Artbildung*, *Science*, Aug. 13, 1954, Vol.120, no.3111, p.257-258).

Apparently unaware of the Theory of Continental Drift, as it was not a commonly accepted theory at the time, Dr. Heribert-Nilsson believed there were tremendous *tsunamis* (formerly known as *tidal waves*) to explain the fact that many *fossil floras* (*fossil plants*) contained *species* whose 'modern relatives' live far removed from and in different *climates* than the sites where they were deposited. Interesting. Now if he could just drop the billions of years, and recognize how impossible it is to make *life*—except for God—he'd be a lot closer to **the truth**. And we'll see that *plants* were not the only *biota* 'far removed' from where they came from as a result of "violent revolutions" by "tremendous tidal action" in the later sections. And also that *water* alone was not the sole cause. *Continental drift* evidently played a role too, except we will also see that in these "violent revolutions", *continental drift* was more like 'continental roaring rapids'.

But of course Dr. Heribert-Nilsson's final contribution in 1954 has been largely ignored, though he really goes a step further than the earlier Hopeful Monster Theory, establishing the Theory of Catastrophism as the major *environmental cause* of **so-called** 'hopeful monsters'. And here we have another *evolutionist* that concludes that *cataclysms* are the cause of 'major jumps' in *evolution*—who'd have thunk? And Dr. Heribert-Nilsson doesn't 'horse around' with the 'evidence' for *evolution* at all, but clearly exposes the lack of it, in one example saying,

The family tree of the horse is beautiful and continuous only in the textbooks... The construction of the whole Cenozoic family tree [over the supposed last 65 million years—read, over the last near 4500 years] of the horse is therefore a very artificial one, since it is put together from non-equivalent [read, *stratigraphically* 'out of order' and therefore apparently 'reverse-developed'] parts... [This quote is from somewhere in *Synthetic Speciation* too.]

And Dr. Hoyle also showed some of his 'horse sense' when he summed up this topic, saying,

From 1860 onward the more distant fossil record became a big issue, and over the next two decades discoveries were made that at first seemed to give support to the theory, particularly the claimed discovery of a well-ordered sequence of fossil 'horse' dating back about 45 million years. Successes like this continue to be emphasized both to students and the public, but usually without the greater failures being mentioned. Horses according to the theory should be connected to other orders of mammals, which common mammalian stock should be connected to reptiles, and so on backward through the record. Horses should thus be connected to monkeys and apes, to whales and dolphins, rabbits, bears. ... But such connections have not been found. Each mammalian order can be traced backward for about 60 million years [read, near 4500 years] and then, with only one exception the orders vanish without connections to anything at all... (*Mathematics of Evolution*, 1987, republished in 1999, p.107).

And remember Dr. Raup of the Chicago Museum of Natural History? He tried to 'break' this still 'runaway bucking bronco' too, saying,

Well, we are now about 120 years after Darwin and the knowledge of the fossil record has been greatly expanded. We now have a quarter of a million fossil species but the situation hasn't changed much. The record of evolution is still surprisingly jerky and, ironically, we have even fewer examples of evolutionary transition than we had in Darwin's time. By this I mean that some of the classic cases of Darwinian change in the fossil record, such as the evolution of the horse in North America, have had to be discarded or modified [or 'rethought'] as a result of more detailed information... ("*Conflicts Between Darwin and Paleontology*", *Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin*, Vol.50, 1979, p.25).

And you should be aware, *fossils* are not only commonly found 'out of order', but whole *strata* are too. Maybe you've heard that the "Geological Column", or more simply, "Geologic Column" of *strata*, from the *Cambrian*, (the usually lowest *layer* that sits on the *bedrock*, or "Genesis rock"), all the way up to the assumed most recent *Cenozoic*, (the *layer* that usually sits on top of all the others), is never found anywhere completely, and again, often 'out of order'. I mean *layers of sedimentary rock* containing *fossils* that are supposedly 'younger' are all too often found beneath allegedly 'older' *strata*, including with *deposits of igneous rock* (or *volcanic rock*) 'between' or 'splitting through' any number of such *layers*. Drs. Richard B. Bliss, Gary E. Parker and Duane Gish of the Institute of Creation Research, in their book, *Fossils: Key to the Present*, put it this way...

You cannot go out and see the geologic column because it does not exist anywhere. All real rock layers include gaps [or "missing layers"], and even reversals [*layers/fossils* 'out of evolutionary order'] from the perfect sequence... If the entire geological column were found in one place, it

would be as much as 210 kilometers [130 miles] deep. Actually sedimentary rocks in any one place are never more than about 19-24 miles deep (p.14).

So the best place to find even the Geologic Column itself is, yes, in the imagination.

And though we've already seen evidence from *polonium halos* and *coal formations* that even "Genesis rock" cannot be billions of years old, but only thousands, let's 'turn over' another 'shovel full' anyway. I mean let's consider a couple of the 'more revealing moments' of 'scientists' on the subject of the 'dating of rock', and that is, by *radiometric dating methods*.

Dr. Edmund Maute Spieker, now as obscure as any *evolutionist* could want, Professor Emeritus of Geology and Mineralogy at The Ohio State University, was a member of , a field worker for, and published by the U.S. Geological Survey, and hailed by the U.S.G.S. as one of the preeminent *geologist* of his time. He received his PhD in 1921 from Johns Hopkins University, and joined the faculty of the Department of Geology of The Ohio State University in 1924, became professor in 1932, chairman of the department from 1944 to 1952, and a research professor in 1952, but also founded and ran other departments in the university. Dr. Spieker's most notable contributions to *geology* included his work that relates to the *time-scale* of *mountain-building*. He was also considered an authority on the *stratigraphy* (the mapping of *strata*) and structure of Cretaceous and Tertiary *sedimentary rocks* in the *transition* zone between the Great Basin and the Colorado Plateau in Utah. (By-the way, the Great Basin is between the Rocky Mountains on the east and the Sierra Nevada and Cascade Mountains on the west.) He was also a Fellow of the Ohio Academy of Science, a member of the Geological Society of America, in the American Association for the Advancement of Science, in the Paleontological Society, and others. He served as a consultant to the Department of Defense, on the American Commission of Stratigraphic Nomenclature, (the guys who get to name and catalogue 'geological stuff'), and as a Distinguished Lecturer of the American Association of Petroleum Geologist

(https://kb.osu.edu/dspace/bitstream/handle/1811/22566/V078N5_284.pdf;jsessionid=D15BF3E37B74530EC494A97E5A3742EF?sequence=1, p.287- scroll down to find his name; see also the "Memorial to Edmund Maute Spieker" at <https://www.geosociety.org/documents/gsa/memorials/v10/Spieker-EM.pdf>).

The above information about Dr. Spieker, found in the *1978-09 Necrology* (read, "obituary") of *The Knowledge Bank* of The Ohio State University, is included because it was really, really hard to find. But it was also evidently published in the *Ohio Journal of Science*, Vol. 78, Issue 5, September 1978. After I found his full name, I was able to also find an additional "memorial". But why should information about such a 'distinguished', 'top' *geologist* be so hard to find? Probably because, again, he is only 'famous' (and sometimes with his name misspelled) on *creationist* websites for admitting that the *geologic time-scale* is based predominantly on the *paleontological evidence* alone, that is, on the imaginary Geologic Column, rather than on any *radiometric dating* 'evidence', since such 'evidence' is always 'adjusted' to match if possible, and discarded if not. Dr. Spieker put himself 'between a rock and a hard place', and into obscurity, when he stated,

And what essentially is this actual time-scale... on what criteria does it rest? When all is winnowed out, and the grain reclaimed from the chaff, it is certain that the grain in the product is mainly the paleontologic record [the imaginary Geologic Column] and highly likely that

the physical evidence [including *radiometric dating*] is the chaff.
("Mountain-Building Chronology and Nature of Geologic Time-Scale",
Bulletin of the American Assoc. of Petroleum Geologists, Vol.40, Aug.
1956, p.1803).

And 'nonconforming' *radiometric data* is not the only "chaff". Any physical evidence that casts doubt on the Theory of Evolution is likely to be omitted, covered-up, hidden, even destroyed. For example, the *fossils* of **giants** of all sorts, and **giant** human footprints along side *dinosaur* footprints are a couple of the forms of physical evidence routinely disposed of by *evolutionists*. And we'll get to some of that physical evidence in the next section or two. But really all evidence that contradicts the Theory of Evolution is, quite actively, though evidently quietly (read, **deceitfully**) but systematically (by **principalities and powers**) 'scrubbed' from the record.

And *radiometric dating methods* only 'work' because its users employ 'circular reasoning'. And I mean that all 'methods' of *dating rocks* strictly conform to certain *fossils* often found in them, while the *dating* of the *fossils* themselves strictly conforms to the *evolutionary time-scale* by their 'location' in the preconceived, imaginary, Geologic Column. This is 'loopy', not *science*. And of course this is rarely directly admitted by *evolutionists*. One exception to this though was published in the *Encyclopedia Britannica*. It was an article on Geology by Dr. R. H. Rastall, Fellow of the Geological Society of London, Professor of Geology, Cambridge University, who during his tenure, was frequently published in *Geological Magazine* of the Cambridge University Press. But Dr. Rastall 'dug himself into a hole', really, when he was quoted in England's premier encyclopedia as saying,

It cannot be denied that from a strictly philosophical standpoint geologists are here arguing in a circle. The succession of organisms has been determined by a study of their remains buried in the rocks, and the relative ages of the rocks are determined by the remains of organisms that they contain ("*Geology*", in *Encyclopedia Britannica*, University of Chicago Press, 1956, Vol.10, p.168).

Oops. Since then, *evolutionist* Dr. William D. Stansfield, Emeritus Professor in the Biological Sciences Department, California Polytechnic State University (Cal Poly), has stated,

It is obvious that radiometric techniques may not be the absolute dating methods that they are claimed to be. Age estimates on a given geological stratum by different radiometric methods are often quite different (sometimes by hundreds of millions of years). There is no absolutely reliable long-term radiological 'clock' (*The Science of Evolution*, Macmillan Publishing Co., 1977, p.84).

But closer to the mark, Frederick B. Jueneman, *catastrophic evolutionist*, yes, like Dr. Velikovsky, was a consulting *industrial analytical chemist*, and a member of the "R&D 100" panel which chooses the annual top 100 products developed by academia and industry. Until his own retirement from industry in 1991, he was a longtime member of the analytical committee of SEMI (Semiconductor & Equipment Manufacturers International). And he was a longtime Contributing Editor and columnist for *Research & Development* magazine which he contributed to for

over 3 decades. But even closer to the mark, he also served as Associate Editor of [Kronos](#) and [Aeon](#), both journals that were, at least substantially, "founded, with no apologies, to deal with Velikovsky's work". In an article he wrote for *Industrial Research and Development*, he summarizes well known forecasts of a 'violent revolution' that should have entirely "reset" (read, 'cleaned') all 'radiometric clocks', saying,

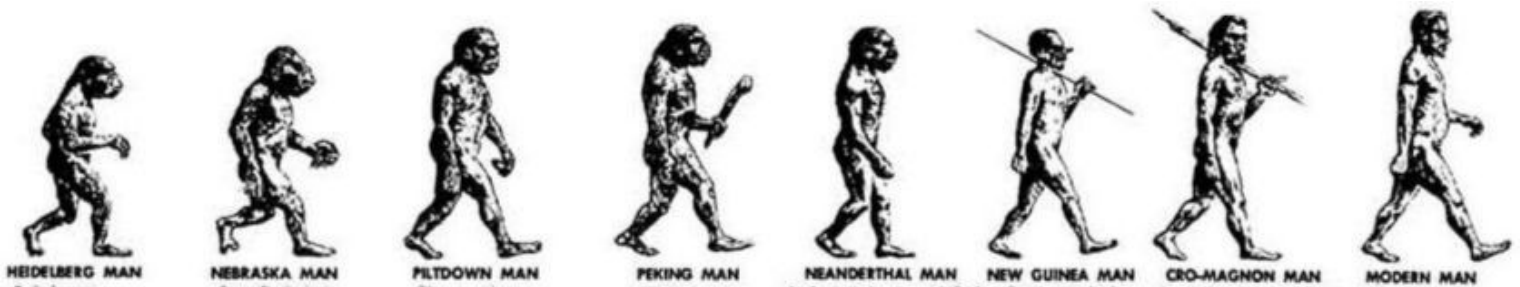
The age of our globe is presently thought to be some 4.5 billion years, based on radio-decay rates of uranium and thorium. Such 'confirmation' may be shortlived, as nature is not to be discovered quite so easily. There has been in recent years the horrible realization that radio-decay rates are not as constant as previously thought, nor are they immune to environmental influences. And this could mean that the atomic clocks are reset during some global disaster, and events which brought the Mesozoic to a close [and the beginning of the supposed 'currently ongoing' Cenozoic] may not be 65 million years ago, but rather, within the age and memory of man ("*Secular Catastrophism*", *Industrial Research and Development*, Vol.24, June 1982, p.21).

So the standard idea that some *fossils* are as old as some *stars* is true. It's just that we're talking a few thousand years, not millions or billions. And the idea that the imaginary Geologic Column is like a 'tape-recording' of the history of Earth that runs uninterrupted from *bedrock* to *topsoil* needs to be entirely 'overturned', widely 'burned', 'electromagnetically discharged' and 'recharged', thoroughly 'washed and tumbled', and all again and again, much like the *strata* has been in the relatively recent past, as we, with Dr. Velikovsky's help, will eventually fully **prove**.

And now that we're digging into the supposed 'latest' and usually 'highest' level of *strata*—the imaginary Cenozoic Age—were finally ready to 'make monkeys' out of *evolutionists*, since they can in no way any longer 'make monkeys' out of the rest of us. I mean, at least those of us who are paying attention, anyway, because if you were to get 'a box', say, the size of a coffin, and gather all the supposed 'real evidence' for the *evolution* from *ape* to *man*, it would all fit in that single coffin. But of course, none of the *bones* that *evolutionists* say belong in that 'box' really **rightly** do, because even that easily containable amount of 'evidence' is just as easily verifiable as entirely either *ape bones*, or *human bones*, with nothing at all in between. And by the way, this 'coffin' has been continually emptied over time, sometimes at a faster rate than it's being refilled, but there has never been any thing substantial in it really, now or ever, which wasn't 'fraudulently identified' and/or 'fabricated', because, as with all other *species*, there's no such thing as an 'evolutionary link' between the *species* of *ape* and *man*. But see the '**March of Evolution**' diagram on [p.207](#) anyway, as we're going to have some fun with it.

Dr. William. L. Straus, Jr., possibly misnamed William I. Straus. Jr., or misidentified as a New York publisher, and quite difficult to find information about online, was a *physical anthropologist*

who taught at Johns Hopkins University for nearly 40 years in the early to middle 20th Century, and who made detailed *anatomical* and *neuromuscular* studies of *apes* and *monkeys*, also investigating the *evolution* of *erect bipedal posture*. He concluded In the *Quarterly Review of Biology*, that,



I wish to emphasize that I am under no illusion that the theory of human ancestry which I favor at the present time can in any way be regarded as proven. One cannot assume that man is a made-over anthropoid ape of any sort. For much of the available evidence is strongly against that assumption [publication date unknown].

Roy Chapman Andrews, *explorer, adventurer, naturalist* and *mammologist* who received his M.A. from Columbia University, was a director of the American Museum of Natural History, and the person that some argue was the inspiration for the fictional character "Indiana Jones". Such an association makes sense because he is otherwise primarily known for leading a series of expeditions through China and Mongolia in the early 20th Century. The expeditions made important discoveries and brought the first-known *fossil dinosaur eggs* to the museum. His popular writings about his adventures made him famous, though George Lucas has not admitted he based his character on Mr. Andrews. But he is not still as well known as he used to be, probably at least partly because somewhere along the way in his 'adventures' he observed,

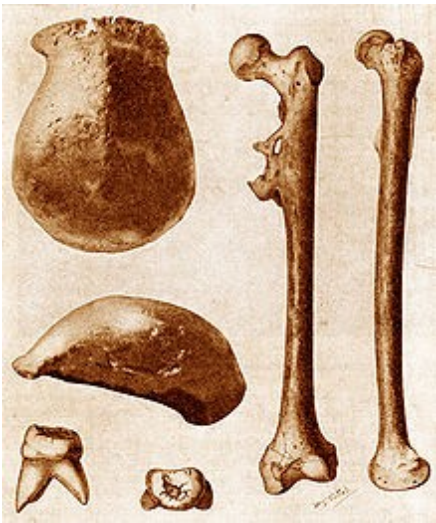
There is still no general agreement as to where true *Homo sapiens*, the men of our own species, developed.

But more recently, Dr. Henry Gee—remember he's the editor of *Nature* magazine—said,

Fossil evidence of evolutionary history is fragmentary and open to various interpretations. Fossil evidence of chimpanzee evolution is absent altogether ("*Return to the Planet of the Apes*", *Nature*, Vol. 412, July 2001, p.131).

So let's start with the evidence that helped establish the 'theory' of the *evolution* of *ape* to *man*, most of which has been long since, by most *evolutionists*, 'tossed out of the box', including Java Man, Peking Man, Piltdown Man, Nebraska Man, and Heidelberg Man. And maybe never really 'in the box' but certainly still questionable at best as 'full-fledged missing links' between *ape* and *man* are Neanderthal Man and Cro-Magnon Man. But also we need to expose the most recent clearly fraudulent newcomers to 'the box'. These are a couple supposed versions of our 'oldest ancestor' named *Australopithecus*. And that would be Lucy and Ardi. And there is also a tribe, evidently of short stature, whose remains were considered by some to be eligible for 'the box', but only for a very short time, because they were not only removed, but 'scrubbed' from the record when this remote people were shortly thereafter found still 'alive and well'.

And yes, I said most of these *bones* have been or are in danger of being 'tossed out'. But with new 'spin' and the 'slightest sliver of a shadow of doubt'—though there isn't really one at all—and since there's still no other better 'evidence', and



since outright deception is entirely acceptable in the 'scientific community'—it's really the only way to get the 'big money' grants nowadays after all—and with the help of some really good artists using their appropriately 'misdirected imaginations', most of these *bones* have been 'returned to the box', and are now over-flowing it. Still we're only talking maybe 'a couple coffins worth' at best, which is still nothing really, especially given how scant and admittedly "poor" all the **so-called** 'evidence' is.

Java Man, originally *Pithecanthropus erectus*—meaning "erect ape man"—now *Homo erectus erectus*, (the second '*erectus*' distinguishing it as the first in the line and from other classifications of *homo erectus*), is one of them that was 'tossed out', then later 'returned to the box', and it's

one of the earliest 'finds'. It is dated at about half a million years old, and it was originally imagined as an 'ape-man' in its entirety from just 3 small pieces of *bone*—a *skullcap*, a *femur* and a *tooth* (each shown in the drawing on p.208 from two angles). However these "pieces" were not verified to have been found together as they were gathered by 'conscripted prisoners'—by 'chain-gang archeology', if you will—in 1891 on the island of Java, Indonesia. The supervising scientist, Dutch *anatomist* Dr. Eugene Dubois later admitted that the *bones* were more likely from a *gibbon*, meaning they were fully *ape bones*. However there were later similar



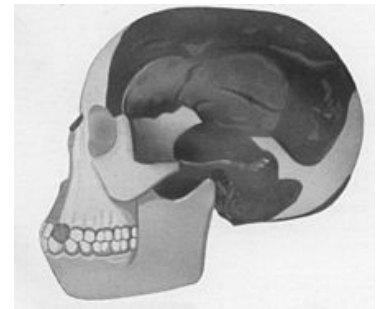
'finds' on Java starting in 1936, though "poor" presentation and interpretation is again indicated with these **so-called** 'finds', (read, 'they're really just *gibbon bones* too'). But even more recently, these *bones*, by 'propaganda' and 'subterfuge', are again considered by some *evolutionists*—obviously not any who are concerned with "good" presentation and interpretation—to be 'back in the box'.

Peking Man, now known as *Homo erectus pekinensis*, (bust depiction, p.208), another example of the classification of *Homo erectus*, started with a group of *fossil fragments* discovered from 1923-27 during excavations at Zhoukoudian (Chou K'ou-tien) near Beijing (formerly Peking), China. More recently, the 'finds' have been dated from roughly 750,000 years ago, and even more recently by a new *radiometric dating method* at 680,000–780,000 years old. Yep, right in the ballpark of agreement with the

Geologic Column 'fossil-to-strata' established age that they were looking for in the first place. You are seeing the 'loopy pattern' here, right?

Anyway, between 1929 and 1937, 15 *partial crania* (or pieces of *skulls*—all extremely fragmented), 11 *mandibles*, many *teeth*, some, though curiously few, *skeletal bones*, and large numbers of *stone tools* were discovered in the Lower Cave of the Peking Man Site at Zhoukoudian. Their ages were estimated at the time to be between 500,000 and 300,000 years old—I mean maybe they didn't have their 'stories' fully straight yet on the 'fossil to strata' ages. A number of *fossils* of *modern humans* were also discovered in the Upper Cave at the same site in 1933. Most of the bones were *skull parts* and *highly fragmentary* (read, 'smashed with the tools found with them'). The most complete *fossils* were all 'pieces' of *calvaria*—*skullcaps*.

It is interesting to note that the lead scientist in the study of these *fossils* was Canadian *paleoanthropologist*, FRS, Dr.



Davidson Black, until his death in 1934, when French philosopher and Jesuit priest, who trained as a *paleontologist* and *geologist*, Pierre Teilhard de Chardin took over for a short time, until in 1935 when Dr. Franz Weidenreich, a Jewish German *anatomist* and *physical anthropologist*, accepted the position of honorary director of the Cenozoic Research Laboratory until he left China in 1941, the same year the *fossils disappeared* (duh, Duh DUH!—yeah, I’m going for one of those ‘old-school scary movie soundtrack clips’). However excellent *casts*, supposedly of these *bones*, including those shown on p.208, along with their descriptions, remain. But this isn’t even the best reason that some ‘crime scene investigation’ is called for. And where is a **good** CSI when you need one! I mean what we have is two caves, one with *human bones*, and another with mostly clearly identifiably ‘shattered’—and what they don’t want to tell you—*monkey skulls*, because the *tools* include *hammers* and others that would be appropriate for extracting *monkey brains* from these ‘cracked-open’ *skulls*, which gives the ‘scientists’, (in this case evidently not including any **good** CSI’s), a lot of ‘leeway’ in ‘reconstructing’ such ‘fragmentary evidence’.

Did you see that scene in the Indiana Jones movie where they were ‘eating monkey brains’—in China. This evidently at least used to be a ‘delicacy’ there, kind of like snails in France. And any **good** CSI could tell you that what they really found at the Peking Man Site is circumstances that contributed to this ‘cultural peculiarity’. And I mean that this must have been a time when Man, having resorted to *caves* for shelter, was also inclined, maybe even forced as a means of survival, to *eat monkey brains*. Course you’d need a **good** CSI at this point, one who was also a ‘spiritually mature Biblical scholar’, or all you can expect to ‘collar’ here is ‘primitive cavemen’. But there’s more ‘CSI work’ concerning this case and others to follow.

It is also interesting to note that a couple of the original discoverers of *Peking Man*, ‘fossil hunters’ Swedish *geologist* Johan Gunnar Andersson and American *paleontologist* Walter W. Granger came to Zhoukoudian in search of ‘prehistoric fossils’ in 1921. They were directed to what would become the Peking Man Site by local quarrymen, where Andersson recognized deposits of quartz that were not native to the area. Realizing the importance of this find he apparently turned to his colleague and announced,

Here is primitive man; now all we have to do is find him! (story and quote displayed at the Peking Man Site Museum).

I mean *evolutionists* were for a long time desperate to find evidence to support the ‘evolution of man’, especially in the early decades of the 20th Century, and especially those that could be imagined to show the supposed *evolution* from *ape* to *man*, since, up to this point, and still today, the ‘evidence’, as they call it, is so scarce. So we should notice another pattern here and see it repeated as we proceed, that *evolutionists* go looking for the evidence they want, and find it, or say they have found it, even when they know they really have not. It is also amusing to note that the first thing they found is a few teeth that they declared to be, though primitive, “human”. And this is another pattern really, that it takes little to no physical evidence—preferably as little as possible really—to convince an *evolutionist* of what he’s already convinced of solely by the help of his imagination, especially if there is a ‘big payday’ to be had. I mean in the first 5 years of this ‘dig’ they only found 3 apparently “human” teeth, but were nonetheless ‘positively sure’, with the money flowing, that the evidence was sufficient to continue.

The case in point being that this ‘evidence’, I mean the first *human tooth*, was

enough for Dr. Davidson Black, FRS, already nearby at the Peking Union Medical College, to, excited by Mr. Andersson's find, secure funding from the Rockefeller Foundation, (yes, one of those well-funded 'Christian culture oppressors', otherwise appropriately identified as an outright 'satanic front organization'). Dr. Black recommenced excavations at the site in 1927 with both Western and Chinese scientists. The next *tooth* was unearthed that fall, which Dr. Black obtained.

Dr. Black published his analysis in the scientific journal *Nature*, identifying his 'find', at this point evidently including only a few *human teeth*, as belonging to a new *species* and *genus* which he named *Sinanthropus pekinensis*. However, at an evidently much more 'honest' time than we're experiencing today, many of his fellow scientists were skeptical about such an identification on the basis of such scant evidence, and the foundation—obviously in danger of embarrassment—demanded more specimens before it grant additional money.

And now we can even predict a pattern. Grant money available only on the condition of the discovery of 'new evidence' is the best way to ensure that someone will find some. And we'll see this pattern repeated too before were done.

Naturally, the *lower jaw*, several *teeth*, and *skull fragments* of what we were assured were from an 'ape-man' were unearthed in 1928. See again an artist's rendering of these *fragments*, and the *skull* they supposedly belong to on p.208. And naturally—and I mean otherwise the money would have stopped flowing—Dr. Black presented these 'finds' to the foundation and was rewarded an additional \$80,000 grant—back then quite a lot of money—that he used to establish the Cenozoic Research Laboratory, surely including a paycheck for himself.

Further *excavations* at the site under the supervision of Chinese *archaeologists* uncovered 200 *human fossils* (including six nearly complete *skullcaps*) from more than 40 individual *specimens*. These *excavations* came to an end in 1937 with the Japanese invasion. But a bigger assault on—or insult of—our imaginations is that with so many entirely *human* remains found, and otherwise remains that were plainly entirely of *monkey*, especially along with the *tools* that would facilitate the 'extraction and eating' of their *brains*—evidently including *human* ones too—any scant evidence of what is hoped to be 'ape-man bones' is plainly not worth even considering. I mean are we supposed to believe that *fossils* that are considered 'missing links', and predecessors of *modern man*, can be buried together, and therefore be of the same age as those of the Modern Man and *monkeys* found with them? It's a rhetorical question.

By-the-way, the *fossils* of Peking Man were placed in the safe at the Cenozoic



Research Laboratory at the Peking Union Medical College. In November 1941, a secretary at the college packed the *fossils* so that they could be sent to The United States for safekeeping until the end of WWII. The fossils vanished en route in northern China, or maybe sank with the ship that carried them

Excavations at Zhoukoudian resumed after the war, but didn't amount to much, but were resumed again in 2009. This evidently was enough time for most to forget how scant and "poor" the evidence for Peking Man was. In this case, as in some of the others to follow, we'll see that time not only 'heals all

wounds', but it can also 'obscure all fraud' and other misrepresentation too, which is the only way the *bones* of Peking Man, well, the surviving *casts* of them anyway, eventually found their way 'back into the box'.

Group portrait of the Piltdown Man scientists by John Cooke, 1915. Back row (from left): F. O. Barlow, Grafton Elliot Smith, Charles Dawson, Arthur Smith Woodward. Front row: A. S. Underwood, Arthur Keith, William Plane Pycraft, and Sir Ray Lankester (p.210).

But a couple decades after the ‘discovery’ of Java Man, and near that long before the first *tooth* of Peking Man was found, the real ‘driving force’ of the ‘hope and dreams’ of *evolutionary anthropologists* was Piltdown Man. And it remained that ‘hope’ for the Theory of Evolution from its unveiling in 1912 to beyond the middle of the century, until it was finally acknowledged as the crudest of hoaxes in 1953. The Piltdown Man *fossil bone fragments* were presented and projected as the remains of an entire *race of ape-men*, but originally consisted of parts of just one *skull* and a *jaw bone*, so named “Piltdown” after the gravel pit where these *fragments* were supposedly found in East Sussex, England. Its Latin name, *Eoanthropus dawsoni* (“Dawson's dawn-man”), was given to these *fragments* honoring the ‘fossil hunter’ that originally presented them to the ‘scientific community’, Charles Dawson. He was a British *amateur archaeologist* who was credited with and now blamed for multiple ‘discoveries’ that altogether turned out to be, for their time, ‘imaginative’ frauds.

Mr. Dawson took *fragments* of a *skull*, supposedly gathered from the Piltdown Man Site, to Arthur Smith Woodward, FRS, Keeper of the Geological Department at the British Museum. Greatly interested in the ‘find’, Mr. Woodward accompanied Dawson to the site. The two worked together between June and September 1912, but it was Dawson alone who recovered more *skull fragments* and half of the *lower jaw bone*. The significance of the ‘find’ remained the subject of controversy—it was the *fragmentary remains* of just one *skull* and *jaw* after all—but remember it wasn’t openly exposed as a forgery until 1953, four decades after it’s discovery. The *fossil fragments* were actually the *jawbone* of an *orangutan* deliberately combined with the *skull* of a *modern human*, and made to look ‘authentic’ with *coloring* and a little *filig* of the *teeth*.

And though Mr. Woodward’s involvement with the Piltdown Man Hoax eventually hurt his reputation, his involvement with it was largely responsible for his many awards before the fraud was exposed, including the Linnean Medal of the Linnean Society, and the Clarke Medal of the Royal Society of New South Wales, a Royal Medal from the Royal Society, as well as the Lyell and Wollaston Medals of the Geological Society, all these honors coming after the discovery of the Piltdown Man *fossils*. He retired from the museum in 1924, but in 1942 Mr. Woodward was awarded the Mary Clark Thompson Medal from the American National Academy of Sciences—still over a decade before the hoax was openly exposed.

Dr. Davidson Black, who as you should remember later went on to become the lead *scientist* in control of the Peking Man *fossils*, and a Fellow of the Royal Society, as well as Chairman of the Geological Survey of China, was in his earlier years a ‘fossil hunter’ too, as well as a ‘gold prospector’. In 1906, Dr. Black received his degree in *medical science* from the University of Toronto. He continued there studying *comparative anatomy*, and in 1909 became an *anatomy instructor*. But in 1914 he spent half a year working under *neuroanatomist* Sir Dr. Grafton Elliot Smith, in Manchester, England. Sir Dr. Smith was studying the Piltdown Man *fossils* during this time. So this hoax, of all things, apparently ignited Dr. Black’s interest in *human evolution*, but more importantly, gave him experience of how to ‘handle the evidence’ for it, specifically that ‘extremely limited’ and ‘highly questionable evidence’ would nonetheless be very favorably received by his colleagues. Of course this is where some more ‘crime scene investigation’ should take place. I

mean we're talking about a former 'facilitator' of the Piltdown Man Hoax who winds up in charge, for a time, of the Peking Man *fossils*. Isn't this, besides the very slim amount of 'evidence', and the comparative abundance of contradictory *modern human* evidence found with it at the Peking Man Site, enough to reject *Peking Man* altogether too? This is another rhetorical question for me anyway.

It is also revealing of our 'naturally' **proud** and **haughty, carnal mind** to point out that Dr. Black's one-time boss, Sir Grafton, who had his own self-serving agenda, was finally opposed by Dr. Black, who developed a 'theory' that 'better elevated' his own 'contributions'. And I mean that Sir Grafton was evidently anxious, even arguably desperate considering the 'evidence' he accepted as 'valid', to establish that the 'first man' had his origin in Europe, but apparently no more anxious or desperate than Dr. Black became to produce and support 'evidence' that Man instead originated in Asia.

Sir Dr. Grafton Elliot Smith, FRS and FRCP (Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians), was an Australian-British *anatomist*, his agenda, again, ultimately opposed to Dr. Black's 'Asian leaning' one, was the hunt for evidence that established that "Stone Age Man" had their origin in Europe, and was 'diffused' or "hyperdiffused" around the World from there. However his idea of 'Europe', which was supported by his colleague Sir Arthur Keith and many others, included Mediterranean North Africa, and especially Egypt where they believed it really all began. They also considered the 'large-brained' Cro-Magnon Man, as well as the Neanderthal Man finds as 'corroborating evidence' of the 'European origin' of Modern Man.

Sir Dr. Smith received his degree in *medicine* at the University of Sydney in 1895 with a dissertation on the *fore-brain* of *monotremes* (*mammals* that *lay eggs*), and therefore developed an interest in the *anatomy* of the *human brain*. Awarded a scholarship at Cambridge in 1896, he then catalogued the 'human brain-collection' of the British Museum. From 1900-1909 he was the first chairholder of *anatomy* at the Cairo School of Medicine and investigated the *brains* of Egyptian *mummies*, and was the first to *x-ray* a *mummy*. And he did all this before he got his hands on the *skull* and *jaw fragments* of Piltdown Man. Is it reasonable that such a man could be fooled by such 'fabricated evidence'? Either way, clearly his 'evolutionary agenda' was more important to him than the 'evidence'.

Sir Arthur Keith, by-the-way, was a Scottish *anatomist* and *anthropologist*, who became a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons of England (FRCS) and Hunterian Professor and Conservator of the Hunterian Museum of the Royal College of Surgeons in London. He was a leading figure in the study of *human fossils*, ultimately becoming President of the Royal Anthropological Institute, where related to his tenure there, he wrote, *A New Theory of Human Evolution*, which supported his 'pet agenda' which was that the 'evolution of man' was facilitated by tribal or "group selection". And Sir Dr. Arthur Keith was entirely taken in by the Piltdown Man Hoax too, showing he also was more interested in his 'evolutionary agenda' than the 'evidence'. But this **deceived** and/or **deceiving** 'evolutionary ambition' is not really what he's still most remembered for today. He is instead more famous, it could be argued anyway, for something he said, though *evolutionists* claim he never said it. He supposedly said,

Evolution is unproved and unprovable. We believe it because the only alternative is special Creation, and that is unthinkable.

And whether he specifically said this or not, it's clear that he believed it, because he would not consider the opinions of some of his colleagues—the first in 1913—that

identified all the 'pieces' involved in the Piltdown Man Hoax as either *ape* or *human*, and nothing in between. So the question is only to what degree he and all his colleagues were **deceived** and/or to what degree they were **deceivers**.

But it's not like all these **blind** and/or **deceiving evolutionists** that supported 'ape-man theory' got along. And this is where the plot thickens. At a meeting of the Geological Society of London on December 18, 1912, Mr. Dawson claimed that a workman at the Piltdown gravel pit had given him a *fragment* of the *skull* four years earlier. According to Mr. Dawson, workmen at the site discovered the *skull* shortly before his visit and broke it up in the belief that it was a *fossilized coconut*. Mr. Dawson said that it was on subsequent visits to the site that he had gathered all the *fragments* that he had finally presented to Mr. Woodward.

But at the same meeting, Mr. Woodward announced that a 'reconstruction' of the *fragments* indicated that the *skull* was in many ways similar to that of a *modern human*, except for the *occiput*, (the part of the *skull* nearest the top of the *spinal column*), and except for the *brain size*, which, by this 'construction', was about $\frac{2}{3}$ that of an *adult modern human*. He went on to indicate that except for the presence of two 'human-like' *molar teeth*, the *jaw bone* found was the same as that of a young *modern chimpanzee*. And it was from the 'reconstruction' of these fraudulently represented *skull fragment*, done at the British Museum, that Mr. Woodward proposed that Piltdown Man represented an *evolutionary* "missing link" between *apes* and *humans*, since the combination of a 'human-like' *cranium* with an 'ape-like' *jaw* tended to support the then prevailing notion in England that *human evolution* began with the *brain*.

But almost from the outset, Mr. Woodward's 'reconstruction' of the Piltdown *fragments* was strongly challenged. At the Royal College of Surgeons copies of the same *fragments* were used to produce an entirely different model, one that in *brain size* and other features resembled a *modern human*. This 'reconstruction' by Professor, and later, Sir Arthur Keith, was called *Homo piltdownensis* due to its more 'human appearance'.

Mr. Woodward's 'reconstruction' added 'apelike' *canine teeth*, which was itself controversial, because it was not clear that such *teeth* belonged to that particular *jaw*. In August 1913, Misters Woodward, Dawson and, here's another familiar name, Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, that Jesuit *paleontologist* and *geologist*, as well as a friend of Mr. Dawson's, began a systematic search, specifically to find those 'missing' *canine teeth*. Mr. Teilhard soon found a *canine* that, according to Mr. Woodward, fitted the *jaw* perfectly. A few days later Mr. Teilhard moved to France and took no further part in the discoveries. However you should remember he took over as lead *scientist* studying the Peking Man *fossils* in 1934, having been similarly prepared for this task as his predecessor, Dr. Black.

Observing that this 'canine-like' *tooth* "corresponds exactly with that of an ape", Mr. Woodward expected an end to any dispute over his 'reconstruction' of the Piltdown Man *skull*. However, Sir Arthur Keith, having his own agenda and self-interests too, attacked the 'find'. He pointed out that *human molars* operate with 'side to side movement' when *chewing*. So he considered the placed "canine" in the *Piltdown jaw* impossible, as it prevented 'side to side movement'. To explain the supposed 'wear' on the *molar teeth*—and we're talking about the 'filing job' done to them, which was 'disguised' from being seen as 'newly done' with a *yellow dye*, remember—Dr. Keith concluded that the *canine* could not have been any higher than the *molars*. But Sir Dr. Grafton Elliot Smith, sided with Mr. Woodward, and at the next Royal Society meeting claimed that Dr. Keith's opposition was motivated entirely by ambition. Now there's a clear case of 'the pot calling the kettle black'. Sir Dr. Keith later recalled, "Such was the end of our long friendship."

And such is the typical ‘prideful’, ‘self-interested behavior’ of ‘top’ *evolutionists* today, except—as the Apostles warn—such men are really only getting **worse and worse**.

And I mean **honesty** and **integrity** apparently used to be more readily practiced than they are today. Remember that just over a hundred years ago, as early as 1913, that the Piltdown Man discoveries were more than just ‘called into question’. In fact this is when Dr. David Waterston of King's College London published his conclusion, in the science journal, *Nature*, that Piltdown Man was an *ape mandible or jaw* and *human skull* (reference provided in Dr. Stephen J. Gould's book, *The Panda's Thumb*, 1980, W.W. Norton and Co., p.108-124.)

French *paleontologist*, Dr. Marcellin Boule, concluded similarly in 1915. However this Piltdown ‘fabrication’ was nonetheless used as significant evidence for Dr. Boule's "branching evolution" *theory* taken from his earlier Neanderthal research. And according to University of Arizona Professor Dr. Michael Hammond, an *historical sociologist*, this ‘research’ helped...

...prepare the international community for the appearance of a non-Neanderthal fossil such as Piltdown Man (*The Expulsion of Neanderthals from Human Ancestry: Marcellin Boule and the Social Context of Scientific Research, Social Studies of Science, Vol.12, Jan. 1982, p.1-36*).

Dr. Boule's ‘reconstruction’ of the ‘hunched’ Neanderthal *skeleton* found in 1908 near the French village of La Chapelle-aux-Saints was one of the most important, though misleading, pieces of research in 20th Century *paleontology*. This “Old Man” was the most complete Neanderthal *skeleton* known at the time. So Dr. Boule's early research was based entirely on the *skeletal fossil remains* of this ‘hunched-over old man’, and though his conclusion was that this ‘slouching caveman’ could not be a link to Modern Man, the figure he created in our imagination of a ‘stooping’ Neanderthal ‘caricature’ made the idea of such an ‘ancestor’ appealing and plausible, and became a major influence setting the stage for the infamous Piltdown forgery. And we'll be more specific about Neanderthal Man a little later.

The third inspection of Piltdown Man by American *zoologist*, Gerrit Smith Miller, also resulted in the conclusion that the *jaw* came from a *fossil ape*. A Harvard graduate, Mr. Miller worked under Dr. Clinton Hart Merriam at the United States Department of Agriculture. He became Assistant Curator of Mammals at the United States National Museum in Washington in 1898, Curator from 1909 to 1940, then an Associate in Biology at the Smithsonian Institution.

And in 1923, Dr. Franz Weidenreich—remember he too later became the lead *scientist* in control of the Peking Man *fossils*—examined the Piltdown remains and correctly reported that they consisted of a *modern human cranium* and an *orangutan jaw* with ‘filed-down’ *teeth*. And who knows, maybe the Peking Man *fossils* ‘disappeared’ from his care because he was about to expose them too. This observation is not undeserved anyway.

But there's more to this story. In 1915, Mr. Dawson claimed to have found 3 *fragments* of a second *skull*—Piltdown II—at a new site, Sheffield Park, supposedly about 2 miles away from the original ‘finds’. However Mr. Woodward attempted several times to confirm this location from Mr. Dawson but was never successful. So no CSI is even needed at this juncture. Apparently the site was never identified, and the ‘find’ was never legitimately documented. Like Java Man, this is another good example of ‘poor presentation and interpretation’—except that Java Man has since been ‘returned to the box’. And Mr. Woodward did manage to get Piltdown II

'into the box' by waiting to present the new 'finds' to the Society until five months after Mr. Dawson's death in August 1916, and he thereafter misled his colleagues that he knew where they had been found. And maybe now you can **better** see, and **continue** to **see**, that this hoax was not so much initiated and perpetuated by Mistery Dawson, Woodward, or Teilhard, nor by Sirs Smith or Keith, but by **your adversary the devil**.

And certainly, despite how incredibly "poor" the 'evidence', Piltdown Man was widely accepted as a genuine 'ape-man'. In 1921, for example, Dr. Henry Fairfield Osborn, FRS, 25-year President of the American Museum of Natural History, examined the Piltdown *fossils* and also the Sheffield Park, Piltdown II 'finds' declaring that the *jaw* and *skull* belonged together "without question" and that the Piltdown II fragments "were exactly those which we should have selected to confirm the comparison with the original type." Dr. Osborn at one point studied under Thomas Henry Huxley, who proclaimed himself to be, "Darwin's Bulldog". Mr. Huxley was a man with little formal education, or 'self-taught', though surely aided by **the power of Satan** as he was the founder of quite an **ungodly** dynasty, which included his *atheist* grandsons Julian and Aldous, which we'll consider again further on. And Dr. Osborn was also made famous partially because of one of the top 'fossil hunters' in his employ, the one rumored to have inspired the Indiana Jones fictional character, Roy Chapman Andrews. And of course Dr. Osborn's 'pet evolutionary agenda' was based on Piltdown Man, which amounts to nothing really, except to further reveal the **depths** of his 'self-obsessed', **ungodly** imagination.

The undocumented Sheffield Park 'find', by-the-way, were nonetheless taken as 'proof' of the authenticity of Piltdown Man. It was reasoned that it may have been chance that brought an 'ape's jaw' and a 'human skull' together, but the odds of it happening twice, as the **so-called** Sheffield Park 'find' supposedly indicates, were judged to be 'slim', and that is, rather than being seen as being 'suspiciously timed' in order to 'shore up' the existing 'slim', 'highly questionable evidence'. And finally even Sir Dr. Keith conceded the validity of this new 'fabricated evidence'.

But Sir Dr. Keith's doubts about it could not have been too consequential, since he, embarrassingly enough, in July 1938, at Barkham Manor, Piltdown, was present to unveil a memorial to mark the site where Piltdown Man was allegedly discovered by Charles Dawson. Sir Arthur finished his speech saying:

So long as man is interested in his long past history, in the vicissitudes which our early forerunners passed through, and the varying fare which overtook them, the name of Charles Dawson is certain of remembrance. We do well to link his name to this picturesque corner of Sussex—the scene of his discovery. I have now

the honour of unveiling this monolith dedicated to his memory (*The Piltdown Man Discovery*, *Nature*, July 30, 1938).



The inscription on the memorial stone reads:

Here in the old river gravel Mr. Charles Dawson, FSA found the fossil skull of Piltdown Man, 1912-1913, The discovery was described by Mr. Charles Dawson and Sir Arthur Smith Woodward, *Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society*, 1913-15 [photo, p.214].

But it wasn't until an article in *Time* magazine, entitled, *End as a Man* on November 30, 1953 that the conclusive evidence that Piltdown Man was a forgery was made public, an account that demonstrated the *fossils* were a composite of three distinct *species*. It reported that *Piltdown Man* consisted of a *human skull* of 'medieval age'—in the ballpark of 1,000 years old, the 500-year-old *lower jaw* of a *Sarawak orangutan*, and *chimpanzee fossil teeth*. 'Someone' had created the appearance of age by *staining* the *bones* with an *iron solution* and *chromic acid*. *Microscopic examination* verified 'file-marks' on the *teeth*, and it was deduced from this that 'someone' had 'modified' the *teeth* to a shape more suited to a 'human diet'.

Remember that one of the reasons that the hoax succeeded so well, besides the 'natural' **fleshly** tendency toward all manner of **lasciviousness** of those in authority, is that at that time the 'scientific establishment' believed that the *large modern brain* was the 'driver' of 'human evolution', and the forgery, in no way coincidentally, provided exactly that 'evidence'—pattern alert! We have also seen that British nationalism and cultural prejudice played a role in the relatively easy acceptance of this 'evidence' as genuine by many English 'scientists'—except maybe by those working near Peking. I mean it became 'a thing' to have a "first Briton" to match with supposed other 'ape-men' that had already been found in Europe, including the Neanderthal Man *fossils* in Germany and France. Yes, evidently even 'national' **pride goeth before... the fall**, ol' chap. And more broadly this fantasy satisfied European expectations that the 'earliest' *humans* would be found in Europe, not Asia. And unfortunately this was one of the best reasons to accept Piltdown Man, since the actual 'evidence' was so clearly questionable, as it was mostly really only Mr. Dawson's 'well-played con', though certainly 'supervised' by the various **rulers of the darkness of this world**, including all manner of **spiritual wickedness in high places**.

But besides Mr. Dawson, and at least some 'cover-up' provided by Mr. Woodward, there is yet more investigation concerning this crime to consider. Mr. Pierre Teilhard de Chardin—who had a hand in both the Piltdown Man and Peking Man 'finds'—became a suspect too when it was connected that he had traveled to regions of Africa where 'unidentified finds' of 'unidentified bones' originated that he had access to. And it makes sense then that he, as well as Mr. Dawson, could have passed such 'specimens' along to a Mr. Martin A. C. Hinton to make the necessary 'modifications'. You see Mr. Hinton joined the staff of the Natural History Museum in London in 1921, working on *mammals*, mostly *rodents*. He became Deputy Keeper of Zoology in 1927, and Keeper in 1936, retiring in 1945—all in exchange for his silence, perhaps? And by this I mean a trunk belonging to Mr. Hinton left in storage at the museum and found in 1970, about 9 years after his death, contained *animal bones* and *teeth* 'carved' and 'stained' much like the Piltdown Man 'finds'. So do we really need a CSI to figure all this out? I mean are we really still **ignorant** of such **devices**?

Sir Arthur Keith, 'on the other hand', likely also 'knew' exactly what 'both his hands' were up to, so to speak, because he was implicated by the research of Dr. Phillip V. Tobias, FRS, a South African *paleoanthropologist*, Professor Emeritus at the University of the Witwatersrand in Johannesburg, who detailed the history of the investigation of the hoax, dismissing 'less-likely theories', and listing 'inconsistencies' in Dr. Keith's statements and actions ("*Piltdown: An Appraisal of the Case against Sir Arthur Keith*", *Current Anthropology*, Vol.33, no.3, June 1992, p.243-293). But I should also point out that evidently the real reason why Dr. Tobias dealt so 'ravenously' with Sir Keith, et al. is that he mainly wanted to discredit the British scientific community's stand on the 'European origin' of Man, in

order to prefer his own stand that Man's 'origin' was instead in South African. So unlike most European *evolutionists*, he had a motive, however equally self-serving, to further expose Piltdown Man as a hoax.

Other investigations of Piltdown Man suggest, as I do, that all these **so-called** 'scientists'—the ones that maintained that Piltdown Man was a 'genuine ape-man'—at least at some point had 'a hand' in the hoax. (See for example: J. S. Weiner, *The Piltdown Forgery*, Oxford University Press, Jan. 29, 2004, p.190-197.) And it should also be noted that Mr. Dawson is now known to have been a perpetrator of other 'archaeological hoaxes' in the years preceding the Piltdown Man 'discovery', including 'placing' dozens of 'fake fossils' and 'artifacts'. And all I mean is that all men without God naturally resort to deception, fraud, bribery, extortion, and all manner of oppression against those who would attempt to expose them, or attempt to in any way moderate their **fleshly lusts** and **pride**. And remember both Peter and Paul tell us that things are only getting **worse and worse**, evidently meaning that though this past scandal did not result in any **murders**—as far as I know—surely nowadays such 'international cover-ups' not only involve just **murder**, but 'escalating body counts'. In other words, what I see happening today makes the Piltdown Man Hoax seem like just 'playground bullying' in comparison.

But I should mention one more formidable **ungodly** character who supported the Piltdown Man Hoax. This is the last person on the right in the portrait on [page 210](#) of the main 'scientists' that were involved. Beside him is his esteemed assistant, *zoologist* William Plane Pycraft, who in 1907 took charge of *osteology* (the study of bones) at London's Natural History Museum. Was he a 'yes man'? Probably. But I'm talking about his boss, and the only "knight" at the time of the discovery in this portrait. This would be Sir Edwin Ray Lankester, FRS and KCB (Knight Commander in the Order of the Bath, a military order of chivalry known as the Knights of Bath). He was a British *zoologist*, another, by-the-way, who studied under Thomas Huxley at Oxford, before becoming a Fellow of Oxford's Exeter College. Sir Ray was appointed Jodrell Professor of Zoology at University College London from 1874 to 1890, Linacre Professor of Comparative Anatomy at Oxford University from 1891 to 1898, and director of the Natural History Museum, accompanied by his assistant, Mr. Pycraft, from 1898 to 1907. He was a founder in 1884 of the Marine Biological Association and served as its second President between 1890 and 1929. He was an influential teacher and author on *biological theories, comparative anatomy, and evolution*. Specifically he studied *protozoa, mollusks, and arthropods*, attempting to document Darwin's "tree of life" in the process, of course. He was knighted in 1907, was awarded the Linnean Society of London's Darwin-Wallace Medal in 1908, and received the Copley Medal of the Royal Society in 1913, months after the Piltdown Man 'discovery'—all this allowing him to offer his supposedly 'legitimate and substantial support' and 'authority' to both the 1908 Neanderthal Man 'find' and the 1912-15 Piltdown Man 'finds'.

And Sir Ray had what was considered a far better education than most English *biologists* of the previous generation. Even so, it could be argued that the influence of his father Edwin and his friends were just as important. Thomas Huxley, for example, was a close friend of the family, (*The Scientific Memoirs of Thomas Henry Huxley*, Vol.I. Macmillan & Co. London, 1898—upon Huxley's death, as a memorial tribute, Sirs Lankester and Michael Foster edited Huxley's collected works in 4 volumes), and while he was still a child young Ray apparently met most all the 'great evolutionary scientist' of his father's day, including, if you'll pardon no explanation of their credentials, Sir Joseph Dalton Hooker, FRS, CB, OM, GCSI, William Kingdon Clifford, FRS, Sir Richard Owen, FRS, KCB, Edward Forbes FRS, FGS, William Benjamin Carpenter, FRS, CB, Sir Roderick Impey Murchison, FRS, KCB, DCL,

FRSE, FLS, PRGS, PBA, MRIA, Baron Sir Charles Lyell, FRS, and Charles Robert Darwin, FRS. So how influential was he? Though perhaps more influential as a teacher than as a researcher, Dr. Ernst Mayr, one of the 20th Century's leading *evolutionary scientist* who we have identified and quoted earlier, got to the 'root' of his influence on the forthcoming Neo-Darwinian Theory, saying,

It was Lankester who founded a school of [natural] selectionism at Oxford.

This quote, by-the-way, is from another insufficiently referenced source—but again, totally in character. In other words, few would argue that Sir Ray, though not as charismatic as Thomas Huxley, was another of 'Darwin's bulldogs', yet apparently also a leader in the split from the purely *Darwinian* or *Lamarckian* idea of the 'inheritance' of 'acquired characteristics' influenced by 'environmental factors' toward Neo-Darwinism or Modern Evolutionary Synthesis driven by *natural selection* and *survival of the fittest* through *variation* enhanced by *genetic mutation*, *genetic recombination*, and/or *chromosomal crossovers*. And Neo-Darwinian Theory is the one that has been foisted upon us by generations of Sir Ray's legacy to the present day, including by, again, Thomas Huxley's grandson, Sir Dr. Julian Huxley, a leader in the establishment of Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory, who we'll get back to yet again later, and Dr. Gavin de Beer, the *embryologist* we have already identified and quoted. So you could say that Sir Ray's legacy still holds sway to this very day. But this 'well-rooted' **so-called** "tree of life" may finally be 'withering', as we will see.

Nonetheless I include Sir Ray because, apparently, *evolutionists* are now trying to 're-spin' all these 'ape-man' *bones* as 'belonging back in the box'. I mean that for decades a lot of these *bones* were ignored as too embarrassing to be 'in the box'. But the men most involved in perpetrating, or at least supporting, such fraud and/or forgery, and their successors, have kept 'too tight a grip' on the 'reigns' of the 'scientific community', having 'too much to lose'. So the criminal indoctrination by misinformation perpetrated on school children in their textbooks is still ongoing, with such misinformation being only 'quietly replaced' with other misinformation should any of it finally be too widely exposed. And I mean that now, by simply admitting that Piltdown Man was an 'isolated irregularity'—though it by no means was, and though it took over 40 years to be fully exposed—they're now emboldened 'under the shadow of forgotten times' to 're-spin' stories about most all of these 'resurrected ape-man' *bones*, reestablishing most of them as 'legitimate evidence' of the 'evolution of man' for an even more gullible and corrupt generation. But this really only means that all these 'misplaced' *bones* that remain 'in the box', or have been 'returned to the box', are simply just still 'on the clock'. And that would be 'the clock' timing how long before they're all finally exposed for the hoaxes and frauds they really are. And I mean that there are 'rising', 're-spun' *theories* that are emboldening some 'scientist' to expose this fraud—'scientist' who see no need for any *bones* to be 'in this box' anymore at all, as we'll see.

But speaking of hoaxes now dismissed as simply 'mistakes', there's *Nebraska Man*, a 'find' originally described by Dr. Henry Fairfield Osborn in 1922. Dr. Osborn, you may remember, was longtime President of the American Museum of Natural History, and a strong supporter of Piltdown Man. His 'description' of Nebraska Man was based on a single *tooth* that *rancher* and *geologist* Harold Cook had found in Nebraska in 1917.

And in 1922, there appeared a **full two-page artistic rendering** in *The Illustrated London News* (p.217) of this newly discovered, **so-called** subspecies of man, 'classified' as *Homo haroldcookii* after the *rancher/geologist* who had 'rounded up' this *tooth*. This illustration, by artist Sir Amédée Forestier, is said to be modeled from *Java Man*, which makes some sense, I suppose, since the evidence for Java Man, at the time, was fully 2 *bones fragments* and a *tooth*, while the entire evidence for Nebraska Man consisted of a single *tooth*. No, really, it was all based on just one *tooth*. So naturally the 'esteemed artist', who did 'historical renderings' for the Museum of London and the Royal Ontario Museum, could more readily depict Nebraska Man considering the additional *fragments* from Java Man. But Sir Forestier had other help. Nebraska Man's 'artistic reconstruction' also involved the collaboration of Sir Dr.

Grafton Elliot Smith, FRS and FRCP. Who'd have guessed? So Sir Graft, OK, Grafton, as well as Dr. Osborn, and others, wanted the World to believe they were able to 'divine' an entire *race* of 'ape-man ancestors', all based on one *fossil tooth* found in Nebraska. And *evolutionists* today want us to believe—though now really just entirely forget—that such a claim was simply an 'honest mistake'. And indeed it was a 'mistake' to attempt to hoodwink the public with that particular *fossil*, since after it was heralded as the first *higher primate* of North America, it was later matched as the *tooth* of an *extinct pig*.



Nebraska Man, also called *Hesperopithecus haroldcookii*, where *Hesperopithecus* means "ape of the western world", was discovered around ten years after Piltdown Man, and was another 'scientifically verified human ancestor' that turned out to be a hoax. But I guess you can also now see why it was so important to delay exposing Piltdown Man as a hoax—at least too close on the heels of Nebraska Man. People need time to forget, and time for stories to be 'redressed' with 'new spin', if not just completely 'scrubbed' from the public record.



See another 'artist reconstruction' or 'restoration' of *Prosthennops*, the extinct pig that is now associated with this *tooth*, on p.217. Note: any metaphorical association to *evolutionary scientists* in general is not necessarily intended, just personally unavoidable.

And it's not really fair to say that there's more than one 'coffin full' of 'ape-man bones' now, and that's because Heidelberg Man is the 'classification' of alleged 'ape-man bones' that is presently most responsible for 'overflowing the box'. And this is odd because, besides the usual 'loopiness' to it, they have been 'stratigraphically cued' to be generally 'older' than *Neanderthals*. I mean you'd think since Neanderthals are supposedly 'newer' and 'better fit to survive' we'd

have found more of them instead. But as usual Heidelberg Man's 'place in line' is questionable too because—surprise!—he got his place there with the discovery of a single *jaw bone*. But of course this is not really a surprise anymore, but a recognizable pattern.

Heidelberg Man, now *Homo heidelbergensis*, sometimes called *Homo rhodesiensis*, which evolutionists 'classify' (but by now you should be reading, 'spin'—see 'artist rendering' on p.218) as an *extinct species* of the *genus Homo*, is said to have lived in Africa, Europe and Western Asia from at least 600,000 years ago, but is thought to date back as far as 1,300,000 years. 'Loop-dating' also places their survival until 100,000 to 200,000 years ago, or possibly more recently. Their *brains* were about as large as that of a *modern human*. And though they surely were *human*, and that is, not at all *ape*, they are 'portrayed' as the 'direct ancestors' of Modern Man in Africa, but also of Neanderthals in Europe.



By the way, the new Peking Man for Asia is *Denisova hominins* or *Denisovans*. *Hominin* or *hominids* are 'spin-names' for *pre-homo sapien* 'caveman-types', or the 'scientific words' used for *ape-men*. And 'she' is now 'all the rage' as the new candidate for a Paleolithic-era 'missing link' (again read, 'caveman' or, in this case, 'cave person'), being a *species* of *Homo* or *human*, but 'identified', (and by now you should be reading, 'propagandized'), as an 'ancestor' or *subspecies* of

Homo sapiens or Modern Man. In March 2010, scientists announced the discovery of a *finger bone fragment* of a *juvenile female* who lived, by 'loop-dating', about 41,000 years ago, and was found in the remote Denisova Cave in the Altai Mountains in Siberia, a cave where it has also been 'identified', (you're reading, 'propagandized' now, right?), that Neanderthals and *modern humans* were also found. But it's not just that *finger bone fragment* anymore. Since that discovery, two *teeth* and a *toe bone* belonging to different members of this same population, (read, *ethnic group*), have since been reported. Look for—I'm guessing—"Denis" or "Denise", coming soon to a high school biology textbook near you.

Africa's Heidelberg Man was first discovered near Heidelberg, Germany in 1907. It was actually in Mauer, Germany that a workman found a *jaw* in a *sandpit*. This *jaw*, called *Mauer 1*, was in good condition except for the missing *premolar teeth*, which were eventually found near the jaw. (The picture on p.218 is of a *cast* of the original *jaw*.) The workman gave it to Professor Otto Schoetensack from the University of Heidelberg, who 'identified' and named the *fossil*, and though this *jaw* soon became the evidence of an entire *subspecies* of *man*, it remained the only evidence 'identified' as *Heidelberg Man* for nearly two decades.

But eventually other remains 'identified' as *Homo heidelbergensis* were found in Germany, France, Greece, Italy and even at a few locations in China. However these small and extremely fragmented finds—I mean they weren't going to



'overflow our box'—all decades after the original *jaw* was found, tended to get their own new 'ape-man' names, but sometimes were also 'identified' as Neanderthal, though they were all generally 'loop-dated' in the ballpark of the original 'positively identified' Heidelberg Man *jawbone*. It was in 1925-1926, almost two decades after the Heidelberg find, that the "Galilee skull" was unearthed in Israel, which was the first ancient *hominid fossil*—'spin words' for 'ape-man fossil'—found in Western Asia.

So why was Heidelberg Man thought to have originated in Africa? Well, Europe already had Neanderthal Man, which was thought to be the 'more evolved', though he too has now been found and 'identified' in Asia. And Europe shortly thereafter also had Piltdown Man, and China, Peking Man. So I guess they were just 'throwing Africa a bone'—a 'lesser evolved' one, of course. And more recently *scientists* have tried to use *genes* like 'breadcrumbs' to track migration, which seems to lead them back to Africa (again, think Egypt) as 'ground zero' from which the rest of humanity originated. Close, but **we know** that there are really two 'ground zeroes'. The first was The Garden of Eden, which was probably not that far north of Egypt, but must now be 'reconstituted', along with all *sediments* that later 'settled out' from The Flood, as 'fossil-filled' *sedimentary rock*. The second would be Mount Ararat, where Noah and his family landed, also not that far from Egypt, though his descendants were nearly as likely to be buried in *sedimentary rock*—or lava—and equally well preserved in either case, especially if taking 'refuge' from such *cataclysms* in *caves*, as it will be made increasingly clear as we proceed.

In 1994 near the English Channel a British *scientist* 'unearthed' what was 'classified' as part of an *hominin lower tibia*—a *leg bone*—along with hundreds of ancient *hand axes*, all at the Boxgrove Quarry Site. This partial *leg bone* is 'loop-dated' between 478,000 and 524,000 years old. Several *teeth* 'identified' as *Homo heidelbergensis* were also found since. This *leg bone fragment* was 'spun' as another *human subspecies* that occupied both France and Great Britain at that time, since there is also evidence that these countries had been previously connected, which we will also better see at some point along the way.

But the 'mother lode' of Heidelberg Man *bones*—maybe finally enough to 'overflow the box'—was also found in the 1990's. Beginning in 1992, a Spanish team found more than 5,500 *human bones* 'loop-dated' to an age of at least 350,000 years at the Sima de los Huesos Site in Northern Spain. The pit contains *fossils* of somewhere near 32 individuals along with remains of *Ursus deningeri*, an *extinct* 'saber-tooth' *bear*, as well as other *carnivores*, plus a *biface* named *Excalibur*—a *hand ax*, apparently a *weapon*—shaped like an 'almond' that looks like a large 'Indian arrowhead'. And getting back to the point—I mean the 'overflowing' one—apparently about 90% of the known Heidelberg Man *remains* come from this site, including 5 complete *skulls*, a complete *pelvis* (named "Elvis", of course), but many *vertebrae*, *ribs*, *hand*, *leg* and *feet bone fragments*. But these *remains* are so *fragmentary* they might still all somehow 'fit in the box'.



And I should mention that the remains at the Sima de los Huesos Site are disputed by some as being simply early Neanderthal Man, and therefore, considering all the evidence, they really represent no more than an *extinct*, fully *human ethnic group*, buried with *extinct animals*, that, getting back to reality, all died just a few thousand years ago. But why all this *extinction*? It doesn't have anything to do with *natural selection* or millions of years. It has to do with God's 'selection' or **judgment** in the form of 'awesomely' **terrible** but 'divinely orchestrated' *cataclysms*, again, as we will see.

A nearby site, by-the-way, contains the *fossils* found of 'Gran



Dolina Cave Man', 'classified' as *Homo antecessor*—all 'loop-dated', along with *tools*, and evidence of *cannibalism*, near 1 million years old. However this isolated find is considered more controversial. Yeah, the *extremely fragmentary* condition of the *fossils*, (see the reconstructions of the 80 pieces—parts of a *skull* and *jaw*—on p.219), nonetheless offer the usual and preferred 'ample leeway' for 'interpretation', which, you should now expect, tends to start 'turf wars' among *evolutionists* wanting to advance their own 'pet agendas'. Indeed some dismiss this find, and the like, as simply an example of Neanderthal Man, seeing them as just another, though earlier, (think hundreds of years), *human ethnic group* at best. And the additional evidence of *cannibalism*, to me, is no more surprising than finding *human fossils* more readily in *caves*, or that *monkey brains* and *snails* somehow became 'traditional foods' in certain cultures, or even that descendants of Adam had to, because of new and more challenging circumstances, resort to *stone tools* as the best available means to build, cook or hunt, as I hope to eventually make much more clear.

So what about **Neanderthals** (or Neandertals, photo p.220). The 'species' is named after the site of its first discovery near

Düsseldorf, Germany, in the Feldhofer Cave in the Neander Valley named after Joachim Neander, a 17th Century German pastor and hymnist. Appropriately enough, his name is a Greek translation of the German 'Neumann' meaning "new man". *Thal* is the older German spelling of *Tal*, though in German both are pronounced the same—the "h" is silent.

(By-the-way, though it is correctly spelled and pronounced without the "h" in English too, my high school biology teacher pronounced it with English phonetics, enunciating the "h", which, whether by phonetics or popular use, makes that pronunciation also correct. And I mean that to an audience of 'non-scientists', enunciating the "h" should be preferred, while to 'scientists' who tend to be more interested in 'lording over' than 'better communicating', enunciating without the "h" may be preferred. However, to 'turn the tables' on such **haughty** 'scientists', since I have the better authority when it comes to language than most all of them, I could point out that it would be mistaken in any case to consider the enunciation of the "h" incorrect, as it is so commonly done, including by some 'scientists'. And I only include this parenthetically to elucidate another small example of how **haughty, false teachers** are really only trying to 'subdue and distract' their opposition with suchlike 'corrections', all really based on just **blind, pride-and-lust**-driven, 'make-believe faith'.)

And the reality is that Neanderthals are really indistinguishable from *Homo sapiens* or Modern Man, except they apparently, at least typically, lived longer and grew larger, as we will explain more fully in later sections. Yes, they are usually considered an *extinct species* of *human* in the *genus Homo*, or sometimes a *subspecies* of *Homo sapiens*. But again, I have already suggested that all this really only means that they are an *extinct ethnic group*. And it is also believed that Neanderthals commonly lived together with Cro-magnon Man, and also at some point with Modern Man too. Again yes, just think *ethnic groups*.

However, and though the specifics will have to wait, maybe it's time I was a little clearer about who all these so-called 'cavemen' really were. Simply put, they were the survivors and/or victims of God's previous **judgments** on the Earth. And I'm mostly talking about the evidently 11 worst literally 'earthshaking' **judgments** of

God that more often than not ‘knocked’ **mankind** ‘back to square 1’. These 11 **cataclysmic judgments** include: 1-2) The Flood and The Tower of Babel Incident, evidently involving 2 separate ‘interactions’ of Earth with the about ‘half-again-wider-than-our-Moon’, Planet Mercury; 3-4) the 2 ‘severely-cataclysmic close encounters’ of Earth with the ‘nearly-earth-sized’, Planet Venus; and 5-11) the 7 ‘commotions’, 3 or 4 of which were identifiable worse, caused by the about ‘a-sixth-the-size-of-Earth’, Planet Mars, the last of which, in about 687 BC, evidently **accomplished** God’s primary **purpose**, to ‘suffocate’ the entire, 185,000-strong Assyrian army who at that time **besieged** Jerusalem. Yeah, we’ll eventually account for all of these **cataclysms**, and a couple more besides. It is indeed a long, mindbogglingly awesome story that will take most of the rest of this **study** to tell. But for now, you should **understand** that I **believe** that ‘cavemen’ were real—just not so much in the way **evolutionists** ‘portray’ them. And we should not be afraid of any real evidence. And I mean that all real, ‘undoctored’ and ‘unfabricated evidence’ will always eventually **glorify God**.

And I also mean that in all these ‘God-delivered’ **judgments** high percentages of Earth’s population **died**. And except in The Flood, this was because whole **mountains** literally **melted** or **exploded**, while the **seas** and even the **ground boiled**. **Mountains** also very quickly rose 100’s to 1,000’s of feet. Vast **land areas** ‘sank under the sea’, and **sea floors** ‘rose to become land’, all because of these ‘close’, necessarily ‘precisely God-controlled’, **interplanetary interactions**. So large parts of the **planet**, especially with Venus, were **melted** and **burned** and/or **inundated** with the **oceans** that ‘sloshed across continents’, except near God’s people, the Jews, because in those places the ‘interactions’ usually instead worked for their benefit, not only toward their **great deliverance**, but also to **sustain** them, **so that they lacked nothing** [Neh 9:21](#). However God used some of these ‘interactions’, especially with Mars, to **judge his people** too.

But don’t be confused. I’m not talking about just **natural laws**, but about God’s **use** of His Creation and the **natural laws** or **ordinances of heaven and earth** that He **created**, and that is, for their **use** in **wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible**, as well as ‘precisely targeted’ **ways to accomplish** His specific **purposes**. No, these ‘upheavals’ were not simply the ‘natural consequence’ of **planets** coming closer to us than the Moon, because if one did it would by all odds just ‘crash into us’, ‘destroying everything and killing everyone’. But yes, this is the ‘natural consequence’ of God ‘balancing planets’ near the Earth, again and again, for His **purposes** to **destroy...the wicked** and **deliver his people**, where, though He mostly only needs the **use** of the **physical laws** He **created**, they are applied by Him to do **wondrous works** as only He could **command**. This is something even the **ungodly** King Zedekiah of Judah knew when the army of Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon was advancing toward Jerusalem to destroy it. At this time King Zedekiah begs the Prophet Jeremiah to, **Enquire...of the Lord** for help, pleading,

...if so be that the LORD will deal with us according to all his wondrous works, that he [King Nebuchadnezzar] **may go up from us** [or retreat] [Jer 21:2](#).

But this is instead one of those times when God ‘uses’ an invading army, and **pestilence**—possibly arriving somehow from **space**—to **judge** His **disobedient and gainsaying people**.

However like King Zedekiah, we too should expect that such **wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke** [Joel 2:30](#) have not only occurred many times in the past, but also that they will happen again

in the future, all of which we will thoroughly (or **thoroughly**) **prove** before we're done with this **study**.

But the point for now is that because of many of these 'earthshaking' **judgments**, survivors were forced into 'primitive living conditions', and to 'eat snails' or 'monkey brains', even resort to *cannibalism*, and to use *tools* or *weapons* fashioned from the only hard material readily available, *stone*. And each time much of the records of the past were lost, though Dr. Velikovsky has collected and evaluated evidently the bulk of the records that remain, records that will help us **better** identify these *cataclysms* throughout the later sections.

So Neanderthals are really only a different *ethnic group* which did not survive—not a *subspecies* of *humans*, though they were also, to some degree, a 'superspecies' of *humans*, so to speak, as we will eventually see. However it is more likely that there were simply too few of them—as they were so heavily **judged** by God—to greatly affect the *ethnic groups* that survived them, I mean, the ones that still survive today. But apparently *traits* in any *ethnic group* must 'stabilize' over a number of *generations*—or there wouldn't be any *ethnic groups*. Otherwise we'd all still look like Adam and Eve—whatever they really looked like. However we will also come to **understand** how God's 'interventions' by various **great judgments** has influenced such *variation*, and *extinction*, including by **great judgments** other than *cataclysms*.

But one of the ways *cataclysms* influence the 'development' and/or 'end' of an *ethnic group* is seen in the mounting *DNA* evidence that seems to indicate that there was little *interbreeding* between the **so-called** 'subspecies of man'. And as flawed as some of the conclusions *evolutionists* draw from this are, this is nonetheless something a 'mature handler' of 'biblical history' and **prophecy** should expect—that survivors of God's **judgments** could easily become, for a long time thereafter, isolated and small in number. And we will see that this is especially the expected result of the 2 'encounters' of Earth with the Planet Venus that took place in the same century around 3500 years ago.

And all the evidence, including *DNA* evidence, can be useful if viewed with **skill and understanding**, or in a 'rightly divided' and **exercised** 'biblical perspective'. In 2008, for example, *geneticist* Dr. Richard E. Green, et al. from the Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology located in Leipzig, Germany, published the full sequence of Neanderthal *mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA)* and suggested,

Neanderthals had a long-term effective population size smaller than that of modern humans (Green, Re; Malaspinas, As; Krause, J; Briggs, Aw; Johnson, Pl; Uhler, C; Meyer, M; Good, Jm; Maricic, T; Stenzel, U; Prüfer, K; Siebauer, M; Burbano, Ha; Ronan, M; Rothberg, Jm; Egholm, M; Rudan, P; Brajković, D; Kućan, Z; Gusić, I; Wikström, M; Laakkonen, L; Kelso, J; Slatkin, M; Pääbo, S, "A complete Neandertal mitochondrial genome sequence determined by high-throughput sequencing", Aug. 2008, Cell 134, no.3, p.416-26).

Check. A smaller population would be expected because of one or more *cataclysms*.

Writing in *Nature* about Dr. Green and his colleagues' findings, Dr. James Morgan determined further that the *mtDNA sequence* contained clues that Neanderthals lived in...

...small and isolated populations, and probably did not interbreed with their human neighbours (Evans PD, Mekel-Bobrov N, Vallender EJ, Hudson RR, Lahn BT, "*Evidence that the adaptive allele of the brain size gene microcephalin introgressed into Homo sapiens from an archaic Homo lineage*". *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, November 2006, Vol.103, no.48, p.18178-83).

Check, check and check again. I mean besides "small and isolated populations", we will see that it makes sense that they had little to no opportunity to *interbreed* with other surviving *ethnic groups*, and that this is one of the reasons for today's diversity of *ethnic groups*. *Groups* would have been cut off from the rest of the World because of the **great judgments** they survived. But again, this started only up to about 4500 years ago, and, as we will see, the worst of these conditions were caused by the 2 'close visits' of the Planet Venus about 3500 years ago, which you should eventually **see** were really just **instruments** of God's Creation that He 'used'—only to some extent 'supernaturally'—to bring about **cataclysmic judgments** on the whole World—along with a little localized **deliverance, defense, provision, and nourishment** for His people.

The Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology is the organization that headed the "Neanderthal Genome Project". The 'project' determined that up to 99.7% of *genetic base pairs* are common between Neanderthals and *Homo sapiens*. This was originally thought to be similar to the level of 'commonality' that both share with the *chimpanzee*, though this **so-called** 'commonality' has been recently decreased—by the Institute—to 94%. This means that besides *chimpanzees* not being as much like us as they originally thought, also the *genetic variation* between Neanderthal and *Homo sapiens* was established at .3% ($\frac{3}{10}$ of 1 percent). Within the *modern human* population, the widest gap discovered so far is .15%, or half that between *modern humans* and Neanderthals. This widest 'modern gap' of .15% is between Africans and Non-Africans. And doesn't this mean that Neanderthals are about as different to Non-Africans as Non-Africans are to Africans? Whatever the case, I would guess it's more likely that Neanderthals belong at the 'smartest end' of this comparison—meaning that their *DNA* was 'better' than Modern Man's. And I mean, for one thing, though it is often embarrassingly compartmentalized, it is widely believed that *DNA* is *degenerating*, not getting better by *evolving*, where *genetic disorders* by 'multiplication of genetic weaknesses', etc., are increasing to the extent that some 'experts' predict that mankind's time is 'running out', and others believe that 'aliens' are showing up to 'abduct' us for our *DNA* in order to 'repair' theirs. Uh-huh.

Still, and any way you look at it, we're talking about the difference between *ethnic groups*, not the difference between *primates* and *humans*. I mean with nearly a 6% 'genetic dissimilarity', *primates* have in the ballpark of 20 to 40 times more of this 'dissimilarity' with Neanderthals and Modern Man as compared to that between Neanderthals and Modern Man. Do the math.

And by-the-way, one of the reasons for the 'backpedaling' on *primate DNA* was disclosed by one of the many scientists involved with this work. He admitted that in the earlier samples,

Contamination was indeed an issue (Elizabeth Pennisi, "*Neandertal Genomics: Tales of a Prehistoric Human Genome*", *Science*, 2009, Vol.323, no.5916, p.866-71).

He meant that they eventually realized that 11% of their *primate sample* was contaminated with *modern human DNA*. Oops. Someone wasn't wearing gloves.

But how'd they get any Neanderthal *DNA* anyway? I mean how did they find *viable DNA* that they thought had to be at least tens of thousands of years old? Well, first of all, such samples, and there are a few now, are not really that old. Remember we will see that none of them are really more than a few thousand years old, with most being found in *caves* likely corresponding to the time of the Exodus. But Nobel Prize winner and *DNA* researcher Dr. Svante Pääbo—the one who disclosed the contamination—tested dozens of *specimens* that were 'loop-dated' to be of 'Neanderthal age' and actually found one that had enough *DNA* to sample. Preliminary *DNA sequencing* from this supposedly 38,000-year-old *bone fragment* from a *femur*—found in 1980 at the Vindija Cave in Croatia—revealed not only that *evolutionists do want us to believe* that *DNA* can be preserved in nature nearly 40,000 years or more, but also that such 'miraculously cave-preserved' *DNA* reveals that Neanderthals and *Homo sapiens* share about 99.7% of their *DNA*. But they don't want us to believe—assuming the measurements were accurate and not otherwise 'contaminated' or 'monkeyed with'—that this is within the range of the difference in *human ethnic groups*. However they also do want us to believe that Neanderthals and Modern Man shared a 'common ancestor' around half a million years ago, Heidelberg Man. *Evolutionists* also hope that from *DNA* records they can further confirm or deny the *theory* that there was *interbreeding* between these **so-called** *species* of Man (read, *ethnic groups* of Man).

And by-the-way, speaking of things *evolutionists don't want you to believe*—or know—there is now *DNA* samples 'loop dated' at over 60 million years old. Of course these were really preserved by being buried in Noah's Flood, and only less than 4500 years ago. This is one of the 'punch lines' to the story next section.

And as far as *ethnic groups* go, *evolutionists* believe that the nearly 6% difference between *chimpanzee DNA* and *human DNA* was 'bridged', but I don't. I believe this is not possible because God tells us so. Well, I mean at least that this could never happen 'naturally'. And 'sorcerer's apprentice' attempts by *scientist* to do this 'unnaturally' in laboratories can only hasten the necessity of, as Jesus puts it, **the end of the world**.

And, surprise, surprise, the gap between Neanderthal and Modern Man seems to be getting smaller all the time. According to *Discovery.com* in their online *D World News* article,

If your heritage is non-African, you are part Neanderthal.

This is according to...

Damian Labuda of the University of Montreal's Department of Pediatrics and the Centre Hospitalier Universitaire (CHU) Sainte-Justine Research Center [who] conducted the study with his colleagues. They determined some of the human X chromosome originates from Neanderthals, but only in people of non-African heritage (<http://news.discovery.com/human/genetics-neanderthal-110718.htm>).

In other words, they determined that all Non-Africans have Neanderthal *DNA*. And another study calculates the difference between Neanderthal and Modern Non-African *DNA* to be as close as .1% ($\frac{1}{10}$ of 1 percent). Dr. Edward M. "Eddy" Rubin is an internationally known *geneticist* and *medical researcher* at the Lawrence

Berkeley National Laboratory in Berkeley, California, and has served as the director of the Department of Energy Joint Genome Institute (DOE JGI) since 2002. He is a UCSD graduate, and obtained a double doctorate in Biophysics and Medicine from the University of Rochester. He reports that...

...recent genome testing of Neanderthals suggests human and Neanderthal DNA are from 99.5% to nearly 99.9% identical [search quote online—I found it everywhere].

And yeah, time for some more math, which I'll again leave to you.

And one *evolutionist*, Harvard *geneticist* Dr. George Church, concludes from his research that Neanderthals may have been, at least in some ways, and significantly, *smarter* than us (<http://www.nbcnews.com/science/help-wanted-adventurous-woman-give-birth-neanderthal-baby-1B8061807?franchiseSlug=sciencemain>). Uh-huh.

So let's compare 'brain pans'. With an average *cranial capacity* of 1600 cc, Neanderthal *brains* are notably larger than the 1400 cc average for all *races* of *modern humans*, indicating that their *brain size* was at least as large, but probably larger. However, in 2008, a group of *scientists* produced a study using 'three-dimensional computer-assisted reconstructions' of Neanderthal *infants* based on *fossils* found in Russia and Syria. The study indicated that Neanderthal and *modern human brains* were the same size at birth, but by adulthood, the Neanderthal *brain* was larger than the *modern human brain*. And they evidently eventually became much stronger, and larger overall too, than *modern humans*, having particularly strong *arms* and *hands*. Of course *evolutionists* assume *modern humans* and Neanderthals had about the same *lifespans*, or rather that *modern humans* live longer than did Neanderthals. These would both be *incorrect* assumptions, *unless* you factor in the *cataclysmic great judgments* of our *great and terrible God*. And don't worry, you'll eventually fully *understand* what I mean.

And who'd of guessed? Newer *genetic analysis* published in 2010 suggests that Neanderthals contributed to the *DNA* of *anatomically modern humans*, probably through *interbreeding*, supposedly between 80,000 and 50,000 years ago (or really starting sometime after The Flood less than 4500 years ago). They suggest this *interbreeding* occurred with the population of *anatomically modern humans* who had recently migrated from Africa. And we will see that, besides the 'loop dating', there's no problem with this conclusion. According to the study, by the time that population began dispersing across Europe and Asia, Neanderthal *genes* constituted as much as 4% of its genome, which is roughly equivalent to having one Neanderthal great-great-great-grandparent. Let's call these great-great-great grandparents the great-great-great grandchildren of Shem, Ham and Japheth. And see, for example, Paul Rincon's article, "[Neanderthal genes 'survive in us'](#)", in the May 6, 2010 online edition of *BBC News*, linked here.

Another example is seen in "Ötzi the iceman", Europe's 'oldest ice-preserved mummy', who was found to possess an even higher percentage of Neanderthal *genes* - see the article at http://johnhawks.net/weblog/reviews/neandertals/neandertal_dna/neandertal_ancestry-iced-2012.html.

In December 2013, researchers reported evidence that Neanderthals intentionally buried their dead. See John Noble Wilford's online article, "[Neanderthals and the Dead](#)", *New York Times*, December 16, 2013, linked here.

Finally, scientists reported for the first time the recovery of the entire *genome* of a Neanderthal. A complete sample was extracted from the *toe bone* of a Neanderthal that was ‘loop-dated’ at 130,000-years-old. It was frozen, having been found in a Siberian cave. See Carl Zimmer’s online article, “[Toe Fossil Provides Complete Neanderthal Genome](#)”, *New York Times*, December 18, 2013, linked here.

Yeah, caves are ‘cool’ for preserving *DNA* a few thousand years, especially *frozen* ones, but surely not really for tens or hundreds of thousands of years, let alone millions. And we will see that Siberia was not always a ‘frozen waste’, but was once *tropical* or *subtropical*, and not more than 3500 years ago, but more probably around the time of King Hezekiah, less than 2800 years ago, which if so would have, especially with *evolutionary* ‘loop-dating’, ‘spoiled the sample’. I mean we will be able to **prove** that this region—and these latitudes—quickly and repeatedly changed back and forth from *tropical* to *arctic* in the relatively recent past. ‘Loop-dating’ *evolutionists* call this the Ice Ages, but apparently compartmentalize about it when dealing with *frozen* Siberian Neanderthal *DNA*. We’ll eventually see that these ‘Ice Ages’—all really occurring in the last less than 4500 years—were actually the result of **The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation**.

But I don’t want to pass by other observations that *evolutionists* have missed, or avoided.

Remember the newest data shows that the ‘genetic dissimilarity’ between Neanderthals and Modern Non-Africans is as little as .1%, or well within the range of *ethnic groups*, which also seems to reveal that Modern Non-Africans are more closely related to Neanderthals than to Modern Africans. Well, I can say I am a fan of the ‘giant intellects’ of men like Dr. Thomas Sowell, Booker T. Washington, and Frederick Douglass, for examples. And I consider all of these examples to be men that are or were smarter than me, but at the same time, ‘exceptions to the rule’—or **curse**—and that such ‘exceptions’ are mostly thanks to the work of Jesus on **the cross**, a force much more powerful than Noah’s **curse** of his grandson Canaan, but that such ‘exceptions’ are due to other factors too. And of course this is a sensitive subject, yet the best physical evidence for the connection between Neanderthals and *modern humans*, besides *DNA*, seems to be *brain size*. The difference between the *brain size* of European Neanderthals and the African *Homo sapien* is about 20%, with the Neanderthal *brain* averaging about 20% larger than that of Modern Africans. So here it’s not too ‘far-fetched’ to conclude that *interbreeding* is ‘lessening’ the effects of Noah’s **curse**. This may be partly seen since the difference in *brain size* between Africans and Non-Africans in modern times is now only 10%, with the Non-African *brain* still averaging about 10% larger than the African *brain*. Another significant consideration is that Modern Non-Africans and Africans, both evidently longer ‘uncanopied’ and **cursed** by one or more **curses**, don’t live as long as Neanderthals used to, as we will see.

So what does all this mean? Surely true *sociology* and *anthropology*, even *physiology* and *genetics*, must consider Noah’s **curse** of Ham’s son Canaan, as well as his **blessings** of Shem and Japheth, who are the real and only true ancestors, along with their wives, of all living today. And it’s no stretch of the imagination that both this **curse** and **blessing**—that would result in a branch of the progeny of one brother ‘serving everyone else’—involves not only ‘bigger’ and ‘smaller’ *brains*, but ‘lighter’ and ‘darker’ *skin*, with ‘white’ being a universally recognized symbol of ‘goodness’ and ‘purity’, while the color ‘black’ is universally associated with ‘evil’ and ‘corruption’. And indeed we **know** God uses ‘color metaphors’ and ‘symbolism’. The rainbow, for example, that appeared after The Flood, God declared a symbol that He would never fully destroy His ‘colorful’ Earth again. And

Isaiah compares the *cleansing* of *sins* with being made *white as snow*, while Jesus not only compares himself to *bread* and *water*, but also to *light*, and He repeatedly appears in *scripture* in *raiment* [that] *was white as the light*, or *white as snow* or *wool*, or *white and glistening*, and *angels* and the *redeemed* also repeatedly appear *in white*, not to mention that *we* with Jesus expect to *ride* on *white horses*. But Jesus also compares *sin* and *evil* to *darkness*, while *judgment* pairs with *blackness* and the color *black*.

So there is a clear 'sign' and 'symbolism' visible to everyone since Canaan was *cursed*. And I mean because of Ham's evidently *evil* actions concerning his father Noah just after The Flood, Ham's son Canaan was *cursed*, and evidently ever since then Canaan has 'passed on' this clearly 'visible' and 'measurable', apparently *genetically transmitted curse*.

By-the-way, it really does make perfect sense that Noah blamed the exposure of his own 'drunken nakedness' on one of Ham's descendants—I mean beside some other reasons we will get to shortly. Turns out there was another significant effect of the *water canopy* 'coming down', that is, on 'wine making'. Apparently the process of *fermentation* takes place much faster under *direct sunlight* than otherwise. So Noah had no idea of the extra *alcohol* that would be in a batch he prepared the same way as under the *canopy*. Yeah. It wasn't his fault. His drink was 'spiked' by God, so to speak. So evidently it was Ham, not Noah, who handled the incident badly.

And maybe you still think it's an 'accident' of *evolution* that there are 'lighter' and 'darker-skinned' people in the World, and that it's a coincidence that these same 'darkest-skinned' people tend to have measurably 'smaller' *brains*. And maybe you think all this can't be the observable *curse* by Noah on Canaan, evidently agreed to by God. Well, let me assure you, the people experiencing this *curse* are suffering from it as if it were from God. They are suffering from the effects of measurably 'smaller' *brain size*, as well as, when in the company of 'lighter-skinned' people, the 'stigma' attached to their 'darker skin color'. But that's not all. It's also no coincidence that those with this *curse* are recognized, generally speaking, for their 'servitude', as it was promised to Canaan's descendents, but also that those unaffected—or less affected—by this *curse* are recognized—by the unbiased—for the 'intellectual leadership' promised to Shem's descendants, or for the associated 'enlargement' promised to Japheth's. Though again, both Jesus and other factors, such as *interbreeding*, seem to be 'visibly' and 'measurably' lessening the overall effects of this *curse* over time.

And if you think that it's *racist* to say 'dark skin' and 'smaller brains' and 'general servitude' are the results of 'Noah's curse', your absolutely right. This *curse* is surely the most influential factor accounting for the variety of *ethnic groups*—or *races*—that exist today. But this is not meant to imply that 'darker-skinned' and 'smaller-brained' races are disadvantaged when it comes to the *sacrifice* of Jesus, or even disadvantaged in reaching a *high calling of God in Christ Jesus*—however 'few' of the *few* of any race there are that reach such a *calling*. And I mean that, instead, in many cases it can be an advantage, since we are all, at the point of *salvation, born again*. And in order to *grow* in real 'brain-transforming' *knowledge* at all, and I don't mean the kind that, at best, only *puffeth up* [1Co 8:1](#), but the kind that makes *great reward* possible, we must start with the *revelation* that every one of us have nothing but *death* in our brains—whatever the size. As it is recorded twice in Proverbs,

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death [Pro 14:12](#); [Pro 16:25](#).

So it's not 'black' or 'white' that really makes a difference, but **red** or **white**. Or, as **the LORD** spoke through the Prophet Isaiah, saying,

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool [Isa 1:18](#).

And this is a color change everyone can make, whether 'black' or 'white' or anything in between.

But we can take this a step further. And I mean that those with 'larger brains' who are apparently 'smarter' tend to be at a disadvantage. I mean in...

...Professing themselves to be wise, they became [or become] fools [Rom 1:22](#).

And Jesus tells us that 'the game' is pretty much 'fixed' to the advantage of us 'dumber' people.

Apparently having a **revelation** on the subject, He says,

In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight [Luk 10:21](#); [Mat 11:25-26](#).

The Apostle Paul, apparently getting this **revelation** too, confirms,

Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? [1Co 1:20](#)

And besides revealing that the 'road' to real **wisdom** is lonely, he also apparently shows his **understanding** of the realities of Canaan's **curse**, that it is really 'colorblind', when he says,

Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant. Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men. Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God [1Co 7:20-24](#).

So a 'larger brain', and any advantage you think someone could get with 'lighter skin', left 'unregenerate', or even left 'undisciplined', only leaves their **flesh** susceptible to the **temptations** of **pride** and **oppression**, and all manner of **evil doing**, and precisely because of the supposed 'advantages', that in the end will likely only really **heap coals of fire on their head[s]** more abundantly than if they lacked these 'advantages'. Not such 'big advantages' viewed in this way, huh? Poor 'big-brained whities'. They're more likely to end up at the bottom of the Lake of Fire than anyone else. Well, except for certain Jews, which apparently, on the average, have the largest **brains** of all. But I also saw a study that claims the 'largest brains' now belong to American Blacks, implying to me they have the 'best' of both Shem's and Canaan's **DNA**, at least 'brain-size-wise'. However this also suggests that other, even more ancient 'ancestry' is involved.

And it would be absolutely *racist* to agree with all this, but nonetheless necessary and unavoidable because it is a significant part of a ‘generally realistic sociological evaluation’ based on the true nature of our ancestry, and that is, according to God’s Word. And by-the-way, are you feeling some of that ‘mind-transforming’, ‘World-non-conforming’, **renewing of your mind** going on in your *brain* about right now? You should be, whatever the size of it. And after all, as I make clear in [RGT](#), my testimony is that ‘any dummy’ can be made **wise** by The Word of God, and that there’s really no other way to do it. As King David sings,

The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes. The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring for ever: the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward. Who can understand his errors? cleanse thou me from secret faults
[Psa 19:7-12](#)

And we have already and will **continue** to make clear that **salvation** alone does not mean your **salvation** is secure. On the contrary, you should **know** by now that without a commitment to ‘discipleship’ you’ll most likely end up **worse** off than if you were never **saved** at all. So making that commitment to start continuously ‘cleaning your brain’, where you **sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word** [Eph 5:26](#) is, from that point on, the only guarantee of **life**, while avoiding this commitment is almost as assuredly a guarantee of **death**, The Spirit somehow, even in more ‘needful cases’, ‘**withstanding**’. And this ongoing ‘cleaning process’, by-the-way, should apply to every **wife**, and no less so to all those **betrothed** to be part of the **wife** of Christ. And this is accomplished with what Jesus repeatedly calls **living water**. And I’m sure that by this He means everything we just heard from King David about God’s Word, and also what the Apostle Peter says about it in [2 Peter 1](#), and endlessly more.

And I mean that without a doubt, and no matter how big your brain is, you will never be able to fully **understand** all your **errors**, nor be fully aware of all your hidden or **secret faults**, nor even really ‘see’ that you are, at least to some extent, ‘naturally spiritually’ **blind**, let alone lacking ‘omniscience’. This is why our only real security lies not as much in what we **know** or **do**, but in our commitment to **love** God, shown in our **diligence** to **keep** His **words**, wherein we **faithfully** and endlessly **continue** to search out our **errors** and **faults**, and endlessly **correct** them, and this on endlessly **higher** and **higher** levels, because, accepting that **the knowledge of God** is **infinite**, and that **we** are not, **we understand** that there can be no end to our **faults** and **errors**, no matter how **high** we ‘climb’ or **deep** we ‘probe’ in **the knowledge of the holy**. And I mean **we** can only show our acknowledgement of this **grace** and **mercy** in our **love** of God exhibited by our **diligent** pursuit of **knowing** Him **better** and **better, daily**, and **for ever**, and thereby then become **worthy** of **greater** and **greater, higher** and **higher**—or **deeper** and **deeper**, as the case may be—**knowledge of God** to **rightly** use in **servicing** Him **more** and **more**, and **better** and **better**. And when we **diligently**, and that is, both consciously and deliberately **grow in grace** in this **way**, He also promises to **abide** with us, wherein we become **worthy** of His protection of our **salvation**, but also for His protection in **all things** that **work together for good**,

that is, **to us that love God, and to we who are the called according to his purpose**, though **we** should also **understand** that our **days** in this incarnation are **numbered** by Him, and that our **death** may be related to His protection of our **salvation** too, and **God willing** also **reward-related**, **which God ordained before the world unto our glory**.

So, as the Apostle Peter puts it,

...giving all diligence, [and without ceasing,] add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. For if these things be in you, and abound [or are endlessly growing], they [that is, this ongoing 'spiritual growth'] make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if [and only if] ye do these things, [are you guaranteed by God that] ye shall never fall: For so [and only in this way] an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ [2Pe 1:8-9](#).

And hello! Are you fully **awake** to this reality yet? Even if you are it won't hurt you to 'turn your cheek' for yet another 'slap'. And I mean no matter how much we **grow**, since we will **for ever** be 'finite' and therefore 'fallible' beings, our 'growth' must be an 'eternal work' and 'duty' to God that, **if ye continue**, and only as long as you do, God in return makes you **worthy** of **higher** and **higher** levels of His **goodness, grace** and **mercy**, and **worthy** to be **approved** to **know more** and **more** of **the truth** forever. But maybe most important of all, **if ye** commit to **grow** and **continue** to do so, you can safely **trust** that God's got your naturally **blind**, 'undiscerning', 'unshielded', and otherwise entirely 'vulnerable' and 'cursed back'. And yes, you must deserve this **high** level of 'protection' from God through a **faithful** commitment to **knowing** and **obeying** His Word more and more **for ever**, or you should **not** expect **an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ**, but instead, and despite being **deceived** and/or unaware of this reality, expect to live a relatively **blind** and **unfruitful** life, this reality only finally discovered and/or confirmed as you pass through the **fire** of **judgment**, and experience that your **work** is **burned** and cannot **abide** this **fire** for any or much **reward**, but instead you **suffer loss** of most or all, even of what to you **seemeth right**, and you become **for ever**—recognizably, you 'dimlit'—**ashamed** for it, **or** even more likely, never experience this particular **fire** at all, and **fall away** altogether and **for ever**. This applies to every **cursed** Son of God, one way or another, and to some degree or another. As you should **know**, the 'ranking' for the **saved** will go from the **great[est]** to **the least in the kingdom of heaven**, and from **first** to **last**, including from the 'brightest' to the 'dimmiest', and I can only guess that there are similar 'descending graduations' in **the lake of fire** for everyone ending up in it. And yes, **more** than **blind** and **ignorant** Christians, that the Apostle John calls **little children**, and that the Apostles Paul and Peter call **babes**, **you** are now in bigger trouble than they are, and that is, if you **don't continue**, because you now **know** God **much better**. But this also makes you ready for some 'heavy-duty', 'major-league' opportunities for some 'momentary'

light affliction (read, ‘opportunities’ to **suffer for righteousness sake**). And you’re only in real trouble—I mean of the ‘eternal kind’—if you don’t get to **work**, that is, **while it is** still **day**. So choose ‘eternal safety’ by **giving all diligence to continue to abide** in God and His Son by The Spirit and by God’s Word from now on. And like there’s really any **better** choice. And continuing from here **with the revelation** that you are now ‘unhindered’ by ‘intellectual’ and/or ‘racial superiority’ or ‘inferiority’ should help you get further passed that **strait gate** and farther along that **narrow...way**. And I mean that the supposed ‘advantages’ experienced by those without the **curse** of Canaan become **temptations** that will most likely **hinder** their

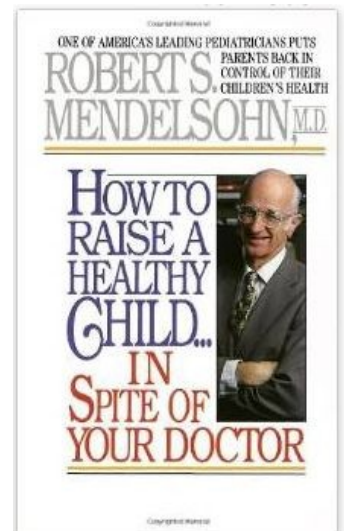
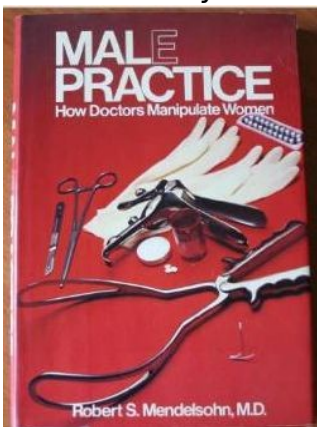
‘spiritual growth’, while the ‘disadvantages’ of those experiencing it may **help** them with the more ‘unrelenting and persistent’ attitude that will be necessary to **work, strive, press, fight** and **run the race for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus**, wouldn’t you think? Of course we **know** that most on either side of this **curse** will be **lost**, whoever they are.

And speaking about American Blacks, read about Frederick Douglass, for example, who went from slave to statesman. He was a champion of the equality of both race and gender, and though generally considered Black, he did not know his mother or father, but heard only rumor that his father was the ‘White man’ that owned both him and his mother. The point being that, though I guess there may be exceptions, ‘intellectual giants’ that have not at some point *interbred* with Shem or Japheth’s descendents should be expected to be rare at best. But again, though those who experience the **curse** of Canaan have ‘greater challenges’ in this world, such ‘disadvantages’ sometimes give **us** the ‘advantage’ over the **temptations** that go along with ‘intellectual pride’ and ‘cultural privilege’. And a mix of such advantages and disadvantages may not always be so bad either, because again, the only ‘colors’ along these lines that really matter are **red** and **white**, and I’m talking about an uninterrupted supply of Jesus’ **blood** that make our **sins** as **white as snow**.

And speaking of a “mix” of such things, concerning the ‘disadvantages’ I have said, “**us**”, because, though I am White, I have always thought of myself as only a ‘diligent’, ‘hardworking’ ‘dummy’, and eventually, blessed to be so, which brings me to another story I’ll share about myself. When I was born it was in fashion in the medical profession to extract newborns from their mother’s wombs using large *forceps*—large ‘pliers’ that reach in and grab the head of the child in order to pull it out. Really. Read about this ‘barbaric’ practice in pediatrician, Dr. Robert

S. Mendelsohn’s 1981 book, *Mal(e) Practice*. Yeah, it’s a play on ‘malpractice’. And although he’s gone, I still recommend him as a pediatrician through his books, especially his 1987 book, *How to Raise a Healthy Child... In Spite of Your Doctor*.

Anyway, I didn’t understand it at the time when in my early childhood I would have kids come up to me and ask, “What happened to your head?” You see there was a large, very noticeable ‘dent’ in the right side of my forehead. I only knew at the time to say, “I was born that way,” which was true. And I remember the day in 2nd grade when I ‘woke up’. I say ‘woke up’ because I don’t remember much of anything before that day, but I remember ‘waking up’ at a table of ‘isolated’, ‘lowest-performing’, ‘remedial students’. One of the ‘teachers’ in our



little 'retreat'—that adjoined the room for the 'regular students'—had just commented to another about how stupid I was, and I could tell she was not expecting me to understand or be insulted. And it didn't really insult me. It scared me—scared me to start working. Well, it's been a long battle back since that day. And though my brain was still noticeable dented for several more years, I became one of the best readers in the school by 4th grade, and a nearly 'straight A student' since then too. And I have since concluded that the 'dent' was the damage to the right *frontal lobe* of my brain due to the use of *forceps* to extract me from my mother's womb. And I have since come to believe that this 'procedure' seriously—and permanently—decreased my I.Q. Well, at least in this body. I have certainly always had to work harder than all my smarter, 'straight A' friends. But I wouldn't trade brains with a single one of them. And I have come to see my 'delivery' as exactly that. I was delivered—to a significant extent—from the **temptation** of 'intellectual pride', and forced to work hard for all I know—because of my 'smaller brain'. Uh-huh, it was quite a 'big dent', though it finally grew out so that it's not really noticeable today. Still, I consider it to be more damaging than a *frontal lobotomy*, given that at the time of the 'procedure' I was newborn. And I only mean you're lucky if you have something to whine about as far as a 'disadvantage', and not so much if you mostly only have cause to gloat, as **scripture** readily assures us.

And again, The Word of God does indeed **make wise the simple**. And it's been my experience that it's kind of like the story of "The Tortoise and the Hare", except that there ain't really any 'rabbits' in this **race**, because they don't even know how or where to **run** in order to **win** the **prize**, and don't even know that they don't know, thinking they do, the Spirit '**withstanding**'—as much as He can—in the cases of the 'bloodwashed' by Jesus, of course. However it is also my experience that a competing 'turtle', if he or she somehow gets a clue of how to **run** with **diligence**, **zeal**, and **vehement desire**, will leave the rest far behind in no time, and from then on only be able to **press** on alone, likely becoming isolated, at least **spiritually**. Again, this **study**, along with **RGT**, is meant to help with this. And I mean I **hope** to be overtaken by a 'thundering herd of turtles', **God willing**, and maybe even 'blazed-passed' by a few 'rabbits', which, I should be clear, is not just a **racial hope** of mine, but one that I hold for all **mankind**.

But this is not the full story of Canaan and his descendents, because all the branches of Canaan, including some of their physical characteristics, have not survived, at least not that noticeably, but also because there is that 'other, more ancient ancestry' that we need to consider. Evidently one or more of Canaan's branches were nearly all killed off by Joshua and David, and surely others by the **great judgments** of our **great and terrible God**. These both *extinct* and still *extant*—though maybe in some cases *endangered*—branches of the descendants of Canaan are chronicled by Moses in Genesis 10. And they evidently didn't so much originally settle in Africa, but more in what was eventually to become the **land... promised to the children of Israel**. Moses records that,

...Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha [Gen 10:15-19](#).

Of course this is only speaking to Canaan's descendants in relation to the **land... promised** to the Jews, and to the time before the leaders of the Jews exterminated and/or chased them out of this region, some evidently to Africa, but also evidently, as we'll see in following sections, to the Americas, and even as far away as Japan. But of course it is now most evident that some of them, at least the ones that *propagated* most successfully but *interbred* mostly only with themselves, must have finally been **spread abroad** across Africa. However 'darker skin' is found, in one shade or another, almost everywhere on Earth. So who can really account for all this? But we will inevitably learn more and more of **the truth** of all this as we **continue**.

However what I would like to recognize in this *genealogy* right now is that these 'dark skinned' *groups* must have been generally and to varying extents *expressing* the **curse** of Canaan, but also evidently other 'physical characteristics' that now appear either *extinct* or at least *rare* to *endangered*, not to mention further 'genetically diluted' by *interbreeding*, and otherwise 'degenerated' by that other, universal **curse**. What apparently 'physical characteristics' am I talking about? Consider a passage in the Book of Numbers about the **evil report** about these **Canaanites** to **the children of Israel** from the 'Israeli scouts' when they first arrived at the boarder of this **land... promised** to them by God.

...We came unto the land whither thou sentest us, and surely it floweth with milk and honey; and this is the fruit of it. Nevertheless the people be strong that dwell in the land, and the cities are walled, and very great: and moreover we saw the children of Anak there. The Amalekites dwell in the land of the south: and the Hittites, and the Jebusites, and the Amorites, dwell in the mountains: and the Canaanites dwell by the sea, and by the coast of Jordan. And Caleb stilled the people before Moses, and said, Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to overcome it. But the men that went up with him said, We be not able to go up against the people; for they are stronger than we. And they brought up an evil report of the land which they had searched unto the children of Israel, saying, The land, through which we have gone to search it, is a land that eateth up the inhabitants thereof; and all the people that we saw in it are men of a great stature. And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which come of the giants: and we were in our own sight as grasshoppers, and so we were in their sight
[Num 13:27-33](#).

So yes, and of course, at that time Israel's **land** inheritance **floweth with milk and honey**; which we'll get to in later sections, but here we'll focus on some of the physical characteristics of these **Canaanites**. As you can read, there is no mention of 'dark skin' or 'smaller brains' because of the Noah's **curse**, and nothing of 'conditions of servitude'—unless **a land that eateth up the inhabitants thereof** is an indication of it—but rather the focus is on a **people** of unusually **great stature**. And I won't go into too many details here about these **Canaanite... giants**. We'll deal with that more next section. Now I just want to point out that evidently David finished 'killing off' the 'greatest' of these remaining **Canaanites**, or at least helped them along toward becoming an increasingly *rare* to *endangered ethnic group*, and/or chased them off into the Mediterranean and beyond. And we will eventually also see that for all the branches that still carry an *expressible* amount of these 'superhuman' *genes*, that it will apparently be part of our

mission, riding on **white horses** behind Jesus, to finally entirely exterminate them.

And I refer to their **great stature** with words such as ‘unusually’ and ‘superhuman’ because it was and probably to some extent still is. I believe that all the branches from Ham and his wife, especially but not exclusively through Canaan, possessed, and probably still to a certain extent still possess, an *expressible* amount of ‘angel-human’ *DNA*. I mean since these **Canaanites** with **great stature** must have had for their ancestors Ham and his wife, we can deduce that Ham’s wife must be the one who had some fraction of this ‘angel-human’ *DNA*, and delivered it beyond The Flood on the Ark. And it would also make sense that she had a fraction of this ‘bloodline’ that was small enough so that it was not noticeably *expressed* in her case, or that it was noticed too late, but that it was enough to produce offspring who would dominate the World following The Flood, as well as provide a formidable challenge to Israel from the time of Moses and Joshua all the way to the time of King David, including some truly ‘Goliath-sized’ adversaries.

And it’s therefore no wonder why Abraham was so careful, expecting there would be some travel involved in his choice of a wife for Isaac, as he was surrounded by Canaanites where he lived. And surely he wanted to avoid marrying Isaac into this ‘bloodline’ at all costs. And his carefulness indicated not only that he believed that there was still ‘Canaan-cursed blood’ out there, this was obvious, but also that there was a lot of the ‘bad-angel blood’ out there too. Speaking to his servant who he charged to find Isaac a wife, Abraham said,

...And I will make thee swear by the LORD, the God of heaven, and the God of the earth, that thou shalt not take a wife unto my son of the daughters of the Canaanites, among whom I dwell: But thou shalt go unto my country, and to my kindred, and take a wife unto my son Isaac [Gen 24:2-4](#).

And it’s also no wonder why that, traditionally, and especially the ‘uncursed’, have preferred marrying their own **kindred**, more recently as close as second cousins, and that this practice remains legal and acceptable even to this day, though increasingly few nowadays really know about trying to avoid the **curse**, let alone ‘bad-angel’ *DNA*. I mean it’s still not necessarily a bad idea if by doing so you can account for an ‘untainted lineage’. However *genetic weakness* are continuing to ‘multiply’ into worse and worse *genetic diseases*, and this is evidently due to the limited *gene pool* that is available with too much ‘intermarrying within family’. But there is now no ‘lineage’ too ‘tainted’ that **the blood of Jesus** can’t **cleanse** it as **white as snow**.

We’ll consider more of the ramifications of all this in the next sections, but this **ungodly** ‘aberration’, if it is still significant *expressible* in any of Ham’s descendants—and it should be—must eventually be fully eradicated, one way or another. And remember that Ham and his wife are also the parents of **Cush**, who evidently originally settled in “Upper Egypt” or in the highland in Southern Egypt and Ethiopia, and **Mizraim**, who apparently settled in “Lower Egypt” or in the Nile Delta region, and **Phut**, meaning Libya, where he evidently originally settled. So these lines must be ‘tainted’ with ‘angel-human’ *DNA* too, though evidently not *expressing* this **great stature** along with ‘dark skin’ and ‘smaller brains’ as the progeny of **Canaan** apparently generally does. And maybe now you can see why Egypt became the first world-ruling Kingdom after Nimrod’s kingdom, and why for a long time thereafter it was fought over by Ham’s descendants—struggles that involved many ‘tug-of-wars’ that were often centered over Israel, and all the way up to the time of Alexander the Great, where after the new Greek, and finally Roman ‘tug-of-wars’ centered over Israel transpired. Dr. Velikovsky’s *Ages in Chaos* series

reveals many of the Israel-centered ‘tug-of-wars’ by the descendants of Ham, by the way, though this is not really his focus, while [RGT](#) details the Greek and Roman ones, where they are the focus.

It is also reasonable to deduce that the reason why Noah did not suspect that Ham’s wife had some fraction of ‘angel-human’ *DNA* when he accepted her onto the Ark is that she simply did not *express* it, though probably at least one of her children, and other of her descendents did. The explanation of this was made possible by Gregor Johann Mendel experimenting with the *propagation* of *sweet pea flowers* in his Abbey’s garden about a century and a half ago, and by his discovery that there were *laws of genetic inheritance*. Briefly, Professor Mendel discovered that if he *crossed* white and red *sweet pea flowers*, statistical results were predictable—that he would get 3 white *flowers* for every red one. He therefore discovered, though this terminology originated much later, that there were *dominant* and *recessive genes*, and that *dominate traits crossed with recessive traits* resulted in a 3 to 1 *expression* of *dominant traits* over *recessive* ones. In other words, for any particular *genetic trait*—from color to size and shape—for every 4 ‘offspring’ of a *cross* between a *dominant* and *recessive gene*, 3 ‘offspring’ would *express* the *dominant trait*, and 1 the *recessive*. These are just the odds, but being so statistically accurate, it has become a *law of genetic inheritance*.

And you should now see how this applies to Canaan, his 3 brothers, and their mother and father. Evidently, although the **curse** of Noah on Canaan more likely involved *dominant genes* that were apparently ‘installed’, or simply ‘activated’, by Noah’s **curse**, any noticeably *expressed* ‘angelic’ *genetic traits* were more likely *recessive*, and that is, only *expressed* 25% of the time. This is likely why Ham’s sons Cush, Mizraim and Phut are also associated with **giants**, as they must have carried this apparently *recessive trait* as well as Canaan, though I’m guessing Canaan was the only one of these 4 brothers who first *expressed* these ‘angelic’ *traits* after The Flood, and that he may have received the ‘fullest share’ of them to pass along. Mystery finally solved? Maybe. I mean apparently Ham’s wife carried *recessive* ‘angel’ *DNA*, but she herself must not have *expressed* it, or Noah would not have let her on the Ark, while Canaan was probably the 1 in 4 to *express*, and the first to do so after The Flood. But we’ve really only just begun with such considerations—or **revelations**—that we can come to ‘along these lines’, because surely the **abundance of the revelations** using these new **precepts** from God’s Creation, added to our further **study**, will be increasingly ‘expressed’ in the remaining sections.

And remember Professor Mendel discovered this *law* of God’s Creation nearly half a century before the ‘scientific community’ in general caught on. So it should not be so surprising that it should take more than another century beyond that before someone applied this *law* to the case of Ham’s descendants. Maybe someone else has, but I nonetheless do not expect that the ‘scientific community’ in general, nor the Church in general, nor even *creationists*, will ever really catch on to this, not before The Rapture anyway. But I would love to be wrong in any case.

And you can imagine that this ‘bad-angel’ *recessive DNA* would be pretty hard to completely eradicate. But again, this **abominable** ‘angel-human’ *DNA*, if possibly still significantly *expressible*, God, with the help of His Son’s **friends**, must eventually entirely **destroy**. And again, Joshua and David evidently helped a lot with the ‘clean-up’. And I expect that God through His **judgments** has and will get a lot of this work done too. You might also remember from [RGT](#), for example, my guess that most of Africa will be lost to the **plague** of the 4th Seal Judgment. And I’m still expecting that there’s going to be a ‘posse’ formed to finish this ‘round up’, involving **us**. The Prophet Isaiah reveals that this happens, along with the purpose

of our 'round-up', beginning with our 'horseride' down from Heaven to Earth, **prophesying**,

They [meaning **we**] **come** [on horseback, see Revelation 19, especially verse [14](#)] **from a far country, from the end of heaven, even the LORD, and the weapons of his indignation, to destroy the whole land** [specifically, the formerly **Canaanite** land in and around Israel] [Isa 13:5](#).

Now this **prophecy** of Isaiah, in Chapters 13 and 14, is presented by the **prophet** in God's transcendent, 'a-day-is-like-a-thousand-years-and-a-thousand-years-is-like-a-day' perspective. So it's easy to get lost in it if you don't realize that it jumps around in these 'thousand-year days' of this '7,000-year week' quite a bit. But this verse makes clear to me that he's talking about the coming 'horseride with Jesus' on the way to **destroy the whole land** surrounding Israel. And if you're up to speed in [RGT](#), you should recognize that what **we** 'riders' are expecting to **see** accomplished at this time is, first, the 'touchdown' **upon the mount of Olives** and the 'securing of Jerusalem', second, a northeast trip to witness The Lord's 'solo stomping' of a billion or so of the 'red' and 'white', 'haughty and terrible', who we could also call the 'bad grapes of wrath' at Armageddon, and third, a trip from there south to 'rescue' the Jews from Petra and bring them northwest on their triumphant **return, and come with singing unto Zion**, completing the trip around what I call The Lord's Triangle, which finally leaves us ready for the 'bloody campaign' to **destroy the whole** [formerly Canaanite] **land** surrounding Israel. And you should also already **know** that the only reason why so many in this region surrounding Israel will survive The Great Tribulation is that God will go out of His way to spare them, but only so that His Son, who is 'yearning' for **the day**, finally gets His opportunity to be...

...cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it [Isa 13:9](#).

When?

For the stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine [Verse 10](#).

Yes, **immediately after** The Great Tribulation (see again [Mat 24:29](#)). This is the time of the 'final clean-up' when, as God puts it,

...I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible. I will make a man more precious than fine gold; even a man than the golden wedge of Ophir. Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the LORD of hosts, and in the day of his fierce anger [Verses 11-13](#).

Yeah, He's gonna be angry, and fiercely so. And He's going to be **cruel** too, as **we** should be. But be careful, because in the next verses, for example, the **prophet** reverts to predictions of earlier days in this 'week' involving the **judgments** of God delivered not so much directly by Him and his Son, or **us**, but through **the Medes** on **Babylon**. And are you starting to **get** this 'a-day-is-like-a-thousand-years-and-a-

thousand-years-is-like-a-day', 'transcendent perspective' thing?

But what you really need to **get** is that—if you're really one of Jesus' **friends** who really **know** Him, and are really ready for 'face to face' **fellowship**—that **we** are soon to be **like him**, and so **we** should now already be 'yearning' for this **day** too, so that **like him**, we can be **cruel both with wrath and fierce anger** too. Of course this 'horseride' is also to establish Jesus' Millennial Kingdom on Earth in Israel which should involve some, up till then, unrivaled **rejoicing**, but some of that **rejoicing** should happen while you're standing in your own 'blood-drenched clothes'. Uh-huh. And if you're not sure why you should be so full of **cruel, fierce anger**, as well as **fury** and **vengeance** about all this, **like him**, but at the same time anticipating the **rejoicing** that will result from finishing this **work**, also **like him**, then you still have more **study** to do, as you're not really ready for that 'close-abiding', 'face to face' **fellowship** with Jesus if you still simply think that, "**Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord**", applies to all situations. I mean if you really **understand** His mission and are fully ready to participate—and without this **understanding** you will not be—you will not be among his 'closest' **friends**, who already do and are. And this **understanding** can also be of 'eternal consequence', even maybe the difference between **eternal life** and **death**, where 'misunderstanding' puts you in danger of **falling**, at least to the extent that Kings Saul and Solomon finally did. But along with God's 'transcendent perspective', we will not be able to avoid these as continuing topics of our **study**.

For now the point is that part of the reason for this 'horseride' must include 'finishing off' all this 'bad blood'. But what does the **curse** on Canaan have to do with all this? Not much really. I mean it can't really apply to 'superhuman' **giants**, and that is, to anyone with too much of that 'bad-angel' **DNA** for their own **good**. Why? How are you going to make **servants** out of **giants**, even if their **skin** is darker and their **brains** are relatively smaller? So they have been—or eventually will all have to be—exterminated. And the problem is that neither **curse** limits **giants** enough for their own **good**. But Noah's **curse** on Canaan otherwise evidently actually generally 'helps' his descendants that **express** the physical characteristics of 'smaller brains' and 'darker skin', as well as the sociological characteristics of 'generally inescapable servitude', just not in cases also involving **expressed** 'recessive angelic gigantism'.

Consider the following passage by the celebrated—and knighted—early 19th Century Scottish novelist Sir Walter Scott. I have read many of his numerous novels, and I love his work because he makes it so entertaining, but more than that because his stories are based much more on actual, documented history, and real people, than not. Clearly he was knighted for his "histories" in the form of novels about England and Scotland and beyond, which, along with being undeniable realistic, painted true nobility, chivalry and Christian morals in a favorable light, and any lack of these virtues just as faithfully, and whether in the 'upper' of 'lower' classes. And though there is a lot of old Scottish and English to wade through, it's not as hard as Shakespeare, overall. And I recommend his novels as what I call 'Millennial prep'. I recommend 19th Century novelists Jane Austen, Charlotte and Anne Brontë (not Emily!) too for the same reasons. I have read all the novels these women have written, and I suggest you start with these ladies—the easiest of these novels being maybe *Agnes Grey* by Anne Brontë or *Northanger Abbey* by Jane Austen—I mean if you're really interested in discovering what I mean by 'Millennial prep', because these 'greatest' of The Pre-Industrial Revolution Authors (in my opinion) can help you with the slightly further 'step back'—in time—to Sir Walter. And 'getting through' *Jane Eyre* or *Sense and Sensibility* should 'hook you' for sure, even if you only understand most of what you read.

Anyway, one of Sir Walter's later novels is set in the 11th Century in the declining Roman-Greek Byzantine Empire, in Constantinople, where one of the 'court sages' explains his relationship to his 'black servant' to the 'Holy-Land-Crusade-bound', 'son of Charlemagne', *Count Robert of Paris*—this title and name also being the title of the novel. When the sage and Count Robert, along with the Count's 'Amazon-warrior-like' wife, arrive at this courtier's abode...

...the door of this romantic retreat was opened by Diogenes, the negro slave... the Count and his lady [who are from Paris visiting and passing through Constantinople] testified some wonder at his form and lineaments, being the first African, perhaps, whom they had ever seen so closely. The philosopher [or sage] lost not the opportunity of making an impression on their minds, by a display of the superiority of his knowledge.

"This poor being," he observed, "is of the race of Ham, the undutiful son of Noah; for his transgressions against his parent he was banished to the sands of Africa, and was condemned to be the father of a race doomed to be the slaves of the issue of his more dutiful brethren."

The Knight [Robert] and his lady gazed on the wonderful appearance before them, and did not, it may be believed, think of doubting the information which was so much of a piece with their prejudices, while their opinion of their host was greatly augmented by the supposed extent of his knowledge.

"It gives pleasure to a man of humanity," continued Agelastes [the sage]. "when, in old age, or sickness, we must employ the services of others, which is at other times scarce lawful, to choose his assistants out of a race of beings, hewers of wood and drawers of water—from their birth upward destined to slavery; and to whom, therefore, by employing them as slaves, we render no injury, but carry into effect, in a slight degree, the intentions of the Great Being who made us all."

"Are there many of a race," said the Countess, "so singularly unhappy in their destination? I have hitherto thought the stories of black men as idle as those which minstrels tell of fairies and ghosts."

"Do not believe so," said the philosopher; "the race is numerous as the sands of the sea, neither are they altogether unhappy in discharging the duties which their fate has allotted them. Those who are of worse character suffer even in this life the penance due to their guilt; they become the slaves of the cruel and tyrannical, are beaten, starved, and mutilated. To those whose moral characters are better, better masters are provided, who share with their slaves, as with their children, food and raiment, and the other good things which they themselves enjoy. To some, Heaven allots the favor of kings and of conquerors [like Nimrod, for example], and to a few, but those the chief favorites of the species, hath been assigned a place in the mansions of philosophy, where, by availing themselves of the lights which their masters can afford, they gain a prospect into that world which is the

residence of true happiness.” (*Count Robert of Paris*, the beginning of *Chapter Twelfth*).

Kind of sounds a little like what Paul said about slavery, huh? And of course this is not to say that Sir Walter believed all this, but that this dialogue of these characters is based on documentation that was available and commensurate with this time and place.

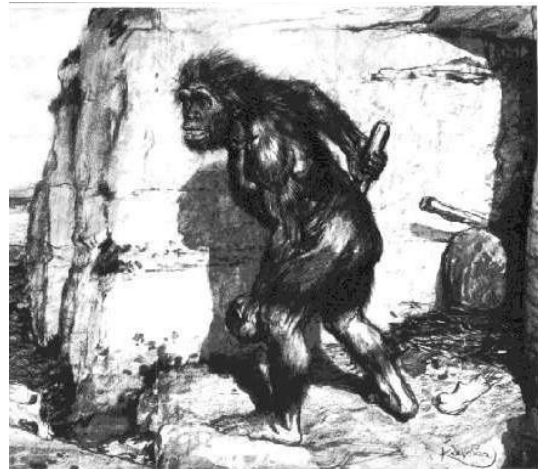
But this is nonetheless some of the **good** in Noah’s **curse** that I, Sir Walter, and Paul are talking about, and Sir Walter’s ‘historical dramatization’ of such documentation offers us a perspective that used to be more generally known and accepted. But from this we can also see that Noah’s **curse** really only applies to those that *express* no ‘angelic characteristics’ that might otherwise empower them to ‘escape servitude’ and even ‘become kings’. However for those only effectively **cursed** by Noah, this can really be an advantage. I mean that this ‘curse’ is essentially the same as that other ‘curse’ Adam and Eve brought on everyone. Specifically, they are both for our own good. And I mean you have to distinguish the difference between a **judgment** of God—that is meant, much more often, to **destroy**—and a **curse**—that is really more meant to **save**. And I mean that those in Canaan’s line—the ones with sufficiently ‘diluted’ or *unexpressed* ‘angel-human’ *DNA*, who have not otherwise effectively enough *interbred* their way out of the **curse**—at least have a **better** chance to be **redeemed**. And I mean that Man in general has to ‘work by the sweat of his brow’ among the **thorns** and **thistles** to survive for his own good, because it evidently makes it at least possible for him to keep his **pride** and **lust** in check. The **curse** on women for childbirth is evidently similarly, however ironically, equally **merciful** to them, because it too is only somehow for their own good. The same, I expect, is true for at least some of the descendents of Canaan. We can deduce that belonging to a ‘tainted bloodline’, but not *expressing* any ‘angelic characteristics’, they should ‘benefit’ from the further ‘disadvantages’ that make it possible for them to ‘keep themselves in check’. Without it, they should more often expect greater misery, if not also eventual ‘extermination’ by God. And the rest of us should expect no **better** without the **curses** we endure, because we are all cursed, in one way or another, all for our own good. And as far as **giants**, and monkeys, and evidence of the ‘fiery judgments’ of God, we’ll hear from Sir Walter again.

And if you **understand** what I’m saying you should be ready to **praise God** for every **curse**, handicap, difficulty, restriction, rejection, and every exclusion, expulsion, cold shoulder, and even attack you are made by God to **endure**. You’ve got to see that, generally speaking, and at least a lot of the time, it’s just Him looking out for you, keeping your **pride** and/or **lust** in check, even possibly including taking you ‘out of the game’ altogether to wait it out in **paradise**, and that it’s all only for your own **good**. But I’m only talking **to them who are the called according to his purpose**—though, again, this is really His perspective, not ours. And it’s OK if you’re feeling a little ‘light-headed’ again, because again, being **transformed by the renewing of your mind** should at least sometimes have that kind of an effect. But we’ll naturally be **able** to correct, improve and expand our perspective on all this too in the remainder of this **study** and beyond.

And speaking of *extinct ethnic groups* of more or less **great stature**, who likely were not, at least generally, ‘infected’ with ‘angel-human’ *DNA*, this brings us to another embarrassing story—for *evolutionists*—which is likely why it has now become so hard to find. The setting is in La Chapelle-aux-Saints, France in 1908. And it’s the story of the ‘hunched-over’ Neanderthal that was popularized (yes, read ‘propagandized’) as a ‘knuckle-walking caveman’. And this story continued to be

told (read, 'indoctrinated') throughout the first half of the 20th Century. Why is this embarrassing? It's because an earlier find of Neanderthals, in 1886 in the town of Spy, Belgium, of two complete, full-grown, not 'hunched-over', but fully erect Neanderthals—a man and a woman—was hid from the public eye. Why? Because the find in Neander Valley in 1908 was of a nearly complete skeleton too, but had the appearance *evolutionists* wanted, one allowing them to believe they had found a 'knuckle-walking ape-man'. And adding 'evidence' like this to the buzz about Java Man, and shortly thereafter the frenzy over Piltdown Man, and then Nebraska Man, made bringing attention to the two more 'normal-looking', 'erect-postured' *skeletons* inconvenient. So they were kept secret, with surely all this known by the original 'storytellers' (read, 'propagandist') from the beginning.

But this story is no longer so much hidden as 'scrubbed' and 're-spun'. The old story was 'propagandized' by the first 'scientist' to study these *fossils*, French *paleontologist* Dr. Marcellin Boule. I mean surely he knew about the earlier find of the Neanderthal couple in Belgium, but seeing he had a 'pet agenda' of his own, he evidently 'conspired' to base his 1909 depiction of Neanderthal Man (artist's "depiction", p.236) only on "the Old Man" of La Chapelle-aux-Saints. Why other scientists who knew about the Belgium Neanderthals were silent for so long, I can't say for sure, except that surely it had something to do with varying degrees of **pride, lust** and/or **oppression**. But the larger crime here is that the 'backpedaling' didn't start until 1957—nearly 5 decades later—with a publication in *The Quarterly Review of Biology* by Dr. William L. Straus, Jr. of the Laboratory of Physical Anthropology and Department of Anatomy at The John Hopkins University in Baltimore, and by Dr. J. E. Cave of the Department of Anatomy at St. Bartholomew's Hospital Medical College in London. These are now quite obscure *scientists*. I mean they're largely 'scrubbed' from the internet, except for an unfortunate, unreferenced quote of Dr. Straus easily enough found on *creationists* websites, the one I shared back on p.206-7. And their obscurity is likely because they took upon themselves the task to be the first to publish a joint report of their reexamination of the *bones* that concluded Dr. Boule's conclusions were 'erroneous', and that the 'hunched-over' condition of the "Old Man" could be attributed to his severe, debilitating *arthritis*, which, supposedly, had been previously unnoticed. But really such an oversight also had to involve the 'oversight' of the earlier couple's remains that showed no signs of *arthritis*, or 'knuckle-walking'. And really it seems amazing that such 'oversights' could happen at all? How indeed could top 'scientist' run for nearly 50 years with a story that Neanderthals were 'hunched-over, knuckle-walking cavemen', when they had, from the beginning, at least twice as much evidence to the contrary?



Surely this 'oversight' could not have continued without 'cover-up', but even this seems unlikely. And what I mean is that it makes more sense that such a longstanding 'blinding of the mind' was 'satanically enforced'. Surely there is more than just the conspiracy of **wicked men** here. What else could 'bridle' the entire 'scientific community' for near half a century? And they're still not telling the real story over a century later, except possibly in some of those hard to find 'more revealing moments', and maybe on a few *creationists* publications and websites. Today Neanderthals are considered by many *evolutionists* as a likely *extinct*, but a fully *human ethnic group*, and likely superior to Modern Man. And of course they

were, as we will further confirm in the later sections. In fact I expect that such 'stronger', 'oversized' *humans*—though then surely *none* 'tainted' with 'angel-human' *genes*—will exist again in The Millennium, as we will eventually see.

But there's an even 'bigger' problem for *evolutionist*, which again does not likely, at least generally, involve 'bad genes'. I'm talking about the 'king of the cavemen', **Cro-Magnon Man**. See the **comparison of the size and strength of a fully mature Cro-Magnon Man compared to an average Modern Man** in the picture on p.237. He was a big-un. And by-the-way, you might have some 'scientist' try to 'lord over' you that it's only correct to pronounce Cro-Magnon in French—rhyming with 'filet mignon', but we've been over this pattern of the abuse of authority and the reasons for it before, haven't we.

And no, I'm not talking this time so much about his *brain* that was also bigger than Modern Man's, nor about his 'loop-dated' age and other attributes that really only show him as a different *ethnic group* from Neanderthals, one of his distinguishing features being more 'slight' *browridges*. No, with this superior but apparently *extinct ethnic group* I just want to prepare you for what's going to 'come out in the wash'. And yes, the story of Cro-Magnon Man has been 'washed' too. For one thing, he now more often goes by his new name—*European Early Modern Human* or *EEMH*, or sometimes just *EMH*, dropping "European". And despite being so large when mature, he is also sometimes referred to as just another *anatomically modern human* or *AMH*, as sometimes Neanderthals and a variety of other possible *ethnic groups* are—I mean the ones 'suggested' by the always very scant evidence that make such a variety of claims possible. Indeed

'scanty and inconclusive finds' are the best to *evolutionists*, as they leave the most 'room for interpretation'. And I think we've seen, and will continue to see, that 'too much evidence' is damaging to mainstream *evolutionary theory*, and that when such 'inconvenient evidence' is available, like that Neanderthal couple from Belgium, it is hidden or covered-up, until and if it eventually becomes useful for a newly 'washed' story. Or it is simply 'disposed of', or 'lost', as we will also continue to see. But there is more evidence for Cro-Magnon Man than other 'imagined' *AMH ethnic groups*, and enough that eventually we can find some of the real evidence quite useful.

The name Cro-Magnon comes from the Abri de Crô-Magnon (meaning, 'rock shelter of Cro-Magnon', which is a big cave in Aquitaine, Southwestern France, where some of the first 'specimens' were found in the 1860's. It is also, by-the-way, the largest region where the Occitan language is spoken—accounting for half a million out of the 16 million people in the region. And this language is also spoken in Spain, Italy, and other parts of Europe, even in South Carolina in the U.S., as well as places in Canada and Argentina. And it's a dying language in many other places. And this is the language of the troubadours of Southern France of the 11th to 13th centuries. They were a class of medieval but sophisticated lyrical poets. I mean do you think that 'Cro-Magnon' people, however *interbred* and 'changed' by *genetic variation* over time, don't exist today? I think this language could be the evidence



that they do. And I mean we will see that these ‘cave fossils’ really couldn’t be more than 3500 years old, so we should expect that the ‘changes’ in any of these truly *human*, formerly—but temporarily—‘cave dwelling’ peoples could not be much more than a couple hundred generations old. That would be the case over 3500 years with the average age of first-time mothers being 17.

And fittingly, Cro-Magnon Man or *EEMH*’s are also considered to have been the most ‘culturally sophisticated cavemen’. One reason is the fact that they haven’t found any they were able to ‘loop-date’ older than around 45,000 years (read, 3500 years). So they are considered the most recent ancestor of man. However I should qualify that even in cursory investigations you won’t be able to help notice that *evolutionist* ‘fly fast and loose’ with their ‘classifications’ of *species* by ‘dating’. I mean if the *species* is already ‘classified’ and ‘dated’, and its appearance works for their story that it’s a ‘predecessor’ or ‘ancestor’ of another *species*, then, whether the ‘evidence’ shows that it fits or not, they will surely ‘squeeze’ it into its ‘preferred parameters’, one way or another, or otherwise ‘hide’ or ‘discard’ it because it cannot be made to fit.

But Cro-Magnon *remains* have been found with ‘cave paintings’, or ‘objects of art and culture’, or appear to have been ‘ceremonially buried’. They were linked, for example, to the well-known Lascaux, France cave paintings and to the Aurignacian Culture, the *remains* of which are well known across Europe, even into Southwest Asia—yeah, you know, where Shem and Japheth’s descendants more likely ended up. And oddly enough—and unless you consult *scripture* with some degree of ‘spiritual maturity’—it is believed that this culture lasted only about 10,000 years, from about 45,000 to 35,000 years ago—by ‘loop-dating’ of course. But we will see that they much more likely ‘appeared and disappeared’ in about 50 years, and again, about 3500 years ago. But either way, why so fast? We’ll make ‘sound scriptural sense’ of all this in later sections.

But for now suffice it to say that besides the effects of Noah’s *curse* on Canaan and his *blessings* of Shem and Japheth, the bigger reason for the conditions Neanderthal and Cro-Magnon *remains* are found in, as well as the condition of *remains* of all *so-called* ‘cavemen’, is God’s doing. And I mean the *great judgments* of our *great and terrible God* provided *trying* circumstance for some, and *worse* for others, according to His will, and according to the *wickedness* of those who were so *judged*. But as with Neanderthals, we will only get a glimpse of this in our look at Cro-Magnon Man, but again, it should help quite a bit with our *understanding* of *scripture* in later sections.

Cro-Magnon Man, like Neanderthals, was robustly built and powerful. The body was generally heavy and solid with a strong musculature. However the forehead was fairly straight rather than sloping like in Neanderthals. But their *brain capacity* was comparable to Neanderthals, averaging about 1600 cc—larger than the average *modern human* at 1400 cc, making it about 12½% larger on average. And like Neanderthals, recent research leads some to conclude that Cro-Magnon Man is not sufficiently different from *modern humans* to require a separate designation. I mean they refer to them as *Anatomically Modern Humans (AMH*’s) as opposed to *European Early Modern Humans (EEMH*’s). But this is evidently only accurate if you are ‘more selective’ about what to include in your ‘sample box’. And again, I won’t begin to fully explain what I mean by all this until next section. But the following are some of these ‘select samples’ that supposedly ‘fit the mold’ that both ‘more and less selective’ *evolutionist* prefer for Cro-Magnon Man.

A supposedly ‘prehistoric’ *maxilla* or *upper jawbone fragment* was discovered at the Kents Cavern Site during excavations there in 1927—Kents Cavern being “a cave system in Torquay, Devon, England”. This particular cavern is near the coast

of Southwest England, and is named Kents Cavern 4. In 2011 the *fossil* was 're-loop-dated' to at least 41,500 years old and confirmed to be Cro-Magnon mostly because of this 'determined' age. But it also gained the distinction of being the earliest *EEMH* or *AMH fossil* discovered in Northwest Europe.

But in November 2011, tests were conducted on what were previously thought to be Neanderthal 'baby teeth', 'unearthed' in 1964 from the Grotta del Cavallo Site in Southern Italy. They were later 'identified' and became recognized as the oldest *Cro-Magnon*—or *AMH*—remains so far discovered in Europe, 'loop-dating' from between 43,000 to 45,000 years ago.

But it all started with The Red Lady of Paviland, a complete *anatomically modern skeleton*. However it was finally determined to be male—the original discoverer mistakenly thinking it was female. Discovered in 1823 in a 'cave burial' in Gower, South Wales, it was the first *human fossil* to have been found anywhere in the World. 'Loop-dated' at 33,000 years old, it is still the oldest example of a 'ceremonial burial' of a *modern human* anywhere in Western Europe. Found with it were a *mammoth skull*—which has since been 'lost', and 'personal decorations' suggesting some kind of 'religious practice' (read, Venus/Satan worship), including red ochre dye anointing, the significance of all this we will begin to clarify shortly. Numerous *tools* were also with the *skeleton* as 'burial accessories'. *Genetic analysis* of the recovered *DNA* revealed commonality with the Haplogroup H, now the most common *group* in Europe. So really only 'loop-dating' makes her, or really him, supposedly *EEMH*.

And it was a member of the Geological Society of France, and later of other societies and academies, and Professor of Geology at the University of Toulouse, *geologist* Louis Lartet who discovered five *skeletons* of this type in 1868 in a rock shelter called Abri de Crô-Magnon that finally gave this *ethnic group* its most popular name. Similar specimens were later found in neighboring areas as well as in other parts of Europe.

The condition and placement of the *remains* of Cro-Magnon 1, the first *skull* found by Professor Lartet, with pieces of *shell* and *animal teeth* that appear to have been parts of 'necklaces', also raises the question of whether they were buried intentionally. If they were it suggests they had knowledge of 'ritual', if not also 'religion', by burying their dead with 'necklaces' and *tools*, as well as an idea of *disease*, including that the bodies needed to be 'contained'. And of course they had such 'knowledge'. I mean they had a better 'understanding' of their 'religion' than most do today. And they likely had better 'understanding' of many other things that God made it impossible for them to pass along to us. And these conclusions are indicated not just because of the **scripture** we will consider in later sections, but also because of the analysis of the *pathology* of the *skeletons* of this period. Again, what *evolutionists* consider to be about 30 to 45 thousand years ago, **we**, with the help of the work of Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, and that is, which **we** will see **enlightened** by **scripture**, will **prove** was really only about 35 hundred years ago. This analysis and accompanying **rightly dividing** I'm talking about shows that these *humans* led a 'physically difficult life'. And you can also see their 'hard life' in their *bones*. But the most telling thing about their *bones* is that several of the individuals found at the shelter had *fused vertebrae* in their *necks*, indicating *traumatic injury*, or more specifically, 'blows' to their *skulls* that were strong enough to *compact* their *spines*. The *adult female* found at Abri de Crô-Magnon survived for some time with a *skull fracture*. And such *injuries* would be 'life threatening' even today. The point is—and it will eventually become obvious—that what caused such *injuries* is what 'drove' them into *caves* in the first place. I mean we will see that it is God that is more likely to blame for these *injuries* than any 'fighting among

themselves', or even 'accidents'. Of course *evolutionists* just see 'warring tribes', and 'fighting with large animals', and surely *injuries* of this kind occasionally occurred. But they maintain this 'incomplete perspective' because they won't consider the most reliable evidence available as to why most of these *injuries* occurred: **scripture**. The pervasiveness and severity of *injury*, along with the evidence of *healing*, as well as the evidence of 'ceremonial burial', and even of an 'artistic religious culture' to go with it, together indicate—from a 'scriptural perspective'—that the *injuries* were not as often caused by 'fighting amongst themselves', by *animals*, or even by occasional 'accidents', but by the conditions created by the nature of God's **judgments** upon the Earth—conditions that naturally 'drove' all survivors into *caves* for protection from what was falling from the sky.

And there are other circumstances to consider caused by the nature of God's **judgments**. An example of what I'm referring to is seen in another of the oldest *Cro-Magnon remains* in Europe at Peștera cu Oase, "the bones cave", near the Gibraltar-like Iron Gates on the Danube River in Romania. The *cave* appears to be a *hyena* or *cave bear* den. In this case the *human remains* were likely the prey of such animals. There were no *tools* found there. So this appears to be the same kind of circumstances as with all those Neanderthals found with *saber-toothed bear remains* in Spain. And the circumstance I'm talking about is a shortage of *food*, where 'eating or being eaten' suddenly became much more common.

Along this line, another circumstance seen before is found at a Cro-Magnon *fossil* site at Předmostí, located near Přerov in what is today the Czech Republic. Excavations were conducted between 1884 and 1930. But as the original material was lost during World War II, new excavations were conducted in the 1990's. The Předmostí Site appears to have been a 'living area' with associated 'burial ground' with some 20 burials, including 15 complete 'interments', and 'portions' of 5 others, evidently representing 'disturbed burials'. Some believe *cannibalism* would explain the apparent subsequent 'disturbance'. **Scripture** surely can—I mean to those who have a 'spiritually mature' perspective of God. And I mean *cannibalism* can be the result of God's **great judgments**. And He has created other circumstances that have tempted **fathers** to **eat** their **sons**, and vice versa. See [Ezekiel 5:5-11](#), for example. But you should **know** that this is one of Satan's 'strategies' too. But in his case it's not to **judge**, but to **deceive** and **rule over** the **wicked**. And though dictionaries today disagree about this, the origin of the word "cannibalism" is related to the **worship** of **Baal**, which often involved *human sacrifice*. And the reason why such 'sacrifices' became so commonly practiced all over the World, decreasing only fairly recently, is the result of Satan's 'spin' on God's **judgments**, as we will see.

The *non-human fossils* from this site, by-the-way, are mostly *mammoth*. And many of the *bones* are heavily *charred*, indicating they were *cooked*. Other *remains* include *fox*, *reindeer*, 'ice-age' *horse*, *wolf*, *bear*, *wolverine*, and *hare*—more evidence that *food* was scarce. Additional evidence is that the *remains* of three *dogs*

were also found, one of which had a *mammoth bone* in its mouth, this maybe evidence that *food* became especially scarce, as *dogs* are otherwise useful as 'alarms' for approaching danger and to hunt. Again, we will see that such 'choices of food', whether for Animal or Man, were surely conditions created by our **great and terrible God**, and by **his great judgments**. I mean the Lord



God has repeatedly in the past, and will again, **burn** most the whole Earth, including 'boiling the ground' and literally 'melting mountains', then 'inundate it with water', sometimes *boiling water*, leaving few survivors, except that He also in the process protects and provides for at least the **remnant of his people**, some of which are not Jews. And the best indicator of what I'm talking about is that red ochre dye on the burial *remains*, though again, we won't fully see its significance till we are **deeper** into this **study**.

The *flint tools* found at Cro-Magnon sites that are associated with Aurignacian Culture are significant too. Professor Lartet identified some of these before he found the first *skeletons*. The Aurignacian Culture differs by their 'finely worked' *bone* and *flint points* made for *hafting*, meaning they were made to attach to a *shaft* or *handle*. But they are also peculiar—to *evolutionists*—because they also made and painted "Venus figurines".

The **Venus of Willendorf** (photo, p.240), which has since been 'washed' with the name **Woman of Willendorf**—as it is thought too old to be an **idol** of Venus **worship**, is a 4.25 inch (10.8 cm) high statuette of a female figure that is 'loop-dated' to about 28,000 to 25,000 BC. Found in 1908 at a site in the Willendorf Hamlet of Aggsbach, Austria, this limestone so-called "fertility figure" is not carved from local *limestone*, and is tinted with a red ochre dye.

The “Lady with the Hood”, or the **Venus of Brassempouy** (photo, p.240) from France, was carved from *mammoth ivory*, and is also ‘loop-dated’ to be about 25,000 years old. This miniature bust found in a *cave* in 1894 along with several other ‘human figurines’ is less than 1½ inches or 3.65 cm high. On the head is hair or a ‘head shawl’ patterned similarly in some respects to other figurines.

Venus of Laussel (photo, p.241) is a 1½ foot high *limestone* bas-relief of a female figure, again painted with red ochre. It was carved on a large limestone block that had fallen from its original position at the rock shelter, Abri de Laussel, also in Aquitaine, France. And ‘she’ appears to be holding the Moon because, as we will eventually see, ‘she’ essential did on two separate occasions. But ‘she’ holds a lot more than that in the heavens throughout her career, as Dr. Velikovsky—and The Word of God—will also eventually show us.

In the shiny *ceramic* figurine, **Venus of Dolní Věstonice** (photo, p.241), other dynamics ‘come to light’. She’s a female figure dated to 29,000-25,000 BC, found in 1925 in the Moravian Basin in the Czech Republic. It was, along with a few others from nearby locations, for nearly a century the oldest known *ceramic* articles in the World. Its height is 11.1 centimeters or about 4½ inches, and it’s about 1½ inches at its widest point. It’s made of *clay fired* at a relatively low temperature. And I’ll introduce what I mean by ‘dynamics coming to light’ shortly.

Dr. Randall White of the Department of Anthropology, Center for the Study of Human Origins at New York University concluded about these figurines in the *Journal of Archaeological Method and Theory*, in December 2006, that although the style of representation is essentially realistic, the proportions of the head do not



correspond exactly to any known *human* population of the present or past, and that since the mid-twentieth century, interpretations of what they are have shifted from being ‘race-based’ to a more ‘universal respect of womanhood and fertility’. So ‘scientists’ are moving in the right direction at least. These **idols** are indeed ‘universally related to female fertility’. But we will see that a much fuller interpretation is, like God, out of this World, as He is the reason for it.

In September 2008 near Schelklingen, Germany,

archeologists discovered a 6 cm or 2 ½ inch figurine carved from a mammoth’s tusk, named, **Venus of Hohle Fels** (photo, p.241), and ‘loop-dated’ to at least 35,000 years old, making it the earliest known sculpture of this type, and the earliest known work of ‘figurative art’ altogether. The small ‘head’, by-the-way, may not be a ‘head’, but a means to wear this figurine as a ‘pendant’, as it has a hole through it. A *Nature* article, (Vol. 459, Issue 7244, May 14, 2009), featuring one of the *archeologists* studying this figurine, naturally referred to it as “highly sexualized”. The companion video to this article produced by *Nature* entitled, *Prehistoric pin-up*, is linked here (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?>



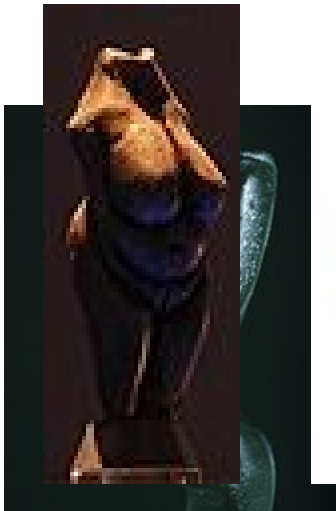
[feature=player_embedded&v=Y8noVoCsYGs](#)).

In other words, we're supposed to think that these people—men?—didn't keep their 'pornographic tendencies' secret, but literally sported such free expression with pendants? No. I tell you a woman more likely wore this pendant than a man. Because it, again, relates to why *food* was in 'short supply', and why they thought they needed to live in or near 'natural fallout shelters' to survive. And though surely 'blatantly pornographic', these figurines are more like 'rosary beads' than expressions of 'fat-woman love'. They are 'symbols of worship'. They are portable, outward signs of their allegiance to Venus, who was seen repeatedly 'close up' by the whole World. And these **idols** were

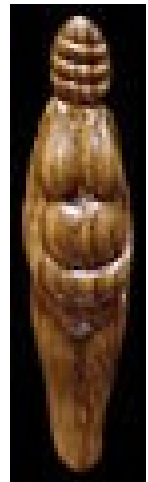
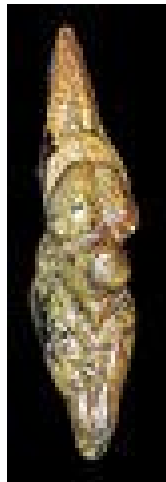
carried or worn in the hopes **she** wouldn't 'rain down hell-fire'—or other equally fatal forms of 'inundation'—on them yet again, but that if **she** must, that their display of 'faithfulness' and 'worship' by keeping **her** figurine **image** close will spare them, as I will more faithfully demonstrate—with an 'overwhelming inundation of evidence' from God's Creation and His Word—in later sections.

But let me begin 'cracking open' this 'floodgate' of your imagination a little now. These 'figurines' are representations of what people all over the World saw in the sky around 3500 years ago. And you can easily see where **she** eventually ended up every morning or evening. **She** is the Planet Venus. We know this, I mean the relatively few who are paying better attention do—largely because of the help of Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, and because **she** was 'religiously' tracked by peoples all over the World. No, I don't mean that these figurine **idols** are inspired by how Venus behaves today, but by how she behaved 3 1/2 millennia ago, when **she**—one of the **instruments** of God's **judgment**—nearly completely **destroyed** everyone on Earth. And on **her** way to and from Earth, being a 'planet-sized comet', **she** evidently appeared, from various perspectives, as depicted by these 'figurine' **idols**. And don't get 'hung up' that I call Venus **she**. God in His Word refers to **her** and the Earth as feminine too, as we will repeatedly confirm.

Here are some other Comet Venus figurine **idols** from this 'loopy time zone' to consider.



So



Venus of Moravany

Venus of Lesouge

Venus of Savignano

Venus of Bouret

Venus of Parabita

she was apparently a spectacle that was able to capture the imaginations of people all over the World for centuries to follow.

One of the most recently made 'figurine/pendants' of this style (notice the hole) is the **Venus of Monruz** discovered in 1991, near Neuchâtel,

Switzerland, 'loop-dated' at just 11,000 years old. See all these *images* on [p.240-42](#).

A small *ivory* bust of a man, by-the-way, found at the Dolní Věstonice Site and 'loop dated' 26,000 years old indicates the Cro-Magnons had straight hair, though the somewhat later Venus of Brassempouy appears to have wavy or curly hair, possibly braided. Not recognizing that this is actually the 'head of a comet' and not really of a 'human woman', this creates confusion for *evolutionists*, and is an example of another general pattern with them. I mean besides missing that it is a feminine depiction of a 'planet-sized comet', they are apparently also generally somehow unable to see that we are **fearfully and wonderfully made**, so that even a variety of *kinds* and *colors* of *hair* confuses them. Some of them apparently actually think, "If one Neanderthal had straight hair, shouldn't they all?" In other words, they sometimes also read way too little—and only the parts that fit their mindset—into their conclusions, and are easily confused when there is conflicting evidence. But remember, they are good at ignoring and misinterpreting, even distorting, falsifying, and even destroying evidence that too clearly contradicts their 'pet theories'. But there really is no problem here, even for *evolutionists*. People have all kinds of hair today, and wear it in all kinds of ways, including people with 'straight hair' who 'curl it', and vice versa. But of course I mean there is no problem except that they don't know that these 'figurines' are primarily **idols** for **worship** inspired by various perspectives of the Comet Venus, before **she** finally 'burnt out', and was finally 'knocked' into her present day *orbit* by Mars, or that is, by God's **use** of Mars, as we'll see.

Chased into *caves* by Venus—or really by the **great judgments** of God—that globally and dramatically 'thinned' the population of Man, Animals and Plants by conflagration and various types of inundation, Cro-Magnons, like Neanderthals, were forced to become, primarily, 'big-game hunters'. This would have also forced them to be somewhat 'nomadic' in their search for 'food'. But *Cro-Magnons* were evidently less *carnivorous* than Neanderthals, because, judging by the equipment and containers they had available, they evidently also ate more *plants*. And they are associated with finds of spun, dyed, and knotted *flax fibers* that were evidently used to make cords for hafting stone tools, weaving baskets, even sewing garments. They also used *manganese* and *iron oxides* to paint pictures, as well as red ochre for dye, and there is some evidence they were eventually able to create a lunar calendar. And we'll talk about the repeated need to 'remake the calendar' in later sections. But it's time you began thinking about these 'cave people' as more being forced—by God—into conditions more primitive than Robinson Crusoe endured—shipwrecked on a deserted island—than thinking that they did not know better than to live that way. They and their 'larger brains' were limited by God's **judgments** to live that way, and not unlike how God, at the same time, 'reigned in' His Own People, the Jews, forcing them to **wandered in the wilderness** 40 years, under the **shadow of death**, though led by a **pillar of fire** and **smoke**, which were other phenomena God used Venus to cause and, with 'unimaginably awesome finesse', to entirely **order** every one of their **steps**, as we will see.

But again, there is evidence of a variety of *ethnic groups* really, that are sometimes all lumped together as either Neanderthal or Cro-Magnon, most of which we will not attempt to consider, the available evidence to support them being, again, too 'scant', and the license to 'interpret' them therefore much too 'broad', where even in a couple of cases such supposed 'evidence' has been found to represent the 'ancestors' of people later discovered to still be alive and well. Of course such cases tend to get a 'thorough washing', if not 'complete disposal'.

The point, then, is that only fully *human* or fully *ape bones* have ever been found, with nothing in between, no matter how wide the variation in *species*, or *ethnic groups* becomes, as God originally promised, so that the ‘coffin-sized box’ of ‘evidence’ for the existence of ‘ape-men’ is really only filled with fantasy and fraud. However there is *archeological evidence* that there were indeed **enormous giants**, and by this I mean that there were ‘half-human, half-angel half-breeds’. And this is some of that ‘confusing evidence’ that *evolutionists* either ignore or dispose of. But there’s a lot more we need to **understand** before we’re ready for a discussion about this kind of evidence, which is one of the reasons we’re saving such ‘tall tales’ for next section.

But it’s time we consider Man’s **so-called** ‘earliest ape-man ancestor’, *Australopithecus*, who evidently lived before the passing of Comet Venus, as well as before The Flood, as their *fossils* are generally preserved for us encased in *sedimentary rock*. But we will see that The Flood was not the only ‘cataclysmic judgment’ that ‘inundated Earth’—Venus caused ‘widespread inundation’ too, also forming *sedimentary rock*, though generally ‘shallower’ in depth and thickness than that *laid* in Noah’s time. However it turns out that the ‘unearthed’ *remains* of *Australopithecus* were encased in deeper, thicker *sedimentary rock*. And such finds are ‘loop-dated’ from over a million to over 5 million years old. And with such ‘loop dating’ *evolutionists* want to believe that we’re only talking about ‘ape-men’ at best, because they do not believe *AMH*’s existed that far back, not to mention, again, that they ‘ignore’, ‘hide’, ‘distort’ or ‘dispose of’ evidence, and even ‘loop dating’ of any clearly *modern human remains* whenever it defies their **so-called** ‘theories’. And since this supposedly ‘older evidence’ is usually ‘extremely fragmentary’, they feel quite free to ‘monkey’ with their ‘theories’ of the ‘evolution’ of the various *fragments* of *body parts* involved, including with the order of that ‘evolution’, by freely ‘designating’ the supposedly more *modern human parts* as the ones that ‘first evolved’ in ‘ape-men’.

But let me be more specific, and ‘air’ some more ‘dirty laundry’ that, as usual, has since been ‘thoroughly-washed’, because, as you should understand, **SECTION 2** and **3** are more about exposing the **wickedness of the wicked**, and that **liar** who is **the father of it**, than marveling at the awesomeness of God. Starting next section, and using the preparation to that point, we will move more into ‘marvel-mode’, and increasingly so as we proceed, though we will not exhaust opportunities to expose the **wicked devices** of our **adversary the devil** to the very last section.

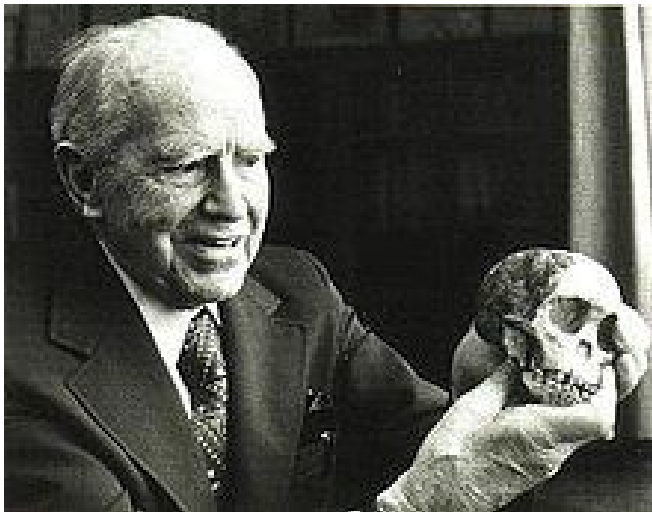
Today there are about a dozen, I guess, disputed ‘classifications’ of *Australopithecus*—with another one on the verge of being announced, or should I say, revived, as I write—the oldest ‘loop-dated’ over 5 million years old. The first *highly fragmentary* finds of these **so-called** ‘ape-men’ were ‘classified’ as *Australopithecus africanus*. And the *remains* of these **creatures** have been so far found, as far as I have been able to tell, at just four locations, all not too far from each other in the country of South Africa. The first ‘evidence’ of this still *highly fragmentary* and ‘sparsely supported’ claim was found at Taung, in a *limestone* mine in 1924, later a little more at the Sterkfontein Caves in 1935, after that a little more in the *caves* and *limeworks* of the adjacent Makapansgat and Swartkrans Valleys in 1948, and finally also at Gladysvale in 1992. As usual, looking into these sites and the ‘scientists’ who ‘worked’ and ‘studied’ them indeed reveals committed *evolutionists* who believe in ‘ape-men’, and who ‘interpret’ their ‘sparse finds’ as ‘sufficient evidence’ that they existed, but it also reveals others who more critically analyze the ‘evidence’, who instead identify them as only *apes*, though often just in order to defend and/or advance their own rival ‘pet theories’. But ‘dissension’ from the established ‘party line’ seems to be better controlled more recently. However

again, such 'limited evidence' as this, including no more than *skull fragments* and as little as just *teeth*, was exactly the kind they were looking for, because again, such 'evidence' provides the 'latitude' for 'flexibility of interpretation', not to mention for 'fraudulent manipulation' of the 'evidence'—though likely also for 'turf wars'—as little else is available for comparison.

Let's start with the first 'scientist' to identify and name *Australopithecus africanus*, Dr. **Raymond Arthur Dart**. He was the Australian *anatomist* and *anthropologist* who got the credit for the 1924 discovery at Taung, South Africa of the **Taung Child skull fragments**. See him and his find shown on **p.244**. He considered the find to be the *remains* of an *extinct hominid*, an 'ape-man-child', that was closely related to *humans*, and one of the 'earliest ape-men', describing it as a new *species* in the journal *Nature* in 1925.

Dr. Dart studied at the University of Queensland, St. Andrew's College, Sydney, the University of Sydney, and University College, London, before taking a position as head of the newly established department of anatomy at the University of Witwatersrand in Johannesburg, South Africa in 1922.

In 1924, a colleague of Dr. Dart, Professor Robert Burns Young sent Dart two crates of *fossils* from Taung. Upon seeing the *fossils*, Dr. Dart recognized one as being an *early human* because he determined that its *brain* dimensions were too large for a *baboon* or *chimpanzee*. Blasting in the *limestone* mine had exposed a *cave* filled with *sedimentary rock* that was in turn filled with *rock fragments*. This kind of composite rock is called *breccia*. How did it form? I mean how could it be only inside a cave of limestone? Arriving at the **revelation** of how such a composite rock could be so strangely 'woven' into other *strata* is what this **study** is all about. But you may need many more 'lesser revelations' before you get this 'composite' and 'layered' one. And this is what it's like with all 'meatier'



revelations. They are not **simple** to **understand**. They only come by **study**, **diligence** and **patience**. So **be patient** and **continue**, rereading again and again as necessary, and you will. And by the way, along with the Taung Child *skull* that was 'unearthed' from this "cave breccia" there was also found several *fossilized monkeys*, as well as the *remains* of a variety of small *mammals*. And yes, **revelations** are not meant to be 'static', but to forever **grow**—being corrected, improved and expanded forever. And again I mean that because the **knowledge** of God is **infinite**, there is no end to this process, and so we should **never cease** to

grow. And we can only be **faithful** to begin to **grow**, and remain **faithful** to **continue** in this **eternal** 'process', and to never, **ever** stop.

Dr. Dart, on the other hand, was 'stalled at the start'. Since he was not part of the most 'influential scientific community'—in England—and because he found the *fossil* in Africa which 'defied' the 'popular theory' that the first 'ape-men' originated in Europe or Asia, his findings were initially dismissed by the 'greater scientific community'. This was when Piltdown Man, Neanderthal Man and Cro-Magnon Man were all in their 'hay days'. The problem with the Taung *skull* is that it was viewed as opposite of Piltdown Man. Both had 'large brains', but Piltdown Man had 'ape-like' *teeth*, while the Taung *skull teeth* appear more *hominoid*—or 'human-like'.

Also there was the popular belief that a *large cranial capacity* must precede *bipedal locomotion*—‘walking upright’ on two feet—so the Taung *skull* should have indicated that it belonged to a ‘knuckle-walker’, but it didn’t. So since the Taung *skull* seemed to contradict the ‘popular theory’ of the *evolutionary development of man*, Dr. Dart's interpretation was not appreciated for decades. But it finally ‘picked up steam’, being a ‘welcome distraction’, when Piltdown Man was exposed as a fraud in the 50’s. And *Australopithecus* has been a staple of high school textbooks ever since the 60’s.

Still not all of Dr. Dart's ideas are yet widely accepted. For example, Dr. Dart also originated the “Killer Ape Theory”—that *apes*, and ‘later ape-men’, were ‘violent predators’, even of each other. However other *anthropologists* did defend and further developed this *theory*. And I’m expecting that its ‘hay day’ is still coming, if not already finally here, because the evidence for *cannibalism* is mounting and should only continue to grow. I mean I can only think that this desperate practice became way too tempting and therefore prevalent about 3500 years ago, which *evolutionist* ‘loop-date’ anywhere between tens of thousands to a few million years ago. However, though Dr. Dart believed the damage to the *fossilized fragment* of the Taung Skull was caused by *cannibalism*, more modern CSI seems to show the damage was caused by larger *carnivores*—‘man-eating animals’. But we have already seen other evidence of *cannibalism*, and again, I’m expecting we will only be finding more and more of such evidence in time, and we’ll see a lot more of why I predict this in later sections.

But I think top *evolutionists* already saw the ‘handwriting on the wall’ about Piltdown Man long before the scandal was fully exposed to the public. And I would say that when, in 1947, Sir Arthur Keith finally admitted,

...Dart was right, and I was wrong,

that he made this concession to ‘cushion the blow’ of the Piltdown Man Hoax more than to support Dart, because we must understand that two decades earlier Sir Arthur originally concluded that, Dr. Dart's...

...claim is preposterous, the skull is that of a young anthropoid ape... and showing so many points of affinity with the two living African anthropoids, the gorilla and chimpanzee, that there cannot be a moment's hesitation in placing the fossil form in this living group (Johanson, David, *Lucy's Child*. New York: William Morrow and Co., 1989, p.56).

Clearly his original conclusion was in support of the ‘validity’ of Piltdown Man, as it was believed both could not be ‘ape-men’. Dr. Dart claimed a ‘creature’ with an ‘ape-sized’ *brain* could have *dental* and *posture characteristics* approaching those of *humans*. And again, this idea was originally largely rejected, as it required an order of “mosaic” *evolution*, and that is, of the development of some characteristics in advance of others, which contradicted the order supposedly indicated by the Piltdown find. In other words, this completely opposed the ‘popular theory’, which was that “hominization”—‘the transition from ape to man’—began with an ‘enlarged’ *cranial capacity*, not with ‘upright posture’ and more ‘human-like’ *mouths*.

However when Dr. Dart visited London, and was invited to address the Zoological Society, he later admitted about the visit,

I realized the inadequacy of my material.

Surveying 100 years of *paleoanthropology*, Drs. Matt Cartmill (Duke University), David Pilbeam (Harvard University) and Glynn Isaac (Harvard University) observed,

The australopithecines are rapidly sinking back to the status of peculiarly specialized apes

(<http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/cm/v16/n1/taung>).

And today many authorities dismiss the Taung Child as simply that of a young *ape* which shares interesting but irrelevant features with man. But despite all this, again, the Taung Child's 'role' as the 'foundational evidence' of a 'missing link/ape-man' is still represented in most all high school textbooks since the 1960's. See the sample from the 1994 *Glencoe Biology textbook* on p.246.

So Dr. Dart was eventually joined, and still probably is, by the majority of *evolutionists* who consider the Taung Child *skull fragment* to be 'ape-man', and precisely because it seems to share both *ape* and *human traits*, the *human* ones including the *eye orbits*, *teeth*, and, most importantly, the hole at the base of the *skull* over the *spinal column*. The placement of this hole is still believed to be evidence of 'human-like', 'upright' *posture*. And beyond these *evolving, mosaic characteristics* that were attributed to the young owner of this *skull fragment* and *teeth*, Dr. Dart also imagined he saw evidence for the advent of *colored sight*, 'advanced' *auditory discernment*, and 'evolved' *capabilities* of *speech*. Yes, *evolutionists* love the 'wide latitude' for 'interpretation' that is possible with extremely 'limited evidence', and tend to push such 'boundaries' for all they're worth. But there's really no such thing as a 'missing link', so I'm thinking it's really just a case where this young *gorilla* or *chimpanzee's head*—that with more recent analysis has been reduced from 6 to maybe younger than 4 years old when it died—was, like all young human and primate heads, disproportionally large compared to it's young body. And of course these proportions naturally change with growth. Another mystery solved, for me anyway.

But it was Dr. Robert Bloom who was probably the biggest influence in this transition to the acceptance of the 'sub-human species' of *Australopithecines*, because he helped Dr. Dart greatly expand his 'latitude for interpretation'. He is heralded as fully vindicating Dr. Dart with his find of a nearly complete 'ape-man' *skull*—in this case supposedly an 'ape-woman' *skull*— in 1947. Yet the most remarkable accomplishment of his, in my opinion, was his timing.

It was not until 1936 that students of Professor Dr. Dart and Dr. Broom from the University of of the Witwatersrand began 'rigorous excavations'. In 1936, the Sterkfontein Caves yielded the first adult *Australopithecine fragments* of another *skull*, which strengthening Dr. Dart's claim. There was a pause in excavation during World War II, but after the war Dr. Broom continued excavations. In 1947 he found the almost complete skull of an adult female—or as others proposed, of an 'adolescent young male'. Dr. Broom initially named the *skull Plesianthropus*





transvaalensis, meaning 'near-man from Transvaal', but it became better known by its nickname...

Mrs. Ples, (pronunciation rhymes with 'bliss', picture p.247), and is now defined as a member of *Australopithecus africanus*.

So Dr. Broom ultimately provided most of the 'evidence' and 'research' that helped the scientific community ignore the scandal of Piltdown Man. But some of the beliefs of the man himself—while Piltdown Man was still considered credible and popular—surely played a part in holding back this transition until after his death in 1951, and after the public exposure of the Piltdown Man Hoax about 2½ years later in 1953. But this was certainly very good timing. With Dr. Broom

gone and Piltdown Man exposed, *evolutionists* clamored to divert the World's attention to a different continent for the **so-called** 'evidence' of 'the first ape-man', and that is, to Dr. Dart's and Dr. Bloom's work in Africa. And so the 'theories' about 'man's origins' began to shift from Europe and Asia to Africa. But was this good timing just coincidental?

Dr. Robert Broom, FRS, was Scottish born and educated, but spent most of his career in South African as a *paleontologist*. Qualified as a medical practitioner in 1895, he received his doctor of science degree (DSc) in 1905 from the University of Glasgow. And it was evidently Dr. Dart's discovery of the Taung Child *skull fragment* that sparked Dr. Broom's interest in *paleoanthropology*. During this time, (and yes, on the surface this will seem coincidental), Dr. Broom's career in Scotland had come to a dead end. But this is also when Dr. Dart used his influence to help him, and in 1934 the South African government found a position for Dr. Broom with the staff of the Transvaal Museum in Pretoria as an Assistant in Paleontology. But this is really not coincidence. Wait for it.

In the following years, Drs. Broom and John T. Robinson made a series of what were purportedly 'spectacular finds', including *fragments* from six so-called *hominids* (yes, 'ape-men') in Sterkfontein, the Mrs. Ples finds, plus more discoveries in the Kromdraai and Swartkrans sites nearby. And of course these additional discoveries helped support Dr. Dart's claims.

In 1937, Dr. Broom made his most famous discovery, *Paranthropus robustus*, named for its more 'robust' jaw and teeth, but this *species* was later 'reclassified' as *Australopithecus robustus*. The picture on p.247 shows *Eurydice*, apparently named after a mythological forest nymph, which is the most complete *fragment* representing this **so-called** 'subspecies of man'—most of a *skull* and *jaw*—discovered in 1994 in South Africa at the Drimolen Cave.

Dr. Robinson, by-the-way, isn't as often credited with the finds he made and the research he did with Dr. Broom because he didn't receive his honorary doctorate for his work until after Dr. Broom's death. The same 'misappropriation of credit' is

also true with Dr. Dart because he found little evidence of any consequence himself. It was all found by others, including by his students. And the point I'm making is that it's the man with the 'world-approved' (read, '**god of this world**-approved') 'doctorate' that gets to make the 'interpretations', and therefore gets all the credit for the finds too.



And Dr. Bloom deserves more credit than you might think. And I mean that his timing was phenomenal, because his arguably significant work and finds, and subsequent mostly posthumous notoriety, occurred just in time to divert attention from the impending exposure of the Piltdown Man Hoax. But how is this to his credit? It can be seen that way in relation to our **adversary the devil**, and I mean in that how Dr. Bloom remained 'devoted' to the exploration of these South African sites, being evidently 'directed' mostly by what could be called 'obedience' to his **master** rather than by just 'chance'.

And for this 'obedience', and because of his book, *The South Africa Fossil Ape-Men, The Australopithecinae*, in which he proposed the *Australopithecinae* 'subfamily' of Modern Man, Dr. Broom was awarded the Daniel Giraud Elliot Medal from the National Academy of Sciences in 1946. However Dr. Broom's particular brand of the Theory of Evolution remained 'on the fringe' really, because it was indeed quite 'far out', which brings us to the reason for his 'devotion' and 'obedience' to this cause, and why he, and his real **master**, deserve the credit.

Dr. Bloom was a critic of Darwinism, and even of *materialism*, because he was deeply interested in the *paranormal* and *spiritualism*. He believed in what he called *spiritual evolution*. *Spiritual evolution* or *higher evolution* is the *philosophical* or 'spiritual idea' that *nature* and *human beings* as well as *human culture* evolve in an established 'cosmological pattern of ascent', or according to existing *natural* (read, 'spiritual') 'potentials'. And these 'higher potentials' supposedly 'commandeer' the "lower" or 'material operations' of *nature*—known as *biological evolution*—in order to 'drive' *evolution*. This 'creative impulse' that is 'theoretically' a part of all *lifeforms* is also known as *epigenesis*, which is thought to contradict the idea that all things are 'pre-created', a *theory* otherwise known as *preformationism*, or just *creationism*.

Anyway, in Dr. Bloom's 1933 book, *The Coming of Man: Was it Accident or Design?*, he claimed that "spiritual agencies" had guided the *evolution* of *animals* and *plants*, because they were too complex to have arisen by 'chance'. Ya think? According to Dr. Broom, there were at least two different kinds of 'spiritual forces', and that "psychics"—formerly know as "mediums"—are capable of seeing and/or communicating with them. Dr. Broom claimed there was a plan and purpose in *evolution* and that the origin of *Homo sapiens* was the ultimate purpose behind *evolution*. According to Dr. Broom,

Much of evolution looks as if it had been planned to result in man, and in other animals and plants to make the world a suitable place for him to dwell in. (Richmond, J., *Design and dissent: Religion, authority, and the scientific spirit of Robert Broom, Isis; an international review devoted to the history of science and its cultural influences*, 2009, 100-3, pp.485-504.)

So you can see that there is no coincidence here, and that it's true that **we** [Christians] **wrestle not against flesh and blood**, but **against principalities and powers**, all of which are subject to the **god of this world**. And everyone else, and whether knowing it or not, is also 'obedient' to the **god of this world**. And if there's still any doubt of this, consider another comment by Dr. Broom that pretty much settles it. After discovering the *skull* of Mrs. Ples, Dr. Broom was asked if he excavated at random. And, speaking of 'mysteries solved', he replied that "spirits" had told him where to find his discoveries. (Nadine Dreyer, *A Century of Sundays: 100 Years of Breaking News in the Sunday Times, 1906-2006*, 2006, p.119.)

But *evolutionists*, more often than getting the 'glory', more often just get 'burned'. This was the case with finds originally given to Dr. Dart from caves in the Makapansgat Valley that contained, among others, 'blackened' *fossil bones*, which led him to believe that they had been 'burnt'. Although no *hominid remains* or *stone tools* were found at this point, he concluded that these were the *remains* of *bones* 'burnt in fireplaces', and therefore that Makapansgat was a site of 'early hominid occupation'. Dr. Dart named the first *hominids* discovered at the site *Australopithecus prometheus* (after the mythological Greek hero who stole fire from the Gods). But later analysis of the 'black markings' revealed that they were really just *manganese chemical stains*, not the result of *combustion*, and *Australopithecus prometheus* dropped from use, but Dr. Dart did recover from his 'burns', though only 'temporally' of course.

His road to recovery, and later relapse, included the analysis of 7,159 *fossil bones*, just a few of which were considered *hominid*, which he used to 'envision' a complete 'sub-human species'. And since this happened before any *stone tools* were discovered—or at least acknowledged—he decided to represent these **creatures** as having used *tools* made from *bone, teeth* and *horn*. And so the more

descriptive name given to them by him was the Osteodontokeratic Culture ('bone-teeth-horn'). Of course once *stone tools* started to be found, surely Dr. Dart experienced 're-injury', though since he is considered the original 'discoverer' of the *Australopithecus* race, his 'wounds' would have to be allowed to eventually 'heal' and be forgotten, though again, only 'temporally'. And such is the recurring theme with all such 'scientist' who, with their almost boundless ability to 'interpret' what they can imagine from the slightest of 'evidence', continue to 'burn themselves', again and again and again. Because where such conclusions are mostly based on 'imagination' more than 'evidence', getting 'burnt' is inevitable once a little more 'evidence' surfaces, and so this must occur as often as such 'false faith' is practiced. Still, **the god of this world** maintains some degree of 'obedience' to such 'false faith', one way or another, and sooner or later, ultimately to the ruin of many of **his** 'disposable practitioners'.

Gladysvale, by-the-way, not far from Taung, both near Johannesburg, is the site of the first *cave* that Dr. Broom visited in the mid-1930's, but he found nothing there of significance. However in the 1990's this site was remembered and reopened, likely because of Dr. Bloom's original 'obedience' to go there. In 1992, the first remains identified as *hominid* were discovered —two teeth that were designated *Australopithecus africanus*. This discovery made Gladysvale the newest early *hominid* site to be discovered in South Africa since the last site at Swartkrans near Sterkfontein was discovered by Dr. Broom in 1948.

So the 'evidence' for *Australopithecus* remained



'scant', nothing near a full *skeleton*, and as far as I could tell, not much if anything below the *jawbone*, as apparently all such 'below-the-jaw' *fossils* were identified as either fully *ape* or fully *human*, of which there are very many. Altogether then, there were a few nearly complete *skull fragments*, with and without parts of the *jaw* and *teeth*, a single *jawbone*, and finally a couple more *teeth*. And this is to be expected because again, and up to a point, it limited for *evolutionists* the possibilities for challenges to their 'interpretations' and 'theories' that would inevitably arise if enough clearly 'connected parts below the jaw' became available. But the satisfaction with such 'scant evidence' began to diminish over time. Under this growing pressure, in 1974, a more complete find was announced. However this was not a find in South Africa, but instead of one in Northeast Africa. And I mean that there was finally 'unearthed' a significant percentage of a *fossil skeleton with* many 'connectable parts below the jaw', nearly 'head to toe connections'. Yes, along came *Lucy*. See what was found of her on [p.249](#). But really, just like Piltdown Man, 'she' became the framework of the next round of outright **fraud**, though this is still yet to be popularly exposed.

And with *Lucy* I'm going to 'cut to the chase'. Now known as a representative member of the *hominid species Australopithecus afarensis*, she is actually about 40% of a *skeleton*, conveniently missing her *feet parts* and most of her *lower legs*, including the *knees*. It is also convenient, or vital to perpetuating the hoax, that her *skull* is so much 'disintegrated' that it is really impossible to determine what it looked like from its *fragments* alone. Other *skulls* from other places have been 'selected' to serve that purpose. But besides this, the **fraud** that has not yet been revealed to the general public is that she has also been given a *knee bone* that was not hers, that nonetheless some *evolutionists* believe matches a 'sub-human posture' which suits their 'theories'. Sound familiar? And the *knee* was clearly not hers, but found over a mile away and 70 *meters* lower than her *skeleton*. So you see this is really no more than another Piltdown Man Hoax in progress. In the case of Piltdown Man you may remember that a *human skull* was purposely 'mismatched' with an *ape's* 'doctored' *jaw*. In the case of *Lucy* we have a 'human-like' or 'tree-climbing', 'ape-like', 'angled-for-upright-walking' or 'tree-climbing' *knee bone*, purposely 'mis-matched' with the upper *skeleton* of a 'straight-kneed-non-tree-climbing' *ape*. But again, this hoax is not widely acknowledged as yet. That would be because this 'evidence' was for a time —since its discovery in 1974— the only nearly half *skeleton* with 'loop-dated' *Australopithecine* age. And the almost entirely 'disintegrated' *skull*, and missing *feet and knees*, still give them about as much 'latitude for misinterpretation' as the lone, mostly complete *skulls* do. It was the oldest—'loop-dated' about 3 to 4 million years old—and allegedly provided the greatest 'body of evidence' available to support the existence of the *Australopithecine* race, though in this case plainly a different 'branch' than the one in South Africa.



And to 'throw another log' on this 'bonfire of the vanities', **Lucy** (more photos, etc. p.250) was found by a team of scientists specifically funded to find 'ape-man missing links'. Dr. Donald Carl Johanson, an American *paleoanthropologist*, PhD from the University of Chicago, is credited with the find. But remember that the 'evidence' before this point was 'scant'. And Piltdown Man had long been exposed and discarded. And up to this point they had nothing significant to show for their efforts, so their grant money was about to run out. No 'ape-man' *fossil evidence*—no more funding. So with a little 'slight of hand'—or should I say, 'of knee'—and an *evolutionist's* imagination, Lucy was made to appear to be a significant 'ape-man', or 'ape-woman' find, and just in time to keep the money coming in. This partial *skeleton* is estimated to have 'stood' about 3 feet tall—a *chimpanzee* or *monkey* in size—and since the *skull* was so thoroughly *fragmented*, and the *feet* and *knees* missing, *evolutionists* have had almost complete freedom to depict her as 'ape-man-looking' as they like, and they continue to do so in textbooks and museum representations, including, along with the fraudulent *knee joint*, giving it an *upright posture*.

This added *femur-knee* connection is "angled" as in *humans*, and this is supposedly what makes it part of the 'evolution of humans', though again, any 'tree-climbing' *monkey* has "angled" *femur-knee* connections too. And the **fraud**

with Lucy is perpetuated by representations of her that commonly also show her with *human feet*, though not one single *foot bone* or *fragment* thereof was ever admitted to be found. Other finds that are considered examples of *pre-Australopithecines*—or ‘fully Australopithecine’—where *feet* and *toe bones* are included, have ‘ape-like’, ‘curled’ *toe bones*, as well as ‘curled’ *finger bones*. And Lucy did have such ‘ape-like’ *hands*, with “knucklewalking”, ‘curved’ *fingers*, but is nonetheless depicted by *evolutionists*—again with no direct evidence—with ‘human-like’ *feet*. And I expect that, in addition to adding the fraudulent *knee*, that her finders would have also ‘gotten rid of’ her *feet*, if any *remains* of them were found, and enough of her *skull* too, if there was too much of that found, so that there would be no contradictory evidence to their claims, because whatever the case, it was clearly another **fraud** specifically designed, more than anything else, to ‘keep the money coming in’.

Either that or *evolutionists* must reason with themselves that, yes, *skeletons* that match Lucy’s, though they have *ape skulls* and ‘curled-bone’ *ape hands* and *feet*, are evidently examples of the stage just before the *evolution* of more *human posture* and *feet* that Lucy must have had—though ‘she’ had ‘curled’, ‘knucklewalking’ *fingers*, and though her *skull* was too ‘disintegrated’ to identify, and though her *feet* were supposedly missing, and though they knew that the *knee* was added from elsewhere. But do you really think that the ones closest to this work really thought this way. Again, there was grant money, and careers, and university professorships, and honorary doctorates, and most of all, ‘king-of-the-hill’ prestige at stake. And we will be able to identify this type of **the pride of life** again and again as we go. In Dr. Johanson case, he has since received two honorary doctorates for his ‘contributions’ (read, ‘scam’). But I suppose there may have been a few relatively close to the work that were fully deceived and deluded. I mean it eventually gets that bad for those participating in such **abominations**. I mean though the following verses of **scripture** more directly apply to Jews who do not sincerely worship God, it certainly may also be applied to many *evolutionists*, and especially to the way they ‘handle’ their ‘faith’. God declares about such **evildoers** that,

Yea, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations. I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not
[Isa 66:3d-4.](#)

And I mean those that know the details **choose**, and if it’s **evil** they **choose**, God implies here that this eventually leads Him to **choose their delusions**. And if I know all these **evil** details, don’t those closer to them know them? So what’s really going on here? Well, it’s all part of the **designs** of our **adversary the devil** to **deny** and **blaspheme** God, and he surely employs **all manner of evil** and **wickedness**, including **lies, deception, oppression** and **persecution**. And of course this is common inside all ‘disciplines’ of this World. It surely goes on everywhere, and **every day**. As King David puts it in a psalm,

God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day [Psa 7:11.](#)

In other words, you would **do well** to try to make **sure** that what you **chose** does not make God **angry** with you. But this cannot be as easy as it may sound, though Christ's **blood** **'withstands'**.

And speaking of **persecution**, a ministry that has provided a lot of the above information has experienced some extreme **persecution**. Dr. Kent Hovind, its founder, was incarcerated for 'tax evasion', but you should **understand** that it was really only for exposing this kind of information. The 'visual aids' about **Lucy** on **p.250** are his, by-the-way, as a lot of them will be next section. He's evidently gotten Satan's attention. But I also **believe** that Dr. Hovind does **understand** that he should only feel **blessed** and **happy** because of it ([Mat 5:11](#); [Jas 5:10](#)).

However "Dr." Hovind's credentials are 'questionable'. But the question should be, questionable to whom? They are certainly questionable to **the world**, as the 'university' he received his "Doctorate in Christian Education" from, Patriot Bible University, is not accredited by any state or credentialing organization, or even recognized by the Department of Education. And it is repeatedly referred to in my encyclopedia as a "diploma mill". And though surely there are such institutions that should be considered 'disreputable organizations', I will instead here again more appropriately emphasize that it is not the "man-given credentials" that we should be interested in here, but in Dr. Hovind's **handling** of The Word of God. And concerning that, and as I have so far found his **integrity** to be intact, I find his 'credentials' to be 'satisfactory', but only 'satisfactory' because some of his **interpretations** of God's Creation, and of the administration of the Church of Jesus Christ, are to some degree 'spiritually immature', and therefore to some degree incorrect and harmful, though not uncommonly so, such that his overall teaching is evidently sufficiently damaging to the **enemy** to provoke some serious **persecution** his way, to the **glory of God** and Dr. Hovind, which is the best any and every Son of God can expect to do, even those who, like King David and myself, have suffered serious lapses of **integrity**.

And by-the-way, are you still sure you want to read on? I mean I assure you my **interpretations** are even more damaging to the **enemy** than Dr. Hovind's. And I mean that serious, even deadly **persecution** for any that would...

Be ye followers of [me], even as [I] also am of Christ... [1Co 11:1](#)

...is likely eventually inevitable, **God willing**.

But having so quickly 'cut to the chase' in this case, it's appropriate I do some 'backpedaling'. The idea of a *bipedal hominid*—an 'ape-man' that 'walks upright' like a *human*—who has a small *brain* and *primitive face* was still generally an unacceptable idea to the 'paleoanthropological community' at the time of Lucy's discovery. This was due to the then still popular belief that an increased *brain size* was the first step of *evolution* from Ape to Man—the idea that originated and was perpetuated with the 'large brains' of Piltdown Man, Neanderthals and Cro-Magnon Man. And I mean that specifically, before the supposed discoveries of *fossils* 'classified' as *Australopithecus afarensis* in the 1970's, it was still widely thought that an increase in *brain size* came before the shift to *bipedal locomotion* or 'walking upright'. And this was why earlier discoveries of the 'small-brained', supposedly 'upright-postured' *Australopithecus africanus* were originally discounted. And this 'big-brain-before-upright-posture' mindset was reinforced just before Lucy was found with the





discovery of *Homo rudolfensis* (photo, p.252), another isolated *skull fossil* with a relatively large *brain*, originally 'loop-dated' near 3 million years old. But "**Rudolf**" soon became an 'anomaly' to *evolutionists* since he was originally thought to be old enough to be of *Australopithecine* age, yet had a *brain* too big for the new idea that it was really 'upright posture'—not 'large brains'—that was the first step in the *evolution* from Ape to Man. Of course this **so-called** 'anomaly' could be remedied by simply reexamining the evidence with this new 'preferred perspective'. And I mean that the problem disappeared when it was finally resolved that Rudolf had been originally 'incorrectly dated'. Who'd a thunk? Rudolf now fits more or less where he belongs, with an age at just under 2 million years, and joins his apparent contemporary *Homo Habilis*, both of them still debated as to whether they are more *Australopithecine* or *Homo sapien*, and, as usual, both represented by the typically extremely limited amount of *fossilized bone fragments*—mostly just *jaw* and *skull parts*, that—

precisely because the 'evidence' is 'insubstantial enough'—allow such imagined **creatures** to be included, again, really only because of their 'loop dating'. But though some think Rudolf is a *variation*—or another 'ethnic group'—of *Homo Habilis*, others think that they are just *variations*—or another 'ethnic group'— of *humans*. However again, most of this is simply 'imagination' that is 'attached'—and often 'mis-attached'—to extremely 'scant' and *fragmentary fossil* 'evidence'. Still, we will be able to make some **good** use of the real evidence extracted from these **delusions** in the later sections. I mean you should at least be starting to **see** that relying entirely only on the real evidence from God's Creation—with The Word of God to **light...the way**—is one of the reasons God Himself, after each **day** of Creation Week, pronounced His **work** to be **good**.

Lucy's 'human feet', by the way, have been accounted for even more indirectly, and from even further away, in Tanzania, Eastern Africa, at **Laetoli** where the 'oldest acknowledged', 'human-like' *fossilized* footprints are found. But instead of being considered *human*, these **footprints** (photo, p.253) are 'classified' to be the same as Lucy's, and really only because of relatively matching 'loop-dating' to other *Australopithecus afarensis* finds. And I say 'oldest acknowledged' as 'human-like' because we will see there is more evidence of 'human-like' footprints in the 'age of dinosaurs' that we will consider in **SECTION 4**.

These particular 'human-looking' footprints in Tanzania, by the way, were made in *volcanic ash*, and then buried quickly enough to preserve them, and are somehow preserved even though one *rain* would have ruined them. And I mean in the next sections, with this real evidence from God's Creation, it will be our turn to **imagine** the conditions that would have caused people—yes people—to walk or run through *volcanic ash* fields pretty much just in time to have their footprints buried and thereby preserved. And yes, one of those sets of footprints looks a little big, huh. Uh-huh. It will also become helpful to note that the Northeast Africa finds of *Australopithecus afarensis* are not generally 'unearthed' in *caves*, as South African finds of *Australopithecus africanus* commonly are, but are instead excavated near *river banks*. This may mean that such people did not find access to *caves* in time and were nonetheless inundated and buried too, and that it is the *river* that eventually, by *erosion* of its *banks*, did most of the work to 'unbury' them. We will

see similar 'river archeology' in the next section too. Also, *stones tools* have been recently found of the 'same age', which is also to be expected, as such conditions made their use unavoidable, conditions which, again, we will soon be able to more fully imagine. Lucy herself, as well as 'extensive' other *remains*, (well, 'far-flung' anyway), designated as members of her *species*, are found in Hadar, Ethiopia, near a *river*. Other localities bearing **so-called** *Australopithecus afarensis remains* include Omo, Maka, Fejej and Belohdelie in Ethiopia, and Koobi Fora and Lothagam in Kenya, but, as usual, most of these finds only involve single *fragments* of a *bone*, including a *skull* or two that they use to match with Lucy. And again, they supposedly justify putting *human parts* on 'Australopithecine-age' *fossils* simply because they 'loop-date' them at relatively the same age, but also because the 'evidence' is 'too scant' to be surely disputed—or supported—except that any 'theory' that denies God, however supported, is 'substantial enough' for most *evolutionists*. And remember *evolutionists* assume that *Australopithecines* preceded *species* like *Homo Habilis* and *Homo erectus*—supposedly the last 'transitions' to Modern Man. But of course this is all absurd, because you must remember we're really only talking between about 2800 to 4500 years ago, not really millions of years ago. And no, this is not yet fully enough **proved**, but, with your continued **patience** and **diligence**, by the Word of God and The Spirit of God, it will be before we're done.

I should add that not all *evolutionists* agree with this 'party line'—that Lucy 'walked upright' all the time. This is because some studies, (depending on their funding), suggest that 'she' was almost exclusively *bipedal*, while others, (with different funding), propose 'she' was only *arboreal*, meaning 'adapted for living and moving about in trees'. The *anatomy* of the *hands* and *shoulder joints* in many ways make her a 'tree-climber'. And the *morphology* (or 'shape') of the *scapula*—those 'fin-shaped' *bones* in the *upper back*—appears to be 'ape-like' and very different from *modern humans*. The *curvature* of the *phalanges* (*toe bones*) in other finds of 'Australopithecine age', and *finger bones* like Lucy's, are more like that of 'modern-day' *apes* too, and suggest their ability to 'efficiently grasp branches and climb'. However the more indirect evidence is treated as if it is much more relevant. For example, the *footprints* in the *ash*, revealing apparently *human feet*, are used to point out the loss of an *abductable* or 'grasping' *great toe*, and therefore that Lucy must have not had the ability to 'grasp with the foot'—which most other *primates* could—implying she was no longer "adapted to climbing". But remember with *evolutionists*, their 'imagination' is 'sufficient evidence' when there is really no direct evidence, and it trumps any conflicting evidence, especially if it agrees with their 'theory' and/or facilitates further funding. And where 'imagination' is not enough, **fraud** seems to be acceptable as a way to 'justify the means'—which in 'the end' really just 'validates' their own God-given **delusions**.

But there is annoyingly significant direct evidence that Lucy was a 'knucklewalker' found in the 'locking mechanism' in her *wrists*, in her long 'knucklewalking arms', and in her 'knucklewalking ape-like shoulders'. And though computer simulations of her 'selected reconstructions' show she most easily 'walked upright' all the time, there are supposedly *skull scans* of the same *species* that indicate she couldn't have been *bipedal* at all. So apparently the debate is still ongoing whether Lucy 'walked upright' all the time, or just some of the time, or at all, because apparently there is still money available on all sides of this debate. Think of it as a variety of **delusions** to **choose** from—all ultimately **chosen** by God.

But possibly the best evidence, though completely ignored—except by *creationist*—is the still 'alive and well' version of Lucy. Now I don't think this presently living 'version' necessarily exactly 'matches' Lucy's *fossilized skeleton*,

but these now *living creatures* do ‘match’ the ‘reconstruction’ that some *evolutionists* have made of her—especially above the *knees*, of course. Studies of *modern orangutans* in Sumatra, an island in Western Indonesia, have shown that these *apes* use all four appendages when walking on large, stable branches and when swinging underneath slightly smaller branches, but are otherwise *bipedal* and keep their legs very straight when traversing multiple small flexible branches, while also using their arms for balance, etc. This enables them to get nearer to the edge of the tree canopy to grasp fruit or move to another tree. And these real **creatures** created by God, however much He may have done so to annoy *evolutionists*, are evidently readily observable. See a picture and article about these **creatures** referenced in the bottom right frame of Dr. Hovind’s ‘visual aids’, back on [p.250](#).

One of these *animals* is also a character of some consequence in Sir Walter Scott’s novel, *Count Robert of Paris*, who he refers to as an upright-walking, “great orang-outang” (*Chapter Thirty-Third*) from “the Island of Sumatra” (*Chapter Sixteenth*), where others of his *kind* were reported to live. Turns out there is a record—the historical biography of 11th Century Roman Emperor Alexius Comnenus, recorded by his daughter the Princess Anna Comnena, in ancient Constantinople, that such a **creature**, because of its intelligence, strength and agility, but general docility, was used as a “warder” (*Chapter Sixteenth*) or ‘dungeon assistant’ to attend to prisoners. This **creature** is also suspected, according to Sir Walter, to be associated with the belief in the god Pan, and with ‘sylvans’, and ‘satyrs’, though many in this story considered this **creature** a manifestation of the **devil** himself. So this is really no new discovery, but a rediscovery at best. And it finally also became one that *evolutionists* needed to ‘get ahead of’ by the use of another ‘full skeleton distraction’. So along came Ardi.

Ardipithecus or **Ardi** for short (photo, [p.254](#)), is another supposed *fossil hominine*—an allegedly *extinct species* of ‘ape-man’. But Ardi, ‘loop-dated’ the oldest and therefore supposedly least *evolved* of all, is consequently even more debated, if possible, when it comes to the ‘relationship’ to his supposed *genus*, and to other supposed more ‘recent human ancestors’. In other words, it is more debatable whether he is really a *hominid*, as opposed to just an *ape*—if you’re an *evolutionist*, that is. However he is perfectly suitable otherwise to be used as a ‘distraction’ to the **fraud** and other ‘scant evidence’ obscuring any doubt of the existence of *hominin* at all. And hello, by now you should fully **understand** there is really no such thing as a *hominid*, except in the minds of *evolutionists*, including some **deceived** Christians. After all, we’ve been looking at the **so-called** ‘best evidence’ they’ve got.

By-the-way, a *genus* is a rank used in *taxonomy*; it is part of the *biological classification* of *living* and *extinct organisms*. The various *species* in a *genus* are determined by *taxonomists*, however, (surprise, surprise!), the standards for *genus classification* are not strictly codified—meaning there is often disagreements among *taxonomists*—so that different ‘authorities’ frequently produce different ‘classifications’ in a given *genus*. In the ‘rankings’ of this **so-called** ‘classification system’, *genus* is above *species* and below *family*. But this ‘classification system’ is actually the result of *philosophy* more than of *science*, as this approach began with the Greeks, specifically with Aristotle, one of the original *humanist philosophers*. So there are other ‘philosophies’ that could be used for such ‘classifications’,



including more **godly** ones, as suggested by Genesis 1, for example.

And like *Australopithecus*, there are more than one *species* in the *genus* of *Ardipithecus* too. There is the nearly 'full-skeleton distraction' named Ardi, now representing the *species* *Ardipithecus ramidus*, which because of the *rock* it was found in is 'loop-dated' to nearly 4½ million years old. And there is also *Ardipithecus kadabba*. Why is it a different *species*? Like most 'finds' of *Australopithecus*, *Ardipithecus kadabba* obtained this original 'classification' from evidence including only *teeth* and other 'scant' *bone fragments* that were nonetheless found in *rock* that was 'loop-dated' to be over 5½ million years old—over a million years 'older' than Ardi—which was plenty of 'evidence' for its finders to originally 'classify' these *fragments* as a probable *chronospecies* or 'ancestor' of *Ardipithecus ramidus*, who in turn must have preceded the various *species* of *Australopithecus*. I mean the majority of the 'proof' that they must have been two 'early' but 'separate *species*' of *hominin* is established much more by the 'loop-dated' age of the *rocks* than by the extremely limited amount of supposedly 'representative' *bones*.

But the original finders of Ardi eventually came to change their minds, through a change of 'bite'. *Ardipithecus kadabba* was originally 'classified' as a *subspecies* of *Ardipithecus ramidus* until, in 2004, *anthropologists* and Drs. Yohannes Haile-Selassie, Gen Suwa, and Tim D. White, (I'll leave their 'credentials' to you here), published an article 'reclassifying' their find on the basis of—you'll never guess—*teeth* discovered in Ethiopia, the obvious need for 'reclassification' to *Ardipithecus kadabba* being that they were found in *rock* of similar 'loop-dated' age, with these new *teeth* showing a distinct shape and wear patterns that were enough for them to distinguish *Ardipithecus kadabba* as a distinct *species*. What's the difference between *species* and *subspecies*? You can think of a *subspecies* as a supposed 'earlier' *variation*, in this case, *ethnic group* of a *species* that was supposedly first to go *extinct*. This means that it may or may not really be the same *species*, where *interbreeding* is in question, while *interbreeding* between different *species* beyond one generation, even according to *evolutionists*, is not. And though this obstacle alone should make the 'progress' of *evolution* impossible, and makes *life* best 'classified' according to Genesis 1—where *life* only *reproduces after its kind*—we'll get back to how *evolutionists* keep their *humanistic* and *materialistic* 'classification system' going despite this 'barrier' to *interbreeding* between different *species*, and further consider how they now 'imagine' that *species* somehow overcome this obstacle in the supposed 'upward progress' of *evolution*.

And you might think *evolutionists* would avoid 'classifying' their 'ape-men' as a *subspecies* whenever possible, as this distinction may allow the expectation of *interbreeding*, not instead just 'mutation', because this dynamic seems to better support the Bible, and less the Theory of Evolution. Again, the Theory of Evolution requires 'progress upward' from 'lower' *species* to 'higher' *species*, where *variation* within a *species* can only play a subordinate role at best. However the supposed 'slow', 'steady' *micromutation* of *species* is now widely acknowledged as not seen in the *fossil record*, and so another 'mechanism' is needed to explain how this supposed 'gap' between *species* is somehow 'bridged'. And explaining too many of the differences seen among *lifeforms* as simply *variations* within single *species* only makes less and less need for the Theory of Evolution, and provides too much confirmation of Genesis 1. And I mean you should **see** from this that there really aren't as many *species* as *evolutionists* would like you to think, but there is a lot of *variation* within every *species*—a whole World of it more than they admit, including the almost 'unaccountably wide' *variation* seen in *apes* and *humans*, but not really within 'imaginary ape-men', because there's really no such thing. And you should

see that *evolutionists* are motivated—especially with ‘ape-men’—to ‘misclassify’ not only *apes* as ‘ape-men’, and *humans* as ‘ape-men’, but also to consider these supposed ‘ape-men’ as differing individual *species* rather than just the many *variations* of either Apes or Man. The motivation to make this ‘distinction’ is the strongest when such **so-called** ‘different species’ are apparently *extinct*, making their ‘interbreeding capabilities’ less verifiable to fully unverifiable. And this along with the way *evolutionists* ‘handle evidence’, and what they consider to be ‘evidence’, give them that ‘wide latitude’ to ‘fit’, or ‘force’, or ‘forget’, or even ‘fake’ the ‘evidence’ so that it becomes exactly what they’re looking for, one **wicked way** or another.

So it’s only because of a few more *teeth*—and the matching ‘older’ *rock*—that *Ardipithecus kadabba* ‘sank’ from a *subspecies* or *variation* of Ardi to a distinct, likely ‘non-interbreeding’ *species*, though still in the *genus* of *Ardipithecus*. But this seems to me to be no better than if you found just the *teeth* of a *Poodle* and a *Great Dane*, and assumed they were ‘separate species’ because of the difference in their *teeth* alone. Of course if they later found complete *skeletons* and were able to identify both as *dogs*, we would hear no more about these *teeth*, and probably nothing of the full *skeletons* either, but of some new ‘distraction’, unless these *skeletons* could be used in some way for a new ‘distraction’, otherwise they’d be ‘quietly gotten rid of’, maybe so there could still be consideration of the *teeth*. And of course by ‘distraction’ I mean **deceit**, because the finders know everything, being likely in some way ‘pressured’ to **choose** what to reveal, what to distort, and what to hide in order to keep the ‘fairy tale’ going.

The Ardi *skeleton* was discovered at Aramis near the Awash River in Ethiopia in 1994 by Yohannes Haile-Selassie while he was still a college student. Dr. Haile-Selassie, by-the-way, is another *anthropologist* with a reputation of having ‘quite a knack’ for finding *hominid fossils*. But Ardi’s discovery, as expected, is also credited to a team of scientists led by the doctor in charge at the time, UC Berkeley *anthropologist*, Dr. Tim D. White, who also worked with Lucy. On October 1, 2009 the journal *Science* published several articles finally detailing their and others many ‘imagined’ aspects of Ardi and its environment. However Ardi was evidently not the first *fossil* found that was finally ‘classified’ as *Ardipithecus ramidus*. The first was found in Ethiopia in 1992, however it was not ‘identified’ and ‘classified’ until after Ardi’s *skeleton* was found, and its first announcement came along with Ardi’s published ‘unveiling’ in 2009.

But I should mention that its 4½ million-year-old ‘loop-dating’ has been questioned by some *evolutionists*. For one thing it has been suggested that the region in which Ardi was found is difficult to date *radiometrically* (or ‘loop-dating-wise’), and it is further argued that Ardi is more likely less than 4 million-years-old, too close to the ballpark of a *subspecies* of Lucy, except that this conclusion will probably never be popular among *evolutionists* as it is presently less ‘helpful’ for sustaining the ‘fairy tale’ known as the Theory of Evolution. Just picture the majority of *evolutionists* with their hands clamped over their ears repeating, “la la la la la la”, so they can’t hear it. Still, Ardi was discovered less than 50 miles from Lucy, and since Ardi’s *skeleton* is more popularly ‘loop-dated’ to be no more than 200,000 years ‘older’ than the ‘earliest’ *fossils* of *Australopithecus*, and may in fact instead actually be ‘younger’ than some of Lucy’s **kind**, it is easy to see why some *evolutionists* doubt that Ardi was a ‘direct ancestor’ of Lucy. But again, since the popular *theory* is that they were ‘separate species’ and therefore could not *interbreed*, we will revisit the ‘rising theory’ that ‘explains’ how ‘lower species’ actually became the ‘ancestors’ of ‘higher species’ before we’re done with this section.

And I have concentrated on Lucy and Ardi because they are really the only 'more complete' *skeletal remains* presently in consideration in their supposed 'time zone'. However there is evidently another one emerging, this time back in South Africa, that is evidently slated by our **enemy** to again 'divert attention' from all the **fraud** and absurdity of previous 'ape-man' finds. His nickname is Little Foot, and he is apparently another extraordinarily complete **so-called fossil hominin skeleton** who began to be 'identified' in 1994 in the cave system of Sterkfontein.

Actually he was first discovered in a museum box. While searching through boxes of collected *fossil fragments*, *paleoanthropologist* Dr. Ronald J. Clarke identified several of them that he considered unmistakably *hominin*. Of course he did. These included four left *foot bones* that appeared to be from the same individual. These *fragments* came from the Silberberg Grotto, a large cavern within the Sterkfontein cave system. They were naturally described as belonging to the *genus Australopithecus*, and being small bones, were naturally dubbed "Little Foot". Dr. Clarke found further *foot bones* from the same individual in separate bags in 1997, including a right *fragment* of a *leg bone* that had been clearly sheared off from the rest of the *bone*. In less than two days Dr. Clarke's assistants were amazed to find the remaining part of this sheared off *bone* protruding from the rock in the lower part of the Silberberg Grotto. One can only wonder if 'spirits' had directed this 'amazingly coincidental' discovery too. Careful excavation by Dr. Clarke and his team lead to the uncovering of a complete *skull* and *jaw in articulation*, or still connected, as well as other *limb bones*. These were announced to the press in 1998, creating exactly the type of media attention that allows their 'fairy tale' to continue.

Subsequent work has uncovered a nearly complete *skeleton*, including a complete *forearm* and *hand in articulation*, parts of the *pelvis*, *ribs* and *vertebrae*, a complete *humerus* (*upper arm bone*) and most of the *lower limb bones*. This 'sensational discovery' is still being excavated at this writing and will likely be even more complete than Lucy. I will only remind you here that these *remains*, like many of the *remains* we are discussing, were somehow completely incased in *rock*, and apparently in an 'inverted position' where apparently his 'little foot' was buried last. Of course to be *fossilized* as it is this *human* or *ape* had to be buried all at once while the *rock* the *remains* were contained in must have been formed over many thousands of years. Na-uh.

And Dr. Clarke now suggests that Little Foot does not belong to the species *Australopithecus afarensis* or *Australopithecus africanus*, but to a unique *species* Dr. Dart originally named, *Australopithecus prometheus*, previously found at Makapansgat and Sterkfontein. Remember this '*species*'—misnamed because of the blackness of the *bones* that were originally supposed by Dr. Dart to be from 'cooking with fire', though later proving to be just *chemical stains* acquired during *fossilization*. Shhhhh! After all, Dr. Clarke can get away with this claim since the 'loop-dating' of these finds remains uncertain due to the complex *geology* of Sterkfontein, there again evidently being *breccia* involved. And the estimate is presently at about 2 to 3 million years old, until they should need it to be older or younger for whatever 'fairy-tale-saving' reason at all.

And you should recognize that this is not really CSI at all. I have respect for good 'crime scene investigation', but you have to **understand** by now that there could never really be any good CSI on Santa Claus or the Easter Bunny, except in the 'imaginative stories' prepared for the ignorant, gullible and/or immature who are ready and willing to 'believe', "yes Virginia, there really were ape-men". But really it is **with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved**

[2Th 2:10.](#)

So have you had enough? Too bad. I mean I'm sure some have, but there are some further 'more revealing moments' about *Australopithecus* and the existence of 'ape-men' in general—if you've read this far—that I think you'll want to hear.

Baron Sir Dr. Solly Zuckerman, FRS, OM, KCB, was an Australian born *zoologist* and British government official, but is best known as an *operational research* pioneer. In this latter capacity he was an advisor to the Allies on the hugely successful bombing strategy in World War II. He is also known for his work to advance the cause of 'nuclear non-proliferation', and for his role in bringing attention to 'global economic and environmental issues'. After studying medicine at the University of Cape Town, and later attending Yale University, he came to London in 1926 to complete his studies at University College Hospital Medical School. He began his career at the London Zoological Society in 1928, and worked as a *research anatomist* until 1932. He taught at Oxford University from 1934-1945, during which time he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society (FRS). After the war he was appointed a Companion of the Order of the Bath, and ultimately a Knight Commander (KCB) in 1956, the year he was also knighted. He left the Royal Air Force in 1946 shortly after becoming Professor of Anatomy at Birmingham University, remaining there until 1968, the year he was appointed to the Order of Merit (OM). In 1951 he published his paper summarizing the existing data both for and against the possibility of *postnatal oogenesis* ('declining post childbirth female egg count' or not). He became the Chief Scientific Adviser to the Ministry of Defense from 1960 to 1966, as well as Chief Scientific Adviser to the British government from 1964 until 1971, the year he was awarded a 'life peerage', allowing him a seat in Parliament in the House of Lords and the title of Baron. Naturally he is also credited with making science a normal part of government policy in the Western World. He taught at the University of East Anglia from 1969 to 1974, where he was involved in setting up a school of environmental sciences. He served as Secretary of the London Zoological Society from 1955 to 1977 and as its President from 1977 to 1984. Among these achievements he was known as a pioneer in the study of *primate or ape behavior*. His more notable publications include *The Social Life of Monkeys and Apes*, published in 1931, and *Scientists and War* in 1966. Sir Baron Dr. Zuckerman wrote two volumes of autobiography entitled, *From Apes to Warlords*, and, *Monkeys, Men and Missiles*.

And getting to the point, this formidable 20th Century *scientist* also carried out studies of the *Australopithecines* family. His conclusion was that *Australopithecus* was little more than an *ape*. He and his four-member team worked on the issue in the 1950's, also concluding that these **creatures** had not 'walked on two legs' and were not an 'intermediate form' between *humans* and *apes*. Yes, not 'ape-men', just *apes*. In a concluding comment Dr. Zuckerman admits,

For my own part, the anatomical basis for the claim that the Australopithecines walked and ran upright like man is so much more flimsy than the evidence which points to the conclusion that their gait was some variant of what one sees in subhuman Primates, that it remains unacceptable (*Beyond the Ivory Tower*, 1970, p.93).

In other words, though this conclusion is reached before Lucy was found, but long after the British bias toward Piltdown Man is exposed, he's saying that the evidence that suggests that the *Australopithecus africanus* were 'upright-walking ape-men' "is much more flimsy" than the evidence that they were just "knucklewalking apes". And I guess he would know, if anyone did. And he was certainly more likely to be

able to speak his mind, apparently having only one of his many jobs on the line, nor was he desperate for another honorary degree that could entice him to 'fall into line'. Indeed, his testimony is as good and unbiased as we're going to find.

More recently, Dr. Dean Falk, an American *academic anthropologist*, (read, 'she doesn't do field work'), received her doctorate in *physical anthropology* from the University of Michigan. She is the Hale G. Smith Professor and Chair of the Department of Anthropology at Florida State University, and is considered a *specialist* in the *evolution* of the *brain* and *cognition* in 'higher primates', in the general field otherwise known as *neuroanatomy*. And she has weighed in on a variety of 'species' of *Homo* and *Australopithecus* **so-called** 'ape-men'.

She has been prominent in the study of the 9, about 3 feet tall, 'pygmy-like', *fragmentary skeletal remains*, including, 'fortunately' for *evolutionists*, just one mostly complete *skull*, that are designated *hominin*, and all 'loop-dated' at about 18,000-year-old. They were discovered on the Indonesian island of Flores in 2003, and 'classified' as the new *species Homo floresiensis* (Flores Man), having the nicknames "Hobbit" and "Flo". Of course this designation—that to some degree they are 'ape-men' and not just fully *human*—is really the same as thinking a Poodle is a different *species* than a Great Dane, or that a Pygmy is a different *species* than a Samoan. Some *scientists* readily admit they are most likely either Pygmy or affected by *microcephaly* (*genetic dwarfism*). But since there are still living *pygmies* on the Indonesian Island of New Guinea (oops), as well as on the neighboring islands of the Philippines and Andaman (oops again), Pygmies seem the most likely designation, though in either case just another *variation* of Modern Man. And by-the-way, lots of *animal species* are known to have *pygmy* and *dwarf variations* that are not distinct *species*.

However Dr. Falk completed a book in 2004 (*Braindance Revised and Expanded*, University Press of Florida, 2004), and a study in 2005 which supported the study published in *Nature* in 2004 that claimed that the find represented a new *species* (read, 'she quickly fell in line'). But her study was criticized by other 'experts'. And these others were encouraged by a clearly better study than Dr. Falk's, published in the November 2006 issue of *Anatomical Record*, as it was referred to as the "definitive work" on this issue. This new research comprehensively and convincingly makes the case that the small *skull* discovered in 2003 in Flores, Indonesia, does not represent a new *species* of *hominid*. And it was concluded, after all, that the *skull* is most likely that of a small-bodied *modern human* who indeed suffered from the *genetic condition* known as *microcephaly*—*genetic dwarfism*, which is characterized by a small *head*.

Dr. Robert R. Martin, Curator of Biological Anthropology at the Field Museum of Chicago, and a member of the University of Chicago's Committee on Evolutionary Biology, and lead author of the paper, concluded that,

It's no accident that this supposedly new species of hominid was dubbed the 'Hobbit'; [However] It is simply fanciful to imagine that this fossil represents anything other than a modern human.

And further that,

Science needs more balance and less acrimony [bitterness, animosity, harshness, severity, spite] as we continue to unravel this discovery (*Compelling evidence demonstrates that 'Hobbit' fossil does not represent a new species of hominid* (Field Museum of Natural History

public release date: Oct. 9, 2006, Contact: Greg Borzo,
gborzo@fieldmuseum.org).

Of course I just loved it when he used the word “supposedly” when referring to ‘ape-men’, and, “It is simply fanciful to imagine” was good to hear too. And maybe better than that, according to Dr. Martin, apparently it’s ‘a tough fairy tale out there’. No joke. Apparently he’s admitting that, generally, his colleagues are a bunch of *evildoers*, quick to *taunt, deride, scorn* and *mock*, even use brute *oppression*, to *force* their version of the ‘fairy tale’ on anyone who would attempt to discredit them using—yes, it’s unthinkable—“compelling evidence”. Of course really using the kind of “balance” that Dr. Martin is suggesting here would mean the end of the ‘fairy tale’, and that’s not going to happen. And is Dr. Martin innocent of such “acrimony”? I don’t know. Maybe he had some ‘bone to pick’ with Dr. Falk. Their universities which are their alma maters are rivals. And yes, it could easily be based on something that petty. We’re talking about a ‘fairy tale’ here, after all, where ‘the truth’ is only reported when it ‘rallies your team’.

But because Dr. Martin’s study was the most wide-ranging, multidisciplinary assessment of these “supposedly” *hominid skeletal remains* at the time, the ‘ball’ was back in Dr. Falk’s ‘court’. How did she maintain what she might also call ‘balance’ while at the same time ‘staying in line’, and ‘returning a winning (and that is, ‘believable’) volley’? Mostly by ‘bullying’, of course.

In 2007, with an international team of ‘bullies’, otherwise known as ‘experts’, Dr. Falk ‘rallied’ to create detailed maps of *imprints* left on the ancient *hominid braincases* called *endocasts*, and concluded—as she likely was planning to do so in the first place—that the Hobbit was actually a new *species* more closely related to *Homo erectus*. And Dr. Falk’s team, evidently with more ‘limited and specialized research’, but ‘better clout’, has repeatedly asserted that their ‘findings’ confirm that the *species Homo floresiensis* is definitely not a human born with *microcephalia*, an admittedly rare *pathological condition*, though still occurring nowadays, including in enough people to portray altogether in both a “Lullaby League”, as well as a “Lollipop Guild” in a popular 20th Century film. (Note: evidently no ‘evidence’ of ‘lollipops’ was found in any of the studies.)

And these are also common practices of *evolutionists*. Besides ‘bullying’, when the most plausible conclusion supported by the most evidence is unacceptable, because it doesn’t help support the preferred version of the ‘fairy tale’, then the next most plausible conclusion—based on necessarily ‘flimsier evidence’—that is acceptable will be supported, along with whatever usually fabricated ‘clout’ is necessary to ‘tip the scales’. And I mean that though it had become more believable that the *skeletal fragments* found on the island of Flores were *human*, and less believable that they are some newly discovered *species* of ‘ape-man’, shifting the ‘classification’ closer to a supposedly ‘more established’ *species* of ‘ape-man’, *Homo erectus erectus*, can ‘re-tip the scales’. However remember the ‘evidence’ for *Homo erectus* is really only ‘more established’ due to ‘generations of clout’, along with ‘amnesia’ about how most of the ‘evidence’ had ‘originated’, transforming it into a more acceptable chapter in the ‘fairy tale’.

By-the-way, I also found, again as expected, almost no information about New Guinea Man. ‘Buried’, ‘wiped’, ‘scrubbed’—it’s certainly now at least very hard to find any information about it. The above ‘evolution of man’ illustration on [p.207](#), including the drawing of this particular “missing link”, was accompanied by the only information I could find about it—in a Gospel track by Jack Chick, entitled “Big Daddy”, of which I have a copy. It is a short, but adequately convincing exposé on the Theory of Evolution. So I believe ‘someone’ proposed that *bones* found on the

island of New Guinea, evidently around 1970, were of a 'missing link' between *apes* and *humans*, that is, until a remote, but still living people were later found having the same bone structure. The fact that Jack Chick reports this information and that I can find it nowhere else—as yet—only confirms for me the pervasiveness of the **spiritual wickedness** of Satan's **principalities and powers** over those whom they **deceive** and **oppress** to 'expunge' such embarrassing information from the public record, just as they **deceive** and **oppress** others to 'propagandize' the *evolution* of *ape* to *man* from no more than a couple 'coffins-full' of *highly fragmentary so-called* 'evidence'. But really it comes down to whether you **believe** yet that I'm speaking for God, that we **wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places** who really are **warring** with **mankind** on such a scale, including in all the particular ways *evolutionists* are used by them in this **fight**. I mean our **adversary the devil** is orchestrating a 'worldwide disinformation campaign' based on absolutely no evidence to support it, and getting away with it, at least with those that **love not the truth**, but also with many Christians, so that **he may devour** many of them too.

But "acrimony", or 'in-fighting', among *evolutionists* is maybe even more common than their attacks on their *creationist* enemies. Dr. Falk, for example, 'defender of the faith' in *evolution*, seems to get just as much 'out of line'—like Dr. Martin did—on one of the earliest 'branches' of 'ape-man'. Her assessment of the *Australopithecus* Taung Child *skull*, even though she considered it the most 'human-looking' *Australopithecus fossil skull*, was that it was actually just the *skull* of a young *monkey*. She explained,

In his 1975 article, Dart had claimed that the brain of Taung was humanlike. As it turned out, he was wrong about that... Taung's humanlike features were overemphasized... Like humans, [primates] go through stages as they grow up. In his analysis of Taung, Dart did not fully appreciate that infant apes have not had time to develop features of the skull, such as thickened eyebrow ridges or attachment areas for heavy neck muscles, that set adult apes apart from human. Apparently he did not carefully consider the possibility that Taung's rounded forehead or the inferred position of the spinal cord might be due to the immaturity of the apelike specimen rather than to its resemblance to humans (*Braindance*, Henry Holt and Co., 1992, p.12 and 13).

So she says Dr. Dart "was wrong" because "the inferred position of the spinal cord might be due to... immaturity", and therefore might not confirm the ability to 'walk upright'. But isn't her preferred "position" also "inferred"? And isn't this just more "acrimony"? Probably. There's certainly lots of room for "acrimony" if it is possible that *apes* at early stages of development can look more *human*, and even more room if fully mature *human* adults can have *skulls* that look 'ape-like', as they observably do today.

But remember that it isn't really until the 70's, after the discovery of Lucy, a couple decades after the exposure of Piltdown Man, and a full half century after the discovery of the Taung Child *skull*, that Dr. Dart began to get a hearing worldwide. Remember that the 70's were a time when evolutionists were desperate for new 'evidence'—*Homo erectus* including Java Man and Peking Man—had not yet

rebounded, and another 'distraction' to Piltdown Man was long overdue. So what Dr. Falk's 'winner down the line' against *Australopithecus* was all about I don't know. Probably she was 'bullying' one of her colleagues—who had tried to 'bully' her, maybe even someone in her own department. And I mean oftentimes 'shots' go 'out of line' in order to **taunt, deride, scorn** and **mock** those who have already 'scored' opposing 'points'. But I would guess most of the self-proclaimed 'line judges' of this 'game' would call both Dr. Martin's and Dr. Falk's 'shots' clearly 'out', though ironically, theirs are a couple of the more 'truthful' ones. And I mean that in this 'game', **truth, lies, slander, fraud, deceit**, and even **violence**, are used to satisfy the 'players', to satisfy their **lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life**. And Satan 'officiates' this 'game' so as to use its 'players' along these 'lines'.

For example, maybe Dr. Falk's conclusion about Dr. Dart's discovery reveals her as a *racist*. She was willing to classify *Homo floresiensis* as a *hominin*, being from Indonesia, though she refuses to accept the now popular conclusion that the Taung Child *skull* is *hominin*, being found in South Africa. I mean maybe the 'theory' that man originated in Southern Africa is simply distasteful to her. Yes, this is a complicated **lust** and **pride** driven 'power game' that is impossible to completely unravel, and here I'm just guessing at some of the influences of the 'game', though surely generally all these kinds of 'game plans' are 'in play'.

But some do manage to avoid 'playing' this 'game', at least some aspects of it. John Reader is a British writer, photo-journalist, and author of the highly acclaimed, *Africa: A Biography of the Continent*. He holds an Honorary Research Fellowship in the Department of Anthropology at University College London and at the Royal Geographic Society. And though he is an *evolutionist*, he commented on Dr. Dart's paper, published in *Nature*, saying:

In some respects [it] tended more towards inspirational interpretation than cool scientific appraisal, and occasionally Dart lapsed into a florid style not normally encountered in [the science journal] *Nature* (<http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/cm/v16/n1/taung>)..

And more to the point, in his book, *Missing Links*, he declares,

Dart drew bold conclusions from his unavoidably limited observations (*Missing Links*. London: Book Club Associates/William Collins, 1981).

No duh. Most all *evolutionists* do. I mean remember there is only 'a coffin or two' of *fragments* offered as 'evidence', and we're seeing that none of these *fragments* really belong in this figurative box. So the ability to 'draw bold conclusions' is really their most important 'scientific skill', and surely requires quite a vivid imagination based on fantasy. But Mr. Reader gets more specific. The following is transcribed (by me) from a website video where he, as we say, sums it all up.

Are there such things as missing links? Well, if you read the press reports you'd assume that there are, 'cause every so often we're told it's been found. And that's been going on for 150 years now, having developed in the beginning from the idea that humans had ancestors. ...They lived many thousands of years ago. And they're most likely to have looked like a chimpanzee. So what we've got to find is a fossil that has some aspects of chimpanzee about it, and...some of modern

humans. ...And through the years...there has been a number of those found in the sense that the people who found them said, "Here it is!— the missing link." But, inevitably, somebody else has come along and said, "No, no, no, that's not right. That's more like a chimpanzee, or it's something altogether different." ...So I think the best answer is to say, "No, there really aren't any missing links [ellipses replace "uh" or "um"]" (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R0_BathS7LY).

But whose opinions do we accept, and whose do we reject? It's really not that easy. Though the opinion of Mr. Reader here is now easy for us to accept, he remains an *evolutionist*, so his **imaginings** about how 'evolution' supposedly really happened is likely to be even harder to believe than believing in 'ape-men', as we will see before we're done with this section. But what would be **a greater and more perfect** conclusion at this point? I mean one that is more 'spiritually mature'. As the title of **SECTION 2** and **3** suggest, we need to be ever **vigilant** in "Rejecting the World and Accepting God" and His Word, and more than that, we should continually be,

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ... 2 Cor 10:5.

Because such **imaginings** and **idolatry** are on display all around us, all the time. And as you **study to shew thyself approved unto God** you will **awake** to more and more of it. And I mean this is not a one time **revelation**, because, again, **revelations** are not meant to be static. They are supposed to **grow, for ever**, because **the knowledge of God** is **infinite**, as He is. And by this I mean that the 'whole' of what you think you have learned so far in this **study**, and in **RGT**, and of **the knowledge of God** altogether, must **continue to grow**, and that is, be corrected, improved and expanded, **for ever**, minus the parts that God, at the end of The Millennium, will **wipe away**. And this is what Peter explains in 2 Peter 1, again, minus the coming, evidently partial, memory **wipe**.

And this is an ongoing **fight**. And this kind of 'combat', preferably 'armored' (see again **Eph 6**), must become your mindset, your regimen, and your continuing **work**, if you are to be **worthy** of Jesus as His **disciple** (**Mat 10:37-38**; **Luke 14:27,33**). So think of it, along with your **armor** and **shield**, as your daily '**sword work**'. And when you become fully **awake**, it is unavoidably seen as a continuous and increasing **battle** for your **soul**, one you must **strive to overcome**, becoming **approved unto God**, where you need **not to be ashamed**, because you do not remain **unskilful in the word of righteousness**, but become a **servant of all**, ultimately becoming **able to both save thyself, and them that hear thee**. This **greater and more perfect** class of **servants** are the ones, **who by reason of use** of God's Word, **have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil**, so that by **rightly dividing the word of truth** through ongoing **study** they are **not as one that beateth the air**, but **as one** who is **able to run the race**, and **fight the good fight of faith**, and **lay hold on eternal life**. And if this is not who you are yet, or who you now **strive to be**, it is more likely you will instead be numbered among those that a certain **roaring lion** will **devour**, though The Spirit presently '**withstands**' for all of the **few there be that find an everlasting life**. However, and sadly, this is a **battle** that **many** (read, 'most') fully 'born again' Christians will **lose**, along with **life everlasting**, as only **few** will **win** it. And I tell you that you are still in need of the Apostle Paul's **admonition to awake to**

righteousness if you do not yet **know** these **things that are freely given to us of God**. But just as important, if you do **know** them, it should **comfort** you to **know** that a ‘few’ of the **few** do also, and theirs is the **fellowship** you should **seek**. But review [RGT](#) if you still feel ‘groggy’. Because as we **continue** I will be increasingly addressing the ‘few’ of these **few**—each aspiring to be a **servant of all**—and decreasingly so the **dull of hearing**, who are **not able to bear** what Paul calls **strong meat**.

But getting back to what we are “rejecting”, you should now **understand** that there is no such thing as *Australopithecus* or *Ardipithecus* ‘classifications’ as **evolutionists** ‘imagine’ and ‘fabricate’ them. The same goes for all the *Homo* ‘ape-men classifications’ too. However even with all the **fraud** and **corruption**, there are still some **evolutionists**, including some Christians, who **believe** in such **families** of ‘ape-men’, while others, maybe because of such **evildoers**, see them as either just Apes or Modern Man. It all depends on the focus of your **imagination** really, which is usually and unavoidably the result of a **carnal mind**, and of **lust** and **pride**, invariably manifesting all manner of **ungodliness and worldly lusts**, because **everyone** who is **unskilful in the word of righteousness**, and this includes most Christians, at least too much of the time, can only do what **seemeth right** to them, which you should **know** by now only leads to **the ways of death**, though again, The Spirit remains sufficient to **withstand** for an unidentifiable **few**. And given that **Satan** and his network of **principalities and powers**, in cooperation with our **flesh** and our general ‘inability’ to **discern both good and evil**, are hard at work motivating such **carnal** behavior of both **sinner**s and **saint**s, it should not be so surprising that most **the whole world** is presently—at least mostly—**deceived** and **lost**, and if presently **saved**, likely to ultimately **fall away**, where it will be **impossible...to renew them again unto repentance**.

Deceived, carnal people also try to obscure the fact that Neanderthals and Cro-Magnon Man are clearly fully **human**, though larger than we are today, and with bigger **brains**. And we will examine the factors, including those of God’s Creation, but also of His **judgments**, that need consideration before we will be **able** to get an understandable picture of how such ‘big people’ are related to us. Such a perspective will only be **rightly** best **understood** with the help of more **scripture**, so we won’t really be **able** to fully **see** it this section, as this issue must be dealt with throughout the rest of this **study**, even far beyond it. Yes, this **understanding** should **grow** for at least the next 1,000 years or so, or at least until that eternal, partial memory **wipe** of all the **former things** happens. And we’ll definitely want to keep ‘raising the standard’ in this **fight** throughout The Millennium, because we’ll need to **endeavour** to protect as many as possible, given that so many are **prophesied** to be **deceived, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea**. I mean that even at the end of The Millennium, at the end of Our Lord’s 1,000-year **reign** on this Earth, there will again be multitudes **deceived** and **lost**, which probably means that some form of the Theory of Evolution will then have a big, though short-lived, comeback.

So in the interest of staying **exercised**, I want to recap the topic of ‘ape-men’/ ‘cavemen’ one more time. Piltdown and Nebraska Man were complete hoaxes. Java Man and Peking Man, the ‘major evidence’ for the *genus Homo erectus*, really are too, as they are plainly the **fossils** of **apes**, not **humans**. The same goes for *Ardipithecus* and *Australopithecus*, with more **fraud** still at work in these ‘imaginary branches’ too. But Neanderthals and Cro-Magnon Man were real **humans**, though at this point it is difficult to **imagine** them and their actual ‘living conditions’, as well as that of their immediate, and surely also **human**, ancestors.

But again, we will **imagine** them, and not based on a ‘fairy tale’, and not by

excluding or distorting any available evidence, but based on all the available real evidence we have just examined, and much more, and all in light of much more **scripture** than you've likely ever considered, all in order to get just 'one story'—a 'story' that will be **handled** by a **teacher** who, with his **senses exercised** by the **use** of God's Word, is **able** to **discern** more of this 'story' than you would likely be **able** to do on your own. And again, this will be increasingly **strong meat**, so that it will take growing **patience** and **diligence** on your part, including repeated rereadings of the sections of this **study**, again and again, until you begin to **understand** as fully as God expects one of his **disciple indeed** to be **able** to, and that is, at this stage of **the time of the end**. And then you should be **able** to begin to 'draw your own bold conclusions', by having your own new **revelations** on these topics, as you **continue** the **use** of these **exercise** 'machines'.

I mean again, you should **understand** that **RGT** and **JAC** are not like most studies. And I mean that both before and after they are sufficiently 'mastered', their continued **use** can increase your **stability...and strength of salvation** [Isa 33:6](#). They are like **exercise** 'equipment' where in the beginning their **use** only increases your spiritual **strength**, but they ultimately can become, when **used** more fully, unending inspiration—by 'meaty', **spiritual exercise**—for unending new **revelations** (see again [2Co 12:1](#)), **revelations** that go far beyond what is actually in these studies. And this is not boastful, because **RGT** and **JAC** are just 'meatier than most' samples of 'speaking' **as the oracles of God** that walk you through what it is like to be **exercised** in **strong meat**, which is the basis, besides certain **gifts** and Ministries of The Spirit, of how **revelations** are inspired. So I'm not just talking about the **revelations** that are contained in these studies. I'm talking about a skill all **disciples** should **attain**—that by becoming **exercised** in the **use** of The Word of God **disciples** should regularly be coming to 'new' and 'ever-meatier' **revelations** that go farther and farther beyond what is visible on the surface. And that **RGT** and **JAC** are two 'sets' of **exercise** 'equipment' designed to help you **get** and **increase** this **skill**. And yes, I mean my testimony is that these studies are designed by God so that your average 'turtle' will only be able to **understand** 'a little' of what is in them their first time though, but that with continued **use**, **understand** more and more, until eventually, if they **continue** in a regimen of staying regularly **exercised**, they will eventually **understand** a growing **measure** of **deep things** that are unimaginably far beyond their previous 'wildest dreams'. And it may take many times through these studies till you are learning fewer things directly from them and more **deep things** only at best indirectly connected to them. But this is when you will **truly** be what Jesus calls one His **disciples indeed**, and **better** than that, finally ready to be one of his 'close' **friends**. And by-the way, the 'first-round' **spiritual-scriptural exercise** of this **study** has hardly started. We won't really start 'lowering the peg' to 'add more weight' on this 'spiritual exercise machine' until next section.

But getting back to 'cavemen', we might also anticipate that the 'island-dwelling', 'Hobbit-sized' *Homo floresiensis* might soon go the way of New Guinea Man—'scrubbed from the record', when they are found alive on some yet unnoticed remote island. I mean these *pygmies*—or group of isolated 'genetic dwarfs'—are still hoped to be **extinct** anyway. But since they have already become more popular than New Guinea Man ever had a chance to, I'm thinking, not being **ignorant** of Satan's **devices**, that if someone has already found living examples of them, that such a discovery is under a lot of pressure to remain secret. Or even worse, but just as likely, a small, remote band of them would more likely simply just be 'exterminated' rather than exposed. *Evolutionists* commonly destroy evidence contrary to their preferred 'fairytale' all the time, and in whatever form it takes.

And I mean you should **understand** that surely sometimes this involves **murder**. Remember Jesus informs us of this about Satan, et al., saying,

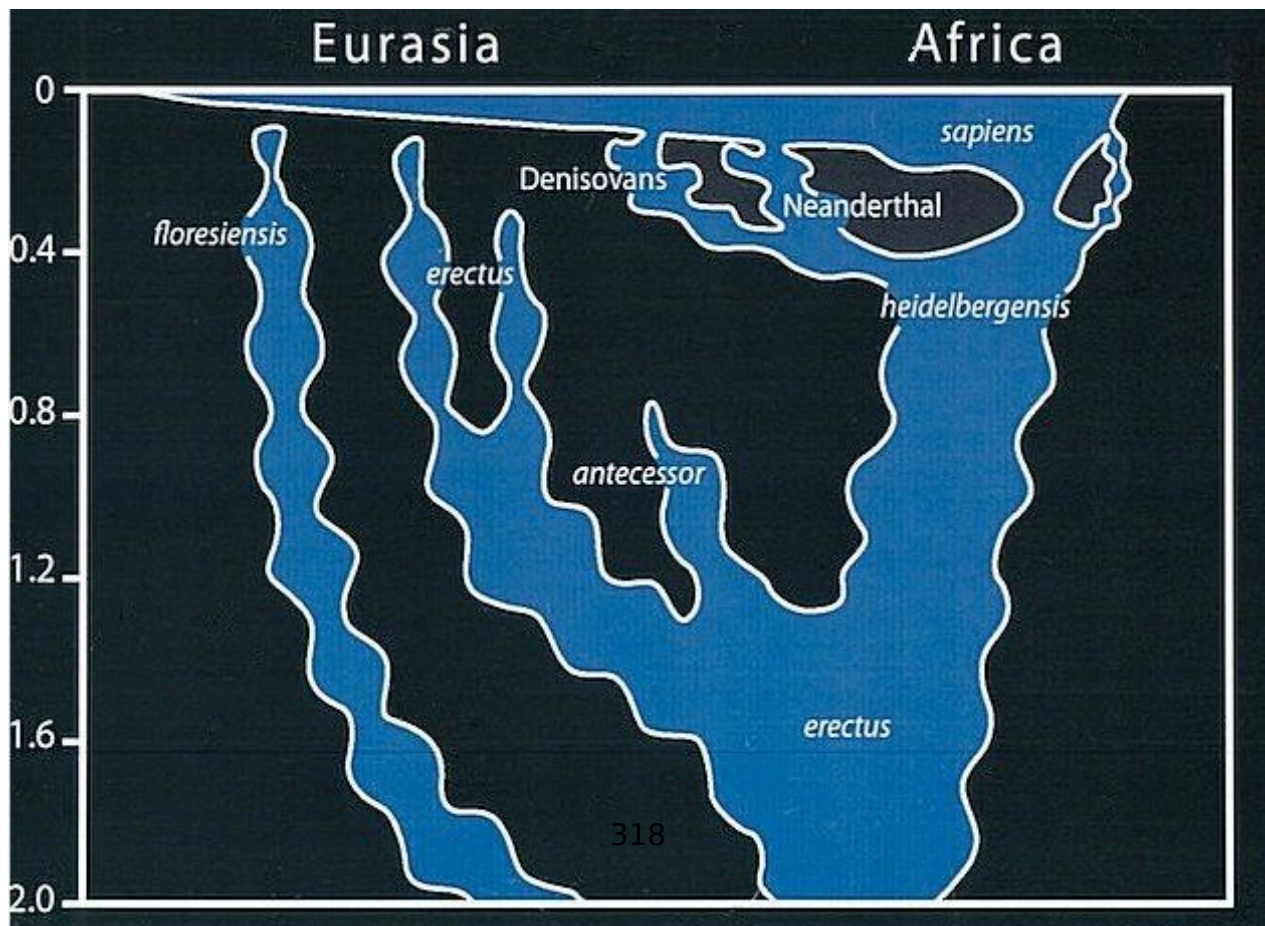
Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it [John 8:44](#).

But of course these ‘Hobbits’ may have all died out, as the remainder of this **study** will only further suggest. And *evolutionists* believe that other of our ‘ancestors’, beyond *Ardipithecus* and *Australopithecus*, in the *genus Homo*, died out too. This is illustrated in the chart on [p.265](#) designed by British *anthropologist* Dr. Christopher Brian Stringer, FRS, published 2012 in *Nature*. This ‘make-believe’ graph of the last 2 million years portrays the ‘branches’ of *genus Homo* in his “**Out of Africa**” **hypothesis**”, with his ‘bubbly branches’ representing the supposed *species* of *Homo*, as well as their increases and decreases in population, and all arising from *Ardipithecus* and *Australopithecus*. But you need to remember that all the *extinct* ‘branches’—the ones that don’t ‘bubble up’ to connect to “*sapiens*”—and even the ones that do, are based on very little ‘evidence’, much of which is, again, entirely ‘imaginary’, if not fraudulent, and none of it really legitimate. The easily arguably fully ‘human-pygmy’ evidence for the ‘extended branch’ of *Homo floresiensis*, for example, simply ‘falls short’, (all puns intended). I mean it is apparently assumed that this ‘branch’ must be longer and attach lower mostly because they are ‘short’. And Java Man and Peking Man—admitted by some *evolutionists* to be just *apes*—remain the ‘major support’ of the highest-reaching branches of *Homo erectus*. And *Homo antecessor* must be one of the shortest ‘branches’, I suppose, simply because it is based on so little and highly *fragmented fossil evidence*. Of course again, this makes it more widely ‘interpretable’. And remember that the *Denisovans* branch is based on even less evidence. Originally discovered in a cave in Siberia in 2010, the support for this ‘branch’ began with just one *finger bone*, two *teeth*, and a *toe bone*, and has added little else since.

But again, there is more “compelling evidence” that some *ethnic groups*, or *races of people*, did indeed die out a few thousand years ago, and I’m not just talking about everyone that died in The Flood. I’m also talking about the ones that were more ‘naturally’ forced to live in *caves*, eat *monkey brains*, *snails*, and kill *mastodons* for food, or be food for *saber-toothed bear*, not to mention fashion *stone tools*, and paint on *cave walls*, while, though mostly disconnected, sharing similar ‘objects of worship’. And yes, this focus will improve throughout the rest of this **study**.

So lately *evolutionists* are refilling the ‘coffin-sized box’ of ‘evidence’ for ‘ape-man’ a little faster than reasonable scrutiny—when allowed—can empty it. And evidence that has become painfully in need of removal is generally only extracted when workable replacements that are acceptably ‘distracting’ of such removals become available, including when formerly removed ‘evidence’ is ‘respun’ to be ‘replaced back in the box’, more often generations later, when the original hoax and/or just plain absurdity have been forgotten. And **fraud, lies, deceit**, ‘blackmail’, **oppression, extortion, murder**, and **all manner of evil** are used when ‘thought’ necessary to keep this ‘coffin or two’ seemingly, and however pitifully little it really is, overflowing.

By the way, it was *evolutionist* Dr. David Meredith Seares (D.M.S.) Watson, FRS, that is often credited with originating this ‘coffin’ analogy. He was the honorary Jodrell Professor of Zoology and Comparative Anatomy at University College, London from 1921 to 1951. Before taking this position he developed a wide interest in *fossils* through work at the British Museum of Natural History, including extended visits to South Africa, Australia, and the United States. Later he also amassed a large collection of fossils from his wide travels to Africa and Spain. Early in his time at University College, in 1924, he was invited to give the Croonian Lecture— a ‘state of the art of science’ lecture—and a few years later, was honored to give the University of Oxford version of such lectures, the Romanes Lecture. His topic was, “Paleontology and the Evolution of Man”. And the Science library at University



College was given his name in his honor.

But besides in *creationist's* sources, it is now hard to find any mention of him at all. In fairness to Dr. Watson, his reputation was most likely 'buried six feet under' because of statements attributed to him (or sometimes to Lyall Watson) by *creationist* sources. Such sources report that he's the one that said something to the effect that,

The number of fossils in the pedigree of man is even smaller than the number of fossil researchers. The surprising truth is that all the evidence of the evolution of man could be fitted into one coffin and there would still be space left over.

Whether it was Dr. Watson that first said something to this effect or not is really less important than the factual accuracy of the statement, at least at the time, as it can indeed be verified to be true, as we already have. But it can also be verified that he said something else that could be called the 'nails in his coffin'.

Though Dr. Watson remained a staunch *evolutionist*, I believe his demise is connected to 'unfortunate' quotes about the lack of any "coherent evidence" for the Theory of Evolution, and his even more 'unfortunate' mention of "special creation". But I'll let a 'neutral source', (read, an *evolutionist*), explain this confusion, and do some 'housecleaning' with *creationists* at the same time. This source, by-the-way, was easy to find... It begins with Dr. Watson's quote...

"the theory of evolution itself, a theory universally accepted not because it be can proved by logically coherent evidence to be true but because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible."

This quotation of Watson is often used in Creationist writings in an attempt to show that Watson, and thus by extension promoters of evolution in general, dismiss creationism due to antitheistic [or atheistic] bias. A slightly different version of the quotation, derived from a secondhand source, is sometimes used (e.g., by C. S. Lewis):

"[Evolution is] accepted by zoologists not because it has been observed to occur or... can be proved by logically coherent evidence to be true, but because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible."

Sometimes the words in square brackets are incorrectly incorporated into the quotation, and/or the ellipsis ["..."] is omitted.

Watson's original statement first appeared in a 1929 article, "Adaptation," in the journal *Nature*: The second version of the quotation, given above, is formed by combining parts of two similar passages in Watson's paper, one from the first page and one from the third. The first passage reads:

"Evolution itself is accepted by zoologists not because it has been observed to occur or is supported by logically coherent arguments, but because it does fit all the facts of taxonomy, of paleontology,

and of geographical distribution, and because no alternative explanation is credible."

The second passage reads:

"If so, it will present a parallel to the theory of evolution itself, a theory universally accepted not because it can be proved by logically coherent evidence to be true, but because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible."

The ellipses in the second version of the standard quotation from Watson elide [or omit] his statement in that evolution fits "all the facts" of taxonomy, paleontology, and geographical distribution. They also omit his statement, which directly follows quotation above, that "Whilst the fact of evolution is accepted by every biologist, the mode in which it has occurred and the mechanism by which it has been brought about are still disputable."

Watson thus considered evolution a fact, belief in which was supported by its fit to a wide range of other facts. He thought "special creation" unbelievable and the mechanisms of evolution disputable (his article was devoted to emphasizing the inadequacy of contemporary theories of adaptation, and mentions "special creation" only in passing). This was in 1929, several years before the inception of evolutionary biology's Modern Synthesis, which integrated Mendelian genetics into Darwinian thought and produced widespread scientific consensus about basic evolutionary mechanisms [at least during the middle of the century]. Stephen Jay Gould describes 1900–10 as "the period of greatest agnosticism and debate about evolutionary mechanisms" and adds that even the 1920s were still "not happy times of consensus for evolutionary theory in general." [And Dr. Gould could be considered most responsible for popularizing the latest, ongoing 'divide' about "evolutionary mechanisms".]

When it was made, over 80 years ago, Watson's complaint that the mechanisms of evolution were poorly understood was accurate. His statement that evolution was believed only "because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible" was a provocative exaggeration, contradicted by his own remarks (i.e., evolution already "fit all the facts" of several major knowledge fields).

Thus Dr. Watson is defended, but quite inadequately, I should say, because today the 'genetic-based' Modern Synthesis Theory is itself in "not happy times". And this is largely because of the complete lack of *fossil evidence* to support the small *micromutations* of *organisms* over time, as Modern Synthesis *theory* presumes, and because more and more *evolutionists* are beginning to acknowledge the abundant evidence of supposedly large—*species level—macromutations*, and because Dr. Gould's new, or really revived 'theory', called "Punctuated Equilibrium", supposedly 'accounts' for such suddenly appearing "Hopeful Monsters".

So though the above defender of Dr. Watson admits that the very goal of the good doctor was to inform the 'scientific community' that "evolutionary mechanisms" were "poorly understood" in his time, and though this defender offers "Modern Synthesis" as the *theory* that everyone agreed solved this

'misunderstanding', he doesn't tell us that "Modern Synthesis" is now becoming widely accepted as a failed theory in the 'scientific community'. So not only were the "evolutionary mechanisms" originally "poorly understood", the later attempt to clarify them has failed, and they are now back to being "poorly understood" again. Because indeed the latest rising 'theory', Punctuated Equilibrium, is now no less "poorly understood". Indeed the only real proof they have that we 'evolved' by Punctuated Equilibrium is that there are no intermediary "missing links"—only complete *species*. In other words, we will soon be asked to believe, if you haven't been asked to do so already, that 'lower' *species* somehow eventually acquire the ability to give birth to entirely new, and successively 'higher' *species*. And we won't be able to avoid talking some more about this 'theory' before we're through with this section.

And Dr. Watson's attitude about "special creation", however "provocative" his "exaggeration", was really based on absolutely no real evidence then, really just **imagination** at best. And surely he knew it. And surely he was denying God by ignoring and hiding evidence, or offering something that was not really evidence as if it was, and worse than that, was not likely that concerned whether there was 'evidence' or not. What was he more concerned with? More likely it was with his title, and position, and honors, and privileges, or more to the point, his **pride** and **lust**. But he evidently defended even these 'poorly', arguably becoming a casualty in this 'war of the flesh', however erroneously *creationists* **shamefully** 'piled-on' to secure his downfall. I mean it will not likely be good for your career to state that the Theory of Evolution is "poorly understood" in any respect, though most all *evolutionists* sooner or later have such 'more revealing moments', no matter what version of the 'theory' is presently more popular.

And we're still not done with this exposé on the Theory of Evolution, because, speaking of 'more revealing moments', there are a few more I'd like to expose—most all of them taken at least somewhat out of context I assure you. However some are not, and others are 'seeds' that I hope to 'see the fruit of' by the end of this **study**.

Remember Sir Dr. Arthur Keith, the Scottish *anthropologist* and *anatomist* known for his idea of "group" *natural selection* from his book, *The New Theory of Human Evolution*. But of course his involvement in the Piltdown Man hoax is more often forgotten or ignored. So it is ironic—but unavoidable—that he is acknowledged by some to be the greatest advocate of *evolution* in the 20th Century in England. Still he is likely even better known because he is 'piled-on' by Christian sources that quote him, or maybe misquote him, as saying,

Evolution is unproved and unprovable. We believe it because the only alternative is special Creation, and that is unthinkable.

And though it is easy to find *evolutionists* who deny that Sir Arthur ever said this, there is no need to ask whether he believed it.

And Sir Arthur did 'strike close to this mark' in his book, *Evolution and Ethics*, where he debated the driving 'positive' and 'negative' influence of *evolution*, wherein he asserted,

To see evolutionary measures and tribal morality being applied vigorously to the affairs of a great modern nation, we must turn again to Germany of 1942. We see Hitler devoutly convinced that evolution produces the only real basis for a national policy... The means he adopted to secure the destiny of his race and people were organized

slaughter, which has drenched Europe in blood... Such conduct is highly immoral as measured by every scale of ethics, yet Germany justifies it, it is consonant with tribal or evolutionary morality. Germany has reverted to the tribal past, and is demonstrating to the world, in their naked ferocity, the methods of evolution (*Evolution and Ethics*, Putnam, 1947, p.28).

And I'm sure we could get a 'heil, Hitler' from lots of *evolutionists* on that. The origins of these **wicked devices**, by-the-way, are impartially documented in Joseph Carr's book, *The Twisted Cross*, (referring in this case to the swastika symbol), subtitled, *The Occultic Religion of Hitler and the New Age Nazism of the Third Reich*, published by Huntington House, Inc. in 1985. Though limited in 'prophetic perspective', it 'illuminates' many of Hitler's other, more direct, satanic 'mystery school' influences, and some of the more credible reasons I've heard why Hitler failed, including some of the better insights into the kinds of operations of Satan that will eventually have a '**whole world**' of success in The Great Tribulation. And I hope to consider this further in the last section of this **study**, and I mean further than we did in [RGT](#) too.

And surely the Theory of Evolution is an insidious part of the devil's entire 'game plan'. Dr. Conway Zirkel, a mid-20th Century American *botanist*, Professor Emeritus at the University of Pennsylvania, wrote on *evolution*, the *history of biology*, and the *philosophy of science*. He explains why Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels, authors of *The Communist Manifesto*, so readily accepted the idea of *evolution* after Charles Darwin published *The Origin of Species*, saying,

Evolution, of course, was just what the founders of communism needed to explain how mankind could have come into being without the intervention of any supernatural force, and consequently it could be used to bolster the foundations of their materialistic philosophy (*Evolution, Marxian Biology and the Social Scene*, University of Pennsylvania Press, 1959, p.85).

And Communism has produced 'bloodbaths' that add up to multiple times the volume of Hitler's. See again www.hawaii.edu/powerkills/POWER.ART.HTM.

And it all begins with denying the existence of God, or at least the existence of our One True Father God. Thomas H. Huxley, the late 19th Century British *zoologist* and *comparative anatomist*, dubbed "Darwin's Bulldog" for supporting Charles Darwin and his 'theories', said,

It is clear that the doctrine of evolution is directly antagonistic to that of Creation...

Evolution, if consistently accepted, makes it impossible to believe in the Bible (Samuel G. Dawson and Rod MacArthur, *Handbook of Religious Quotations*, p.63).

But again, the 'sharpness' of his 'bulldog's teeth' alone in defense of the Theory of Evolution made it clear that there is no doubt he believed this. And he openly considered himself an "agnostic", a term he coined, which was the new 'politically correct' term for "atheist" in his day. Today, as you may have heard, the newest 'atheism movement', called The Brights Movement, is popularizing another new

'politically correct' term for *atheist*. This new term is "bright", implying anyone that is not an *atheist* is, at least by comparison, 'dull'.

Sir Julian Huxley, Sir Thomas' grandson, was the renowned, early 20th Century, Oxford educated *evolutionary biologist, naturalist, and eugenicist* (look it up), who was considered a main figure in the development of Modern Synthesis Theory. His biggest contribution to this 'theory' may have been when he helped found Rice University where he recruited the scientist famous for experiments identifying 'genetic mutations' in 'fruit flies', experiments—like the Miller Urey Experiment—that are still being misused—at least in high school textbooks—as evidence for *evolution by mutation*. For a short time, between WWI and II, Sir Julian was Professor of Zoology at King's College of the University of London, a research college, arguably the third oldest in England, founded by King Henry IV, et al. He also served a short stint as Fullerian Professor of Physiology at the Royal Institution, founded in 1799 by some of the most famous scientist of that time, though it had originally, like Oxford and Cambridge, more of a 'Christian bent', but it has become, surely with Sir Julian's help, devoted to Theory-of-Evolution-compatible 'scientific indoctrination' and 'propaganda'. The institution's directors, by-the-way, and not surprisingly, recently offered their original and quite impressive London edifice for sale to pay their mounting debt. Yes, it finally became 'bankrupt' in both 'body and spirit'.

During WWII Sir Julian was Secretary of the Zoological Society of London, though that post was finally eliminated—evidently with some animosity—and evidently because of his 'atheistic bent'. His 'international concern for education' led him to help create the United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization, UNESCO, and to become the organization's first Director-General in 1946, though his outspoken *atheist-humanist* philosophy again apparently provoked further ethical or Christian opposition that restricted his term of service to only two years. And throughout his career he dabbled in all aspects of *evolution* including *embryology, genetics, anthropology, ethology* ('animal behavior'), even in the early work of *cell biology*. Sir Julian's reputation as an advocate for *evolution*, and especially his contribution to the Modern Synthesis Theory, led to his awards of the Darwin Medal of the Royal Society in 1956, and the Darwin-Wallace Medal of the Linnaean Society in 1958, the same year he was knighted. His interest in *evolutionary humanism*, (read, 'shameless opposition to and denial of God'), is evident in much of his published work. And he was naturally one of the signers of the Humanist Manifesto. In a television interview he is reported to have said,

God has been banished from His universe by the theory of evolution, which is a theory which not merely describes biology but covers all sciences, both physical and social as well as other things. It deals with law and society in government and ethics. It deals with the formation of the atom and the formation of the galaxies... Evolution is the totality of reality.

Again there is no reference needed here because there is no doubt he was **deceived** to fully 'believe' this. Except, of course, on those surely innumerable occasions when he was convicted by The Holy Spirit, which evidently he rejected each time, until finally becoming fully aligned with those, **Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron [1Ti 4:1-2](#), until God gave them over to a reprobate mind [Rom 1:28](#)**. Or as the Apostle Peter puts it,

These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error [2 Pe 2:17-18](#).

And though Sir Julian encountered a great deal of resistance to his **way** of thinking in his day, it is now growing more popular, though it is nonetheless absolutely **evil** and **deadly**. Hitler and Stalin already proved that. The Antichrist will even more so. But this **delusion** will succeed because it is an elaborate **pride-**and-**lust**-feeding fantasy disguised as an explanation for all “reality”, offering license to indulge **all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life**, and all without limit. So excluding a ‘death bed conversion’, Sir Julian, like Dr. Watson and Sir Dr. Keith, finally had his **delusions** all **chosen** for him by God.

And again, it’s not an accident that such sources have become hard to find. They have been systematically ‘scrubbed’, as much as possible, from the public record. And it should become more and more evident that such a conspiracy could not happen with the direction of humans alone. Certainly this is one of the **devices** of our **adversary the devil**, where his **principalities** and **powers** help ‘sear consciences’ with ‘hot irons’ until they are ‘given over to reprobate minds’ by God. But I should add one more thing. Though I have appeared to **judge** these men that I have used as examples, I really have not, since I have acknowledged the possibility of ‘death bed conversions’. I also acknowledge that their responses to The Ministry of The Holy Spirit may not always have been to reject it. And I mean that I’m straying into God’s perspective here, into a place where we cannot ‘rightly’ **judge**. But the Apostles Peter and Paul nonetheless spoke openly of such men. I only hope to ‘echo’ their warnings having now finally reached **the time of the end**, using examples that, at least on the surface, fit the Apostles’ descriptions.

Aldous Huxley, another of Sir Thomas’ grandsons and Julian’s brother, and author of the 1921 novel, *Brave New World*, ‘classed’ himself among those who find “no meaning in the world.” He supposedly said,

I had motives for not wanting the world to have meaning; consequently, assumed it had none, and was able without any difficulty to find satisfying reasons for this assumption... The philosopher who finds no meaning in the world is not concerned exclusively with a problem in pure metaphysics [read, religion]; he is also concerned to prove there is no valid reason why he personally should not do as he wants to do... For myself, as no doubt for most of my contemporaries, the philosophy of meaninglessness was essentially an instrument of liberation... we desired... liberation from a certain system of morality. We objected to the [Judeo-Christian] morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom (*Can America Survive the Fruits of Atheistic Evolution?*, Bert Thompson).

And surely ‘most of the contemporaries’ of the **ungodly** engage in such **lasciviousness**. Mr. Huxley’s novel, *Brave New World*, as I see it, is a story that offers a futuristic, amoral backdrop for Plato’s, *The Republic*, which is a ‘treatise’ on what this Ancient Greek philosopher thought was the best form of government,

namely and briefly, socialistic, totalitarian elitism, where a few “philosopher kings” rule absolutely, while the general population is kept ‘dumbed-down’, all supposedly for the general good of all. But of course it’s really just a plan that makes it possible to remove God from society, giving ‘unlimited license’ to the elite to fulfill their **lusts**, while allowing them to ‘enslave the masses’, though ‘pacifying’ them with a strictly controlled amount of freedom to fulfill their **lusts** too. The story of *Brave New World*, which is about such a ‘government’, ends with the arrival of a multitude of arguably ‘errant citizens’, who apparently abandoned their cities with the expectation of participating in another, but even larger, ‘drug-enhanced’, ‘wilderness’, ‘bacchanalian-style orgy’, one that would make the 1969 Woodstock Festival seem like a Boy Scout Jamboree. Of course this ending to his story also anticipates another necessary ‘crackdown’ by the ‘government’ to ‘restore order’ in a situation where **lust** is ‘spiraling out of control’.

And I shouldn’t be surprised that I couldn’t find Mr. Thompson’s book for sale anywhere. But he evidently quotes Dr. George Gaylord Simpson too, the American *paleontologist* whose involvement with Piltdown Man is also mostly forgotten or ignored, so that, also ironically, he can otherwise be remembered as perhaps the most influential American *paleontologist* of the 20th Century, including being another major participant in Modern Synthesis Theory. He is memorialized at the University of Arizona, Tucson, where a science building is jointly named after him and an Arizona geologist. Dr. Simpson believed,

Man stands alone in the universe, a unique product of a long, unconscious, impersonal material process with unique understanding and potentialities. These he owes to no one but himself, and it is to himself alone that he is responsible. He is not the creature of uncontrollable and undeterminable forces, but is his own master. He can and must decide his own destiny (*Can America Survive the Fruits of Atheistic Evolution?*, Bert Thompson).

Or put more succinctly, in the *creationist* newsletter, *Impact*, Dr. Simpson is quoted as saying,

Man is the result of a purposeless and natural process that did not have him in mind (*Impact*, June 2001).

This kind of **evil**—that denies even the very existence of God, ultimately leading to **lust** and **violence** ‘spiraling out of control’—is identified everywhere in **scripture**. In Psalm 12, for example, King David sings not only about what’s happening in his time, but also helps us **understand** what’s going on in ours, when he cries,

Help, LORD; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from among the children of men. They speak vanity every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak. The LORD shall cut off all flattering lips, and the tongue that speaketh proud things: Who have said, With our tongue will we prevail; our lips are our own: who is lord over us? [Psa 12:1-4](#)

Surely the Theory of Evolution has been no more than an **ungodly, vain, ‘double-hearted’, flattering, ‘false religion’** from the beginning. As Dr. Louis Trenchard More, early to mid-20th Century University of Cincinnati Dean of the Graduate School, put it,

The more one studies paleontology, the more certain one becomes that evolution is based on faith alone... exactly the same sort of faith which it is necessary to have when one encounters the great mysteries of religion [*Science and the Two-tailed Dinosaur*, publisher unknown, p.33].

But hold the cheering. According to another *creationist's* source, He adds,

The only alternative is the doctrine of special creation, which may be true, but is irrational [<http://www.aboundingjoy.com/scientists.htm>].

Irrational? If "special creation" is believed on "faith alone", we can now see it would be no more "irrational" to believe it than the Theory of Evolution, except that we have falsified the Theory of Evolution on every front, and seen much real scientific evidence to support "special creation", like the 'many-bladed', "razor's edge" design of our Universe that is plainly 'perfectly designed' to supports us, and the 'missing neutrinos' that prove our Sun cannot have been burning but for a few thousand years, and *polonium halos* in "Genesis rock" showing Earth's *bedrock* must have come into being suddenly and already *solid*, while Earth's *decaying magnetic field* also limits it's age to a few thousand years, and most convincing of all, the unfathomable complexity of *life* itself, making it only rational to believe it had to be **created**, surely on assigned **days**, by God.

And yes, it is "irrational" to believe that *life* 'evolved', let alone started on its own. Professor Dr. Edwin Conklin was a *biologist* and *zoologist*, educated at Ohio Wesleyan University and Johns Hopkins University. He was Professor of Biology at Ohio Wesleyan, and Professor of Zoology at Northwestern University, the University of Pennsylvania, and Princeton, all straddling the turn of the 20th Century. He became coeditor of the Journal of Morphology, the Biological Bulletin, and the Journal of Experimental Zoology. He was also president of the American Society of Naturalists in 1912, and president of the American Association for the Advancement of Science in 1936. And he was evidently one of the first to recognize that,

The probability of life originating from accident is comparable to the probability of the Unabridged Dictionary resulting from an explosion in a printing shop [<http://www.quotes.net/authors/Edwin Conklin>].

And the odds have only gotten much worse since then. Now we know it's much worse than the odds of an explosion producing just a dictionary, even worse than just an entire set of encyclopedias, and much worse. We're talking whole, largest-in-the-World libraries, including both the books and buildings.

Dr. R. L. Wysong has a B.S. in *biology* and *chemistry* and a doctorate in *veterinary surgery* and *medicine*. At the college level he has taught *human anatomy*, *physiology* and *origin of life* courses. He used to be an *evolutionist*, but that was before the publication of his 1977 book, *The Creation-Evolution Controversy*, a comprehensive work dealing with such issues. And his book is acknowledged as handling this 'controversy' fairly, though written from a *young-earth creationism* perspective. Dr. R. H. Brown, a Director of the Geoscience Research Institute, described Dr. Wysong's book as "the best comprehensive treatment of *scientific creationism* that has become available prior to mid-1977" (<http://www.grisda.org/origins/05105.htm>). This book has had several printings

and is available through Dr. Wysong's company. Dr. Wysong puts things in perspective about the mathematical odds that life could form accidentally, saying,

[Evolutionist Dr. Hans-Joachim Bremermann, a 20th Century *mathematician* and *biophysicist*] has calculated that the amount of [DNA] information in the one-celled bacterium, E. coli, to be 10^{12} bits... [The famous evolutionist Dr. Carl] Sagan equates 10^{12} bits of information with 100 million pages of Encyclopedia Britannica [*The Creation-Evolution Controversy*, Inquiry Press, Midland, Michigan, 1976, p.112].

The necessity for that much 'perfectly ordered information' for the **so-called** 'simplest' of *organisms* implies that the 'accidental formation' of *life* is a much bigger problem than 'an explosion in a printing shop' could handle. In comparison, Dr. Wysong shares that the total writings from classical Greek Civilization are only 10^9 bits, or only 75 million pages, and that the largest libraries in the world, including The British Museum, Oxford Bodleian Library, New York Public Library, Harvard Widener Library, and the Moscow Lenin Library, have about the same amount of information as one of these *bacteria*. By-the-way, several *creationists'* sources I viewed—most unreferenced—misspelled Dr. Wysong's name—as R. C., instead of R. L. But I suspect this is no accident either. It is more likely another of the **devices** to discredit lesser attentive Christians, of which I surely have been too, and will be, including in this **study**, though I am ever vigilant to avoid it.

Sir Dr. James Gray, FRS, was a British *zoologist* at Cambridge University who was a pioneer in the field of *cell biology*. He was also known for his work in *animal locomotion* and the development of *experimental zoology*. Sir James graduated from Kings College, Cambridge, and was Professor of Zoology there in the mid-20th Century. He was also President of the Marine Biological Association during this time. He delivered the 'state of science' Croonian Lecture of 1939 to the Royal Society, the lecture Dr. Watson gave 15 years earlier, and received their Royal Medal in 1948. In 1951, a couple decades after Sir Julian Huxley, he lectured at the Royal Institution, but was knighted 4 years before Sir Julian, in 1954. And this pioneer in *cell biology* evidently also saw it from the beginning. He is quoted as saying,

A bacterium is far more complex than any inanimate system known to man. There is not a laboratory in the world which can compete with the biochemical activity of the smallest living organism. One cell is more complicated than the largest computer that man has ever made [<http://canitrustthebible.com/origins>].

Another *scientist* evidently compared such a 'simple cell' to the entirety of New York City. And this is a reasonable comparison, which makes the entire Theory of Evolution unreasonable as popularly taught, especially in high school textbooks.

But my favorite quote is from a Frenchman. Early 20th Century *geologist*, Professor Dr. Paul Lemoine, began his career, equipped with B.S. degrees in both Natural and Physical Sciences, with field work in Madagascar. In 1906, as a doctoral candidate at the famous Sorbonne University, which is actually several institutions of higher education and research—like Cambridge and UCSD—he coordinated all this new data in a comprehensive work. This very remarkable dissertation, "Geological studies in northern Madagascar", led to him receiving the prestigious *Fontannes* award of the Geological Society of France (*la Société Géologique de France*).

Also around this time, in 1904, besides an expedition to break new ground in Morocco, he had been appointed Adjunct Associate at the Department of the Geological Map of France (*Collaborateur auxiliaire au Service de la Carte Géologique de la France*), then in 1906, to Associate Deputy (*Collaborateur-adjoint*), and after he returned from Madagascar, and finished his thesis—which was interrupted by his excursion to Morocco—his interest returned to the *geology* of France, and he was often published in the “Service Bulletin of the Geological Map” of France (*Bulletin du Service de la Carte Géologique*).

During this time, from 1905 to 1908, he was also an Assistant Professor of Geology at the Faculty of Sciences of Paris (*Préparateur du cours de Géologie à la Faculté des Sciences de Paris*). His next position was as Director of Geology at the Colonial Laboratory (*Chef de Travaux de Géologie au Laboratoire Colonial*), near the Museum of Natural History in Paris, and during this time he taught *geology* to *architects* at the Special School of Architecture (*l'Ecole spéciale d'Architecture*).

In 1910 he published, *Practical Treatise on Geology* (*Traité pratique de Géologie*), with a second edition in 1922. His growing reputation in the field of *geology* led to him being appointed, in 1911, to Assistant Dean of Applied Geology at the National Post-Graduate School at Mines de Saint-Etienne, (*Préparateur de Géologie appliquée à École Nationale Supérieure des Mines de Saint-Etienne*), then in 1912, to Dean (*Chef des Travaux*). His 1911 book, *Geology of the Paris Basin* (*Géologie du Bassin de Paris*), synthesizes all of the then available knowledge about this region of France, and during the period of 1907 to WW I he published over 100 articles based on his ongoing synthesizing field work and research at a pace that was described as “intense” (same spelling and meaning in both French and English) (<http://www.annales.org/archives/x/lemoine4.html>, paragraph 13).

But along the way Professor Dr. Lemoine more or less abandoned the popular path of *evolutionary geology*, and adopted a new approach. He explains the reason why he finally saw a need for this ‘transition’, when he said he was,

...hit by the fact that the usual fieldwork that must engage all geologists can only relate to fairly limited areas [translation from the original French... see [Paragraph 14](#)].

In other words, what Dr. Lemoine began to notice is that the ‘generalizations’ of his colleagues were drawn from observations that were too limited, and that extrapolation of such observations played too large a role in *geological theories*. Sounds familiar though, huh.

In 1916, in collaboration with other scientists, he created the Society of Paleontological Documentation (*Société de Documentation Paléontologique*), later known as the Union of Geological and Paleontological Documentation (*le Syndicat de Documentation Géologique et Paléontologique*). And in WW I, though he requested combat, he was kept in the Geographical Service of the Army (*Service Géographique de l'Armée*) and arose to the rank of Captain, where his map work eventually took him to the German front. Shortly before the end of the war, it was decided to assign a *topographer* Officer at the Expeditionary Force in Palestine and Syria, initially for military operations, and in order to organize a Geographic Service there. Captain Dr. Paul Lemoine was chosen, and he served in Beirut until 1919, as Chief of the Topographical Bureau (*Chef du Bureau Topographique*). He accomplished the work there quickly, and started the training of the local staff.

Following the retirement of Stanislas-Étienne Meunier in 1920, the Chair of Geology of the Museum of Natural History of Paris (*la Chaire de Géologie du*

Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle à Paris), who was one of the foremost *geologist* of his time, Dr. Lemoine was appointed to the seat. And from 1932 to 1936 he was director of the museum.

Dr. Lemoine was also a member of the French Academy of Sciences (*Académie des sciences*), the Society of Biogeography (*Société de biogéographie*), the Society of mineralogy and crystallography (*Société française de minéralogie et de cristallographie*), and the Geological Society of France (*Société géologique de France*), including being its president in 1923 & 1936.

These are indeed 'rock-solid' credentials, which brings me to my favorite quote, by way of one more of his many credentials. And I mean that he was also a chief editor of the 1937 edition of *Encyclopedic Francaise*, which was the year he turned 59, about 3 years before his death. So it was at the end of his career, in his encyclopedia entry for "evolution", that he stated,

The theory of evolution is impossible. At least, in spite of appearances, no one any longer believes in it... Evolution is a kind of dogma which its priests no longer believe, but which they maintain for their people. One must have courage to say this.

Courage indeed, as opposed to the cowardly behavior of most *evolutionists* who pretend to 'believe' in *evolution* when they know there is no real evidence to do so. And we're talking about even more **courage** here than *mapmaking* at the German front I would presume. Because if you continue looking deeper into such a worldwide, 'satanically led conspiracy', you will continue finding examples of **all manner of evil** being used to **persecute** people with such **courage**, all in order to **deceitfully** maintain 'faith' in the Theory of Evolution.

But Dr. Lemoine began his career as an *evolutionist*. So he was one of the few that handled the evidence more 'even-handedly'. And you'd think that such a major publication would have 'rocked' the 'scientific world', at least in France. But this was not the case. Apparently no French 'scientist' openly challenged the above statement at the time it was published, though none of this is well-known anymore, especially in the English-speaking world. And most all this information about Dr. Lemoine I had to translate from a French source, and only found his quote posted by English *creationists* otherwise (e.g.,

<http://www.annales.org/archives/x/lemoine4.html>, and Henry M. Morris, *Men of Science, Men of God*, 1982, 1988, and Keith Graham, et al., *Biology, God's Living Creation*, A Beka Book Publications, Pensacola Christian College, Pensacola, FL, 1986, p.387). And apparently his conclusion about the Theory of Evolution has been ignored ever since, except by *creationists*, of course.

And speaking of "impossible", there is a close second for my favorite quote because of its equal, however laughable, honesty. Or maybe it's better described as a prolonged 'slip of the tongue'. Such is the case with Dr. George Wald, PhD in Zoology from Columbia University in 1932, who did research on the *eyes*—on both sides of 'the pond' really—including being chased back to this side by Hitler, being a Jew, landing at the University of Chicago, but finally at Harvard, where he ultimately became Professor Emeritus of Biology. He was elected to the National Academy of Sciences in 1950 and in 1967 was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine for his discoveries in *vision*. But I don't think he ever 'got his foot back out of his mouth' after he published,

When it comes to the origin of life there are only two possibilities: creation or spontaneous generation [read, *special creation*]. There is no

third way. Spontaneous generation was disproved one hundred years ago, but that leads us to only one other conclusion, that of supernatural creation. We cannot accept that on philosophical grounds; therefore, we choose to believe the impossible: that life arose spontaneously by chance! ["*The Origin of Life*," *Scientific American*, May 1954, Vol. 191, p.48].

And so you aren't confused if you search for it, four years later he managed to 'drive his foot even further into his mouth', evidently 'deep down into his throat', finally removing any hope that his original statement was an isolated 'slip of the tongue', when he restated that,

There are only two possibilities as to how life arose. One is spontaneous generation arising to evolution; the other is a supernatural creative act of God. There is no third possibility. Spontaneous generation, that life arose from non-living matter was scientifically disproved 120 years ago by Louis Pasteur and others. That leaves us with the only possible conclusion that life arose as a supernatural creative act of God. I will not accept that philosophically because I do not want to believe in God. Therefore, I choose to believe in that which I know is scientifically impossible; spontaneous generation arising to evolution [Wald, George, "*Innovation and Biology*", *Scientific American*, Vol.199, Sept. 1958, p.100].

Now there's a "bright" idea for you, and a plainly 'blindly committed' *atheist*. But I find his 'philosophy' brutally—and laughably—honest, though not very 'bright' really. And you should be ready by now for the idea that it is inevitable that we will need to look back to more honest and intelligent times if we should expect to find enough **undefiled** 'scientific help' with our goal in this **study**—to examine **The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation**. A case in point would be Sir Isaac Newton, who as you may remember from the last **study** calculated the length of the ancient *cubit*, and who, at least concerning his stated opinion on *atheism* and the origin of the *eyes*, showed abundant honesty and intelligence. About *atheism* and the *eyes* he said,

Opposite to godliness is atheism in profession and idolatry in practice. Atheism is so senseless and odious to mankind that it never had many professors [until recently]... [And] Whence is it that the eyes of all sorts of living creatures are transparent to the very bottom, and the only transparent humors [*tissue*], with a crystalline lens in the middle and a pupil before the lens, all of them so finely shaped and fitted for vision that no artist can mend them? Did blind chance [pun intended?] know that there was light and what [was] its refraction, and fit the eyes of all creatures after the most curious manner to make use of it? These and suchlike considerations always have and ever will prevail with mankind to believe that there is a Being who made all things and has all things in his power, and who is therefore to be feared.

We are, therefore, to acknowledge one God, infinite, eternal, omnipotent, omniscient, omnipotent, the Creator of all things, most

wise, most just, most good, most holy. We must love Him, fear Him, honor Him, trust in Him, pray to Him, give Him thanks, praise Him, hallow His name, obey His commandments, and set times apart for His service, as we are directed in the Third and Fourth Commandments, and his commandments are not grievous—1 John 5:3 [From *On Universal Design* quoted in *Philosophy of Nature: Selections from His Writings*, H. S. Thayer, editor, Hafner Publishing Company, New York, 1953, and quoted in *Biology, God's Living Creation*, K. Graham, et al., A Beka Book Publications, Pensacola, Florida, 1986, p.187].

And Sir Isaac may just as well have reference the twice used verse in Psalms of King David:

The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good [Psa 14:1](#); [53:1](#).

But Sir Isaac's statement clearly enough agrees with King David. And we will hear of Sir Isaac again, because some, by his 'associations', see him as a 'cultist'. And he may deserve this accusation, though judging by his above statement, maybe mostly only 'by association'.

And we could go on 'beating this dead horse' *ad infinitum* and *ad nauseam*. And you should wonder by now why we would need to. But we're not done with such 'horsing around', 'monkey business', or 'flights of fancy' quite yet, because the newest 'fantasy' to attempt to 'fix' all these mostly unacknowledged failures of the Theory of Evolution gets even more fantastic. Yes, I mean Neo-Darwinism is not completely dead yet, but there is a 'back-up theory' that is 'waiting in the wings', and 'on the rise', if not already 'taking over', that offers an explanation that supposedly actually 'fits' the real *fossil record*, and gives 'scientists' a 'reason' to 'keep the faith' that the Theory of Evolution is not "impossible" after all.

And I know I said in the last section that I have no reason to 'doubt the science' offered. But I do, don't I. We've certainly seen a lot of reasons why. And remember we have 'supernatural insider knowledge' from God that we should doubt anything *evolutionists* say, and whether they're ***saved*** or not. We ***know*** this because we ***know***, as Jeremiah the Prophet laments,

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? [Jer 17:9](#)

So it's no wonder really that the Theory of Evolution is such a successful 'worldwide satanic deception' based on nothing but ***lies*** and ***delusion***. And some *evolutionists* actually admit this.

Once more let's hear from Dr. David Raup, late 20th Century Dean of the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago. I hadn't mentioned before that he did his graduate work at Harvard, where he majored in *geology* while focusing on *paleontology* and *biology*, earning his MA and PhD degrees there. Besides being the Curator and Dean of Science at the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, he taught at Caltech, John Hopkins and the University of Rochester, was a visiting professor in Germany at Tübingen, and was also on the faculty of the College of the Virgin Islands. And he's the guy, along with his colleague, who suggested that the supposed extinction of *dinosaurs* 66 million years ago was part of a 'cycle' of 'mass

extinctions' that may have occurred every 26 million years. And there's something to this idea too, if, again, they could just get the 'timescale' right, as we will see. At this writing Dr. Raup is still involved in *evolutionary research*. And he's another 'scientist' who has spelled out this 'misunderstanding' about the popular Theory of Evolution—and the 'misunderstanding' that the *fossil record* 'supports' the 'theory' of 'tree-of-life' Darwinism—quite plainly, when he wrote,

A large number of well-trained scientists outside of evolutionary biology and paleontology have unfortunately gotten the idea that the fossil record is far more Darwinian than it is. This probably comes from the oversimplification [read, *lies*] inevitable in secondary sources: low-level [including high school] textbooks, semipopular articles [science journals and digests], and so on. Also, there is probably some wishful thinking involved [read, *delusion*]. In the years after Darwin, his advocates hoped to find predictable progressions. In general [read just, "But"], these have not been found—yet the optimism [read, 'faith'] has died hard, and some pure fantasy has crept into textbooks [at all levels] [*"Evolution and the Fossil Record"*, *Science* [the science journal], 1981, p.289].

But that was in the 80's; what's the word in this new century? Turns out, *neo-Darwinian*, 'tree-of-life', Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory is still 'dying hard', but its 'death knell' is now being 'sounded' by some of its surviving original supporters. For example, maybe you also remember Dr. Ernst Mayr, Professor Emeritus of Zoology at Harvard University, recipient of numerous honorary degrees and awards, and certainly one of the 20th Century's leading *evolutionary biologists*, whose work contributed significantly to Neo-Darwinian Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory. However in his book, *What Evolution Is*, published in 2001, he now at least 'generally' recognizes that,

A localized population... suddenly appear[s] on the scene and then continue[s] essentially unchanged until [it] become[s] extinct... The complete standstill or stasis of an evolutionary lineage for scores, if not hundreds of millions of years is very puzzling [*Basic Books*, 2001, p.63 and 195].

Puzzling? Not really. There was a 'universal flood', burying most all *lifeforms* in miles of *sediment* that shortly thereafter became *sedimentary rock*, and there were other cataclysms that added smaller *layers* on top, but all on a timescale of a few thousand as opposed to millions and billions of years. These 'adjustments' makes this a more reasonable observation.

Even more recently we have the perspective of Dr. Eugene V. Koonin, PhD in Molecular Biology from Moscow State University, presently Senior Investigator of the Evolutionary Genomics Research Group of the National Center for Biotechnology Information (NCBI), part of the National Library of Medicine (NLM) of the National Institutes of Health (NIH), Bethesda, Maryland. He weighs in on this 'misunderstanding' about the popular Theory of Evolution too. On his research group's website, he posts their general goals, stating,

We are interested in understanding the evolution of life. To obtain glimpses of such understanding, we employ existing and new methods

of computational biology to perform research...
[<http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/CBBresearch/Koonin/index.html>].

But as late as 2007, and like Dr. Mayr, he also recognizes,

Major transitions [or supposed 'new mutated species'] in biological evolution show the same pattern of sudden emergence of diverse forms at a new [and supposedly higher] level of complexity. The relationships between major groups within an emergent new class of biological entities are hard to decipher and do not seem to fit the tree pattern that, following Darwin's original proposal, remains the dominant description of biological evolution [*The Biological Big Bang model for the major transitions in evolution, Biology Direct, 2007, Vol.2, p.211*].

So yes, more and more 'scientists' are admitting that scenarios for *gradual evolution*, even within a given "class of biological entities", like *fish* or *mammals*, for examples, "are hard to decipher", let alone **imagine**, and they are acknowledging instead "Hopeful Monster" style, 'sudden big transitions' of *species*. So though 'popular Darwinism' is 'dying hard', the theory's 'critical condition' is now being acknowledged much more widely than it used to be.

Still even more recently, we have the 2012 statement of Dr. Stuart A. Newman who received his BA from Columbia University, and a PhD in *chemical physics* from the University of Chicago, where he worked with the *theoretical chemist* and 1999 National Medal of Science Award recipient, Dr. Stuart A. Rice. Dr. Newman was a postdoctoral fellow in the Department of Theoretical Biology, University of Chicago, and at the School of Biological Sciences, University of Sussex, UK. Before joining New York Medical College he was also an instructor in *anatomy* at the University of Pennsylvania, and an assistant professor of *biological sciences* at the State University of New York at Albany. In the journal, *Science*, he sums up the same 'misunderstanding' more succinctly, saying,

It is counterintuitive but revealing that the morphological motifs (form and structure) animals began with were carried over to the present, with few additions [*"Physico-Genetic Determinants in the Evolution of Development", Science, Oct. 2012, Vol.338, no.6104, p.217-219.*]

Counterintuitive? Again, not really. And here we have again, and very recently, a top *evolutionary scientist* telling us that Neo-Darwinism is not accounted for in the *fossil record*. What is counterintuitive? Or Puzzling? It is that still today, though well known by *evolutionists* for over half a century now, top *evolutionary scientists* find it noteworthy, and publishable, to report that there is really no clear evidence that any *species* ever evolved by *neo-Darwinian* means whatsoever. However it is 'counterintuitive' to those whose 'faith' is fixed **contrary to sound doctrine**. I mean those 'hell-bent' on denying the existence of God. However these 'puzzling' and 'counterintuitive' reactions also make clear that God has faithfully and abundantly revealed himself to those who have **received...the love of the truth through His Creation**.

So! If the original, turn-of-the-20th-Century Darwinism, otherwise known as Lamarckism, is out, or more specifically, if it is admitted that there is no such thing as 'isolated subsets' of a *species* by *environmental* and other conditions gradually evolving from 'lower level' to 'higher level' *species*, because this cannot be

accounted for in the *fossil record*, and if the mid-20th-Century Neo-Darwinism or Modern Evolutionary Synthesis is going out too, or more specifically, if it is being more and more admitted that there is no such thing as ‘progressively higher genetic micromutations’ and other ‘small genetic changes’, that along with *natural selection* and *survival of the fittest*, allow *species* to gradually evolve from ‘lower’ to ‘higher levels’, because again, this cannot be accounted for in the *fossil record* either, then how is *evolution* from supposed ‘lower level’ to ‘higher level’ *species* supposedly happening?! The newest ‘theory’, though it’s really older than Darwin’s, started gaining popularity in the later part of the 20th Century. It is now more popularly called “Punctuated Equilibrium” or “Punctuated Equilibria”.

And you should **understand** that many of the *evolutionary scientist* that are exposing the failure of Neo-Darwinism, some of them quoted above, are doing so because they believe in a different theory—namely Punctuated Equilibria or something similar too it. But I don’t want to over simplify the ‘theory’, which brings us back to self-proclaimed “evolutionist”, Dr. Niles Eldredge, who as you may remember, received his BA (or in his case an AB) from Columbia University, New York, graduating *summa cum laude* (‘with highest praise’—for the highest GPA), and received his PhD there in Geology. During his time at Columbia he also worked at the American Museum of Natural History in New York. So it was no coincidence that the same year he graduated, in 1969, he was asked to join the museum as Assistant Curator, Department of Invertebrates. In 1974, he became Associate Curator, Department of Invertebrate Paleontology, and in 1979, Curator, and has only recently retired. He was also Chairman of the museum from 1984-91. Dr. Eldredge is the Curator responsible for the content of the major exhibition named *Darwin* (<http://www.amnh.org/exhibitions/past-exhibitions/darwin>) which opened in New York in 2005. The exhibition traveled to Boston, Toronto and Chicago before going to the Natural History Museum in London in time to celebrate the 200th anniversary of Darwin’s birth in 2009. Dr. Eldredge’s book, *Darwin, Discovering the Tree of Life* (2005), accompanied the exhibition. He also headed the team of curators who arranged the Hall of Biodiversity at the museum. And He was an Adjunct Professor at the City University of New York. His specialty was the *evolution* of *mid-Paleozoic Phacopida*, “lens-faced” *trilobites*, those supposedly extinct, ‘multi-lensed’, ‘supercamera-eyed’ *arthropods* whose *fossils* are ‘loop-dated’—whenever reported—between about 550 to 250 million years old. But again, we will see they are really closer to a range of about 45 to 27 hundred years old. Drs. Eldredge and Stephen Jay Gould, who we will bio further shortly, proposed Punctuated Equilibrium Theory in a joint-authored paper in 1972. Drs. Eldredge and Gould developed the *theory* of Punctuated Equilibrium, which describes *evolutionary change* as ‘rapid’, ‘alternating’ with ‘long periods’ of *evolutionary stability*. And though Dr. Gould coined the term, the basic concept was first presented in Eldredge's doctoral dissertation on Devonian *trilobites* and in an article published the previous year on Allopatric Speciation. According to Dr. Gould, Punctuated Equilibrium revised a key component "in the central logic of Darwinian theory".

Also called Punctuated Equilibria, this *theory* is really a dramatic and, at least originally, controversial refinement to *evolutionary theory*. It describes patterns of *evolutionary ascent* taking place in "fits and starts" separated by long periods of *stability* or *stasis*. In other words, it gives a reason why Gradualism—*gradual evolution*—is not seen in the *fossil record*, and accepts that there is really no need for *transitional morphological motifs*—“missing links”—just ‘suddenly emerging’, ‘fully developed’, ‘higher-evolved’ *species*. To account for this, Dr. Eldredge, much like Charles Darwin and other *Lamarckismists*, is a proponent of the importance of *environment* in explaining the patterns of *evolution*, and he is therefore a critic of

the arguably 'more approved' opposing view, the *gene-centric view of evolution*, a view that attempts, also without real evidence, to salvage some semblance of Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory.

And I mean that there is naturally a lot of 'wishy-washiness'—and playing both sides—on both sides. Because whenever there is a serious difficulty with some aspect of the 'theory' on either side, a more acceptable explanation from the other side is fair game. But Punctuated Equilibrium Theory, when it holds its ground, proposes that the Geological Column 'records' long periods of *evolutionary stability* or *stasis*, which is 'punctuated' by 'rare', relatively 'brief', instances of *branching evolution*—where new, 'higher-evolved' *species* 'suddenly emerge'. This increasingly popular 'theory'—because it supposedly matches the *fossil record* better than others—is opposed to the long-held, arguably 'slowly dying theories' that instead expect to find evidence in the *fossil record* of Phyletic Gradualism, the still popular idea that *evolutionary change* is marked by a pattern of small and *gradual change* over time, which by now we know cannot be accounted for. But advocates of the "gene-centric", Modern Evolutionary Synthesis side are now saying that *genetic research* is revealing the *mechanisms* of *evolution* at the *genetic level*—whether 'sudden' or 'gradual'. But as sure as God created the Earth about 6,000 years ago in 6 days, they are **lying** about this too. And I mean just like it used to be with the *fossil record*, it is hoped that *genetic material* can show the processes or *mechanisms* of *evolution*. But so far, and despite the misrepresentation and outright **lies**—surprise!—*DNA* is not revealing any process of *evolution* either. Because remember, despite how 'scientists' are manipulating and crossing DNA in the laboratory—and thereby really only hastening the **end of the world**—God has decreed that He has limited *species variation*, even given the **wondrous** variety of it, to remain within each **kind**, as we see today. So 'God-created variation' will never lead to new *propagable species*, and even if we really did have millions or billions of years of trials. And attempts by 'scientists' to force this will be one of the reasons for...

...the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat [2Pe 3:12](#).

That's what it says in Genesis 1 and 2 Peter 3, and these are reports about our physical reality you can **believe** and **trust**.

Dr. Eldridge's most recent research is the development of an alternative to the idea of *DNA* or 'gene-driven' *evolution*, since he and Dr. Gould see not just 'periodically abrupt changes' in the *fossil record*, they also 'see' (read, **imagine**) a more 'organism-driven', as opposed to 'genetically driven', kind of "evolutionary psychology" to explain it. Dr. Eldredge has published more than 160 scientific articles, books, and reviews, including *Reinventing Darwin* (1995), an examination of current controversies in *evolutionary biology*, and *Dominion* (1997), an *evolutionist's* view of our *ecological* and *evolutionary* past, present, and future. In 1996, this pioneer of what I might call Modern Darwinian Theory, explains,

No wonder paleontologists shied away from evolution for so long. It seems never to happen. Assiduous [continuous and diligent] collecting up cliff faces yields zigzags, minor oscillations, and the very occasional slight accumulation of change over millions of years, at a rate too slow to really account for all the prodigious change that has occurred in evolutionary history. When we do see the introduction of evolutionary

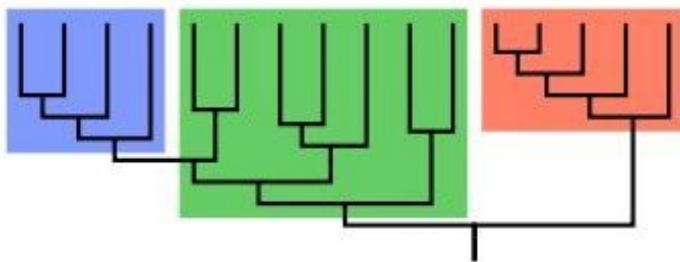
novelty, it usually [read always] shows up with a bang, and often with no firm evidence that the organisms did not evolve elsewhere!

Evolution cannot forever be going on someplace else. Yet that's how the fossil record has struck many a forlorn paleontologist looking to learn something about evolution [*Reinventing Darwin: The Great Evolutionary Debate*, 1996, p.95].

In other words, Dr. Eldridge is saying that popular Neo-Darwinian Evolution remains unseen in the *fossil record* anywhere. And this is part of the foundation of his **so-called** 'theory'.

His colleague and co-pioneer of this Modern Darwinian Theory, Dr. Stephen Jay Gould, a *paleontologist, evolutionary biologist* and *historian of science*, was also one of the most influential and widely read writers of 'popular science' of his generation. Dr. Gould spent most of his career teaching at Harvard University and working at the American Museum of Natural History in New York. In the later years of his life, Dr. Gould also taught *biology* and *evolution* at New York University. Dr. Gould's arguably most significant contribution to *evolutionary biology* was the 'theory' of Punctuated Equilibrium, though he called himself only a "sounding board" for Dr. Niles in it's original development. He could however be considered the theory's 'bulldog', and a foremost participant in its 'evolution' up to his death in 2002.

And before we go on, let's consider Punctuated Equilibrium a little further, as well as where some of that 'wiggleroom' for 'wishy-washiness' can be found, because this 'theory', in some aspects, is really older than Darwin's, though it has gone through some 'evolutions' of its own. So again, generally, Punctuated Equilibria is a *theory* which proposes that most *species* naturally exhibit little *evolutionary change* for most of their *geological history*, remaining for an extended period in a state called *stasis*. When significant *evolutionary change* somehow occurs, the *theory* proposes that it is generally restricted to 'rare' and relatively



'rapid' events of **branching speciation** called **cladogenesis**, diagramed in the "cladogram" on p.280. *Cladogenesis* is the term for the imagined *evolutionary* 'splitting event' in a *species* in which each branch, by a process of *adaptation* to 'fitting' *environmental conditions*, along with *natural selection*, forms additional "clades", which are new and

sometimes 'higher' *species*. Such 'events' are expected to occur when a minority part of a *species* becomes detached from the majority, and/or when *environmental changes*—can you say, cataclysm?—cause *extinctions*, except where new and different 'ecological niches' are stumbled upon by survivors. An example *evolutionists* use today is the Hawaiian Islands where it is supposed that stray *organisms* traveled across the ocean via *currents* and *winds*, because there many of the *species* indigenous to the islands are not found anywhere else on Earth, and this is thought to be the result of this kind of 'environmentally enforced' *evolutionary divergence*. Of course this is a nice 'fairy tale', and other *evolutionists* use this same phenomenon to suggest other imagined modes of *speciation*. Still there is some truth to it. There were plenty of **great judgments** in The Ages of Creation to 'separate' and 'isolate' *species*, but of course, though these 'events' caused by God surely 'selected better-adaptable *species*' and even 'selected better-adaptable variations', these cataclysms of God, according to Him, did not lead to any 'evolution' of *new species*.

Now we should be clear that Punctuated Equilibria's abrupt *branching speciation*

by *cladogenesis* is the opposing theory to Phyletic Gradualism's slow *phyletic speciation* by *anagenesis*, also known simply as "phyletic change". This much slower, formerly virtually unrivalled 'theory' blindly maintains that the *evolution of species* involves an entire population rather than a subset "branching event". It proposes that when enough stable *micromutations* have gradually occurred within a *population* so that it is then significantly differentiated from an *ancestral population*, *anagenesis* has occurred, or a new *species* has arisen. And at such a point the entire *population* is different from the *ancestral population*, meaning that the *ancestral population* has become *extinct*. A series of such *species*, developing from one to another, is collectively known as an *evolutionary lineage*. And of course they 'lived happily ever after'.

And to be even clearer, *cladogenesis* is the process by which a *species* splits into two distinct species, rather than one *species* 'gradually transforming' into another, which means Punctuated Equilibrium is an opposing *theory* of Phyletic Gradualism, which proposes instead that *anagenesis* generally occurs uniformly and by the steady and *gradual genetic transformation* of whole *lineages*, and of course it's diagrammed with a more 'normal-looking tree'. But no, and though they qualify with words like "generally" just to make it sound better, many *paleontologists* openly admit that 'gradually changing' *evolutionary lineages* are not seen in the *fossil record*. Really just 'suddenly emerging' *species* are, which is the real reason for the rise in popularity of Punctuated Equilibria. Of course they all really 'suddenly emerged' during Creation Week, huh.

And by the way, probably the most prominent 'scientist' who opened the door for the consideration of Punctuated Equilibria was not really originally a supporter of it. I'm talking about Dr. Ernst Mayr. Drs. Eldredge and Gould landmark paper introducing this 'theory' was based on their own research, but also built upon Dr. Mayr's *theory of allopatric speciation*, otherwise known as *geographic speciation* from his 1954 paper, "*Change of genetic environment and evolution*," (In Julian Huxley, et al., Allen and Unwin, 1954, p.157-180), and further established in his classic volume, *Animal Species and Evolution*, (Harvard University Press, 1963).

Drs. Eldredge and Gould's *theory* was also built on Dr. I. Michael Lerner's 'theories' of *developmental* and *genetic homeostasis*. Dr. Lerner, by-the-way, received his Ph.D. in *genetics* from the University of California, Berkeley, becoming a Professor in the Department of Genetics there in 1958. In their original paper Drs. Eldredge and Gould proposed that the degree of 'gradualism' commonly attributed to popular Darwinism is virtually nonexistent in the *fossil record*, and that *equilibrium* or *stasis* dominates the history of most *fossil species*, which implies virtually all *species* must 'suddenly emerge', and evidently quickly enough as not to leave any *fossil evidence* of it. Dr. Eldredge put it this way.

But it is the pattern that interests us most here. And if the fossil record tells us anything about evolutionary pattern, it is that some episodes of diversification can happen so rapidly that no detailed, stratified record showing the gradual development from primitive to advanced is ever formed (*The Monkey Business: A Scientist Looks at Creationism*, 1982, p.47).

And it was when Drs. Eldredge and Gould published their paper in 1972, that Dr. Mayr's 'theory' of *allopatric* or *geographic speciation*, introduced in his 1954 paper, was considered the "standard" *theory of speciation*. *Allopatric speciation* is a 'Neverland' where it is 'imagined' that most everywhere and most of the time *species* with 'large central populations' are 'stabilized' by their large volume and by

the process of *gene flow*, also known as *gene migration*, where there is 'free transfer' of *genes* from one *population* to another. In such a 'land' it is assumed that new and even *beneficial mutations* are diluted by the *population's* large size and are unable to fully *evolve* or reach *fixation*, and where even such things as the changing *environment* become a prohibiting factor. If this part of the 'fairy tale' were true, then it is expected that the 'transform-ation' of whole *lineages* should be rare at best, which appears to match the *fossil record*.

However there is another possible destination in this 'Neverland' where smaller *populations* become 'isolated' from their 'parental stock', and are separated from the *homogenizing* effects of *gene flow*, and therefore become better able to 'fix' *genetic change*. Also, in such conditions you only have to 'believe' that the pressure from *natural selection* plays a stronger role, since 'detached' and 'inaccessible' *populations* might tend to exist in 'extreme environmental conditions', and sometimes even at the extremes of *ecological tolerance*. And so all we have to do is 'believe' that if most *evolution* happens in these rare instances of *allopatric speciation*, it is nonetheless common enough to have been the *mechanism* that brought about the multitude of *species*, both *extinct* and *extant*, known today, and that this is the reason that 'evidence' of 'gradual evolution' in the *fossil record* is 'rare at best'. Again, this 'hypothesis' was actually originally suggested by Dr. Mayr in the closing paragraph of his 1954 paper (p.179). And this conclusion surely opened the way for a 'revival' of the concept of a more 'rapid process' of *speciation*.

And I say 'revival' because Dr. Mayr was certainly not the first to propose this general idea. Quantum Evolution was a controversial *theory* previously advanced by prominent Columbia University *paleontologist* Dr. George Gaylord Simpson, who was regarded by Dr. Gould as "the greatest and most biologically astute paleontologist of the twentieth century" (*Punctuated equilibrium*, Harvard University Press, 2007, p.26). Dr. Simpson proposed, based on the *fossil* 'evidence' of the 'Geologic Column', that on very rare occasions *evolution* would proceed very rapidly to form entirely new *families, orders, and classes* of *organisms* (*Tempo and Mode in Evolution*, Columbia University Press, 1944, p.206). However this *mode of speciation* differs from Punctuated Equilibrium in several ways. For one thing, Punctuated Equilibrium is much more limited in scope, in that it addresses *evolution* specifically at the *species level*, while Dr. Simpson's proposal is more widely concerned with the *evolution of groups of species*. Also, Drs. Eldredge and Gould relied upon a different *mechanism*, namely *cladogenesis* or *branching speciation*, where Dr. Simpson 'imagined' multiple elements interacting with *genetic drift*—the 'variable generation' of *genes*—and with a "shift" in *reproductive "fitness"*, otherwise known as a *variation* in the *adaptive or fitness landscape* (*The Major Features of Evolution*, Columbia University Press, 1953, p.390). And you should **understand** that, again, there is some **truth** to this idea too. I mean *variations* must not just be initiated by cataclysms. Remember the Patriarch Jacob caused them with a few 'shaved' and 'unshaven' branches.

But Drs. Eldredge and Gould preferred, at least early on, something that was closer to the then more "standard" *mode of speciation*, specifically, Dr. Mayr's concept of *allopatric* or *geographic speciation*—or 'extinction/isolation/changed-environment' *speciation*. And perhaps most significant, Quantum Evolution mostly overlooks the issue of *stasis*. And though in *Tempo and Mode in Evolution* Dr. Simpson acknowledged the existence of *stasis* as what he called *bradytely* or the *bradytelic mode*, Simpson considered this—along with 'rapid change' which he termed *tachytely* or the *tachytelic mode*—to be unimportant in the larger scope of *evolution* compared to 'gradual change', which he named *horotely* or *horotelic mode*. However Dr. Simpson's 'modes' are not so much about the processes that

produce *evolutionary change*, while Punctuated Equilibrium is.

In *Major Features of Evolution*, Dr. Simpson stated that gradual...

Evolutionary change is so nearly the universal rule that a state of motion is, figuratively, normal in evolving populations. The state of rest [or *stasis*], as in bradytely, is the exception and it seems that some restraint or force must be required to maintain it.

And he meant that 'continuous gradual evolution' is "nearly the universal rule" and that "rest" or *stasis* is 'rare', being more difficult to sustain because it would require some kind of extra, unusual "restraint" and/or "force"—by 'environmental conditions', for example—to "maintain it".

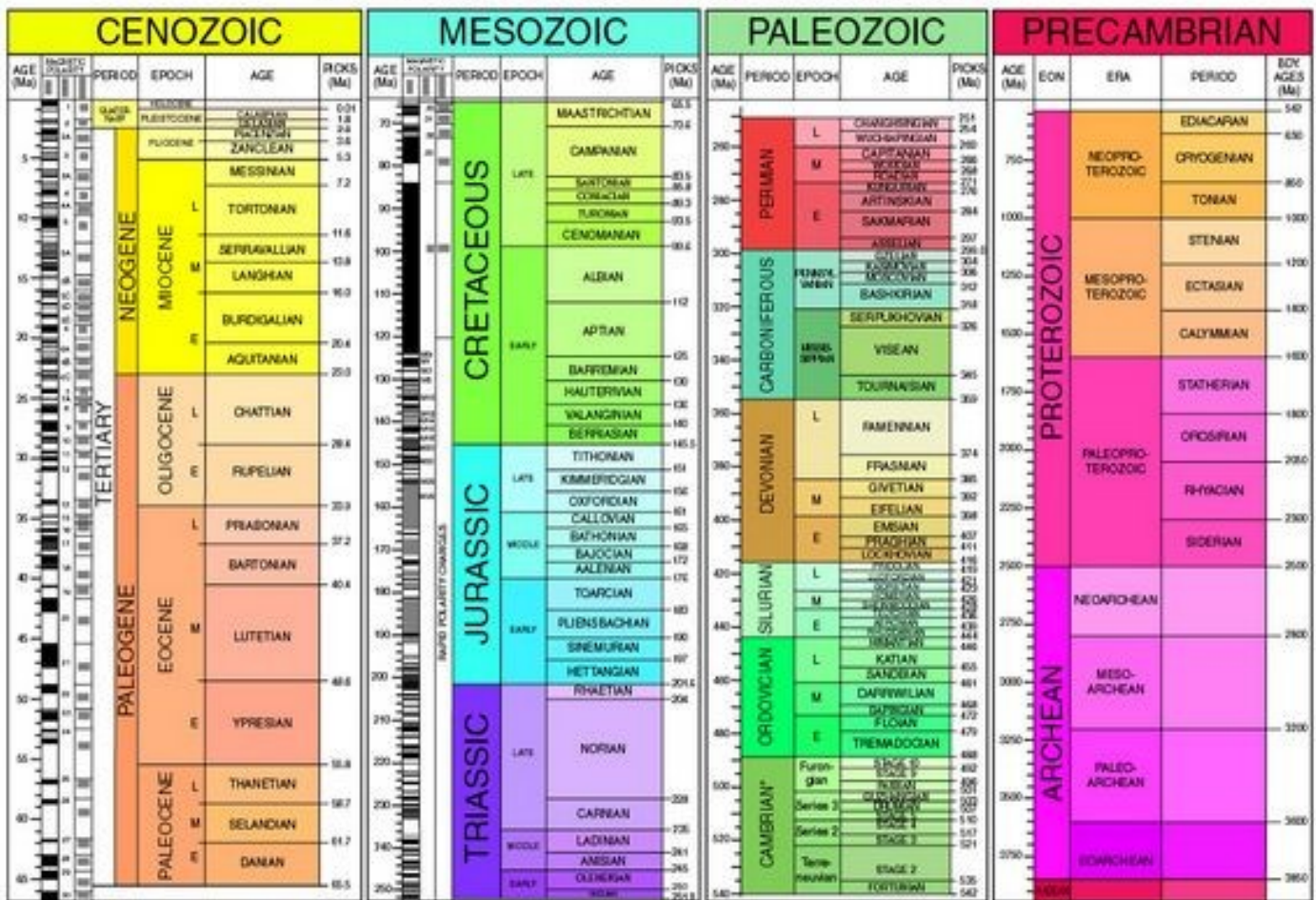
So the main differences between Quantum Evolution and Punctuated Equilibrium could be simplified this way. One 'theory'—using an entirely 'imaginary' *fossil record*—sees 'gradual evolutionary change' as the universal rule and the primary *mode of speciation*, where both *stasis* and 'rapid evolutionary change' are possible but 'extreme' and 'rare', while the other—with a better, but by no means completely realistic view of the *fossil record*—sees 'rapid evolutionary change' as 'extreme' and 'rare' enough to make *stasis* appear to be the universal rule, but that 'rapid change' is nonetheless common enough to be the primary *mode of speciation*, with 'gradual change' being the 'rare' exception. But despite such differences between these two *modes of speciation*, some critiques—including at one point Dr. Simpson himself—have claimed that Punctuated Equilibrium is little more than Quantum Evolution 'reabeled' (*Tempo and Mode in Evolution*, reprint, Columbia University Press, 1984). And in a sense these 'differing' *evolutionists* are really on the same side. However, and though this is an oversimplification, most *paleontologists* are *naturalists* who see *evolution* driven predominately by *environment*, as opposed to *genetics*. And you could also say they are closer to *Darwinists* than *neo-Darwinists*, while *geneticists* commonly discount the *naturalistic philosophies* preferred by *paleontologists*, and identify themselves more commonly as *neo-Darwinists*.

Leaders and 'bulldogs' of this opposing view, the Neo-Darwinist *gene-centric* view, include Dr. John Maynard Smith, FRS, *theoretical evolutionary biologist* and *geneticist*, Professor of Zoology at University College London, 1952 to 65, where he directed the *Drosophila* lab and conducted research on *population genetics*. Again, *Drosophila* is the *genus* name for *fruit flies*, and these 'short-life-cycle' *insects* were used to bamboozle the World into believing that their 'laboratory induced' *mutations*—that were never 'good' or 'useful'—were nonetheless 'evidence' of *evolution by mutation* and *natural selection*, when really, as made clear in Genesis, they could only offer further evidence that *species* can only successfully *reproduce after their kind*.

In 1962 Dr. Smith was one of the founding members of the University of Sussex, became Professor Emeritus, and was Dean from 1965 to 85. Prior to his death in 2004 the building housing much of the Life Sciences Department at the University of Sussex was renamed the John Maynard Smith Building. He published a popular Penguin book, *The Theory of Evolution*, in 1958, with later editions in 1966, 75 and 93. And Dr. Maynard Smith, being a *geneticist*, 'naturally' discounted Punctuated Equilibrium, seeing it as nothing new, and saying, like Dr. Simpson, that it only modifies Neo-Darwinism with pre-established concepts (*Paleontology at the high table, Nature*, 1984, Vol.309, no.5967, p.401-02).

Another leader of this opposing side is *evolutionary biologist* and outspoken *atheist* Dr. Richard Dawkins, Professor for Public Understanding of Science, University of Oxford, 1995 to 2008, a distinguished lecturer including at the Royal Institution in 1991, a vice president of the British Humanist Association (making him a 'card-carrying' *atheist*), and well known critic of *creationism* and *intelligent design*. Dr. Dawkins is the author of the 1976 treatise, *The Selfish Gene*, where Selfish Gene Theory, another name for Gene-centric Theory, was popularized. But about Punctuated Equilibrium, again 'naturally', he could only bring himself to concede that it was "of great interest to biology" (*The Extended Phenotype*, Oxford University Press, 1999, p.101). So he evidently knows he can't use the *fossil record*—not without misrepresentation—to defend against Punctuated Equilibria. Worse than that, he must also know he can't use *genetic research*—again, without

2009 GEOLOGIC TIME SCALE



*International ages have not been fully established. These are current names as reported by the International Commission on Stratigraphy. Walker, J.D., and Gassman, J.W., compilers, 2009, Geologic Time Scale: Geological Society of America, doi:10.1130/2009.CT9504R2C. ©2009 The Geological Society of America. Sources for nomenclature and ages are primarily from: Furr, S., Preto, N., Rigo, M., Rogh, G., Gianola, P., Crowley, J.L., and Downing, S.A., 2006, High-precision U-Pb zircon ages from the Triassic of Italy: Implications for the Triassic time scale and the Carnian origin of calcareous nanoplankton and dinosaurs. *Geology*, v. 34, p. 1009-1012, doi:10.1130/G2297A.1; and Kent, D.V., and Olsen, P.E., 2008, Early Jurassic magnetite and paleolatitudes from the Hartford continental rift basin (eastern North America): Testing for polarity bias and abrupt polar wander in association with the central Atlantic magmatic province. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, v. 113, B06105, doi:10.1029/2007JB005407.

misrepresentation—to support Gene-centric Theory either.

So surely there was formidable opposition, or ‘posturing’, that Drs. Eldridge and Gould, and others on their side, were compelled to ‘grapple’ with, and ‘posture back’ against. However, as *paleontologists* and *naturalists* they have command of the best, real, somewhat actually supporting evidence, which is their research of the **imaginary Geological** (or **Geologic**) **Column** (graph, p.283). And I mean that though their perspective of it is not completely realistic, nor entirely honestly represented, it at least acknowledges the reality that most all *groups* of *species* seem to appear ‘suddenly’, while opposing *geneticists* more often, dishonestly, neglect to acknowledge this, though some *paleontologist* remain negligent about this too. And this is Punctuated Equilibrium’s advantage. And surely the study of *genetics* is only ultimately at a disadvantage, because it can really only show—without misrepresentation—that *species* will only *propagate after their kind*. So **fraud** and **lies** encouraged and/or enforced by **flattering lips, bribery, extortion, oppression, murder**, etc., and all only because of **vanity, pride** and **lust**, is the **only so-called** ‘science’ that can make it appear otherwise. But what I mean by that *Punctuated Equilibriumists* do not entirely honestly represent the *fossil record* is that we can’t forget that there’s really no such thing, at least in the terms that they represent it.

Remember Drs. Bliss, Parker and Gish of the Institute of Creation Research explained...

You cannot go out and see the geologic column because it does not exist anywhere. All real rock layers include gaps [“missing layers”], from the perfect sequence... If the entire geological column were

found in one place, it would be as much as 210 kilometers [130 miles] deep. Actually sedimentary rocks in any one place are never more than about 19-24 miles deep [p.204].

THE GEOLOGIC COLUMN		Millions of Years Ago	Typical fossils
Eras	Periods		
CENOZOIC	QUATERNARY	2	
	TERTIARY	65	
MESOZOIC	CRETACEOUS	130	
	JURASSIC	180	
	TRIASSIC	225	
PALAEOZOIC	PERMIAN	275	
	CARBONIFEROUS	345	
	DEVONIAN	405	
	SILURIAN	435	
	ORDOVICIAN	480	
	CAMBRIAN	600	
	PRE-CAMBRIAN		

So again, the best place to find the Geologic Column, now more commonly called the Geologic Time Scale, altogether, is, yes, in the imagination. Nowadays, *geologists* try to obscure the absurdity of this representation by further complicating it. See the 2009 Geological Society of America’s version on **page 283**, and you’ll start to see what I mean. Their chart separates the ‘column’ into 4 parts which are meant to stack upon each other into one column. And there is ongoing dissection or combining of the *eras*, *periods* and *epochs* from what they used to be. For example, there are many new *period*, *sub-period* and *epoch* names within the Tertiary Period, and the Pennsylvanian and Mississippian Periods have been combined into the Carboniferous Period, and their names

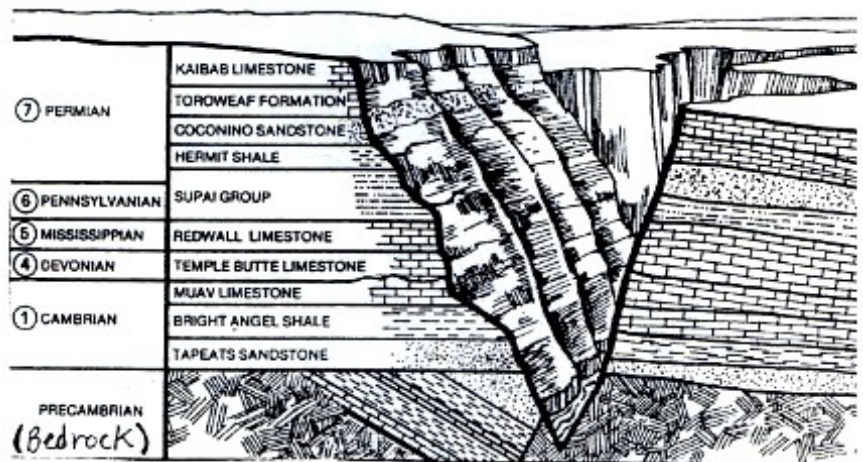
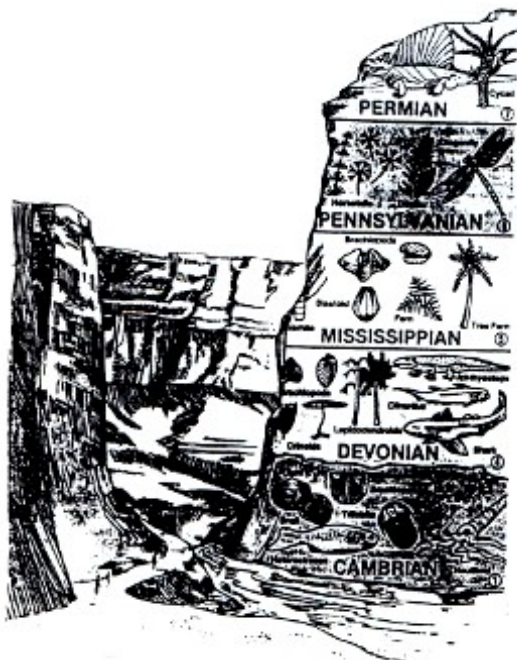
have been demoted to *epoch* names within this *period*. And the timescale has also changed a little over time, mostly likely so the *evolutionists* who adjust it can call earlier, simpler charts 'outdated', because such adjustments are really as absurd as the Geological Time Scale itself.

Comparing the Geological Society's chart to **an older, simpler chart made by a creationist** (p.284), it's easier to see what the more complicated one is trying to represent, or misrepresent, that is. But for example, if you can read the fine print, (I had to 'zoom in' to do so), the Cretaceous Period and the beginning of the Mesozoic Era are now charted to have begun about 145 million years ago instead of 130 million years ago, the Permian Period of the Paleozoic Era is marked to start nearly 300 million years ago instead of the former 275, but the end of the Pre-Cambrian (now just Precambrian) Era, now divided into 2 *periods*, the Archaen and Proterozoic, and the start of the Cambrian Period at the beginning of Paleozoic Era, where the time-scale changes to being measured in 5 million instead of 50 million year increments, is now designated about 540 instead of 600 million years ago, and evidently, *laid* in a *reducing* or *oxidizing atmosphere* (with little *free oxygen* and lots of *greenhouse gases* to keep the planet *warm* enough in the *light* of a supposedly much 'dimmer' Sun), the first *life* 'sparking' into existence in the "primordial soup", which is 'bowled' in the Precambrian (read, Genesis) *rock*, about 3850 million years ago (3 billion, 850 million). However many other 'transitions' remain at or close to where they always were.

Parenthetically, the fine print gives credit to the International Commission on Stratigraphy, also Cambridge University Press, and credit to those who made the new changes to the former Tertiary Period.

But another 'problem' is that *geologists* nowadays are finding evidence of more *free oxygen* represented in these *lower strata* than there is today—evidenced by abundant amounts of *rust*, for example. In other words, back when the Sun must have been 'fainter', there doesn't appear to have been enough available *warming greenhouse gases* thought to be necessary to produce the 'first life' as popularly 'imagined'. And this seems to support the idea that we may really be just a 'computer simulation' run by 'superior beings' who nonetheless write unrealistic and contradictory 'bad-science' programming. Or maybe instead, I don't know, God **created** and 'programmed' a Universe far beyond imagination, let alone replication, and all less than just 6,000 years ago. And maybe, in **SECTION 4** actually, we'll find the reason for all that extra *free oxygen* recorded by rust and other means in the so-called Cambrian *rock* and other *lower strata*.

The Grand Canyon is a gaping, visible example why the Geological Time Scale is imaginary. But it is nonetheless one of the best places in the World to see transitions of the supposed *geological periods* in *sedimentary rock*. Its mile-deep walls make it a favorite spot for *paleontologists*, because *fossils* can be dug out of the wall from the top to almost the bottom. And you won't find *fossils* at the bottom—except *microscopic* ones—because the river bed at the bottom cuts through *bedrock*, or the Precambrian Period *rock*, which is the *rock* under *sedimentary rock*, which, again, some *creationists* call “Genesis rock”. And remember it's the *rock* filled with a multitude of the relative quickly made *polonium halos*, spherical ‘marks’ made only in *solid rock*, proving the *rock* must have ‘originated’ as *solid*, and could not instead have *cooled* from *molten* into *solid* over time, or there wouldn't be any *halos*, and because the *polonium* could not have ‘entered’ the *rock* after it was *solid*, so it had to there in the *solid rock* from **the beginning**, becoming destabilized, and that is, *radioactive*, by The Curse. The *sedimentary rock* on top of it, usually, as we will see, is *layered* and looks ‘striped’ from the exposed side views inside the Grand Canyon. This kind of *rock* tends to cover the whole Earth, down to the Genesis rock. And it's in the top *layers* that *evolutionists* say ‘caveman’ remains may be found, *dinosaurs* in the middle layers, and in the bottom layers near the *bedrock*, the ‘oldest’ *lifeforms*, such as *fish*. But at the **Grand Canyon** over half of the *geological periods* are missing, and there are “gaps” or “missing layer” that should be in between the ones that are there, but are not, as seen in the diagrams on **page 285**. And the *layer* on top, designated the Permian Period, supposedly ended over 250 million years ago. How could it be there if nothing is above it? Can you hear the crickets chirping? And though these *layers* of *sedimentary rock* represent approaching half of the column—if you include the gaps between the ones that are there—it's only a little over a mile of the supposedly 130 miles necessary to represent it all. And of course none of this make any sense, and this alone shows there is no real representation to be made with any *layer* of *sedimentary rock*, let alone with the ‘millions-of-years timescale’ that supposedly corresponds to it. And *evolutionists* aren't really working to provide explanations for these ‘irresolvable inconsistencies’. They are either **deceived** by blindly accepting without any serious investigation, or ignoring what they know is bogus and hoping no one else notices, and sometimes, if simply ignoring is insufficient, they also actively **bribe, oppress, use extortion, and/or otherwise persecute**, yes, even **murder**, ‘whistle-blowers’, knowing that **evil doing** is the only thing they can



really **do** to defend their **lies**, and thereby continue ‘unbridled’ in their **vanity**, **pride** and **lust**.

And in the later sections we will not only see that there are a lot of “missing” and “out of order” *strata*, but also abundant ‘out-of-place’ *fossils* in virtually all *strata*, including ones way too ‘evolved’ and ‘complex’ that are way too near the bottom. And I mean it is also ‘imaginary’ that you can only find certain kinds of *fossils* in their ‘prescribed’ *layers*, as we will see.

But let’s do a little math for an even better perspective of how ridiculous the concept of the Geological Time Scale is. And we’ll just be ball-parking, arguably oversimplifying, but *evolutionists* do this all the time when they think it supports their ‘theory’. So while were stuck in their ‘imaginary playground’, let’s assume, like most *evolutionists*, that this ‘imaginary’ *strata* was ‘laid’ in a ‘uniform’ manner—as most of them do—where it took about the same amount of time to lay each foot and mile. And let’s ‘throw them a bone’ and say there might be ‘someplace’ where the *sedimentary rock* rises a 100 miles above the Genesis rock. According to the Geological Society of America, the Genesis rock—to them “Precambrian rock”—began to be buried about 540 million years ago. 540 million years divided by 100 miles of *strata* equals 5.4 million years/mile. In other words, it should average about 5.4 million years to lay each mile of the Geologic Column. How long for every foot? 5.4 million years/mile divided by 5,280 feet/mile equals 1022.7 years/foot. So it should take a little over 1,000 years to lay each foot. And how about every inch? Dividing again by 12 inches/foot reveals that it should average over 85 years to lay each inch. Now think about it. Maybe there are some *fossils* that are only an inch high that could take that long to be buried and still reveal perfect form, like some *shellfish*, but not any ‘soft-bodied’, or even ‘scaly’ *species* could, let alone any *fossil* a foot high that would need over a thousand years to be buried. And such full-form *fossils* are very common. Yes, meaning they must have been buried much more quickly. Incidentally, using 130 miles of *strata* would require an average of over 786 years to bury something a foot in height, and over 65 to bury something an inch high, if that much *strata* really existed anywhere. Conservatively then, and either way, this is ridiculous. Less conservatively, this is plainly part of a ‘satanic conspiracy’, as nothing so ridiculous could be so widely accepted, let alone be considered ‘science’, otherwise.

But let’s get back to the battle between Punctuated Equilibria and “selfish genes”, as silly as it now must seem, because if you’re someone who has been **deceived** to ‘believe’ that the ‘Geologic Column’ is real, or are willing to cover it up, Gene-centric Theory can sound reasonable enough—that the main *mechanisms* of *evolutionary change* over millions of years involve “selfish genes”, who somehow fight for themselves and their *host organisms*, and are the real ‘champions’ of ‘increasing complexity’. And given such pervasive **delusion**, aided by ‘authoritative’ **lies**, it sounds no less reasonable that rare ‘environmental perfect storms’, with or without a little help from Gaia, are the actual contenders in this upward *evolutionary* struggle, and that such circumstance, however rare, will eventually lead to ‘godhood’. But again, *gradualists* on both sides, whether *naturalists* and *paleontologists* like Drs. Simpson, or “selfish-gene” *geneticists* like Drs. Smith and Dawkins, share an additional formidable weakness in their ‘theories’ that Drs. Eldridge and Gould’s Punctuated Equilibrium Theory doesn’t so much. Because these “rapid” *evolutionists* ‘shine a light’ on the formidable weakness of *gradualist theories* when they proclaim,

At the higher level of evolutionary transition between basic morphological designs [or at all ‘levels’ really], gradualism has always

been in trouble, though it remains the "official" position of most Western evolutionists. Smooth intermediates between Baupläne [*groups of species*] are almost impossible to construct, even in thought experiments; there is certainly no evidence for them in the fossil record... (*Punctuated Equilibria: the Tempo and Mode of Evolution Reconsidered, Paleobiology*, no.3, 1977, p.147).

In fact, and as we will continue to confirm every step of the way, *evolutionists* have little other to rely upon than their 'imagination'. And the more convincing argument here is that *evolutionists* need to stick to 'imaginable theories' that can at least find some real support in the *fossil record*, and reject ones that are entirely 'unsupportable', let alone 'unimaginable'. And by-the-way, and again, remember that 'transitions' within *species* is really just 'God-designed' *variation*, and never a *mechanism* to 'evolve' to 'higher levels', or any other 'level' for that matter.

Also by-the-way, notice the title of this 1977 book—containing this statement exposing Gradualism as non-existent—is a direct, 'chest-poke' at Dr. Simpson's 1941 foundational treatise that helped maintain the dominance of Gradualism, along with further support by Dr. Mayr and others, throughout the second half of the 20th Century, though late in the century Dr. Mayr moved away from Gradualism and closer to Punctuated Equilibrium. But there was also a split of sorts when *geneticists* such as Drs. Smith, Dawkins and others try to gain control of the 'debate' by emphasizing that the leading *mechanisms of evolutionary change* involve "selfish genes" and not as much 'environmental circumstances' as maintained by Drs. Simpson, Mayr, Eldridge and Gould, though most acknowledge both *mechanisms* participate to some degree in whatever their 'imaginary processes' may be. Notice also Dr. Gould got first billing in the book above, and he is today often confused as Punctuated Equilibrium's primary founder. But this is obviously because he was the better writer, and arguably the better 'bulldog' for the 'theory'.

And Dr. Gould was famous for his writing. He became popular through his 300 essays in the magazine *Natural History*, which through the 25 years he contributed, was a publication of the American Museum of Natural History. And he built his popularity among the general public, if not among fellow scientists, by his many books written for a 'non-specialist' audience. In April 2000, the US Library of Congress named him a "Living Legend". So clearly he was Punctuated Equilibrium's 'top bulldog', but you should see by now that this is really just a euphemism for 'chief of propaganda'.

He began his higher education at Antioch College. Founded in 1850, the college's first president for most of its first decade was Horace Mann, the original 'bulldog' for universal public education. And for most of the college's first half century it was riddled with debt and closures evidently because of the difficulty of obtaining financial support due to the 'sectarian bent' (read, **ungodliness**) of its board. Nearly a century after its founding it became the original home of student activism, and the inspiration for the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU), yes, another 'bulldog' for *atheism*, and has only recently recovered from another closure from 2008–2011. Horace Mann is commemorated by a statue on campus. Stephen graduated from Antioch with a double major in *geology* and *philosophy* in 1963. During this time, he also studied at the University of Leeds in the U.K. He completed his graduate work at Columbia University in 1967 under the guidance of Dr. Norman Newell, Professor of Geology, and Chairman and Curator of Invertebrate Paleontology at the American Museum of Natural History.

Dr. Newell was a member of the National Academy of Sciences, the American Association

for the Advancement of Science, and the American Philosophical Society, another society that, since its founding with nobler goals by Benjamin Franklin and John Bartram in 1743, and like Antioch, and the “Ivy League” schools, has become a ‘haven’ and ‘citadel’ for *evolutionists* and *atheists* of every ‘specialization’. Dr. Newell demonstrated this **corruption** of **mind** and **soul** in his book, *On Creation and Evolution*, in which his purpose is to criticize the arguments of *creationists*. In 1961 Dr. Newell was awarded the Mary Clark Thompson Medal—Mrs. Thompson being a late 19th and early 20th Christian *philanthropist*—whose good name has been usurped by the National Academy of Sciences since her death to be ‘dragged through the mud’ to honor *evolutionists* and *atheist*. And of course Dr. Newell was a member of the National Academy of Sciences, a major American ‘propaganda controller’ and ‘bastion’ for the Theory of Evolution. Dr. Newell’s numerous awards include accolades from Yale University, (one of those **corrupted** Ivy League schools), the American Geological Institute, (the chief American ‘geological propagandists’ for the Theory of Evolution), and the American Museum of Natural History, (the leading American ‘visual arts propagandists’ for this **corrupt** ‘theory’). I guess it’s here that I’m finally emphasizing that from the Royal Society, and all the ‘authoritative scientific societies’ in England, to the National Academy of Sciences, and all the ‘authoritative scientific societies’ in the U.S., there are really no longer any prominent legitimate scientific authority in operation, just ‘societies’ for maintaining ‘propaganda’ for the **corrupt** ‘cult’ that is the Theory of Evolution.

About his **so-called** mentor Dr. Newell, Dr. Gould confessed,

The work of graduate students is part of a mentor's reputation forever, because we trace intellectual lineages in this manner. I was Norman Newell's student, and everything that I ever do, as long as I live, will be read as his legacy [*Wonderful Life*. New York, W. W. Norton & Company, 1989, p.140].

Dr. Niles Eldridge was also one of his students.

By-the-way, an important part of Dr. Newell’s research was the study of *mass extinctions*, and he was published on this topic well before the Alvarez Hypothesis made this theory respectable. This ‘hypothesis’ imagines that the *mass extinction* of the *dinosaurs* and many other living things was caused by the *impact* of a large *asteroid* on the Earth about 65 million years ago. It’s now called the **Cretaceous-Paleogene Extinction Event** (‘graphic rendering’ on p.288). Evidence indicates that the *asteroid* fell in the Yucatan Peninsula, at Chicxulub, Mexico. The hypothesis is named after the father-and-son team of scientists Luis and Walter Alvarez, who first suggested it in 1980. In



March 2010 an international panel of ‘scientists’—forced by the evidence and too much visibility—endorsed this ‘asteroid hypothesis’, specifically the Chicxulub *impact*, as being the cause of the *extinction*. A team of 41 scientists reviewed 20 years of ‘scientific literature’ and in so doing also ruled out other ‘theories’ such as *massive volcanism*. They determined that a 10 to 15 km (6 to 9 mi.) *space rock* hurled into Earth, maybe the size of the Martian moon Deimos, (averaging about 12.4 km or a little over 6½ miles in diameter). The *collision* would have released *energy* in the ballpark of 100 *teratonnes* (10,000 trillion kilograms or over 3500 trillion pounds) of TNT, generating 420 *zettajoules*, (a billion trillion *joules* = **HOT!**), over a billion times the *energy* released by the *atomic bombs* dropped on Hiroshima

and Nagasaki. And this evidence for the 'rebirth' of Theories of Catastrophism, and the scaling back of Gradualism, or Uniformitarianism, is more or less real, and more just the 'timescale' that isn't. It wasn't 65 million years ago. It was really about 3500 years ago, as we will overwhelmingly confirm as we specifically identify the cataclysms that are the past **great judgments** of God, which, by-the-way, since we **know** He says concerning His **judgments** that, **I change not** [Mal 3:5-6](#), this will also reveal to some extent what His future ones will be like too.

After completing his graduate work, Dr. Gould was immediately hired by Harvard University

where he worked until the end of his life in 2002. In 1973, Harvard promoted him to Professor of Geology and Curator of Invertebrate Paleontology at their Museum of Comparative Zoology. In 1982 Harvard awarded him the title of Alexander Agassiz Professor of Zoology. And this, by-the-way, is ironic, because we will come to greatly prefer the prolific geological work of Alexander's father, cited by Dr. Velikovsky, in later sections. The following year Dr. Gould was awarded fellowship of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, where he later served as president from 1999-2001. Also a news release from AAAS, (an acronym I am completely fine with), praised his "numerous contributions to both scientific progress, (read, 'evolutionary propaganda'), and the public understanding, (read, 'bamboozling', 'hoodwinking', 'hornswoggling', etc.) of science". He also served as president of the Paleontological Society from 1985 to 86, and of the Society for the Study of Evolution from 1990-91. In 1989 Gould was elected into the National Academy of Sciences. And again, all these American 'scientific organizations' have become fully **corrupt** 'perverters' of 'scientific truth', and really just models of the ones on the 'other side of the pond' who were their examples to follow.

From 1996 to 2002 Dr. Gould was Vincent Astor Visiting Research Professor of Biology at New York University. Vincent Astor, by-the-way, was the original 'Richie Rich' *philanthropist*, who at age 20 inherited all his father millions when he went down on the Titanic. In 2001, the American Humanist Association named Dr. Gould the "Humanist of the Year" for his lifetime of work. In 2008, 6 years after his death, one of those 'across the pond', major 'propaganda controllers' and 'bastions' for the Theory of Evolution, the Linnean Society of London, awarded Dr. Gould the Darwin-Wallace Medal. This medal is unambiguously awarded for "major advances in evolutionary biology". And it's rather a special honor because it was originally intended to be awarded only once every 50 years, beginning in 1908, 50 years after the joint presentation of Charles Darwin and Alfred Russel Wallace of the new Theory of Evolution in London on July 1, 1858. Alfred Russel Wallace, in case you're interested, is kind of like Dr. Eldridge is to Dr. Gould. He is the man who first conceived the *theory of evolution* through *natural selection*, but evidently wasn't quite as good at 'bulldogging', or attracting 'bulldogs', as his associate. However, in 2008 12 others besides Dr. Gould received the award, and the society announced that due to the continuing importance of *evolutionary research*, the medal would be awarded on an annual basis beginning in 2010. In other words, we've reach an era where 'continuous propaganda' is more important than any individual 'scientist contribution' to the 'cause'—the 'cause' being to maintain 'plausible acceptability' of the Theory of Evolution, which evidently requires more 'distraction' than it used to.

Another tidbit about Dr. Gould is that when an *anti-evolution* statement and petition was released in 2001 by the Discovery Institute, a *fundamentalist, conservative, intelligent design*, Christian 'think-tank', based in Seattle, Washington, titled, *A Scientific Dissent From Darwinism*, the National Center for Science Education was provoked to regurgitate a *pro-evolution* counterpart, naming it

Project Steve in Dr. Gould's honor. And this is no surprise since Dr. Gould devoted considerable time to fighting against *creationism*, *creation science*, and *intelligent design*. Most notably, Gould provided "expert testimony" against the State of Arkansas, and that is, against their 'equal-time creationism law', which provided 'equal time' to teach both *creationism* and *evolution*, the case being named *McLean v. Arkansas*. Of course the judge ruled that "creation science is religion and is simply not science", and we all lost.

Dr. Gould later developed the term "non-overlapping magisteria [or *kingdoms*]", or NOMA, to describe how, in his view, 'science' and 'religion' could not comment on each other's realm. (NOMA, when hereafter referred to, will be re-acronymed COMA, which unavoidably but appropriately expresses the 'brain-dead' implications of the concept, while specifically abbreviating, 'con-overlapping magisteria'—imperfect double pun using the prefix "con" intended.)

And the point is that Mr. Gould's COMA concept allows 'propaganda' to be espoused by *evolutionists* but calls real evidence that supports the Bible 'out of bounds'. And this prime example of 'bamboozling', 'hoodwinking' and 'hornswoggling' was developed by Dr. Gould in great detail—kind of like how 'tricksters' supposedly 'prove' that $1 = 2$. This 'unbalanced malarkey' is found predominantly in his books, *Rocks of Ages* (1999), and in *The Hedgehog, the Fox, and the Magister's Pox* (2003). In a 1982 essay for *Natural History* Dr. Gould wrote:

Our failure to discern a universal good does not record any lack of insight or ingenuity, but merely demonstrates that nature contains no moral messages framed in human terms. Morality is a subject for philosophers, theologians, students of the humanities, indeed for all thinking people. The answers will not be read passively from nature; they do not, and cannot, arise from the data of science. The factual state of the world does not teach us how we, with our powers for good and evil, should alter or preserve it in the most ethical manner [*"Nonmoral Nature"*, *Natural History*, Feb. 1982, Vol.91, p.19-26].

Yeah, he apparently doesn't **know** God at all. And you would guess that at the time he wrote this the '**iron**' had long gone cold that had '**seared**' his **conscience**. But contrary to Dr. Gould's COMA statement, we have already distinguished many of the **wondrous works** of our **infinite, omnipotent** God through His **creation**. We have **seen** them in the apparent 'infiniteness', 'unending complexity', and 'impossibly razor-thin balance' involving a wide array of *objects* and *forces* throughout the Universe. We have **understood** them by the 'quickly produced' *polonium halo* 'markings' in Genesis rock that **prove** the *rock* must have been formed 'instantaneously' and not by *cooling* from *liquid* to *solid* over many millions of years, and really only a few thousand years ago. We have come to **understand** that we are **sustained**—as opposed to **destroyed**—by the **perfect**, though relatively 'short-lasting' *strength* of Earth's *magnetic field*, which is 'just right' to protect our *atmosphere*, stabilize our *weather*, and produce *lightning* at a level that adds the appropriate amount of *nitrogen* to the *soil* needed for *plantlife*. And we **marvel** how we are **fearfully and wonderfully made** as we discover 'unending complexities' inside *unicellular organisms*, and also about the 'indeterminable intricacy' of *construction* and *forces* at the *atomic level* that conclusively **reveal** that it is **by him all things consist**.

And Dr. Gould was a proud *Darwinist*, but his emphasis was much less *gradualistic* and *reductionistic* than most Neo-Darwinists. He fiercely opposed many aspects of *sociobiology*, and its intellectual descendant, *evolutionary psychology*. To understand what I mean by this I'll need to explain a few more terms.

You should know by now what Gradualism is. And we've talked about Reductionism before too. Generally it's the philosophical position—yes, a 'faith' really—which holds that a *complex system*, or *organism*, is nothing more than the sum of its parts, and that an account of it—or the *evolution* of it—can be *reduced* to an understanding of the *laws of physics* and *chemistry* that account for its individual parts. This 'belief' works better for *gradualists* and *geneticists*, and is of little use to *punctuated equilibriumists*.

Sociobiology is a field of study based on the assumption that *social behavior* is a result of *evolution*, including the fantasy that 'parts' of behavior have developed through *evolutionary mechanisms*. *Evolutionary psychology* is connected to this idea in that it is an approach in the *social* and *natural sciences* that examines *psychological traits* such as *memory*, *perception*, and *language* from a *modern evolutionary perspective*. It seeks to identify which *human psychological traits* are *evolved adaptations*—that is, ones that are the 'functional products' of *natural selection* or *sexual selection*. And such 'piecemeal' *evolutionists* are also called *adaptationists*, who contemplate the 'imaginary' *physiological mechanisms* (read, 'mind games') that get the credit for *evolving organs* and *biological systems*. *Evolutionary psychologists*, who apply the same thinking to *human psychology*—and this is getting nauseatingly common—add further **corruption** to the already entirely **corrupt** field of *psychology*, as much as that is possible—arguing that the *mind* has a "modular structure" similar to that of the *body*, with different *modular adaptations* serving different 'functions'. In other words, *evolutionary psychologists* treat their patients as if much of *human behavior* is the result of *psychological adaptations* that *evolved* to solve recurring problems in their *environments*. Yeah, the authors of Greek mythology have nothing on these guys, as we will see. And as this *adaptationist* approach is steadily increasing as an influence in the general field of *psychology*, there are indeed a lot of 'toes' here for Dr. Gould, et al., to 'step on'.

A related field to such 'mythology' is that of *sexual selection*. It is a type of *natural selection* accomplished not as much through the "survival of the fittest" as through *reproductive success* in which some individuals "out-reproduce" others in a *population* because they are better at securing *mates*. In 1858, Darwin described *sexual selection* as an important process driving *species evolution* and as a significant element of his Theory of Natural Selection. But this concept was really little more than named in his 1859, 'foundation-of-sand' *theory*. However, about the *sexual form of selection* he said,

This depends, not on a struggle for existence, but on a struggle between the males for possession of the females; the result is not death to the unsuccessful competitor, but few or no offspring. ...when the males and females of any animal have the same general habits... but differ in structure, colour, or ornament, such differences have been mainly caused by sexual selection [*On the Origin of Species*, 1st ed., 1859, Ch.4, p.88, 89].

Darwin's *sexual selection* examples, some still accepted today, include ornate *peacock feathers*, *bird of paradise plants* (*Strelitzia*, photo p.291), the *antlers of stags*, and the *manes* of



lions. And of course today, and even though this ‘theory’ is largely rejected by the *evolutionary sciences*, the field of *human psychology* is fully involved with this ‘orgy of thought’.

And a subset or derivative of *sexual selection* that has survived, and that is worth a ‘wry smile and a shake of the head’, is the Sexy Son Hypothesis of *evolutionary biology*. It was first proposed by *neo-Darwinist, eugenicist* and opponent of *saltationism*, including of Dr. Goldschmidt’s Hopeful Monster Theory, Sir Dr. Ronald Fisher, FRS, in 1930. The *theory* proposes that “a female animal’s optimal choice among potential mates is one whose genes will produce male offspring with the best chance of reproductive success”. In particular, this implies that a potential capacity of a *mate* as a “caregiver”—or any other direct benefits the *male* can offer the *female* (e.g. gifts, good territory, etc.)—are “irrelevant to his value as the potential father of the female’s offspring”, and what instead “matters” are her “sexy sons” and their “future breeding successes”—like that of their “promiscuous father”—in “creating large numbers of offspring carrying copies of the female’s genes”. And still today it is “female mating preferences” that “are widely recognized as being responsible for the rapid and divergent evolution of male secondary sexual traits”. And yeah, this is where the idea that *women* are attracted to ‘bad boys’ comes from too. However this ‘attraction’ has a more obvious cause. The Apostle John tells us that it is the result of...

...all that is in the world, [and more specifically an effect of] *the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life...* [1Jo 2:16](#).

By the way, Sir Dr. Ronald Aylmer Fisher, FRS, was a mid-20th Century English *statistician, evolutionary biologist, geneticist, and eugenicist* (did you look that one up yet?) Sir Ronald is known as one of the chief architects of Neo-Darwinian Synthesis, for his important contributions to the field of *statistics*, and for being one of the three principal founders of *population genetics*. Dr. Richard Dawkins called him “the greatest biologist since Darwin”. He was therefore a natural and prominent opponent of Dr. Goldschmidt’s Hopeful Monster Theory, as much as Dr. Dawkins is to Dr. Gould’s way of thinking.

In 1976, in his controversial but also celebrated book, *The Selfish Gene*, Dr. Dawkins elaborated,

In a society where males compete with each other to be chosen as he-men by females, one of the best things a mother can do for her genes is to make a son who will turn out in his turn to be an attractive he-man. If she can ensure that her son is one of the fortunate few males who wins most of the copulations in the society when he grows up, she will have an enormous number of grandchildren. The result of this is that one of the most desirable qualities a male can have in the eyes of a female is, quite simply, sexual attractiveness itself [*The Selfish Gene, 30th Anniversary Edition*, Oxford University Press, 1976, 2nd ed., 1989, 2006].

Again, the idea is that if *females* choose ‘physically attractive’ *males*, they will tend to get ‘physically attractive sons’, and therefore more grandchildren, because choosy *females* will prefer their attractive, “sexy sons”. But really this is just another of the World’s false rationales designed to legitimize our ‘*sin nature*’, isn’t it.

But we can also see in the above *philosophies* and *sciences*, and in this aspect of

Sexual Speciation Theory, that *evolutionists* focus on 'God-designed' *variation*, pretending that it leads to the *evolution* of "higher" and "more complex" *species*. And indeed 'God-designed' *variation* is **fearfully and wonderfully** and **marvellously** expressed throughout His Creation. Remember again how Jacob artificially employed a 'mechanism' to cause 'God-designed' *variation*. And at least Dr. Gould has 'played down' this 'evolutionary fantasy', acknowledging that such 'piecemeal variation' seldom—though really never—fosters 'ascent', seeing only 'big', 'sudden', 'abracadabra-like' whole *organism* 'jumps of ascent' in the *fossil record*, 'jumps' that are too 'rapidly appearing' to show *transitional forms*, acknowledging that there is no real support for any kind of Gradualistic Reductionism.

But with all this 'back-and-forth-toe-stomping', and though Dr. Gould received many accolades for his work and writings about *natural history*, he was not immune to criticism by *biologists*, but especially *geneticists*, who felt his public presentations were 'out of step' with the longstanding 'synthesized' *evolutionary theory*. The public debates between Gould's supporters and detractors have been so 'bad-tempered' that they have been dubbed "The Darwin Wars" by several commentators. Prominent opponents to Dr. Gould have included Drs. Mayr, Smith, Dawkins, and many others. And of course arguments among the **worldly** naturally get 'childish'—**foolishness** having never been 'beaten out of them', and therefore still strongly **bound in** their **hearts** [Pro 22:15](#). For example, some critics jokingly branded Punctuated Equilibrium as "evolution by jerks", which provoked Dr. Gould to label Gradualism as "evolution by creeps".

Dr. Smith, eminent British *evolutionary biologist* and *geneticist*, naturally sympathetic to 'theories' of Sociobiology and Evolutionary Psychology, and who was among Gould's strongest critics, thought that Dr. Gould misjudged the vital role of *adaptation* in *biology*, and was critical of Gould's acceptance of *species selection*—or *macroevolution*—as a major component of *biological evolution*. Reviewing prominent *atheist*, Dr. Daniel Dennett's book, *Darwin's Dangerous Idea*, Dr. Smith wrote that Dr. Gould...

...is giving non-biologists a largely false picture of the state of evolutionary theory ["*Did Darwin Get It Right?*", *The London Review of Books*, March 11, 1981, p.10-11; also reprinted in *Did Darwin Get it Right?*, Chapman and Hall, 1989, p.148-156].

Dr. Dennett, by-the-way, is Professor of Philosophy and a University Professor at Tufts University. He is easily identified as another 'fool professing himself to be wise' as he is a member of the Secular Coalition for America advisory board, and supporter of the Brights Movement—"bright", again, being the new preferred euphemism for *atheist*. And the irony is as powerful as how serious such *atheists* are about denying God. Dr. Dennett is evidently among the top 4 'most serious atheists', as he has been dubbed one of the "Four Horsemen of New Atheism". The other three are: Dr. Richard Dawkins, author of *The God Delusion* (2006); Dr. Sam Harris, who dropped out of Stanford in the late 80's to experiment with the drug "ecstasy", then went India, staying till the late 90's, to study Buddhism, finally coming back to Stanford to finish a BA in Philosophy, and a doctorate in Cognitive Neuroscience from UCLA, also author of *The End of Faith: Religion, Terror, and the Future of Reason* (2004), and of *Letter to a Christian Nation* (2006); and our fourth 'horsemen', Christopher Hitchens, recently deceased, was an editor and self-professed Marxist, a noted critic of religion, but more specifically an *antitheist*, explaining that a person "could be an atheist and wish that belief in god were

correct", but that "an antitheist, a term I'm trying to get into circulation, is someone who is relieved that there's no evidence for such an assertion" (Andre Mayer, *"Nothing sacred – Journalist and provocateur Christopher Hitchens picks a fight with God"*, May 14, 2007), and who is also the author of, *God is not Great: How Religion Poisons Everything* (2007). Mr. Hitchens, by the way, died in 2011 from complications arising from *esophageal cancer*, a *disease* that he acknowledged was more than likely due to his lifelong predilection for heavy smoking and drinking (Lucy Popescu, *"Mortality, by Christopher Hitchens"*, *The Independent*, April 30, 2012). Of course these "predilections" were more than likely due to his **reprobate mind** and **desolate** condition. Indeed, for such God says,

Therefore also will I make thee sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of thy sins [Mic 6:13](#).

But back to the things all these *atheists* don't agree on. It remains controversial among *biologists*, with all the 'toe-stomping', whether "selection" can operate at and above the level of *species*. Dr. Gould proposed the view that there exist *macroevolutionary processes* which shape *evolution* that are not driven by the *microevolutionary mechanisms*, *micromutations* being the basis of Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory. Dr. Gould instead views *species* as entities that *replicate* or *speciate* and eventually go *extinct*, but that in this process they could be subject to *selection* and thus could occasionally and suddenly change their occurrence over *geological time*, again, much like 'God-designed' *variation* works over generations. But for *evolution* to be driven by *species selection*, successful *macromutations* must be the result of *selection* of properties intrinsic to a *species*, rather than the result of properties of *genes*, *cells*, *individuals*, or *populations* within *species*. However the evidence for both *micro* and *macroevolution* is non-existent really. In the case of supposed 'gradual' *micromutation*, there aren't really any of the required multitudes of *transitional forms* found in the *fossil record*. And in the case of 'species-selected' *macromutation* it is acknowledged that it must happen too rapidly to be 'visible' in the *fossil record*. Of course each side points more vocally at the others lack of *fossil* 'evidence' to distract from their own lack of it.

But Dr. Smith has not been consistently negative against Dr. Gould, writing in a review of Dr. Gould's, *The Panda's Thumb*, that,

Stephen Gould is the best writer of popular science now active...

Often he infuriates me, but I hope he will go right on writing essays like these [*"Genes, Memes, & Minds"*, *The New York Review of Books*, no.42, Nov. 30, 1995, p.46-48].

Dr. Smith was also among those who, at least generally, welcomed Dr. Gould's 'reinvigoration' of *evolutionary paleontology*.

And though Dr. Gould also strongly disagreed with his fellow Harvard Professor Dr. Dawkins about the importance of *gene selection* in *evolution*—Dr. Dawkins arguing that *evolution* is best understood as competition among *genes*, while Dr. Gould emphasizing the prominence of 'rapid', 'big-jump' *species selection*—Dr. Gould nonetheless acknowledged the importance of 'multi-level' *selection*, including most all other 'theories' of *selection* including of *genes*, *cell lineages*, *organisms*, *demes* ('segregated population' *selection*), though his preference for the most dominant remained *clades* ('branching' *selection*). So really what we have here is a game of 'king of the hill'. All these prominent 'scientist' tend to willingly

acknowledge the less significant and less applicable *theories* of their opponents, as long as it is understood that theirs is the most significant driving force of *evolution*. Of course striving to be 'king of the hill' has nothing to do with science really. It's just part of the irresistible **carnal** expression of **the pride of life**.

Dr. Dawkins also charged Dr. Gould with deliberately playing down the difference between 'rapid' Gradualism and *macromutation* in his Theory of Punctuated Equilibrium. Specifically, he charged that he was not clear whether 'rapid' meant in a single generation or 'too few to be visible'. So at least Dr. Dawkins believed Dr. Gould deserved some of the alleged 'misunderstanding' about his 'theory' that he later complained about, as we will further examine shortly. Criticism of Dr. Gould and his Theory of Punctuated Equilibrium can be found in Dr. Dawkins' books, *The Blind Watchmaker* and *Unweaving the Rainbow*, and in Dr. Dennett's book, [*Darwin's Dangerous Idea*](#).

But I'd say Dr. Gould won the debate in his time. And that his theory will probably increase in popularity till Jesus comes again. Why? Like in The Theory of Sexual Selection, where 'whoever produces the most offspring wins', Dr. Gould's legacy, which I might call his 'sexy sons', were birthed through his generations-long, masterful 'propaganda crusade', between 1965 and 2000, including 479 peer-reviewed papers, 22 books, and 101 "major" book reviews—many of them for 'non-specialists' who don't have 'sensitive toes' to be 'trodden upon', just imaginations to inspire. And he published 300 essays, most of those also with the added benefit that they could appeal to those usually more interested in fantastic science fiction entertainment, and even if possessing shorter attention spans. And with prowess he wielded this 'mighty sword'—I mean his figurative pen—both for his followers and against his foes in order to advance his 'make-believe crusade'. His enemies were therefore helpless before him as he impregnated popular thought with his '**corrupt seed**'. So I expect that the growing popularity of Punctuated Equilibrium—though likely eventually with a name change—is inevitable, being so prolifically 'inseminated' into the last couple of generations, making it most likely, by all its 'sexy sons', to be the 'fittest to survive'. After all, the more they dig into our *genes*, or anywhere else, the more Punctuated Equilibria, however mysterious (read, unknowable) its 'mechanisms', remains the *theory* that is the most 'intact'. Of course all these unaccountable 'big jumps' between *species* really just show that, **In the beginning God created** them all to *reproduce only after their kind*, and that is, about 6,000 years ago. However there is a lot more to the story beyond the first couple of chapters of Genesis, and it is a **wondrous, marvelous, glorious, fearful, great** and **terrible** story that it is the purpose of this **study** to unfold.

But next let's consider these 'big jumps' of *evolution* in *evolutionary terms* a little further. Dr. Gould plainly introduced his and Dr. Eldridge's 'new theory' as the revival of an old and unpopular one through one of those 300 essays originally published in *Natural History* magazine entitled, "The Return of Hopeful Monsters," (Vol. 86, 1977, p.22-30). And it was about time. I mean it had long become irritating to *evolutionists*—most all of which were *gradualists* when Dr. Gould came along—that there are only fully distinct *species*—all having apparently no clearly direct connections to other *species*—not to mention that some of the supposed oldest ones, because their *fossils* are found in the lowest *levels*, are still alive and unchanged today, and all this only providing 'evidence' of supposed 'big gaps' of 'development' between them all, both *morphological* and *genetic*. Dr. Gould introduced his 'theory' in the first paragraph of his 1977 essay, connecting it to the old, unpopular 'theory' with the following analogy and prediction:

Big Brother, the tyrant of George Orwell's *1984*, directed his daily Two Minutes Hate against Emmanuel Goldstein, the enemy of the people. When I studied evolutionary biology in graduate school during the mid-1960s, official rebuke and derision focused upon Richard Goldschmidt, a famous geneticist who, we were told, had gone astray. Although 1984 creeps up on us, I trust that the world will not be in Big Brother's grip by then. I do, however, predict that during this decade Goldschmidt will be largely vindicated in the world of evolutionary biology (p.22).

But has Dr. Goldschmidt been “largely vindicated”, as predicted by Dr. Gould, or not? Well, he has to a certain extent. But Dr. Gould evidently meant, or eventually meant, that he expects us to read an awful lot into the word “largely”. To understand all this ‘reading-in’ it would help to know what Dr. Goldschmidt’s ‘theory’ is, now more commonly called Saltationism, Saltational Evolution, or Saltation Theory.

Dr. Richard Benedict Goldschmidt, German-born, but finally becoming an [American](#) geneticist, originally studied *anatomy* and *zoology* in Germany at the University of Heidelberg, received his PhD at the University of Munich, and during the beginning of his significant and influential work in the field of *genetics* became head of the *genetics* section of the newly founded Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Biology. Being Jewish he was forced to leave Germany in 1935, where he became a professor at the University of California, Berkeley. He is considered the first to integrate *genetics*, *development*, and *evolution*, and the work he started with the *nervous system* of *nematodes* (a type of *worm*), along with the eventual growing acceptance of aspects of his controversial ‘theories’, ultimately led to a Nobel Prize in 2002 for *scientists* who were building on his work.

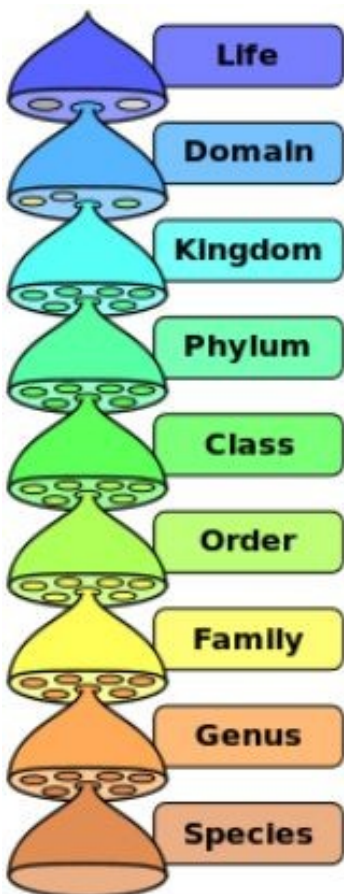
Dr. Goldschmidt was the first *scientist* to use the term “hopeful monster”. He thought that small gradual changes could not bridge the hypothetical divide between *microevolution* and

macroevolution. In his 1940 book, *The Material Basis of Evolution*, he wrote,

...the change from species to species is not a change involving more and more additional atomistic changes, but a complete change of the primary pattern or reaction system into a new one, which afterwards may again produce intraspecific variation by micromutation.

So Dr. Goldschmidt did believe in the ‘gradual accumulation’ of small *mutations* or *micromutation*, but he thought that the primary *mechanism* of *evolutionary change* was ‘single-generation’, ‘large’ *mutation* or *macromutation*. But Dr. Goldschmidt’s Hopeful Monster Theory has been a very ‘slow warming theory’—which is pretty common really. Remember, for example, that Dr. Jan Oort proposed the idea of *dark matter* half a century before it finally caught on. But Dr. Goldschmidt had an arguably bigger ‘tide’ against him to fight.

By-the-way, *saltation* or Saltational Evolution, comes from the Latin *saltus* meaning a “leap”, in this case a sudden change from one generation to the next. So the term is used for ‘non-gradual’



but especially for 'monstrous changes', particularly indicating 'single-generation' *speciation*, which is far too abrupt to reconcile with the 'micromutational speed' of Gradualism associated with the Neo-Darwinian Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory. Again, Saltation Theory requires much larger and faster changes than is expected by Gradualism, and therefore relegates *gradual micromutation* to a secondary role in the Theory of Evolution. So it has had more than a little trouble trying to become 'king' of this 'hill'.

Nevertheless, Dr Goldschmidt believed it possible, given the plainly 'sudden appearance' of all *classifications of life* in the *fossil record*, that one *species* could produce an *offspring* that was an entirely different *species*—even sometimes one that became the ancestor of a new and higher *genus*, or *family*, or *class*, or *phylum*, or *kingdom*—one that was a 'monster' to the *species* that *conceived* it, but also 'hopeful' because it was potentially the means of *evolution* toward 'higher complexity'. (See the chart of the *biological classifications of life* on p.295.) And it wasn't just Christians that attacked the *theory*, but also God-deniers such as Drs. Simpson and Mayr, because they were experiencing their 'micromutated toes' being 'stepped on'. They also 'squealed', along with Drs. Smith, Dawkins and others that Dr. Eldridge and Gould's 'macro-punctuations' were meant to occur in 'single-generation jumps', hoping to reveal the absurdity of this idea. And they evidently provoked a lot of 'reposturing' by Dr. Gould because of this (Mayr, *Growth of Biological Thought*. Harvard University Press, 1982, p.617; Maynard Smith, "The genetics of stasis and punctuations", *Annual Review of Genetics*, Vol.198317, p.12; Ruse, Michael, *Sociobiology, Sense or Nonsense?*, 1985, p.216. Also see Dawkins, *The Blind Watchmaker*, 1996, p.230-236; Dennett, *Darwin's Dangerous Idea*, 1996, p.288-289; and Gould, *Structure*, 2002, p.765,778,1001,1005,1009).

But in his introductory essay about Punctuated Equilibria, Dr. Gould argued that the recent discovery of *regulatory genes* offered new evidence which supported some of Dr. Goldschmidt's ideas. However Dr. Gould further argued that instances of "rapid evolution" neither undermined Darwinian Theory—as Dr. Goldschmidt also believed—nor conflicted with any *genetic* or *fossil* evidence presently available—as more and more Modern-Evolutionary-Synthesis *neo-Darwinists* were 'feeling the pressure' to admit (p.24,30). So he didn't want to exclude any of his colleagues. He apparently just wanted that 'primary spot' as 'king of the hill'. And the rise of such a 'theory' would necessarily send others 'tumbling down the hill'.

But more to the point, in his 'opening salvo', Dr. Gould also identified a component of Charles Darwin's 'theory' as arbitrary and invalid, namely, Gradualism—this feature originally popularized by Sir Charles Lyell—which in it's time, you may remember, was actually an 'anti-Catastrophism agenda' and strategy to avoid any further consideration of the overwhelming evidence for The Flood of Noah. This agenda and longtime component of the Theory of Evolution became known as Uniformitarianism, but is now becoming better known as Gradualism. But with Noah's Flood no longer prominent in the hearts and mind of the general population as it used to be, Dr. Gould confidently argued that Gradualism was never an 'essential' component to the Theory of Evolution. In fact, Thomas Huxley, the original 'bulldog' of the Darwin's 'theory', in a letter to Charles Darwin in 1859, objected to this 'gradualistic component' of Darwin's *theory* writing,

...you have loaded yourself with an unnecessary difficulty in adopting 'Natura non facit saltum' so unreservedly
[<http://www.darwinproject.ac.uk/entry-2544>].

Natura non facit saltum is Latin for "nature does not make jumps". Actually, this has been a principle of *natural philosophy* since Aristotle's time, maybe before. So evidently the 'agenda' and 'propaganda' to 'distract attention' from the inexhaustible evidence of Noah's Flood is not a new one. Still Thomas Huxley, evidently despite how it might encourage debate about The Flood of Noah, feared that this assumption unnecessarily upset *naturalists*, or *paleontologist*, who—back then—believed that past major cataclysms produced 'leaps of evolution' and played a significant role in the history of *life*.

But let's get back to Drs. Gould and Goldschmidt. Dr. Gould explained his "rate genes" defense of Dr. Goldschmidt in his essay, writing,

As a Darwinian, I wish to defend [Dr.] Goldschmidt's postulate that macroevolution [big jumps of evolution] is not simply microevolution [or gradualism] extrapolated, and that major structural transitions can occur rapidly without a smooth series of intermediate stages... In his infamous book of 1940, [Dr.] Goldschmidt specifically invokes rate genes as a potential maker of hopeful monsters: [He postulated,] "This basis is furnished by the existence of mutants producing monstrosities of the required type and the knowledge of embryonic determination, which permits a small rate change in early embryonic processes to produce a large effect embodying considerable parts of the organism." In my own, strongly biased opinion, the problem of reconciling evident discontinuity in macroevolution [or the lack of 'transitional forms' in the *fossil record*] with Darwinism is largely solved by the observation that small changes early in embryology accumulate through growth to yield profound differences among adults (p. 24,30).

Of course "profound differences", even in one generation, can be accounted for by 'God-designed' *variation*. So this is really just a 'con job'. He is knowingly and wrongfully representing that observable extremes of *variation* are examples of 'monstrous jumps' of *evolution*, and that such an imaginary event—where new *species* are born of existing ones—is the main *mechanism* of *evolutionary change*. Indeed if he was honest he would admit that there is really no evidence for this, just for comparatively 'monstrous' *variation within species*. Not to mention that, just like the *fossil record*, *genetic research* is not really bearing any of this out either. Despite their continuing 'bravado', maintained at best by 'misrepresentation', the mystery 'genetic mechanisms' that supposedly produce this kind of 'rapid evolution' are still eluding *evolutionists*, and encouraging—or pressuring—scientists like Dr. Gould to focus more on the 'environmental causes' than on the 'imagined' *physiological* or *genetic* ones.

And again, this is no more than 'sleight of hand', 'smoke and mirrors'—a 'shell game'. And yes, you should **see** that this 'pressured environment' not only opens the door for *creationists* to cry that all *species* are distinct, each being **fearfully and wonderfully made** by God, but it also shines a **light** on the abundant evidence for the 'catastrophic circumstances' that supposedly foster both 'sudden extinction' and the supposedly following 'rapid evolution', which is dangerously close to bringing attention to The Flood of Noah, not to mention some of the other Great and Terrible Judgments of The Ages of Creation. I mean you should be beginning to see that the reason Darwin and Lyell insisted on Gradualism was to remove from the discussion the everywhere evident evidence of The Flood of Noah.

However since there is much less belief in literal interpretations of **scripture** in the Church than when Darwin and Lyell conspired, the tables are turning, again.

But Dr. Gould was finally clear that he does not accept Saltation Theory—‘Single Generation Speciation Theory’—even though he stated in 1977 that,

The fossil record with its abrupt transitions offers no support for gradual change, and the principle of natural selection does not require it — selection can operate rapidly [*“The Return of Hopeful Monsters”, Natural History, 1977, Vol. 86, p.22*].

So no wonder there was ‘confusion’, and plainly some of the responsibility for it resided with Dr. Gould, since the title of his 1977 book seems to entirely embrace Dr. Goldschmidt’s theory. But he eventually disclaims,

...Although there exist some debate over how long the punctuations last, supporters of punctuated equilibrium generally place the figure between 50,000 and 100,000 years [Ayala, "*The Structure of Evolutionary Theory*", *Theology and Science*, 2005, Vol.3, no.1, p.104].

Of course if you’re paying attention and keeping up, this implies Punctuated Equilibria happens within 1 to 2 feet in the Geologic Column. So *punctuated equilibriumists*, in order to avoid the charge of being *saltationist*, have chosen a *transitional period* intended to be ‘invisible’ in the *fossil record*, that is, in the imaginary Geologic Column, which actually isn’t. Nonetheless it is this somewhat less ‘rapid evolution’ of *species* that supposedly makes these ‘monstrous changes’ more believable—not to mention less accountable—as they occur in a timeframe that is supposedly just short of ‘visible’ in the non-existent Geologic Column, which allows *punctuated equilibriumists* to get all their ‘rapidly evolving geese in a row’. Honk. Pun absolutely intended. I mean remember the ‘make-believe’ Geologic Column was supposedly ‘laid’ over 100 miles deep in 540 million years. Using this more conservative figure and only 50,000 years to ‘punctuate’ a new *species*—since the deeper and longer figures would only make the picture even worse—if 540 million years ‘laid’ 100 miles, then 50,000 years should lay 50,000 yrs/540 million yrs x 100 miles, or close to 1/100th of a mile, which is near 2 feet, (50,000 yrs/540,000,000 yrs x 100 miles = .00923 miles; .00923 miles/ 5,280 ft/mi. = 1.75 ft or 21 inches).

But really they’re finding parts such as Tyrannosaurus Rex bones in two feet of *strata*—so why not any ‘rapidly transitioning species’, especially the smaller ones? Oh yeah, because God never **created** any. And we should remember also that this is exactly how they fabricate ‘evidence’ for ‘cave men’. They take isolated *bone fragments* of *apes* or *humans*—somehow found in this ‘invisible range’ of less than 2 feet of *strata*—and extrapolate, (read, ‘exhale nonsense’), that are supposedly from part *ape* and part ‘emerging’ *human* ‘creatures’, standardly distorting and misrepresenting the actual *fossils* and conditions in which they were found, of course. Quackery? By now the cause for hilarity is really not that hard to see, except it will mostly succeed by helping **wrestle** most of humanity into the Lake of Fire for **eternity**.

So though Dr. Gould’s original, though later identified ‘ambiguous’, Punctuated Equilibria Theory is often portrayed as opposing the concept of Gradualism, it is now nonetheless considered the most ‘rapid’ form of Gradualism. This is because he eventually became clear on his position that even though *evolutionary change* appears instantaneous between *geological sediments*—or *strata*—change is still

occurring 'incrementally' too, with no 'monstrous change' from one generation to the next. About this, Dr. Gould finally commented that,

Most of our paleontological colleagues missed this insight because they had not studied *evolutionary theory* and either did not know about allopatric speciation or had not considered its translation to geological time. Our evolutionary colleagues also failed to grasp the implication(s), primarily because they did not think at geological scales ["*Opus 200*", *Natural History*, Aug. 1991, Vol.100, p.12-18].

Yeah, he's calling his opposing "evolutionary colleagues" ignorant—unstudied in the Theory of Evolution and incapable of understanding the fundamental concepts of the "geological scales". Of course we've just seen how Dr. Gould doesn't really seem to understand them either. I mean again, if 2 feet of *strata* is sufficient to find *fossils* adequate to extrapolate the *morphological transitions* from *hominid* to *homo sapien*, then why is 2 feet not enough for producing evidence for such transitions of other 'creatures'. In fact, according to Dr. Gould, it could be nearer to 4 feet if the 'transitions' took the maximum prescribed 100,000 years instead of just the minimum 50,000 years. And aren't most *fossils* found within 2 feet of *strata* anyway. I mean, is this math and these concepts too difficult for him? Surely not. And may God have mercy on him for what the real problem was. I mean he died holding the position that 2 feet of strata is sufficient to show the *evolution* of 'ape-man' to Modern Man, but insufficient to show any other kind of *evolution*. Of course it probably wouldn't be that hard to find examples where he contradicts himself on this concept too.

And I'd like to say I've 'dug through this garbage' long enough. But there is more 'reposturing'—outright contradictions really—that you may not have noticed, as well as more to be exposed, including both **deception** and simple 'mind-changing' in order to 'retreat' to 'theories' not yet substantially enough disproven, if testable at all. This is common practice by *evolutionists* because you must **understand** that they 'believe'—but eventually just say they 'believe'—that the 'theory' they are presently supporting is undeniably 'true and established', until evidence against it starts to be overwhelming that it is not possibly true, but usually only when this evidence becomes no longer suppressible otherwise, or maybe because of a move 'uphill' by a 'would-be' new 'king of the hill', but surely in all cases it's because of all manner of **evil doing**, including the **devices** of Satan himself. And this is when another new or altered 'theory'—the more untested the better—becomes the new 'campground' till the next inevitable exposure and 're-encampment' is required, And an example of this is when Dr. Gould argued, of course I mean 'repostured', that Dr. Goldschmidt's Hopeful Monster Theory wasn't really correct, somehow finding room in a 1350 page book to squeeze in that,

The developmental theme of the 'hopeful monster' (despite its inappropriate name, virtually guaranteed to inspire ridicule and opposition), based on the important concept of 'rate genes,' came first in Goldschmidt's thought, and always occupied more of his attention and research. Unfortunately, he bound this interesting challenge from development, a partially valid concept that could have been incorporated into a Darwinian framework as an auxiliary hypothesis (and now has been accepted, to a large extent, if under

different names), to his truly oppositional and ultimately incorrect theory of systemic [or whole system] mutation, therefore winning anathema for his entire system. Goldschmidt may have acted as the architect of his own undoing, but much of his work should evoke sympathetic attention today [*The Structure of Evolutionary Theory*, Harvard University Press, 2002, p.68].

So Dr. Gould, the 'pied piper' that he was, really did change his tune about Dr. Goldschmidt, evidently to avoid losing too many of the 'mice' that followed him. Remember he originally not only agreed with Dr. Goldschmidt that "rate genes" had "potential" to make 'rapid evolution' possible, he also agreed, as Dr. Goldschmidt put it, that "a small rate change in early embryonic processes... could... produce a large effect, embodying considerable parts of the organism". However in the much more recent quote above Dr. Gould hid the connection to his earlier agreement by adopting a new name for it, namely, "systemic mutation". And he seemed to write the entire 'retraction' in code to distract from the fact that it is a 'retraction'. Again, all such 'subterfuge' is commonly used by *evolutionists*. And I requote Dr. Gould from 1977 here so you can more easily compare, and see how he tries to 'cover-up', and **deceive** us, hoping we will misunderstand that he has remained 'rock-solid' from the start. 'Swallowing his entire foot and lower leg', at least 'up to the knee', he originally wrote,

As a Darwinian, I wish to defend [Dr.] Goldschmidt's postulate that macroevolution [big jumps of evolution] is not simply microevolution [or gradualism] extrapolated, and that major structural transitions can occur rapidly without a smooth series of intermediate stages... In his infamous book of 1940, [Dr.] Goldschmidt specifically invokes rate genes as a potential maker of hopeful monsters: [He postulated,] "This basis is furnished by the existence of mutants producing monstrosities of the required type and the knowledge of embryonic determination, which permits a small rate change in early embryonic processes to produce a large effect embodying considerable parts of the organism." In my own, strongly biased opinion, the problem of reconciling evident discontinuity in macroevolution with Darwinism is largely solved by the observation that small changes early in embryology accumulate through growth to yield profound differences among adults (p.24,30).

So he sounds like he originally mostly agreed with Dr. Goldschmidt. Specifically, his late 'reposturing' tried to hide something from those of us not paying close enough attention to such 'encrypted scientist-ese shell games'. He finally concluded that he can still sell "rate genes" as a 'mechanism' for 'rapid evolution'—since, under new names, everybody was—but not 'single-generation' "*systemic mutation*" in the *embryo*. This is why Dr. Gould had to finally 'settle' on the position that 'rapid evolution' took 50 to 100 thousand years—long enough to avoid association with 'single-generation' *speciation* and be supposedly untraceable *genetically*, and short enough to maintain that such a 'rapid' transition would be, at least arguably, 'invisible' in the *fossil record*, you know, that 'record' that doesn't really exist.

So clearly this late position is more 'reposturing', though he is plainly speaking as if he never really was on Dr. Goldschmidt's side in the first place. It was in 1981, 4 years after Drs. Gould and Eldridge released their *theory*, that *creationists*—and some opposing *evolutionists*—evidently 'had them on the ropes'. Being 'pummeled', Dr. Gould 'fumed', and **lied**, writing that,

Since we proposed punctuated equilibria to explain trends, it is infuriating to be quoted again and again by creationists—whether through design or stupidity, I do not know— as admitting that the fossil record includes no transitional forms. Transitional forms are generally lacking at the species level, but they are abundant between larger groups... ["*Evolution as Fact and Theory*," *Discover*, May 1981, p.34-37.]

This is disingenuous because 'highly respected' *evolutionists* were really saying the same thing about "transitional forms". But he couldn't mean "between larger groups", but within them, or this makes no sense compared with early 'posturing' too—except that, of course, it's really only more 'subterfuge' anyway. I mean he seems to be saying the opposite in 1977 when he wrote,

At the higher level of evolutionary transition between basic morphological designs [larger groups], gradualism has always been in trouble, though it remains the "official" position of most Western evolutionists. Smooth intermediates between Baupläne [*groups of species*] are almost impossible to construct, even in thought experiments; there is certainly no evidence for them in the fossil record... ["*Punctuated Equilibrium: the Tempo and mode of Evolution Reconsidered*", *Paleobiology*, March 1977, p.147].

So what is it? He said in 1981 that 'transitions' are "lacking at the species level" but "abundant between larger groups". However in 1977 he is pretty clear—as this is a crucial point for launching his *theory*, that, "Smooth intermediates between Baupläne [*groups of species*] are almost impossible to construct, even in thought experiments". Uh-huh. You could call his 1981 statement a kind of delayed 'Freudian slip', I guess, except that he apparently disguised his earlier statement with more code. I'll call it a 'scientism term'. This term is Baupläne or Bauplan—it's German—meaning "the generalized structural body plan that characterizes a group of organisms". And of course this 'back and forth' reversal tactic is not unique to Dr. Gould, but nauseatingly common among *evolutionists* in general really.

But we can recognize another 'shell game' here, if we ignore the 'slip'—I mean the reversal. And I mean that he would never directly admit that there are no 'transitions within groups', at least anymore. This is because 'God-designed' *variation* is 'the only game in town'—with real evidence, that is. He's really forced to stick to the story that *species*, whether still alive today or only seen in *fossil* form, can be 'clumped together' in *groups* based on a number of selected *morphological features*, like *fish*, *amphibians*, *reptiles*, *birds* and *mammals*, and that this oftentimes arbitrary 'classification system' suggests 'evolutionary transitions'. Why do I call such 'classifications' arbitrary? Why do you think God **created** things like the 'reptile-bird' *archaeopteryx*, and the 'bird-amphibian-mammal' *duck-billed platypus* anyway? The point is that Dr. Gould will maintain that, for example, since different species of *birds* have *feathers* and *wings*, this is 'conclusive evidence' that they are related by *evolution*, but more specifically, that it is 'evidence' of 'transitional forms'. However maybe you remember that the 'scientism term' related to this concept of 'similar features' or 'traits' is *homology*. And maybe you can now see what else Dr. Gould and other *evolutionists* are misrepresenting here.

As knowledge of *genetics* increases, more and more ‘similar features’ and ‘traits’ are no longer thought to be *ancestral*, just *analogous*—meaning similar in shape and appearance only, because all too often the *DNA* producing these supposedly ‘similar features’ is dissimilar, provoking *evolutionists* to invent *convergent evolution*, that it is supposedly possible for independent *evolution* of similar features in *species* by dissimilar *DNA*. Again, this means that though they have similar appearance and structure and function, they have completely different *DNA*. But there are also now known to be *homologous structures*, which have similar *DNA*, but are not similar in appearance or structure or function. Yeah, God is really messing with these guys, as he **promises** He will. See again [Psalm 2](#), especially Verse 4. And I mean that this is really just another way *evolutionists* group ‘God-designed’ *variation* of *species* and call it *evolution*, and why God ‘mixed around’ the *DNA* in ‘similar structures’, and even in dissimilar ones, making **creatures** that cannot be clearly ‘classified’, to make clear that it is He that **created all things**.

So we’re not going to let such **liars** ‘have their cake and eat it too’. And this is worth repeating. They maintain that evidence is “lacking” for ‘transition’ at the *species level*, but that at the ‘higher levels’ there are “abundant” *transitional forms* “between” *groups* of *species*, as if it’s what they’ve always thought, hiding such ‘retractions’ from the fact that they originally stated,

Smooth intermediates between *Baupläne* [groups of species] are almost impossible to construct, even in thought experiments; there is certainly no evidence for them in the fossil record...

Beside misdirection by using ‘scientism terms’ or ‘scientist-ese’ to hide what he is really saying, and to disguise contradictions and ‘retractions’, we see here that revolving back and forth to both sides of any argument is acceptable to *evolutionists* to maintain a perceived advantage, especially when **the pride of life** and fulfilling **the lust of the flesh** are at stake.

And of course Dr. Gould’s 1981 ‘tantrum’ is a blatant contradiction of his 1977 theory. And surely this battle ‘ebbs and flows’, and sides are changed, depending on which position is more convenient with any particular debate and/or audience. I mean maybe you also remember that in 1996 Dr. Eldridge affirmed,

No wonder paleontologists shied away from evolution for so long. It seems never to happen. Assiduous [continuous and diligent] collecting up cliff faces yields zigzags, minor oscillations, and the very occasional slight accumulation of change over millions of years, at a rate too slow to really account for all the prodigious change that has occurred in evolutionary history. When we do see the introduction of evolutionary novelty, it usually [read, always] shows up with a bang, and often with no firm evidence that the organisms did not evolve elsewhere! Evolution cannot forever be going on someplace else. Yet that’s how the fossil record has struck many a forlorn paleontologist looking to learn something about evolution [*Reinventing Darwin: The Great Evolutionary Debate*, 1996, p.95].

Beyond ‘playing both sides against the middle’, as time went on Dr. Gould moved away from connecting Punctuated Equilibrium to Dr. Mayr’s longtime “standard” Theory of Speciation. I’m talking again about Allopatric or Geographic

Speciation. Dr. Gould eventually felt forced to leave this 'theory' behind because, inevitably, evidence accumulated that did not fit the 'theory' —which again, is the fate of all 'evolutionary theories' really. And new discoveries are an ongoing reason why *evolutionists*, in general, are forced to 'reposture' to 'untested imaginations', at least until those new fantasies are 'tested' and found wanting too.

For another example, remember Dr. Gould was also initially attracted to Dr. I. Michael Lerner's 'theories' of *developmental* and *genetic homeostasis*. This *hypothesis* was rejected over time because of accumulating evidence against it too. Other less 'tested'—or less exposed—*mechanisms* for *speciation* still in the running, but coming soon to a 'chopping-block' near you, include Habitat Tracking, Stabilizing Selection, the Stenseth-Maynard Smith Stability Hypothesis, Subdivided Populations, Normalizing Clade Selection, and Koinophilia.

And there are other ideas about *speciation* out there. Dr. Otto Schindewolf, a German *paleontologist* on the faculty at the University of Marburg (in Germany) in the 1920's, and afterward the Director of the Geological Survey of Berlin, and near the middle of the century a professor at the University of Tübingen (also in Germany), where he retired as Professor Emeritus in the mid 60's, supported *macromutations* as part of his 'evolutionary theory', and was surely at least an inspiration for Dr. Goldschmidt. He was known for presenting an alternative interpretation of the *fossil record* based on his ideas of Saltational Evolution, *orthogenesis* and *extraterrestrial impacts* (*meteors* carrying *organic materials*), all of which is opposed to *gradualism*, but he finally abandoned his view of *macromutations*. And we should notice here that he evidently at least anticipated the *science* of "cosmochemistry", later "astrobiology", even before Dr. Hoyle supposedly 'founded' this field.

Orthogenesis, also called *orthogenetic evolution*, *progressive evolution* or *autogenesis*, by-the-way, is the *hypothesis* that *life* has an innate tendency to *evolve* according to some internal and/or external "driving force", as opposed to *natural selection*. Yes, including possibly the help of Gaia. The *hypothesis* is based on the philosophies of *essentialism* and *cosmic teleology*, views that *nature* and the nature of *lifeforms* are the real 'guiding forces' in the *cosmos*, which are ideas, as many ideas in 'modern science', that can be traced back to Aristotle and Plato, but this 'hypothesis' was accepted by the likes Jean-Baptiste de Lamarck, and is therefore associated with Lamarckism, and, wait for it, Neo-Lamarckism. But the more prominent *evolutionists* of the mid-20th Century rejected it. Dr. George Gaylord Simpson, for example, ridiculed *orthogenesis*, calling this *mechanism* "the mysterious inner force". But I have reason to believe that such 'theories', like the "Jedi knights" in *Episode 6* of *Star Wars*, are destined for a resurgence, as we will see.

Dr. Soren Lovtrup, a Danish *biochemist* and *embryologist*, was a professor of *embryology* at the Department of Animal Physiology at the University of Umea, Sweden. He headed the organization of Swedish Developmental Biologists (SDB) in the 1980's and served as the first chairman. He is the author of the controversial 1987 book, *Darwinism: The Refutation of a Myth*, in which he argues that Darwin was not the founder of *evolutionary theory*, and that the Micromutation Theory of Neo-Darwinism is unsubstantiated and false. He supports an alternative *theory of evolution* by *macromutation* for the *origin* of major *taxonomic groups* of *organisms*. His book has naturally received mixed reviews from the 'scientific community', but, ironically enough, the main criticism is that he has in turn provided no real empirical evidence for his 'alternative theory' of *evolution* driven by *macromutations*. Uh-huh, like anyone has real evidence for any *theory of evolution*. Dr. Lovtrup's 1974 Theory of Macromutation is similar to Dr.

Goldschmidt's. He believed that *macromutations* interfered with various *epigenetic processes*, or with *gene expression*, that is, the ones that affect fundamental *biological development*, causing 'radical changes' in *organisms* in single generations. This then is an entirely different *mechanism* for *speciation* than expected by *neo-Darwinists*. But Dr. Lovtrup also rejected Punctuated Equilibria, echoing the claim it was—or had become—a form of Gradualism and therefore not Saltationism. And Dr. Lovtrup defended many of Darwin's critics, including *saltationists* Dr. Schindewolf, the real, but finally 'turncoat', originator of the 'Hopeful Monster Theory', and Dr. Goldschmidt, who actually carried on Dr. Schindewolf's work.

On the subject of Dr. Goldschmidt, Dr. Donald Prothero in his 2007 book, *Evolution: What the Fossils Say and Why It Matters*, wrote:

The past twenty years have vindicated Goldschmidt to some degree. With the discovery of the importance of regulatory genes, we realize that he was ahead of his time in focusing on the importance of a few genes controlling big changes in the organisms, not small-scales changes in the entire genome as neo-Darwinians thought. In addition, the hopeful monster problem is not so insurmountable after all. Embryology has shown that if you affect an entire population of developing embryos with a stress (such as a heat shock) it can cause many embryos to go through the same new pathway of embryonic development, and then they all become hopeful monsters when they reach reproductive age (p.100).

Yes and no. Again, as the Patriarch Jacob demonstrated, there are ways to manipulate the *gene expression* of an *organism* in *reproduction*—even beyond just subjecting them to a "stress", except that, again, the 'varying expressions', even if "monstrous", can only be ones that are **after their kind**, at least if there is to be any hope of further *reproduction*.

Dr. Donald Ross Prothero, by-the-way, is an American *paleontologist, geologist*, and author who specializes in *mammalian paleontology*. He attended the University of California, Riverside where he studied *paleontology*. He received his PhD in *geological sciences* in 1982 from Columbia University. His research has been in the field of *magnetostratigraphy*, a technique that's really just another 'shell game', as it's based on imaginary Magnetohydrodynamics Theory, formerly Dynamo Theory, to 'date rock layers' of the 'imaginary' Cenozoic Era. So *magnetostratigraphy*, not being founded in reality, must employ 'sleight of hand' to 'date' *climate changes*, yes, 'imagined' to have occurred 30-40 million years ago. He is currently the author or editor of more than 30 books and over 250 'scientific' papers, including five *geology* textbooks. Dr. Gould cited Dr. Prothero's 'research' on *climate change*—research that apparently showed that it no had effect on *mammals*—because this supposedly supported Punctuated Equilibria. He placed Dr. Prothero, because of this 'propaganda', 'high on the hill', calling him, "the best punctuated equilibrium researcher on the West Coast". Of course you can see this is nearer the top, not on the top. Dr. Gould, living on the east coast, reserved that spot for himself. And of course a 'make-believe' phenomenon—*climate change*—could never really affect fantasy, and that is, Punctuated Equilibria. However I seem to be missing something here. If *environmental "stress"* is supposed to be a factor in *macromutation*, how is it evidence for Punctuated Equilibrium if *climate change* does not seem to cause *evolutionary change*? I'm just saying.

Also recently, Stanford University graduate, *evolutionary biologist* and *science writer*, who received her Doctor of Philosophy from the University of Oxford, Dr. Olivia Judson, in her January 22, 2008 *New York Times* article, "*The Monster Is Back, and It's Hopeful*", listed some examples that seem to support the Hopeful Monster Hypothesis.

And UCLA graduate, *molecular biologist, biochemist, anatomist*, and Senior Editor of the journal *Nature*, in his article published in *Nature* in 2010 titled, "*Evolution: Revenge of the Hopeful Monster*", reported that studies in *stickleback* populations (*spiny-backed fish*) in a British Columbia lake, and *bacteria* populations in a Michigan lab have shown that large individual *genetic changes* can have vast effects on *organisms* "without dooming it to the evolutionary rubbish heap". He concluded in the article that,

Single-gene changes that confer a large adaptive value do happen: they are not rare, they are not doomed and, when competing with small-effect mutations, they tend to win. But small-effect mutations still matter—a lot. They provide essential fine-tuning and sometimes pave the way for explosive evolution to follow (Vol.463, p.864-67).

However again, and however misrepresented, though these "large" changes in *organisms* are considered examples of 'hopeful monsters', if they can really continue to *reproduce*, they can only be just large 'God-designed' *variations*—not a change of *species*, as God promises.

But have you noticed by now that following the 'latest developments' only tends toward ever more ridiculous ***science falsely so called***. And I mean we will be better served, time-wise, moving in the other direction, because the 'sleight of hand', 'smoke and mirrors', 'shell games', as well as 'mind games' just get worse and worse as time goes by, while 'scientific theories' only get more absurdly unrealistic and fraudulent. So let's go back to the modern foundations of this debate, back a little closer to reality anyway. At that time there were many who believed in *rapid evolutionary change*, and long before Drs. Schindewolf and Goldschmidt. And all the earlier 'theories' were closer to Dr. Goldschmidt's way of thinking than what Dr. Gould finally settled on, as Dr. Gould's 'theory' finally became acknowledged, by him and others, as just a faster and therefore conveniently supposedly 'invisible' form of Gradualism.

Prior to Charles Darwin most *evolutionary scientists* were *saltationists*. Near the turn of the 19th Century, Keeper of the Herbarium and Professor at the French museum of *botany*, Jardin des Plantes, and later Curator and Professor of Invertebrate Zoology at the French Museum of Natural History, Jean-Baptiste de Lamarck was a *gradualist*, though he acknowledged that Saltational Evolution was possible.

And it was a colleague of Professor de Lamarck, Étienne Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire who endorsed a *theory* of *saltational evolution*, writing,

...monstrosities could become the founding fathers (or mothers) of new species by instantaneous transition from one form to the next [Hallgrímsson, Hall, *Variation: A Central Concept in Biology*. Academic Press, 2011, p.18].

Professor Geoffroy, as he was called, was a French *naturalist* who established the principle of "unity of composition" of *organisms*, and who expanded and defended de Lamarck's 'evolutionary theories'—de Lamarck's 'bulldog', you might say.

However Professor Geoffroy's 'scientific views' had a more 'spiritual flavor'—unlike de Lamarck's *materialistic* view. Besides believing in an underlying—shall I say, cosmic?—*unity of organism design*, he also believed in the *transmutation of species* over time, amassing what he considered evidence for his claims through research in *comparative anatomy, paleontology, and embryology*.

But with the publication of *On the Origin of Species* half a century later, Fellow of the Royal Society of England (FRS), Charles Darwin denied that *saltational evolution* ever occurred, writing that *evolutionary transformation* always proceeds 'gradually' and never in 'jumps'. He maintained that *evolution* "only" occurred by 'slow accumulation' of "very short steps", writing,

...natural selection acts solely by accumulating slight successive favourable variations, it can produce no great or sudden modification; it can act only by very short steps (p.471).

So from 1860 to 1880 Saltation Theory fell out of favor. But by 1890—most likely because there was still no fossil evidence for Gradualism—it had again become a major interest to *scientists*, including to the 'first geneticist', Dutch Professor Hugo DeVries, who along with his German colleague, Director Carl Correns, the first Director of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Biology, rediscovered Gregor Mendel's *laws of inheritance* near the turn of the 20th Century. Also worth mentioning is the English *geneticist*, Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, Professor William Bateson, FRS, who along with his colleague and Professor of Biology, and later successor to Professor Bateson as Arthur Balfour Professor of Genetics, Reginald Crundall Punnett, FRS, who together co-founded the *Journal of Genetics* in 1910. But another notable early 20th Century proponent of Saltation Theory, though only early in his career as he became a 'turncoat' to Saltationism, was the man considered to be the founder of Neo-Darwinian Gradualism, and what came to be called Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory, Dr. Thomas Hunt Morgan. Oh, to be a 'fly on the wall' when he turned.

It is these early *geneticists* that helped develop the Mutation Theory of Evolution which held that *species* went through periods of rapid *mutation*, possibly as a result of *environmental stress*, that could produce multiple *mutations*, and in some cases completely new *species*, in a single generation. So it was these early *geneticists*—the so-called "Mendelians"—who advocated Mendelian Theory and Mutation Theory, and were understood to be opponents of Darwin's original view. Darwin's supporters, called *biometricians*, among other names, opposed Mendelism, being faithful to Darwin's original 'theories'. Of course the "Mendelians" didn't have a chance as they were too close to advocating *catastrophism* as the *environmental stress* and *mechanism* that drove *evolutionary change*, which could too easily be used to confirm the Bible. And without a doubt, removing God and the Bible from the 'theory' was the priority at this juncture, so that the only acceptable outcome must involve *uniformitarianism*—the opposite of *catastrophism*—and therefore also *gradualism*, because only these 'theories' could be used to discredit the Bible. And so, of course, since the real evidence wasn't really the issue, this dispute could only be resolved, at least in 'popular opinion' (read, 'popular propaganda'), with the rise of a *gradualist* version of *evolutionary change*, which is what happened in the 1930's. And this remained the undisputable law, with all dissenters being 'blackballed', until Dr. Gould, in the 1970's, with the reasons for the Gradualism v. Catastrophism debate long forgotten, 'stormed the hilltop', where this inevitably

renewed 'battle' is still ongoing. And I say inevitably because still there is no *fossil evidence* for Gradualism, and a lot more acceptance of *spiritualism*. I mean the brands of *spiritualism* that are not associated with the Bible, which we should expect as we grow closer to **the time of the end**, as we will continue to show again and again.

And other *mechanisms* for Saltational Evolution have been proposed along the way besides Dr. Goldschmidt's Hopeful Monster Theory. The *geneticist* Dr. Barbara McClintock, for example, introduced the idea of "jumping genes", *chromosome transpositions* that can produce rapid changes in the *genome*. Being one of the first *cytogeneticists*, a branch of *genetics* concerned with the structure and function of the *cell*, especially the *chromosomes*, she was awarded the Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine for her work in 1983. She received her PhD in *botany* from Cornell University in 1927. But this is only because that while she attended, women could not major in *genetics* at Cornell, and therefore her MA and PhD were officially awarded in Botany. However more recently it has been confirmed that women did earn graduate degrees in Cornell's Plant Breeding Department during the time she was there.

She started her career as the leader in the development of *maize cytogenetics*, and this remained the focus of her research for the rest of her life. From the late 1920s, Dr. McClintock studied *chromosomes* and how they change during *reproduction* in *maize*. She produced the first *genetic map* for *maize*, linking regions of the *chromosome* to *physical traits*. She demonstrated the role of the *telomere* and *centromere*, regions important to the conservation of *genetic information*. She was recognized among the best in the field, awarded prestigious fellowships, and elected a member of the National Academy of Sciences in 1944.

During the 1940s and 1950s, Dr. McClintock discovered *transposition* and used it to demonstrate that *genes* are responsible for turning *physical characteristics* on and off. She developed *theories* to explain the *suppression* and *expression* of *genetic information* from one generation of *maize plants* to the next. However, due to skepticism about her research and its implications, but more due to her belief in Saltational Evolution which threatened Modern Synthesis Theory, she stopped publishing her data in 1953. I should probably add that in the mid 1930's she worked with Dr. Goldschmidt in Germany at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Biology, which was not only a factor that led to her belief in *saltation speciation* through *genetic mutation* or *chromosomal aberration*, but was also a factor in getting her ostracized, along with Dr. Goldschmidt, during the height of Modern Synthesis Theory in the mid 20th Century.

She did, however, continue her research by extensive study of the *cytogenetics* and *ethno-botany* of the *maize races* of South America. And finally Dr. McClintock's research became better accepted, being confirmed in the 1960's and 70's by other scientists who verified the *mechanisms* of *genetic change* and *genetic regulation* that she had demonstrated in her research in the 1940's and 50's, ultimately setting the stage for the commanding 'uphill charge' of Dr. Gould.

And besides Dr. McClintock's research, there are many other suggested *mechanisms* for this imagined phenomenon of 'rapid' *evolutionary change* including Polyploidy, Karyotypic Fission, Symbiogenesis, Lateral Gene Transfer, not to mention the supporting role of Gaia, otherwise more simply known, in 'galaxies far, far away', as "the force". But 'aliens' (read, 'masquerading' **angels** of Satan) will increasingly disguise themselves in both spiritual and physical forms to advance Saltation Theory too, and more and more as we move deeper into **the time of the end**, as we will also continue to repeatedly confirm.

And this brings us back to where we've really been going in this section, to the spiritual battle in the so-called 'sciences' from the late 18th Century to the mid-20th Century. Again, this period to me is the most critical period for the battle waged between 'unbridled fantasy' and a 'semblance of reality', that 'unbridled fantasy' ultimately wins. And so much so that today, the 'fantasy' called 'science' has become astoundingly absurd, but nonetheless considered the only acceptable account of reality. So in the remaining sections of this **study**, it is largely in this historic 'battle zone'—as well as in the biographies of particular *scientists* and their identifying particular 'contributions'—that we will camp. And the *scientist* of the most substance we will consider, who more or less ends this period, is Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, who was of all things a *psychologist*, but more importantly, an 'extraordinary synthesizer' of not only the *sciences*, but also of *history* and *folklore* too, but who was also generally rejected by the 'scientific community' in the middle of the 20th Century and beyond—mostly because he was a *catastrophist*.

And I mean that there were 'crucial theoretical battles' fought during this period, one of these fights between two 'leading scientists' whose differences broke apart their friendship. One of these two was Professor de Lamarck's colleague, Professor Étienne Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire. The other, also one of the most famous French *naturalists*, is Jean Léopold Nicolas Frédéric Cuvier, better known as Georges Cuvier, and finally Baron Georges.

In 1793, the young Geoffroy first studied at the Collège de Navarre, in Paris, where he 'wallowed' in *natural philosophy*, surely 'soaking up' plenty of that 'Bible-ignoring', **blasphemous**, Deism ("belief in...a God on the evidence of reason and nature only, with rejection of supernatural revelation"), infused with **blasphemous** Platonism (Plato's 'philosophy'), as was popular in the Enlightenment Era. He next attended lectures at the Jardin des Plantes. His connections won him the office of Sub-keeper and Assistant Demonstrator of the Cabinet of Natural History, and because of the newly established Institut de France, he was appointed one of the 12 professors of the newly constituted Museum of Natural History, becoming the first Chair of Zoology.

In 1794, this 25 year-old Parisian and rising *naturalist* entered into correspondence with Georges Cuvier. Shortly after that, the diligently homeschooled Cuvier arrived in Paris, at age 26, and was shortly thereafter appointed as Assistant to the newly created Chair of Comparative Anatomy at the Jardin des Plantes. He was also elected a member of the newly established Academy of Sciences, and in 1796 began lecturing at the École Centrale du Pantheon, as well as giving a lecture at the opening of the Institut de France in April, where he read his first *paleontological* paper. During these early years, Geoffroy received him into his house. The two friends wrote together five memoirs on *natural history*, one of which from then on influenced Cuvier's system of *zoological classification*. And it was during this time that Geoffroy first proposed his *theories* on the *unity of organic composition*, which influenced all his subsequent writings. His idea was that *nature* presents us with only one plan of 'construction', the same in principle, but varied in its 'accessory parts'.

Professor Geoffroy left Paris on a scientific expedition to Egypt in 1798, returning in 1802. He was elected a member of the Academy of Science in 1807, but left Paris again on a mission from Napoleon to out-bargain the British for Portugal's most sought after museum collections, and apparently succeeded. In 1809, the year after his return to France, Professor Geoffroy was made Professor of Zoology at the Faculty of Sciences at Paris, and from then on he devoted himself more exclusively than before to *anatomical study*. In 1818 he published the first part of

his celebrated *Philosophie anatomique*, the second volume of which was published in 1822, and along with his following memoirs, account for his *theory* on the formation of “monstrosities” using principles certainly associated with *catastrophism*.

But Professor Geoffroy was a *deist*, which is to say that he believed in a ‘creator god’, and also in a ‘law-governed universe’, though like others of this then popular Renaissance philosophy, he believed this ‘God’ did not interact or interfere with ‘his’ creation other than by the originally created *natural laws*. Again, this opinion was common among ‘intellectuals’ in the Renaissance/Enlightenment Era, and is usually associated with the general rejection of the Bible and *miracles* as ‘unscientific’. And these views did not conflict with his ‘naturalistic ideas’ about *organic change*, or his apparent rejection of the God of the Bible, or even too much with Christian beliefs in general, as it was an ‘acceptably-small-enough’ first step away from God under the distraction of *science falsely so called*.

And Professor Geoffroy's ‘theory’ was not one of ‘common evolutionary descent’, but a ‘working-out’ of ‘existing potentials’ in given *classifications* of *organisms*, (read again, ‘God-designed’ *variation*). And for him, it was the *environment* and *climate* that induced this *organic change*. Dr. Mayr labels this point of view as ‘Geoffroyism’. And it is definitely not what Professor de Lamarck believed. He believed a ‘change in habits’ is the *mechanism* that altered *organisms*. And today even *punctuated equilibriumists*, in favor of a ‘genetic role’ in ‘evolution’, don’t believe—or no longer believe—that there is a *direct effect* of *climate* on ‘evolution’.

However Professor Geoffroy wrote that ‘environmental pressures’ could produce sudden *transformations* to establish new *species* ‘instantaneously’. In 1864, German *zoologist*, FRS, Dr. Albert von Kölliker revived Professor Geoffroy's *theory* that *evolution* proceeds by ‘large steps’, calling it *heterogenesis*. But because of the publication of Charles Darwin’s *theory* in 1859, which denied Saltational Evolution—and Catastrophism too for that matter—espousing instead that *evolutionary transformation* always proceeds “*only in very short steps*”, never in ‘big ones’, Dr. Von Kölliker’s *theory* never really had a chance. Dr. Goldschmidt’s too, early in the next century, didn’t really either, at least until he was remembered by Dr. Gould.

And it could be considered ironic that the ‘high ground’ of Gradualism and Uniformitarianism was claimed through the popular use of a ‘theory’ by Charles Darwin, since evidently Charles too could be considered a ‘turncoat’ of Saltation Theory. I suspect Mr. Darwin was a ‘turncoat’ because Professor Geoffroy, who was more a *saltationist* and *catastrophismist*, evidently failed to win support for his ‘theory’ from someone you would expect would be one of his most loyal advocates. I mean that while working on *marine invertebrates* in the late 1820’s in Edinburgh, he was assisted in 1826 and 27 by his student, Charles Darwin.

But the opposition to Professor Geoffroy’s ‘monstrous theory’ wasn’t limited to the ‘hilltop stand’ of his former student. It was in 1830, while applying his ‘pre-genetics’, ‘animal-composition’ perspective to support his Macroevolutionary Theory, that he found strong opposition from his former friend, Professor Cuvier. Professor Geoffroy, a *synthesizer* of *evolutionary theories*, contended that there was somehow a ‘cosmic unity of plan’ in *organic composition*. And though similar in parts, it differed in form and size, remaining associated in the same invariable order. In other words, again, he was vaguely recognizing ‘God-designed’ *variation* of *species*, though overlooking that *reproduction* of *organisms* that allowed further *reproduction* only occurred *after their kind*.

Professor Geoffroy also imagined a ‘law of compensation’ or ‘balancing of growth’, so that if one *organ* takes on an excess of development, it is at the

expense of some other part. And though it was not his term, he was, besides Aristotle, the one who came up with the idea of *vestal organs*, now *vestigial structures*—*organs* or *structures* which are thought to have become “superfluous” in any given *species*, but supposedly played an important part in other *species* of the same *family*, and are therefore retained as rudiments, which supposedly is testimony to the permanence of the general plan of *creation*. However there is really no such thing as a *vestigial structure*. For one thing, the uses of such supposedly “superfluous” *organs* and *structures* are being discovered all the time. So, they are really just parts of us and other living things that we haven’t so much figured out yet, which is really just a testimony that we are **fearfully and wonderfully made** by an **infinite** God whose **creation** will **for ever** remain **past finding out**.

And here’s a surprise. Professor Geoffroy wasn’t completely detached from reality. And I mean that despite his ‘theories’ about all the past *organic change*, it was his conviction that existing *species* were no longer becoming modified or still evolving. Duh. And I give this detail to his perspective because you can see that it is less **perverted** than the fantasies that we’re dealing with today. And I mean that this is a time when ‘evidence’ is still handled less imaginatively too, which brings us back to Georges Cuvier.

Professor Cuvier, known as an analytical observer of facts, admitted that there seemed to be ‘laws of unity and harmony’ of *animal organs*, but maintained the absolute invariability of species—that they could always and only **reproduce after their kind**—and that all *organisms* must have been created with a regard to the circumstances in which they were placed, each *organ* contrived with a view to the function it had to fulfill. Hmm, wonder where he came up with that?! Of course what ‘seemed right’ to Professor Geoffroy’s was that this was backward thinking. But again, duh, every part of every **creature** was perfectly designed by God for their purposes that—at the end of the **day**—made it appropriate for Him to say, **it is good**. And this is self-evident too. As the Apostle Paul put it,

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse... Rom 1:20

But for an **ungodly** person like Professor Geoffroy, it is **natural** for him to think that **the ways of death**—or any idea that contradicts The Word of God—**seemeth right**.

But I hope you’re not gloating, because this is also nearly as often true for Christians, and not limited to those not yet **weaned from the milk** of The Word, whose heads are still nearly as full of **the ways of death** as **unbelievers**. And this is an even more dangerous place to live really.

Consider. Do you not yet **know** that because Jesus **put away sin by the sacrifice of himself**, that if you, like so many others, find yourself among those **once enlightened** by the **salvation of your souls**, but later **fall away** ([Heb 6:4-6](#)), that you become **worse** off ([2 Pe 2:20](#)) than Professor Geoffroy, assuming he was never **once enlightened**? And this is an even more likely outcome for **babes in Christ** who won’t even **drink** their **milk**. “But for the **grace of God** there go I?” Uh-huh. So **drink** your **milk** till you’re ready to be **weaned**, or the **grace of God** may be of no avail to you. And you may end up **worse** off than people like Professor Geoffroy.

But Georges Cuvier, known as a *naturalist* and *zoologist*, who was apparently **enlightened**—and I mean by The Word of God—and who apparently **understood**

God's Creation **by the things that are made**, still managed to give an **excuse** for Creation Week. Becoming a major figure in the *natural sciences* in the early 19th Century, his most significant contribution was helping to establish the fields of *comparative anatomy* and *paleontology* through his prolific work comparing *living animals* with *fossils*. And his work is considered the foundation of *vertebrate paleontology* as he expanded the *classification* system of *Linnaean taxonomy* by grouping *classes* into *phyla* while incorporating both *fossils* and *living species*. Professor Baron Cuvier is also remembered for documenting *extinction* as a fact, and despite the 'catastrophic effects' this brought into play. Yes, this is a pun. In the early 19th Century, *extinction* was a controversial speculation at best.

But in his *Essay on the Theory of the Earth* in 1813, Professor Cuvier offers his **excuse** for Creation Week by proposing that new *species* were 'created' after periodic catastrophic floods. And yes, not just one flood, and not just 'mild' ones, but 'periodic catastrophic floods'. I am belaboring this point because we will see in the rest of this **study** that this observation, by this reputed 'analytical observer of facts', is entirely accurate. And in this way, Professor Cuvier became the most influential proponent of Catastrophism in his time.

However he was not always so close to the mark. His participation in the original study of the *strata* of the Paris *basin* established the basic principles of *biostratigraphy*—the branch of *stratigraphy* which focuses on correlating and assigning relative ages of rock *strata* by using the *fossil* contained within them. Yeah, so he's the one who helped set the stage for 'loop dating'. And since he was among the first to suggest that the Earth was once dominated by *reptiles* rather than *mammals*, he kind of helped lead early *paleontologists* in the wrong direction, timescale-wise, in that way too.

Among his other accomplishments, he established that the 'elephant-like' *bones* found in North America actually belonged to an *extinct mastodon*, and that a large *skeleton* dug up in South America was of *Megatherium*, a giant, prehistoric *sloth*. He also invented some of the early names of *dinosaurs*. His most famous 1817 work is *Le Règne Animal (The Animal Kingdom)*. And though a Frenchman, in 1819, he was another of his countryman to be awarded the British royal title of "peer for life" in honor of his scientific contributions. It was thereafter that he was known as Baron Georges. And some of the Baron's most influential followers included the Swiss and German educated, eventually Harvard man, Dr. Louis Agassiz, whose legacy has already been twice mentioned by way of his son Alexander's honorary chair at Harvard, and in England, through the 'sinner' thoroughly 'mauled' by 'Darwin's bulldog', Sir Richard Owen, KOB, both *scientist* prominent in their fields who also maintained their rejection of Darwin's Theory of Evolution by *natural selection* against the 'rising tide' in its favor. And because of the work of Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, we'll hear more from our more 'analytically objective heroes', Cuvier, Agassiz, Owen, and others all along our way.

And of course Baron Georges is also remembered for strongly opposing the *evolutionary theories* of Professors de Lamarck and Geoffroy. Again, his extensive time spent examining and classifying both *living* and *fossil* evidence—in an era with an arguably somewhat less 'perverted mindset'—led him to believe and admit that there was no evidence for the *evolution of organic forms*, but rather only—at best—evidence for successive "creations" after *catastrophic extinction events*. Shazam! And yes, the 'fossil record', such as it is, is better described in this way than in most others, and certainly much better than in any *gradualistic* way. And it's ironic that though Professor Geoffroy insisted that *evolutionary change* is often mostly 'monstrous', this is at least another perspective that is among the closer to the 'facts' of *paleontology*.

Of course again, both Professor Cuvier and Geoffroy's 'theories' had to fall to Darwin's Gradualism, so that Catastrophism, let alone Catastrophic Creationism, also called Progressive Creationism, and any other 'theory' in any way biblical, could be removed from the table, at least until the reasons for removing them were forgotten, making an opening for Dr. Gould's 'rush to the hilltop', that is, with his 'advance uphill' metaphorically accompanied by a streaming, retailored flag, hoisted atop the highest pole, and planted where his 'Don Quixote-like' **delusion** naturally led him, and that is, to make him next in line to be 'king of the hill'.

And let me reemphasize. Remember that the more you look into the Theory of Evolution, especially nowadays, you see that *evolutionists* tend to more or less mix and match 'theories' to the modes of *speciation* that they like best depending not really so much on the evidence available to them, but on whether it will win them more power and prestige, as well as on how oppressive those who are financing their research are, including even actually threatening their livelihoods, possibly even their lives, and on other motivations that are all inevitably connected to some kind of **wickedness, worldly lust** and/or the **pride of life**.

And again, because I can't resist 'driving a couple more nail in this coffin', all *evolutionists*, whether 'slow' *gradualists*, 'fast' *gradualists*, or 'monstrously fast' *saltationist* do not honestly represent the *fossil record* that is supposedly the basis for their 'theories'. You know this because, first of all, there is really no such thing as they describe. To requote those Christian *creationists* from earlier, the Geological Column "does not exist, except in the imagination".

But there are 'bigger nails', or 'spikes', actually more the size of 'piles', because they would need a pile driver to drive them in, each also an enormous 'spike through the heart' of any *evolutionary view* of the Geological Column or Timescale. I'm talking about *polystrate fossils*. See some of these 'coffin nails' fit to 'put to rest' the entire Theory of Evolution on [p.310-11](#).

Polystrate fossils, in these cases *trees*, are the kind which somehow found a way to span at least two or more *geologic strata*. Commonly, *polystrate tree trunks*, in the vertical position—whether upright or inverted—and 1) entirely preserved as *fossils*, but also sometimes, in places, 2) not yet completely *fossilized*—or *petrified*—or sometimes 3) all or partially converted to *coal*, or *peat moss*, and sometimes 4) still connected to *roots*, and sometimes 5) displaying *bark*, intersect two or more *strata*. And did you catch all that 'incriminating evidence'?

And you can see an **entirely fossilized tree** in the larger picture on [p.311](#), with *roots* visible at the bottom, the *trunk* in the middle, and *branches* on top (outlined in the smaller picture in yellow, some *bark* identified by the red arrow, [p.310](#)), altogether spanning about 30 feet and intersecting three different *strata* (as diagrammed, also [p.310](#)). Of course explaining this is impossible in *evolutionary* terms, but of course, telling, if any *evolutionist* just would. And though commonly *polystrates* are *trees*, they also result from the remains of any large *organism*, like large *dinosaurs*, or even from the remains of a collected group of *organisms* such as a *school of fish* that are evidently buried together at the same time, and transcend multiple *layers* of *sediments*.

In all such cases *evolutionists* simply want you to ignore the reality that an originally *organic form* could never entirely *fossilize* if it must have taken many thousands, let alone millions of years to 'gradually' *bury* it, during which time at least some of it must remain in *organic form*. It needs to be *buried* to *leach minerals* into itself and covert to *rock*. Any portion not quickly enough buried must simply *rot* away. So do the math. The *polystrate* 'full tree' *fossil* above, embedded in the Fossil Cliffs of Joggins, Nova Scotia, Canada, could not have maintained such

a *form* if mostly above ground awaiting *sediments* to 'gradually' *bury* it, as, in the 'timeframe' of the Geologic Column or Timescale, most of it would have 'decayed away' long before *petrifying*. And the 'head' on this 'nail' might be that the top of *polystrates* often do not show more *erosion* than the lower portions, presenting additional 'hard scientific evidence' that at least some of these *organisms* were not 'sticking up' out of the ground for extended periods awaiting 'full burial'. And all this contradicts, no, entirely invalidates the claim that the related *geologic layers* were deposited slowly over millions of years. This evidence is clear that they must have been laid suddenly, though, contrary to the views of most Christian *creationists*, not all in just The Flood. (See also [CRSQ](#), [ICR Impact](#) and <http://youngearth.com/tree-joggins-nova-scotia-did-not-stand-million-years>.)

Still many *evolutionists*, some backed by grants, and/or the temptation of a 'spot' closer to the 'top of the hill', or simply because they are **oppressed** and/or **threatened**, claim there is 'growing evidence' for their particular brand of *evolution*, all the while disputing with other *evolutionists*, even if not so 'goaded', or 'pricked' by all manner of 'evil spurs'. I mean surely there is no real evidence for any 'theory of evolution', whether *genetic*, *environmental* or *spiritual*. All are 'fantasies' and 'fairy tales', and certainly **lies**, however well constructed to be not easily detected as such. And this is one of the ways you can **see through a glass, darkly** [1Co 13:12](#). And part of what the Apostle Paul means by that there is a '**spiritual world**' presently out of our sight. He also tells us that there is now ongoing a physical, conspiratorial,



and propaganda **war**, perpetrated by **spiritual wickedness in high places**. This is part of what Paul means when he says,

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places Eph 6:12.

Because surely it should be clear to all who **love the truth**—evidenced by their continuing discipleship to ever more fully **know the truth**—that God not only designed His Creation, but that He did it in a way so that this could not easily be honestly mistaken. In fact there has been a worldwide, ‘hard-fought’, **dark** and **wicked** ‘wrestling match’ going on to facilitate this grand **delusion**. And it is **prophesied** that it will be largely successful, that this ‘physical, conspiratorial, and propaganda campaign’ ultimately **deceiveth the whole world Rev 12:9**. And the Apostle Paul also tell us that it is the ‘rejection’ of the **love of the truth**, along with ‘God-sent **delusion**’, that is and will be the cause of it all (**2Th 2:10-12**).

But we, who **continue** on from here, have demonstrated, just by reaching this place together, that we **love...the truth**. And God willing you will never be confused again about Creation Week, from now on **knowing** that it took place just a few thousand years ago, where God **created** out of nothing everything that now is, and that it took 6 literal days, resting on the 7th, and that He only took that long so He could be our example of how we should **work** and **rest** in subsequent weeks.

But we have really only just begun. No, we haven’t really even started yet, because there is so much more to the story of God’s Creation than just what occurred in Creation Week. And I mean that the **great judgments** of God have ‘transformed’ His **creation** again and again since then, and it’s **prophesied** to do so a couple more times before, as Jesus puts it, **Heaven and earth shall pass away**. It is the purpose of this **study** to account for all this, and I mean for all the **wondrous, great and terrible things** (**Deu 10:21; Joel 2:11, 30-31**), and **great judgments**, (**Eze 5:8; Rev 16:7**) He has and **will execute Exo 12:12**. See also **Eze 5:15-17; 25:17; 30:19** for more examples of these kinds of cataclysmic **great judgments** of God that we’ll be considering in the remaining sections.

So we’re finally ready to really **shake** things up. And if you fully **understand** now what I mean by “Rejecting the World and Accepting God”, you’re ready to go on. And I mean we have not only examined our own immaturities, ignorance, levels of error and deception, and not only exposed Satan’s and the World’s character and role concerning these shortcomings, but we have also exposed the Church’s really, and likely your pastor’s too. In other words, we have seen—mostly by showing what you have **not** been taught, or have been mistaught—that the Church in general is full of and even led by **such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat**, who are **unskilful in the word**, and therefore are **not...spiritual**, and so are appropriately referred to as, more or less, **carnal**.

But **worse** than this, you should now **see** that this unavoidably includes those you consider your ‘close’, and hopefully, **‘washed-in-the-blood’**, Christian family. And I mean you could probably ‘weather’ discussing some of the topics considered so far that expose the Theory of Evolution—and I said some, not likely even most—and maybe even receive a few ‘cheers’ and ‘amens’. But if you tried to indicate to your ‘hearers’, as I have indicated to you, **their** ‘spiritual level of immaturity’, and the Church’s, and their pastor’s, in such **understanding**, this would likely get at least a little ‘stormy’. And I mean that some of this **understanding** is ‘relationship breaking’. And unfortunately—really more for them than you—this applies to probably **everyone** you have up to now held ‘dearest’. The same also goes for

trying to enlighten them with too many of the topics from [RGT](#). I certainly was not able to ‘weather’ the reactions of those I call—and now in all cases called—my family, including my wife and children, whom nonetheless testify that they maintain their **faith** in Christ’s **sacrifice** for them, **thank and praise the LORD**.

So maybe you now can guess that the rest of this **study**, as well as the preceding, and all of [RGT](#), is inviting you into a new, ‘inner family’, one that is closer to Jesus and The Father than most will ever be interested in, one whose members are **willing** and **able**—and truly committed—to **know** God and His Son by The Spirit, **better** and **better, for ever**. Indeed this is a family that **hopes all things**, including that **everyone** will **by any** and **by all means** be **saved**. But this ‘inner family’, though open to **everyone**, is only—as God promises—**received** by the ‘**close friends**’ of Jesus, who are **diligent, patient, faithful, continuing** and **zealous**, yes, **disciples indeed**, who have **vehement desire**, and at the same time are willing to answer the **call to suffer**, in order to **know the truth**, each becoming **thoroughly furnished** to **be** the **servant of all, able to bear** all that we must **suffer to participate** in all God’s designs and plans as much as humanly possible at any given point along **the way**, including in everything that may be known **by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**.

So again, I’m saying you will most likely ruin all your relationships if you **continue** to get closer to God and Jesus this **way**. He **promises**. And if that’s not enough, He not only **promises** you’ll ruin your relationships with others, He also implies pretty clearly that for the ones that **choose** to get the ‘**closest**’ to Him, things, on this Earth anyway, are more than likely to ‘end quite badly’, from a worldly perspective, that is. This should be expected, and should be a **price** that you are willing to **pay**, so that Jesus and The Father may really **come unto** you, and **make** Their **abode with** you ([Jhn 14:23-24](#)). Consider what Jesus means when He says,

Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends

[Jhn 15:13](#).

I would guess that most think that this applies to ‘soldiers in battle’, or maybe ‘doctors fighting an epidemic’, or ‘defenders of the innocent against whatever form of violence’, etc. But this is certainly not really what He is talking about here. Notice this is John 15, part of the last **teaching** that He gives His 12 **disciples** before He goes to **the cross**. And notice what He says in the very next verses. In them He explains what this **greater love** is, and who His **friends** really are, and who they will be **able** to give this **greater love** to, saying,

Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not [anymore] servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is

not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me... [Jhn 15:14-21](#)

Of course Jesus is talking to His 12 disciples, telling them to ***love one another***, which to them—the ones He calls ***friends***—means to be willing to ***die*** for one another, like he is about to ***die*** for them. So He is telling them straightforwardly what they have to look forward to—***death*** by ***persecution***. And except for John, who is reported to have ‘miraculously survived’ being ‘boiled in oil’, they all ***died*** martyr’s ***deaths*** for the Gospel’s sake. But there was only so much these 12 could do. And I mean they could really only start Churches that were in the business of getting people ***saved***, and otherwise point them in the direction of how to ***grow*** beyond that. And though nowadays most truly Christian Churches are still more of less in this business—usually still on a ***‘dishonourably milky’*** level, nevertheless ***praise God***—they are not generally in the business of ***‘disciplining’*** beyond the level of ***servants***, and that is, to the level of ***‘close friends’*** of Jesus, who, to be one of His ***friends***, must be ***taught*** by Him, and by The Spirit, as He says, ***all things that I have heard of my Father***, and who should be willing and expect to receive ***persecution*** in order to truly be among those who ***knoweth what his Lord doeth***. Surely the ***wolves*** of the World have and will continue to put such ***disciples*** to ***death***. Unfortunately, Christians who are ***carnal*** and ***unskilful in the word*** are nowadays so overflowing our Churches that they have become themselves just as willing to ‘throw’ such ***disciples*** to such ***wolves***.

Again, going this ***way*** will likely not ***just*** bring ***persecution*** upon you from both the World ***and*** the Church—neither of which will ***receive*** you—but, inevitability, also ***imprisonment*** and/or ***death***. And isn’t this exactly what Jesus was asking of his ***‘closest friends’***? And do you think there is a ***‘better way’*** to have ***happy***, more fulfilling ***fellowship***? The ***‘perfect truth’*** is that there are no ***‘better friend’*** to have, ***for ever***, than the ones that will ***leave, forsake, and hate*** all others that will ***not*** go with them this ***way***, so that they all may become ***servant[s] of all***, which ***all*** will eventually ***understand***, too often too late, and to their ***dishonour*** and ***shame***. But ***not*** to yours. Indeed the ***time*** has fully come, as ***prophesied*** by the Apostle Paul...

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap unto themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables [2Ti 4:3-4](#).

And the ‘Theory of Evolution’ is only one of the ***fables*** growing in popularity in the Church that I mean to expose. So it would be best to become a ***master*** of the first 3 sections of this ***study*** before you go on—and preferably, for your own ***good***—***RGT*** too. Otherwise you are not really fully ready. And not being ready could lead to ***persecution*** that will ***not*** make you ***happy***, neither now nor in ***eternity***, even ***cost*** you your ***‘immortal soul’***. Indeed to go this ***way*** you must be ready to ***understand*** the difference between the ***persecution*** that will make you ***happy***, and the kind that will not. And that will take the ***ability*** to ***‘handle’*** The Word ***‘maturely’***, and to clearly recognize the ***‘immaturity’*** around you, and to ***suffer*** for a while in that loneliness. But ***‘happily’***, it should get worse than just ***‘dreadfully lonely’*** before it gets ***better. Understand?***

If not, and if you don't feel like you're 'chomping at the bit' to go on, don't. Proceed only when **vehement desire** to **participate** as one of the '**close friends**' of **Ishi** Jesus overwhelms your healthy **fear** of the inevitable, seemingly insufferable, likely **deadly** consequences, or in other words, not until you are really starting to **understand** what Jesus means when He says,

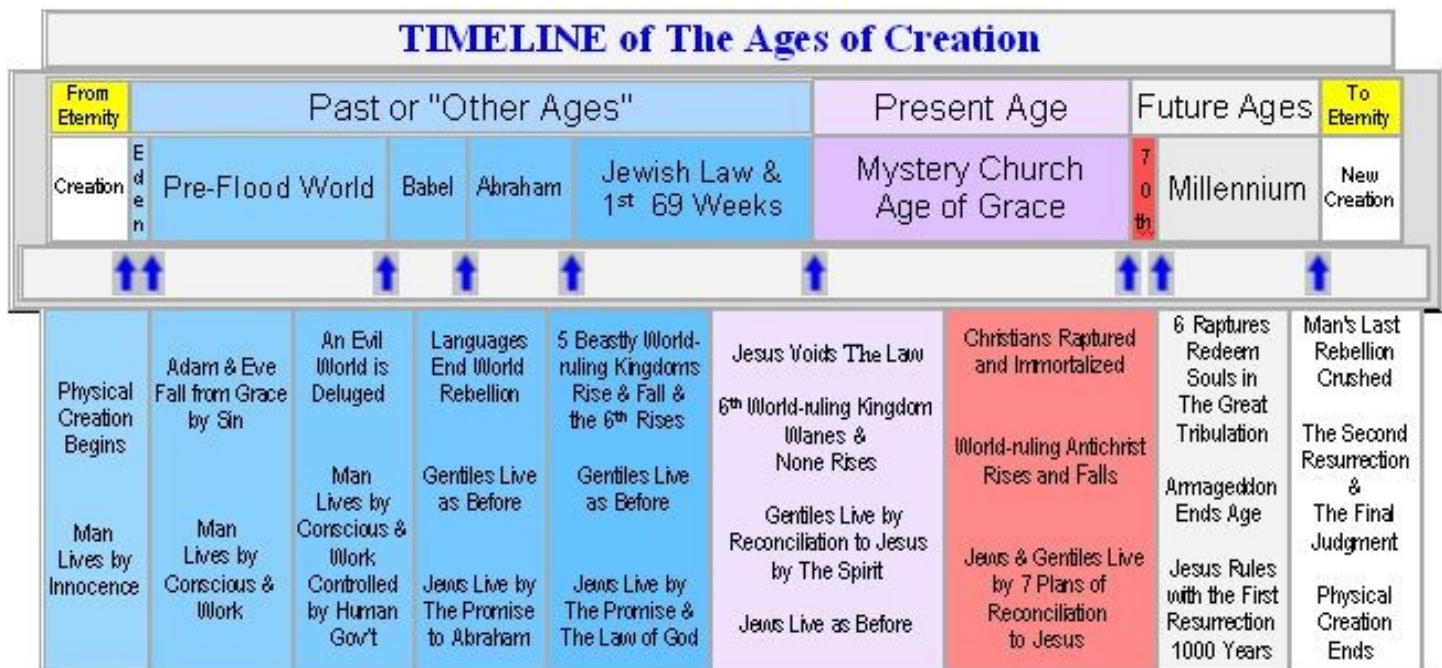
...fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell [Mat 10:28](#).

And if you think *evolutionists* get too technical, and imaginative, describing their 'fairy tale theories', this is where we begin trying to imagine something even more 'technically and imaginatively challenging', not to mention 'wide-eyed', 'dropped-jawed', 'breathtaking', 'shaking-in-your-shoes', 'knock-your-socks-off', 'mindblowingly awesome'. And except that it's all real. Get ready for an overview of how our **infinite, omnipotent** God continues to **declare** to '**finite**' **mankind** just how 'mindblowingly awesome' He really is. He does this with His Creation in general, but His best '**declarations**' of this are seen in His **great judgments** that are **cast** and **poured out...upon the earth** and **upon the sea** and **upon the rivers and fountains of waters**, and even **upon the sun**, as we will see. (See [Rev 8:7](#); [Rev 16](#).) This overview starts with the 'mindblowing' introduction to our **great and terrible God** in the next section.

And again, as the Prophet Amos once warned The Ten Tribes of **Israel** along these lines, it is equally appropriate for me to alert you of the same thing...

...prepare to meet thy God [Amos 4:12](#).

SECTION 4 The 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan of God for Mankind and Angels



The previous *study*, [RGT](#), isn't as much about the entire *chronology* of the *history* and *physical nature* of God's **creation** as this one is. But some more of the 'haziness' you may still have about The Chronology of End Times Prophecy, if you sufficiently **take heed**, I hope to lessen in this *study*, especially by end of it. And hopefully you're already very familiar with the chart on [p.315](#), also featured in [RGT](#). It works for me to identify the major '**dispensational**' changes that occur along the Timeline of The Ages of Creation. But it does not identify as well the many 'cataclysmic changes' that have occurred and still are to occur. I promised in [RGT](#) to give the "background" to that *study* in this one. It's time to begin making good on that promise. So after 'trudging our way through the mud and muck' of the totality of 'evolutionary fantasy', we're finally ready for some adventures on the 'solid rock' of total reality, and I mean ready for the "awe-inspiring" **experience** of coming to a '**mature spiritual**' **understanding** of God's present, relatively newly **created**, then **cursed**, and soon to **pass away, creation**, God willing.

However I should also **warn** you that despite all the 'wrangling' we did with the **false** 'chronology' and 'imaginary physicalities' of the Theory of Evolution, there will be more of this to 'sweep out of your brain' along the **way**. And you should also be aware by now that this is really part of the '**neverending**' **way** to an '**increasingly truer**' *chronology*, and an '**increasingly truer**' **understanding** of the '**God-designed**', '**naturally awesome**', and '**only-occasionally-manipulated-abracadabra-style**' **creation** that **we** presently **live** in.

And to be safe, but feeling that I need to be blunt, I say '**truer**' because by no means can **we** ever be **able** to 'fully imagine', let alone 'completely' **understand**, even the '**unmanipulated-abracadabra-style**' *physicalities* of God's **creation**. And I mean that we won't ever be **able** to 'entirely' **understand** even the 'natural part', let alone the, at least seemingly, 'magical part', and that the lines between these two are easily 'blurred', for us most often simply by our **ignorance**.

And no, we will not be **able** to fully **understand** the *chronology* either. Because the **testimony** of Jesus implies that even He will never **fully know** this *chronology*

or *physicality* either. See [Matthew 24:36](#) and [Mark 13:32](#) for example. In other words, Jesus is not 'like' His Father who is *able* to *know* such *greater* things. Remember Jesus *confesseth* not only that The Father is *greater* than Him, but that *we*, though ever subordinate and inferior to Him, may become one of His '*close friends*', or as the Apostle John puts it, become, however *lower, like him*. This level of *understanding*, in times past, was part of the *great mystery* that is *now revealed* in this *age*, and though still widely not *understood, God willing* you may *continue* to more fully *understand* how much *like* Jesus it will be possible for you to become, but how infinitely beneath The Father you and I, and even, to the least extent, Jesus, will *for ever* be.

And if this sounds *blasphemous* to you, keep in mind I am only speaking for God, relaying what His Word tells us, though relaying things that when 'heard' by someone that only *useth milk*, being *unskilful in the word of righteousness*, and more prone to compartmentalization, and more prone to *deception* by the *leasing* (or *lies*) and *devices* of our *adversary the devil*, such whom on many things have been 'misinformed', and who think their 'misinformation' *seemeth right*, and nonetheless continue to be 'misinformed' mostly by others not much less *unskilful*.

And I mean that it's not safe to run and tell people these things, because if they're not really interested in '*discipleship*'—and I mean truly becoming a '*close friend*' of Jesus—letting them continue to think that there is no 'essential difference' between God and Jesus, and that we can never really be *like* Jesus because 'He is God and we aren't', won't *shame* them any more than they already will be, assuming they can *keep* their *faith* in Jesus' *sacrifice for* their *sins*. And I mean that mostly no one would be ready for such direct statements about the *nature* of God, and Jesus, and the *nature* of their own selves until about this point in this *study* anyway, or until acquiring this '*level*' of *skill and understanding* of The Word.

And feeling the need for 'safe bluntness' again, I mean that before reaching this '*level*' of *understanding*, such a discussion would more likely do more damage than good. And you yourself, even if truly *understanding* these '*studies*' so far, must *beware*, because even at this '*level*' there are still '*infinitely deeper—or higher—connections*' to the *precepts* in *use* yet to be *revealed* by God, ones we will not be ready for until we reach such '*levels*', and so on, *for ever*, because surely there is *no end* to how *high* or *deep* God's *knowledge* reaches. And I do intend to take us to the '*next level*', again and again, in this *study* and in the next.

And we will be dealing with another issue throughout the rest of this *study* that for the most part is also best kept to yourself, because those who have not reached '*mastery*' to this point are likely not yet ready to receive such *meat* without '*choking*', then *stumbling*, and that is, and more specifically, *disciples* must avoid being considered *blasphemous* by *babes in Christ*, even to those who have long been Christians but don't know they still are, those who remain, as Paul called the Corinthians, *not...spiritual...but...carnal*, who are easily enough identified by the *spiritual*, who *continue* to *labour in the word*, as such who can *discern* those who really do not, nor really *know* how. And even more specifically, I'm not just *teaching* you, though our Father's *greatness is unsearchable*, that it is possible to be enough *like* Jesus to be among His '*closest friends*', I'm also talking about the 'abracadabra quality' of how God sometimes *works*, but most times doesn't. I mean '*magically*' v. '*naturally*'. And of course Creation Week was entirely 'abracadabra-like'. But most of what we will be dealing with in the rest of this *study*—but by no means all—is not really '*magical*' in the same way, as it was mostly all set in motion Creation Week, and '*activated*' at The Fall, to occur

'naturally'. And I mean we will instead be more dealing with His **'natural works'** through His originally **'magically established' ordinances of heaven and earth**, with a **curse** 'thrown in', and that is, however **'magical'** we have seen these **ordinances** themselves really are, and however many at least **'magically initiated' great judgments** He has **'adjusted'** His Creation by along the way. In other **words**, by using what we have learned so far, I **hope** that **we** can come to a **much better 'level' of understanding** of the difference and relationship between His **ordinances** and **judgments**, and thereby of Him. And this is not my idea. This is how The Father Himself, throughout the **ages**—though less so in this one—has chosen to introduce Himself to **the world**, but especially to **his people**, as we will see.

And before you consider the use of the word “abracadabra” strictly **blasphemous** and only associated with **sorcery**, look up its origins. One dictionary source I found suggests it is Aramaic, derived from the phrase, “I create as I speak”, but would be more directly translated, “I create like the word”. Pretty close to how the Apostle John puts it, huh? And this same source reports that it translates even more accurately in the Hebrew as, “it came to pass as it was spoken.” So for me there is no question that this phrase was originally Hebrew, referring to the actual **'awesome' power of God**, but became a part of the Aramaic (Babylonian) language in due course, and therefore also and more popularly associated with **sorcery**, this later 'mis-association' evidently beginning around and after the time the Babylonian Empire dominated the land of Israel, which I would like to elaborate on further here, but instead will for now only direct you to Dr. Velikovsky's 4 volume series, *Ages in Chaos*, which we will investigate further, especially in **SECTION 11**. In them he shows in detail how in the time before The Rise of The Greek Empire under Alexander the Great, the Hebrew language strongly influenced **Egypt, Assyria, the Medes and Persians**, and **Babylon** as these **'world-ruling kingdoms'** had their 'tug of wars' with each other, mostly centered over the **kingdom or nation or house of Israel**, and much like how we saw the later 'tug of wars' of the 4 kingdoms of the Greek Empire, all again more or less 'over' **Israel**, and finally involving **Rome**, is detailed in **RGT**. However we will **continue** to add detail to all these **'bestly', 'world-ruling-class tug-of-wars'** over **Israel** in this **study** too.

So, **understanding** this distinction, that God **works** both **'magically'** but, though often a **blasphemous** thought to **babes**, mostly **naturally** through his **'magically pre-established laws'** or **ordinances of heaven and earth** together with The Curse, I promise you can come to a far **better 'level' of understanding** of this past and future **chronology** and **physicality** than likely anyone else you know, or even have ever heard of, and therefore get to **know** God far **better** than anyone else you know, which we will eventually use as a 'stepping stone' to get to **know** Him even **better** in other, even more controversial ways. This is what **'close friends'** of Jesus endlessly **do**. And this is no 'slighting' of the **prophets** or **apostles**, or the Church of the past, because it is The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God, or in other **words of God**, it is His **'natural process'** where His Word, over the period of His Creation, as He puts it...

...goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it

[Isa 55:11](#).

And being at the **'cutting edge'** of this **'natural process'** of God's, for you, means that the only ones who will **know** Him **better** than you, God willing, will

likely be limited to those further established in this **study** than you are, and a very—relatively—**‘few of the few’** others. And I mean I believe it is **true** that I am, at this writing, presently ‘spiritually alone’, as far the **deep things** that God has **revealed** to me, and however much I **hope** I am wrong about this. And I mean for me this has been a long, lonely journey, as, if it’s still a while till the 2040’s, it likely will be for you too—and I mean at least until you get to a place where you’re really ready to contact me. Because for me, at this writing, there is very little I am now coming to **know** about God that I am ready to share with anyone I know, as they are not ready for it. And it has been this way for me for decades now. I am starving for the **fellowship** of those who have only **‘mastered’ RGT**, let alone this **study** too. But I will never lose **hope**, because, though Revelation 2-3 **revealeth** some **‘discouraging inevitabilities’**, it also **declareth** some **‘encouraging promises’**, and because I **know** that God is **not willing that any should perish**, and because Jesus **declareth** that **the gates of hell shall not prevail** against His Church.

But many, **‘understandingly’** but **‘mistakenly’**, relate such **‘spiritual decline’** directly to a supposedly approaching Pre-rapture “Great Apostasy”—which you should remember is commonly **‘misrepresented’** as taking place before The Rapture in 2Thessalonians 2, and in The Discourse on the Mount of Olives—particularly, that as this supposed ‘slow collapse’ of the Church continues to weaken it before The Rapture, ‘still standing’ Christians will evidently only be ‘able’ to ‘huddle together’ in order to ‘hang on’ to Jesus’ **promise** that **the gates of hell shall not prevail**, and that ‘by their fingernails’, and only at best remaining **confident** that they can remain **washed**—and **‘rewashed’**—in His blood till He **cometh** for them. But to whatever extent this is may be **true**, this is not my experience. Yes, so far I—and it **seemeth** I alone, if God is not willing otherwise, but **God forbid**—am **able** to **correct** this **‘misinterpretation’**. So I am not being ‘pushed’ further and further to the ‘brink of salvation’ by this supposed Pre-Rapture “Great Apostasy”, but the contrary, I am **‘experiencing’** what I **perceive** to be the **‘cutting edge’** of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, praise God, His Son and His Spirit. And I tell you that a more **‘mature spiritual’ understanding** of this **‘prevailing’ promise** of Jesus is better associated with an **understanding** of what the Apostle Paul had to say relating to it. I mean though we must take seriously both his and the Apostle Peter’s **‘warnings’** of...

...damnable heresies...

...and of **ravening wolves** after whom...

...many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of [2Pe 2](#); ([Mat 7:15](#)),

and that,

...there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts [2Pe 3:3](#),

and that,

...evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived [2Ti 3:13](#),

still **we know** that the Apostles, in spite of such **damnable heresies, pernicious ways, scoffers**, and **evil men and seducers**, instead expect us to **continue in** Jesus’ Word, as Paul puts it,

...Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect [‘spiritually mature’] man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ [to the ‘cutting edge’ of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God]: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may [continue to] grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love
[Eph 4:13-16](#).

And Peter agrees saying,

Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless. And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you... Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness [2Pe 3:14-15,17](#),

concluding that to do so **we must instead, for ever,**

...grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen [Verse 18](#).

Amen. But yes, the **‘misinterpretation-misplacement’** of The Great Apostasy is doing great damage, because Christians, who expect anything, are expecting **things** can only get worse and worse before The Rapture, and that there is no stopping this. This is a **lie**, because Jesus assures us that, because of the Word of God, things can only get **better** and **better, for ever**, at least for a **few**, but even more so for a **‘few of the few’**, and that is, for **disciples indeed**, and however apparently successfully our **adversary the devil** is presently attempting to **prevail against** us. And I mean **we** should not just consider ourselves Christians ‘huddled together’ in **this present evil world** only barely **able** to continually **wash** ourselves in the **blood of Jesus** so that we won’t be **lost**, but instead we should consider ourselves **‘faithful soldiers’**, who **fear not them which kill the body**, but only **fear God**, and who with **fervent, diligent, vehement desire** and **zeal**, and **labour in the word, continue to fight, strive, work** and **run**, and who, **giving all diligence, press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus**. And **if** this is who **we** are, **who can be against us?** And if you are now really **spiritual**, then you **understand** that suchlike **disciples** and real **friends** of Jesus must be **‘soldiers’**, the kind **against** whom the **gates of hell** don’t stand a chance. Indeed, **disciples** like **us** are beyond defeat, because **knowing** that God is **for us**, **we know** that no one, by their own **power** or **might**, be they **armies** of **men** or **angels**, can succeed **against us**, unless by our own fault we **stumble**, or unless we neglect to **put on the whole amour of God**, because **we know** and daily **experience** that the Father and Jesus **make** Their **abode with** us, and that **we** will remain **more than conquerors** for as long as

They do, even **for ever**. However at this writing, any **cloud of witnesses** that could be **of the same mind** with me about all this, remains a matter of **hope** and **faith** for me, as presently I have not yet one **soul** I can even 'huddle with'.

But I am not **discouraged**, because, whoever these **disciples indeed** are, most of whom I'm sure I have not yet met, I **know** that God is nonetheless already **for us**, since, from **the beginning, our...**

...substance was not hid from [God], when [we were] made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. [God's] eyes [even then] did see [our] substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all [our] members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them [Psa 139:14-16](#).

Yes, surely God **is for us** because He **predestinated** us. And I **know** it is His **work** in me that motivates me to **work** so **diligently** and **fervently** to **press toward the mark of the prize** of such **'spiritually mature and eternal' fellowship**. And I also mean I **know**,

...it is God which worketh in you [my future **'fellow disciples'**, and in me] **both to will and to do of his good pleasure** [Phl 2:13](#).

And besides this, **we know** it is for God's **pleasure** that He **created us** in the first place ([Rev 4:11](#)), and that surely His **'greatest' pleasure** must come from those who **draw nigh to God**, who **seek 'close fellowship'** with Him, and **'close friendship'** with His Son, which is only really fully possible using the most **magnified** means that He has provided, which is His Word.

Remember King David **declareth** in a **psalm** about God that,

...thou hast magnified thy word above all thy name [Psa 138:2](#),

which implies **fellowship** with God without the **'growing knowledge'** of Him, that comes **if ye continue** to **study** His Word, cannot be as **magnified**, or as **'close fellowship'**, as it is with those who do, and to the extent that they do.

And besides this, Paul also **'encourages' us**, saying,

Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you [eventually] [Phl 3:15](#).

So yes, even if it's just me, or for as long as this is the case, I will be **thus minded** with the **perfect...will of God** for me—that I **continue** to **learn** by **study** of His Word, that is, **searching** for **answers** to **question** one **'increasingly higher level'** at a time. And **reaching** a place where I **know** this **'neverending process'** shows me that I am **approved unto God** to **rightly**, and **evermore** to **continue** in it, and that is, to **for ever** correct, improve and expand my **knowledge** of Him at **'infinitely higher and higher levels'** of **understanding**, though **for ever** remaining **'finite'** myself, and vulnerable, no matter how **high** the **'level'**, to **err**. Because I also **know** that only God's **knowledge** is **infinite**. But I also know that my **'commitment'** to **'endlessly seek'** corrected, improved and expanding **understanding** of Him through His Word affords me the kind of **amour of God** that even **the gates of hell** have no chance **against**. And for now, I may at least be comforted that The Millennium is coming, when, as the Prophet Habakkuk **declareth**,

...the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea [Hab 2:14](#).

And I am **comforted** again when **the LORD** Himself **speaketh** about The Millennium through the Prophet Isaiah, saying,

...the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea [Isa 11:9b](#).

And though surely this time has not yet come, my **faith** and **hope** is that I, and a **'few of the few' disciples indeed** that I will welcome beside me, will someday fully **possess**, along with me...

...the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory [1Co 2:7](#).

But for this to be for **our glory, God willing**, this beginning of **'discipleship'** must come before the start of The Millennium, though it must also necessarily **continue** during and beyond it **for ever**. And more than this, and in spite of myself, I **hope** that this 'beginning', even now with Christ in me, is the beginning of the preparation for this 'flood' of **the knowledge of the LORD** that must eventually come in The Millennium. **Praise God.**

And **you** might think that I would easily enough find a **cloud of witnesses** to **run** this **race** with me ([Heb 12:1](#)). But **knowing** all this, I am still **looking** for the first member of this **'corps of fighters'**, who will be part of this **'field of labourers'**, but also of this **'team of runners'**. And I mean I'm really still **looking**, after decades, for even just the first of such **witnesses**, who have come to **know** God as He has **revealed** Himself to me, and even if only by these **'studies'**.

But when I said, "in spite of myself", in part I mean that my present 'loneliness' is partly because, before reaching a 'sufficient level' of **perfection** myself—remember this just means **'spiritual maturity'**—that I have deeply **offended** some, who might otherwise have responded to God **speaking** through me. And no, I do not, at least yet, have an Apostle's **power**, certainly not that of Paul, who in one of his epistles he did twice **beseech** the Corinthians, **saying**,

Be...followers of me, even as I also am of Christ [1Co 4:16](#); [11:1](#),

and gained thereby many **followers**. But why should I not **hope** in Christ for this as much as God wills, as I **strive** to **seek** nothing else but Him, and **desire** little else otherwise but that others may **know him** as I do? And though my **faults** may **prevent**, at least to some extent, my being fully **able** be one of the **partakers** in God's **'cutting edge plans'**, neither they nor I can stop the eventually coming **wisdom among them that are perfect** from **'overflowing'** the Earth. In other **words**, nothing can stop the very **'cutting edge'** of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God from **continuing** to **accomplish** what it has been **sent** by God to **accomplish**, though again, I **know** this is not likely to happen too 'widely' until The Millennium, which will be to the eventual **shame**, and that is, 'lack' of **glory**, of relatively **many**.

And to be safely blunt again, remember that acquiring such **wisdom** in The Millennium will be too late for most in this **dispensation** to **receive a reward** for it. And again, the context and **'perspective'** of all this can be **'deduced'** from the **'preceptual interconnectivity'** related to [Habakkuk 2:14](#) and [Isaiah 11:9](#). And I

mean, to oversimplify, the 'coming dramatic rise' of The Knowledge of God in The Millennium will necessarily more result in **shame** than **glory** and **reward**. But these are topics better further pursued in the next **study** really, because again, if **you** are not ready to acknowledge the 'scripturally definable differences' between The Father, Jesus, and us, let alone the difference between God's '**magical**' power and His more '**naturally operating**' ordinances, then **you** will not likely be ready for the topics of the next **study**, and that is, until you get through this one. But neither will I, since I expect that I too need this '**perfecting process**', which in my case would be to **prove** myself ready to **teach** such things, and in your case to be ready to **study** such things. So like me, **run with patience**, and **wait on thy God continually** throughout this **study**, before beginning the next one.

And there is no boasting here, because again, I will only be '**speaking for God**' **with patience**, while I **wait on...God continually** as I **proceed**, which must include clearly identifying any speculation, and where His '**provably rightly-divided**' Word is my only validation. However the silence—no **ignorance**—of the Church on so many of the topics I will raise in this **study**, and in the next, cannot but make the '**cutting edge**' nature of this **study** increasingly and unavoidably manifest. But a '**truer perspective**' will not be enough. Nor will it be easily **attained**, let alone easily '**swallowed**'. I mean there should **naturally** be at least some '**choking**' at first, as is **naturally** the case for anyone '**inexperienced**' with such **strong meat**. And I expect **you** have '**experienced**' some of that already just in the previous 2-section exposé on the Theory of Evolution, which if you didn't '**master**' will cause you the need of additional '**throat-clearing**' to come, metaphorically speaking, of course. But this time I don't only mean that whatever '**perspective**' **you** should have so far is a one that must **for ever** be '**corrected, improved and expanded**', and also one for which we will need to continually develop '**skills**' that, when sufficiently **exercised**, will help us with an even more important '**perspective**'—God's—as far as humanly possible at this point in time, that is, which is an '**improved perspective**' of what I mean by the '**cutting edge**' nature of this **study** in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God. But let me clarify a little further.

Though **you** should **perfectly** enough already **understand** this, there is nevertheless no time wasted attempting to '**improve**' **understanding** of the consequences of this deadline. And I'm talking about a crucial point in time on the near horizon that should now be visible to anyone with **good understanding** of these '**studies**'—The Rapture. At this 'soon-coming' **moment** in time—ideally—don't you think **we** the '**aspiring friends**' of Jesus should **know everything** God means for **us** to **know**? I mean, as I said similarly before, The Father is not saying to Himself,

Those stupid humans! They are so hardhearted and dull. I should have made my word easier to decipher so that at The Rapture my Son's closest friends would know everything they are supposed to know! But as it is, the best of them are still too dull to understand what I wanted them to know by now!

This, of course, is ridiculous, as God instead **declareth**,

For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall

not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it [Isa 55:10](#).

So I heartily **believe** with **good understanding** by many hours, days and years of **experience** being **exercised** in **study**, that The Word of God **teacheth**, in the **strong meat** thereof, that we are not just on a *physical* and *chronological timetable*, but also on a **spiritual timetable** to **meet the Lord in the air**, at which time we may **boast in the LORD** that He did fully **accomplish** the **'growth'** in the **knowledge** of Him **whereto** He **sent it**. And this is not only what the **'cutting edge'** is, but also what it should be. And to take this metaphor further—into this **study**—I mean that **you should** now be glimpsing the 'still distant end' of this **'sword work'** for **us**. And I am just saying that **you** can by now **believe** my **promise**, as that of Jesus, that, **if ye continue**, you will **experience** yourself becoming part of **'pushing this blade's edge'**, to the limits of your **strength of knowledge**, and according to the **'skillfulness'** of your **labour in the word**, and finally **obtaining a perfect 'perspective'**, as God intends, where this **sword** 'completes' its **work**; I mean exactly the **work** He **predestinated** it to **accomplish** by this most crucial point in time. Talk about a 'slice of life'. But of course this is just a 'transition point' beyond which **obtaining further reward** is no longer possible for those **'raptured'**, though there will never be an end to how much we will forever **grow in grace, and in the knowledge** of God.

And suffer me to further clarify that The Rapture is the end to the opportunity to **labour, strive, press, fight** and **race** to **win a great reward** that can be part of **our glory**, and that you can become **worthy of**, and that is, by **'pressing toward'** such a **mark** and **prize** and **high calling of God in Christ Jesus**. And remember that such a **'gloriously bright' reward** is what the Archangel Gabriel tells Daniel about. Gabriel tells him that the most wise, who can only **be** so by having the most knowledge and **understanding** of The Word, **shall...**

...shine as the brightness of the firmament...

But Gabriel also tells Daniel that **'Kingdom builders', 'gifted'** and/or otherwise **enabled** by God, who **turn many to righteousness**, will also **shine...**

...as the stars for ever and ever [Dan 12:3](#).

But again, such **'eternally distinguishable' reward** will only **be** for **work** that is completed, as the Apostle John puts it, **while it is day**, or up to the point of The Rapture, though, as those with **good understanding** should also **know**, I am only talking about one Station here, as some of this will **apply** to all Stations, each involving different 'deadlines'. And yes, I resolved that since all the Stations are made up of The Immortal Sons of God, capitalization is appropriate—I mean since these could be considered singular or plural proper nouns. And again, at the risk of sounding **blasphemous to babes**, I'm not necessarily implying 'divinity', though capitalization is considered appropriate for that reason too.

But **we** might also notice the difference in these **'brightness levels'** here. I mean the **wise**, that is, by The Word of God, and the hardworking **'Kingdom builder'**, which I'm guessing more refers to someone's **calling** and/or **gifts** than the **knowledge of God**, are portrayed by Gabriel as being **rewarded** with starkly different **'brightnesses'**. Of course **we** might logically conclude, if I am **understanding** Gabriel **'correctly'**, that the **wise** are **naturally** 'Kingdom builders', and **'enablers'** of other 'Kingdom builders', since they **shine** 'like the midday Sun', while **'Kingdom builders'**, however clearly visible to all, though

evidently not as **wise, shine** only 'like points of light in the night sky'. This **seemeth** to be a big difference. Am I reading too much into to this metaphor? Maybe, but I really don't think so. I think there is a lot more that should be read into it. And I mean I think Gabriel is making clear here that the best '**Kingdom building**' can only be **accomplished**—from our '**perspective**'—by the **wise**, or by those who, by having the **most knowledge** and **understanding** of The Word, and who therefore cause the **least** damage to the **kingdom** in the **process**, are **best used** of God to do so, and therefore **worthy** to be **rewarded** with much **more 'eternal brightness'** in the New Heaven and Earth, don't **you** think? And you should **know** that I think that these '**varying brightness levels**', from 'noon Sun' to 'dimlit', are not simply metaphorical, but will literally be an '**eternal testimony**' of how much we really did **declare** our **love** of God **before** The Rapture. And I recommend **meditation** on these **precepts** from now on between here and The Rapture, expecting a lot more **revelations** along the way, and not just for your own soul's sake, but for the sake of the soul's you might be **used** of God to **save**, as opposed to ones, because of your **ignorance**, you are **not able to help**, let alone **harm**.

But moving back toward the focus of this **study**, **when** on God's 'timeline' is this 'deadline' of ours? It most precisely appears to be, as we will come to '**better understand**' throughout the remainder of this **study**, very near or at the end of the Year of Creation 5992, The Great Tribulation immediately following, which is at the beginning of the year 5993. And I say "near or at the end" because there are a number of days between the start of The Feast of Trumpets and the following, more likely still 'pre-memorial', Feast of Atonement, though I am now more inclined to suppose that The Rapture happens on a 'pre-memorial' Feast of Trumpets too, as I can now see how such a scenario might actually work this way. I mean I'm leaning toward the idea that The Feast of Trumpets is marked by The Final Harvest, by Jesus, near the end of The Great Tribulation—not that The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church won't happen on a Feast of Trumpets too. I think both of these '**raptures**' will, but that the one on The Final Harvest casts the more significant **shadow of things to come** [Col 2:17](#). Other than this, I again leave such contemplation to you. But to give you a hint, I must see fit to leave many 'in the dark' to suppose so, though for **some** of them, I can only **hope**, it is only for the **good** of their '**eternal souls**'.

However if you are instead someone who benefits by avoiding this **darkness**, and are **able** to **watch**, and **take heed** to the **more sure word of prophecy**, and are developing some **experience** doing this on your own—like through the 'simulated' **experience** in [RGT](#), for example—you will be **able** to **see** that **we** are, at this writing in 2015, still a few decades short of that crucial '**restraint-removing event**' that must happen during **the time of the end**.

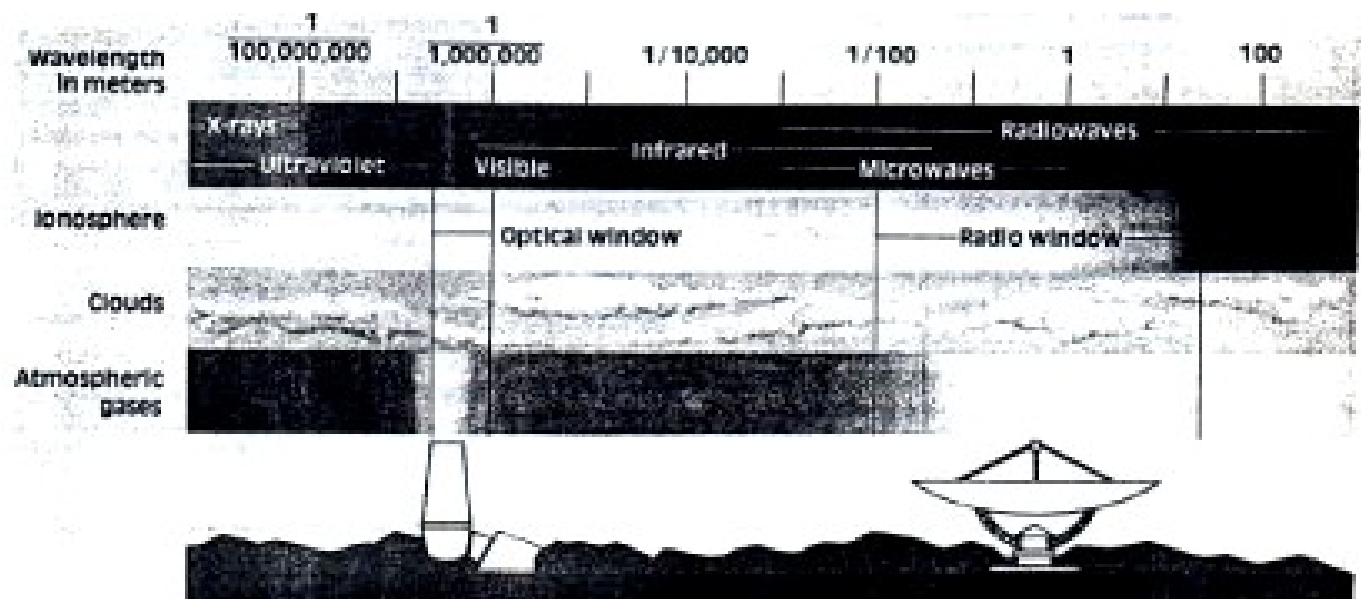
Of course you should also '**deduce**' that this means that The Great Tribulation ends at the end of the year 6000, and that The Millennium begins at the beginning of the year 6001, and that New Jerusalem is going to come down out of the New Heaven to the New Earth at the end of the year 7000—or at the beginning of what would be the year 7001—and you should **understand** that this **heaven and earth shall pass away** at this time, along with the memory of its history and its '**multi-cursed**' physicalities—all this being part of what God's 7 Day Plan for The Ages of Creation is meant to **accomplish**, which is mainly to establish His **everlasting kingdom** with His Son over the Immortal Sons of God, including both the '**immortal faithful**' **angels** and the '**immortally-retabernacled**' **souls** of **redeemed** men and women.

Disciples, therefore, inspired by this **hope**, **should** also be able to comprehend

that in [RGT](#) we took a ‘panoramic look’ mostly at the last 3 **days** of this ‘1,000-years-per-day week’, focusing on the beginning of the 5th Day of The Ages of Creation—Jesus’ 1st Coming—up to the presently ongoing, but soon to end 6th Day, and especially on this 6th Day’s **end**, which involves its final and still coming **week** of regular years, The Great Tribulation, at the end of this second to last, 1,000-year **day**. But we also focused on the history, and future, and **‘spiritual nature’** of the **‘7-headed’, ‘world-ruling’ beasts**—yes plural, since in one sense there are two of them, Satan and the Antichrist, but in another they include all the **‘satanically-subordinate’ princes**, otherwise identified as **the seven heads** of the two **beasts**, with the Antichrist becoming **the eighth**, yet all nonetheless acknowledgeable as **beasts**. And we also looked at the past and future of the eventually **‘three-times-risen-and-fallen’, ‘beast-riding’ whore** of **Babylon**, all this **evil doing** spanning from around the end of the 2nd to the end of the 6th Day. And we even considered to some extent the 7th Day, The Millennium, especially the construction and operations of the Millennial Temple and Millennial Israel, and as much as I could, beyond The 7th Day, into The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ. Of course there should always be **‘ongoing correction, improvement and expansion’** of **knowledge** and **understanding**, and thereby of **wisdom**, and thereby **‘increasingly’ greater love** and **service**, and thereby **‘increasingly’ greater[eternal] riches** and **reward**, or at least the potential for more of all that, and I mean, **if ye continue** in **study** and **revelations** over time, which is my **testimony**, these **‘studies’** being my **proof**.

So now, in order **better** to **understand** the **prophecy** that explains the remaining ‘Day’ or so that is left, it will be necessary to focus more on the earlier **days** of this **week**. Accordingly, in this **study** it will be somewhat turned around. This time we’ll be focusing more on the first 4 days, but ultimately applying some of what we learn to the last 3. Why some and not all? All I will say about this at this juncture is that **disciples** should also by now be **able** to **‘deduce’** at least some of the reasons for this too. So we’re starting at the point where **God** took 7 literal **days** to **create** this Universe, but with the **understanding** that this is also the beginning of His 7,000-year plan to finish His, His Son’s, and The Spirit’s **work** in this present Creation, which, as the Apostle Peter assures us, is commonly revealed by Him in His Word as if it all happens in just **7 days**, when actually, in all cases, He must mean that the entire Creation lasts exactly 7,000 years. And the primary purpose of this plan of His, revealed most specifically in the **strong meat of scripture**, spanning these seven, 1,000-year **days**, with varying and overlapping **ages**, each otherwise known as a **dispensation**, is to ultimately **separate** and **gather** His variously **‘stationed’** Immortal Sons of God to Himself to **live** with Him and His Son on New Earth **for ever**, some in New Jerusalem, whether on the top **foundation** with Him and His Son, or on one of the lower ones, or whether otherwise under **kings** in **the nations...which are saved**, (not to mention, we **know** that there are now **in heaven...white horses** [Rev 19:14](#), probably with other **‘immortal animals’**, etc., too), while every other **soul** becomes permanently **imprisoned** inside New Earth where they **will burn with fire unquenchable** in **the lake of fire, for ever and ever**.

But you shouldn’t believe this ‘chronology’, let alone God’s **purpose** for it, unless, like me, you too can **prove** it with **scripture**, necessarily showing you are no longer **unable to bear** such **strong meat** connections of **precepts**, and **things** that are **hard to be uttered**, and necessarily **things** that the **dull of hearing**, or **babes in Christ** cannot **hear** or **bear**. And if this section so far has been a little **hard** for you to **bear**, this means you should backtrack awhile first. Go back to the beginning of this **study**, or even **better**, back to [RGT](#). I do it all the



time. Since the day I seemingly arbitrarily considered my work in [RGT](#) finished, in June, 2012, besides referencing it continually, I have finished reading it, at this printing, another 24½ times, though I have also been continually at work on this **study** since then too. Why? One reason is that it gives me **rest** and **refreshing**, as well as what I call ‘stew time’. But also with every reading I come to new **revelations** that go beyond the **study**, which again, is something I have already promised you—**if** you do the same. And by “arbitrarily” I mean that though I’ve had **revelations** about why I became convinced the Lord wanted me to stop and move on to this **study**, I **understand** that some if not most of His direction of me—and I often directly **experience** ‘receiving direction’ from Him—must be to some extent beyond my **understanding**. But I also said, “I’ve had **revelations**” about why He had me stop, those mostly relating to the **assurance** I was given that the **study** had reached a ‘**cutting edge**’ place where the ongoing ‘**correction, improvement and expansion**’ it would **for ever** need was nonetheless safely enough beyond where it might too much hinder ‘**hungry**’ **babes**, while providing a generally **safe** and **strong** enough **foundation to build** on without too much **danger** that necessary and unavoidable ‘adjustments’ to it could bring it all down—I mean no less than how any new **revelations** ‘**grows**’. Still, for the most part, I cannot explain this ‘transition point’, only **testify** that He ended my **work** on the last **study**, and that on following day I started my **work** on this one. So if you’re sure you ‘feel’, at this point, ready to **continue** with this **study**, let’s go on.

So to start with, we’re going back to the first chapter of Genesis to **learn**—yes, for most this should be a learning **experience**—how to begin to **understand** the chronology and physicality of God’s **creation** from His ‘**perspective**’. And I mean at the ‘**level**’ I am presenting it in this **study**, and as much as it is possible that ‘**finite beings**’ can **understand** the **creation** of an **infinite** God at a ‘point-in-time’, and on a ‘**cutting-edge**’ basis. The story begins like this.

A little less than 6,000 years ago—as we’ll attempt to establish in this section—**God created** a Universe of immeasurably—assumably ‘endless’—**dark, empty space**, with only the Earth in it, the **ground** being relatively **flat** from its “Genesis rock” up to its **topsoils**, so that the **water** on it covered it completely. And since it is reasonable to assume **God** originally set it **spinning**—in a way that this action alone could define The 1st Day—He must have also at the same time **created** the multitude of **interacting**, ‘razor’s-edge-precise’, **factors** and **forces** of **physics**, including the ‘**precise**’ **size, composition, structure, and shape** of **the earth**, and including the ‘short-lived’ **stability** of **atomic forces** holding the **molecules** of **water**

and *rock* together, but also the *forces* keeping them from collapsing onto themselves. And I'll tell you what I mean by 'short-lived' shortly. And along with establishing that still elusive "theory", now called "The Law of Everything" —the totality where **by him all things consist** [Col 1:17](#)—He surely included the **creation** of *gravity* on The 1st Day too, to hold the *water* from 'spinning off into space', etc.

During that first **day** he also **created** the entire *electromagnetic spectrum* of *light waves*, from the incredibly *short wavelengths* of *visible light waves* and *x-rays* —in between 380 to 740

nanometers and 0.01 to 10 *nanometers*, respectively, to 1 *millimeter* to 100 *kilometers* long *radio waves*, to 10,000 to 100,000 *kilometer*, 'weather-influencing', ELF (*extremely long frequency*)

waves—all these in the wide range of the *wavelengths* of *light*, which came into existence within the first 24 hour period after God **created the heaven and the earth**. But He did not **create** *visible light sources* until a few days later. See chart of [The Electromagnetic Spectrum, p.325](#).

But certainly it's **possible**—as **all things are** for **God**—that **he** instead initially **created** a 'ball of water' that maybe in the next couple of days He had to greatly reduce in quantity to make room for all the **ground** that would be needed beneath that *water*, or that instead was simply 'pushed out' to accommodate the later **created ground**, 'resizing' the Earth. But an original, 1st-Day 'ball of water' seems less natural and therefore less 'God-like' to me. One reason being that, with Genesis rock existing originally, it makes it possible for the '**precise**' *diameter*, *mass* and *density* of the Earth to remain virtually, from then on, unchanged—with some minor but 'catastrophic' exceptions, as we will see—which **seemeth** necessary from the 2nd Day on, since its *size*, *mass* and *density* become, from then on, increasingly interconnected with the multitude of 'razor's-edge-precise' *factors* and *forces* that make *life* as we know it possible.

And He must have **created** *electromagnetism* on The 1st Day too, the Earth itself on that **day** also becoming a planet-sized *electromagnet*, immediately beginning to move and arrange whatever *atmosphere* then existed. And yes, it surely was originally a *permanent electromagnet*, as I will also explain shortly. But maybe God didn't use the *electromagnetism* He **created** on The 1st Day to make Earth a *permanent electromagnet*, because that could have waited, and may have not been **done** till the **second day**.

On The 2nd Day we can begin to see that **he, God**—and when I refer to **him**, as the language of Genesis 1 indicates, I mean The Father, The Son, and The Spirit together—**created** *electro-magnetism* for some very special, but eventually changing **purposes**. Originally, on the 2nd Day, God was able to use Earth's then initially somewhat stronger *permanent electromagnetic field* to hold a layer of **the waters which were above the firmament**, or **above** the *sky*, (see the 4th and 5th Days to **understand** that the **firmament** is the *sky*). And these **waters** which I **imagine** were **above** the *sky* that I'm guessing were 'funneled' there by God into a *layer* of Earth's *atmospheric magnetic field*, probably entering this *layer* through the *magnetic poles*, like it was apparently largely later 'evacuated' through these **windows of heaven** in The Flood. And the psalmist evidently **understood** all this, when he explained,

Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever. Thou coveredst it with the deep [the waters from the Earth] as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains [not submerging them but above them in the sky]. At thy rebuke they fled

[during The Flood]; **at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away** [seen as the *electromagnetic exchange* between Mercury and Earth, as we will see]. **They [the waters] go up by the mountains** [*submerging* them in The Flood]; **they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou** [after the subsiding of The Flood] **hast founded for them. Thou hast set a bound that they [the waters] may not pass over; that they turn not again to** [completely] **cover the earth** [though some of these ‘boundaries’ have been and will be ‘passed over’ again in God’s later **great judgments**] [Psa 104:5-9](#).

But I’ve **interpreted** maybe a little more here than what the psalmist **understood**. I do this to raise **questions** I hope to eventually **answer**, which is what the **experience** of **growing in the knowledge of God** is all about. Because a lot of the time all you can do is **ask** your **questions** and **wait** for **answers**. And it certainly took me decades to get some of the **answers** that you may receive simply by completing this **study**.

But for now you should see that the psalmist is showing us that it was common **knowledge** among God’s people that, before The Flood, **the earth** was ‘**founded**’ by God—and aren’t we talking about the original **creation** of Genesis rock here, and that being before the first day starts?—and **that it should not be removed for ever**, in this case indicating that it was originally intended, or should I say originally **made** to last **for ever**. We’ll talk about the original ‘permanency’ of **the earth**, and its present state that ‘lacks permanency’ as we go. But this psalmist, and therefore the children of Israel, **knew** that there was a quantity of—not *mist* or *vapor* or *ice*—but *liquid water* in the *sky*, **above the mountains**, and that it was eventually used by God to help *inundate* the World in The Flood. Surely Noah would have passed this on.

By-the-way, **the voice of God’s thunder**—maybe an *electromagnet exchange* **he** instigated and controlled, the resulting *vibrations* of which **he** likely also used literally like ‘vocal cords’ to **speak** with—is the point **at** which **they, the waters** in the *sky*, began to be **hasted away**, mostly, evidently, through the *magnetic poles*, otherwise known as the **windows of heaven**. I mean we can assume, as we will see, that it is this ‘**voiced**’ **thunder** of God that caused these **windows from on high to open**. And I mean that this act apparently included the *short-circuiting* of Earth’s *magnetic field*, weakening it sufficiently enough to **open** these *north* and *south pole* **windows of heaven** so that **the waters** held in the *sky* ‘poured out’ through them and helped to *reinundate* the Earth, all this surely manipulated and controlled by God—though nonetheless likely mostly ‘set in motion’ by God on the 4th Day of Creation—and finally **accomplished** through the ‘perfectly timed and placed close interaction’ of the *magnetic fields* of the Planets Mercury and Earth.

But I say **the waters** ‘pouring out’ through the *magnetic poles* only ‘helped’ *reinundate* the Earth because, evidently, that would not have been enough. The **rain** would not have been enough to finish the job either. And I mean that God also simultaneously ‘squeezed’ *water* out of the *ground* when **the fountains of the great deep** were **broken up**, while evidently ‘balancing’ the *gravitational attraction* and *momentum* of the Planet Mercury with Earth’s, causing a ‘planet-stretching tug-of-war’ which apparently literally ‘squeezed’ *water* out of the *ground*. But be **careful**, these are not really **answers**, just more **interpretation** that requires the **exercise of many infallible proofs** before they should be accepted as **sound doctrine**. Otherwise it’s just the speculation raised by **questions**. And in this case, and at this point, and as it most often is with ‘**meatier**’ **questions**, **waiting** and **patience** are unavoidable because there’s a lot more you need to **understand** before you’ll be ready to ‘**swallow**’ all the **many... proofs** required

for a fuller **understanding**. This would be a **'level'** of **proofs** involving the kind of **'meatier' sound doctrine** that **babes** would be **unable to bear**. But even **you** too should expect some **'swallowing'** and **'choking issues'** in your first attempts to **eat** this **'meal'**.

And one thing you need to **understand** first is that it turns out that 20 *feet* of *water* is sufficient to 'shield out' all harmful *solar radiation*, the worst *particles* of which are *alpha particles*—remember them?—because these *hadrons*, lacking *electrons*, naturally 'steal' yours as they pass through you, rendering affected *atoms* 'broken', and therefore toxic, 'faster than speeding bullet'. And some have recognized that this is the most significant cause of *aging*. Indeed, without **'waters in the sky'**, *solar radiation*, and especially *alpha particle bombardment*, is 'tearing us all apart' *electron by electron*, so that now, over no more than about, say, 120 years, 'the battle is lost'. So when God was about to drain all **the waters** in the *sky* onto the Earth, while simultaneously preparing to 'squeeze' a lot of *water* out of the *ground*, part of **his** intention evidently was, by removing the *water* 'shielding' harmful *solar radiation*, to 'significantly shorten' future *lifespans*. And you can tell this was part of **his** intention when **he** said,

**My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh:
yet his days shall be** ['reduced to'] **an hundred and twenty years**
[Gen 6:3](#).

So God is confirming here that his intentions are to 'reduce' *lifespans* from near 1,000 years to no more than 120 years. But the **"yet"** in this verse tells me something more, that this is an act of **mercy** as well as **judgment**, that though **mankind** deserves to be exterminated at this point, God is generously letting them continue on, though with a 'reduced', but still **'undeserved'**, up to 120-year *lifespan*. And surely removing **the water** from **above** the *sky* is how He made this change, because this exposed us to a much higher level of *alpha particle bombardment*, and other harmful *solar radiation*, necessarily significantly shortening *lifespans*.

And you should already **know** that before The Flood **man** lived to near 1,000 years. But this tells us something more too, several things really. First, that **the waters...above** the *sky* were less than 20 feet deep, at least after The Fall when God **cursed** the Earth. I mean if and when it was over 20 feet deep **mankind** could have *lived* even longer, presumably—like God originally **founded** the Earth to last—**for ever**. I mean the 'permanency' of the Earth and **life** is implied before The Fall. So there was likely no *alpha particle bombardment*, due to **the waters...above** the *sky* being over 20 feet deep before The Fall. But after **sin entered**, it was evidently somehow reduced to below 20 feet deep, so that **mankind** became no longer **able** to **live for ever**, though until The Flood, he was evidently able to **live** to near 1,000 years. This is why I say that it was after The Fall that the **'waters in the sky'**, as part of The Curse, were 'reduced' to less than 20 feet deep. So what changed with The Curse and Fall that would 'reduce', and finally 'drain' the **'waters in the sky'**? Here's a clue. Remember God said,

**In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto
the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto
dust shalt thou return**[Gen3:19](#).

Understand this change? **Death** also **entered** because of **sin**. This confirms that before The Curse Adam and Eve had the potential to **live for ever**. But this also

must confirm that the *physical* Universe could have lasted **for ever** in its '**uncursed state**' too. Hard to **believe**? Then why do you **believe** God can **create** a New Heaven and New Earth that can last **for ever** after **he** gets rid of this old one? And remember how the psalmists put it. Indeed **he** originally **...laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever.**

This also implies that not only did **the waters...above** the sky 'shrink' to below 20 feet deep because of The Curse, but that the whole Creation began to 'decay'. And I mean there was a new **law of sin and death** operating in Creation that had not previously existed, including, in the *physical realm*, the *law of entropy*, now popularly known as the Second Law of Thermodynamics, which is that all *systems*, from *atoms* to *galaxies*, and whether *inorganic* or *organic*, now 'naturally progress' toward *disorder* and/or **death**. And the point is that they did not do so before The Fall.

And I mean that all the *forces* and *factors* that God had originally set to last **for ever** were changed so that everything began to slowly *decay*, and so that the *stability* of the Creation could only continue another, let's say, 7,000 years or so, where before this, it and every **living thing** could have been 'sustained permanently', with some *lifeforms* **living** literally **for ever**. And of course God knew that Adam and Eve would inevitably **sin**. But **understand** who God is. His original implied offer to Adam and Eve was real—that they and their progeny really could have **lived** literally **for ever**, supported by the **garden of Eden**, if they had not **sinned**.

So let's consider a couple more examples of this 'change'. There was *electromagnetism* before The Fall, and at the perfect strength for holding **the waters** in the *sky*, as well as so that...

...there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground...

...which perfectly supported all *plantlife*. But there was not likely *electromagnetic decay*—the 'slow dying' of *magnetic fields* by *half-lives*—until after The Fall. And I mean before The Fall surely *electromagnetic strength* remained *constant* and did not *decay* as it does now, and would have, for example, supported **the waters** in the *sky* at a depth of over 20 feet **for ever**. However remember that Earth's *electromagnetic field*, though now *decaying*, and thereby allowing **the waters** in the *sky* to 'shrink' below 20 feet deep before The Flood, and 'drain' altogether in The Flood, is still useful and necessary to 'shield' us from the *harmful solar radiation* that would 'blow away' our *atmosphere*, and still is strong enough to help drive the weather that brings **rain**—so that we still have a chance at those **hundred and twenty years**. But very soon—I mean within decades—I expect Earth's *magnetic field* is going to be recharged once more, much like it evidently was by Venus, becoming strong enough to hold water in the *sky* once more, at least for another 1,000 years, as we will consider more closely throughout this **study**.

Other examples of the 'change' that occurred with The Curse are *atomic* and *radioactive decay*, where though *alpha*, *beta* and *gamma radiation* now help *atoms* and *molecules* maintain a certain *stability*, there is no longer *permanent stability* at the *atomic level*. I mean it can be assumed that *atomic* and *radioactive decay* also began with The Curse, which leads to another **revelation** for me, and also to one of those **infallible proofs** mentioned above.

The "trillions" of tiny *polonium* and *uranium deposits* God put in Genesis rock were evidently not just to 'mark' its originally *solid state*, because what these "trillions" of *microscopic deposits* really 'mark', by 'discoloring' the *rock* with 'microscopic halos' or, when 'cross-sectioned', tiny 'bull's-eye patterns', was not

The Creation, but The Fall of Adam and Eve. Yes, the *rock* was apparently not ‘marked’ immediately after it was **created**, because *polonium* and *uranium* surely did not undergo *radioactive decay* originally. And surely all *atoms* were originally ‘permanently’ *stable*. So the *rocks* began to be ‘marked’ when God **cursed** the Earth. More specifically, ‘halo-marked’ Genesis rock records the beginning of *radioactive decay*. It is one of the **many infallible proofs** of The Fall of Adam and Eve observable in Creation itself.

And by these examples you can see that The Curse was an even more dramatic **judgment**—as well as **mercy**—than The Flood. With The Flood, where **the waters** were ‘evacuated’ from the *sky*, we lost the potential for hundreds of years of **life**, but with The Curse we lost **for ever**. Still, ‘**mercifully**’, and because of Jesus, we have a chance to get **for ever** back, all according to God’s 7 Day Plan. And we’ll deal a lot more with the eventual **purposes** and related **judgments** of this 2nd Day of Creation in the next section about The Flood.

In the third 24 hour period then, ‘**abracadabra**’, God raised the *ground* above the *water* in apparently just ‘one place’, apparently lowering the *rock* somewhat everywhere else, since **scripture** records that the Earth—or the *land* of Earth—was not **divided** [Gen 10:25](#) until much later, after The Flood. And again, the ‘balanced raising and lowering’ of **ground** surely maintained the ‘razor’s-edge-precise’ *size*, *mass* and *density* the Earth would require to ‘interact’, as God had planned, with all the other *heavenly bodies* that He would soon **create**. And I assure you, **knowing** what I have **learned** of God, that when I say “interact”, I expect you have not yet begun to **imagine** all that is to be **understood** about these ‘God-designed interactions’, though we will attempt to do just that in this **study**. And I mean you will only ‘begin’ to **imagine** them, but not fully **understand**—even at the level of this **study**—unless you finally see how much more you can **understand** because of our work in **SECTION 2** and **3**. And I mean when I have finally made ‘honest scientists’ out of you—though having trained you so far using mostly imaginary, erroneous evidence and theories—only then will you be ready for a ‘**mature**’ **understanding** of reality, and that at a ‘**higher level**’ than you’ve ever seen before, but ultimately using real evidence to **understand** God’s real **ordinances of heaven and earth**, including that they are now causing the Universe to *decay*, having been re-**ordained** at The Fall, where God re-**appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth**, and of all **creation**. But for most of the rest of this **study**, and to introduce you **better** to God, our attention will turn to our *decaying* Solar System, where *decaying orbits*, the resulting *collisions*, *gravitational collapse* and *volcanism*, and unimaginably more, are ‘**perfectly orchestrated**’ by God to bring **great judgments** upon His enemies, and **great deliverance** for His people here on Earth, even by **wondrous** and **marvellous works**.

Also in the third 24-hour period God...

...brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

But plainly, after The Curse, *plants* were no longer as **good**. I mean now some of them can actually kill us, though at the same time be useful for *medicines*, etc., which I’m assuming isn’t so much like it was before The Fall. I would guess that even the ones that now feed us do it less beneficially than they used to. And some *species* of *plants* have been made *extinct* by ‘God-delivered cataclysms’—as we will see in the later sections. And *variation* of **kinds** or *species* has run its ‘God-designed-and-influenced’ course. But it is clear that there are not, nor ever have

been any new repropagating species of *plants* since The 3rd Day of Creation. There is only continuing *variation of plants* **after their kinds**—and only by the ones that haven't gone *extinct* since this **day**. However there are 'sorcerer's-apprentice-like scientist' *bioengineering* 'new species', but really, and again, they're just hastening The 2nd Coming of our Lord, much like '**bad angels**' before The Flood hastened that cataclysm.

And maybe this could have gone without saying, but the *soil* on top of the Genesis rock must have been **created** too—likely along with *plants*. I mean I expect you know that *soil* is as much an *organic creation* of God as it is also in other respects *inorganic*. 'Good soil' is not only full of minerals, but also full of innumerable **living organisms**, all these *insects* and *microorganisms* playing a part before The Fall evidently only to sustain **life**, though after it apparently becoming a mixed bag of **life** and/or **death**. And I will remind you here that *plants* are **created** a **day** before God 'turns on the lights' that they will need to *grow*. This alone shows us that the only reckoning of time that makes sense in these '**days of creations**' is literal 24 hour periods.

In the fourth 24 hour period what was **created** has lost its 'permanence' too. Remember the Hoyle State, a name coined in that early paper of Sir Dr. Fred Hoyle, where he worked out the 'only possible means' of *stellar nucleosynthesis*—the imagined *chemical processes* by which *stars* 'form', 'burn', and finally 'die', in which he recognized that the odds of producing enough *carbon* in the *Big Bang* were slim to none unless one particular *thermonuclear reaction*, the *triple-alpha process*, was operating at the end of the life of at least some stars, a process that could generate enough *carbon*, but would require the *carbon nucleus* to have a very specific *atomic resonance energy* if it was to work. And remember this *process* became the 'only possible process' by which *stars* 'could' produce the abundant amount of *carbon* found in the Universe, this 'abundance' thought to be necessary to eventually 'evolve' *carbon-based lifeforms*. And remember this 'process' is only expected to work at the end of a *star's* billions-of-years-long *main sequence* when its increasing collapse generates sufficient *heat* to promote it. So this 'short-lived process' was not expected to be able to produce the 'abundance' of *carbon* that now exists in this Universe unless the *nuclear energy* of *carbon atoms* was 'razor's-edge precisely suited' to sustain this *reaction*. And remember that based on these considerations, Dr. Hoyle made a prediction of what the *energy levels* in the *carbon nucleus* had to be, which later experiments proved to be correct.

But you should also remember that the *proton-proton chain reaction* that supposedly allows *stars* to *burn* for billions of years, that eventually prepares the way for the 'overheated grand finale' of 'abundant' *carbon production*, requires the *production* and 'spraying out' of quite a lot of *neutrinos*. And you must remember that it was confirmed almost half a century ago that these *neutrinos* are not forthcoming, making these reactions and processes really just fantasy. But the Hoyle State of the *carbon atom* is not a fantasy. Why? Well, evidently the *heat* to *produce carbon atoms* in 'abundance' did not originate in 'dying stars' but in the Lord's **breath** on The Fourth Day of Creation. That's my guess anyway. And I'm guessing something like the *proton-proton chain reaction*, but a much more *stable* version of it, used to occur in *stars* and in our Sun until The Fall, when, as you should also expect, a 'change' occurred in the way our Sun 'burns', where its 'measurable shrinking'—while producing few *neutrinos*—reveals that it's now only 'burning' mostly by *gravitational collapse*, it's 'main sequence' having been cut from

'sustainably permanent' to just several thousand years.

But even *evolutionists* don't expect *stars* to 'last forever', so how could I expect them to, even before The Fall? I think I had a **revelation** about this fairly recently. It was brought to my attention, as all real **revelations** from God are, sometime after I **learned** about the **Kreutz Sungrazers** (🔗 → ctrl-click on icon). Remember that these *comets*, comprising over a third of all known *comets*, are thought to share a common origin. And recall that of these about 1,500 *comets*, which by ongoing discovery are steadily increasing in number, about 500 having become *short period comets*. The SOHO Satellite picture on p.330 shows one of these comets having just crashed into the sun with another one close behind evidently destined for the same fate. And the fact that $\frac{1}{3}$ of them have apparently moved from longer to shorter period *orbits* seems to indicate that they are being 'staged' to slowly feed the Sun. And it was this thought that made me think that there was a bigger picture here to **behold**. What was this **revelation**? It was that God had other reasons for making His Universe apparently **infinite** other than to reveal that He is. And I mean that besides **for signs, and for seasons**, there was at least one more reason, that reason being that it needed to be **infinite** in order to **for ever** 'feed' our Sun and *planets* with the *elements* they 'exhaust' in order to continue to '**sustain**' the Earth **for ever**. And it had already occurred to me that the outer *giant planets* were Earth's 'guardians', so to speak, placed there by God to protect Earth from '**unpredestinated**', '**killer**' *asteroids* and *comets*. And we will examine some of their other **purposes** 'since The Fall' in the remainder of this **study**. But it had not occurred to me that these *giant planets* would also have been necessary to help 'attract' and 'stage' all needed 'sustenance' into our Solar System that would enter from outside of it. And now maybe you too can glimpse one of the possible original **purposes** of God's **infinite, everlasting** Universe, that it was originally meant to be the 'endless resupplier' of every necessary *element*, and all expended *energy* that our Solar System 'slowly exhausts', and that the entire Universe—I now think it obvious—was originally 'staged' to 'eternally resupply' these needs. But again, we're talking about the **purposes** of the **infinite** Universe before The Fall. And this, at least to a large extent, is no longer needed. Now, in its *decaying state*, it has another **purpose** that is directly involved with **judgment** and **redemption** as we will see.



By the way, there is another 'brilliant' *evolutionist* who evidently 'stumbled', evidently without recognizing God, onto one of God's provisions for a 'permanent source' of *energy* before The Fall, and I mean besides the Sun, and that would be Dr. Herndon and his 'theory' that at the center of the Earth is a natural *nuclear fission reactor* that supposedly now 'powers' Earth's 'necessary-for-life' *geomagnetic field*. Remember Dr. Herndon thinks there's still one operating down there because of the *fission byproducts* that turn up in *lava flows*. Of course I think these 'derivatives' turn up because there used to be a natural *fission reactor* 'operating' down there a few thousand years ago, the byproducts of which are still being expelled from the Earth. But again, like the Sun, there's no longer any reason for one to still be working down there since The Fall. And besides, there have been numerous opportunities since The Fall to *recharge* Earth's *geomagnetic field* in the last few thousand years, as we will see.

And I could belabor the point that the *visible light sources*—the Sun, Moon and stars—being **created** on The 4th Day—are all out of *evolutionary order* too. I mean

some Christians don't realize that they think God 'goofed', and that His Word is supposed to read,

In the beginning, God created the stars, eventually including the Sun, and much later the Earth and the Moon.

The problem is that according to God's Word, the Earth, with *water*, *land* and *plants*, existed

before the Stars, the Sun, and the Moon. And it's not only the *plants* that are out of order. *Water* and *land* are too, as well as *birds* and *insects* and some *land animals*. I mean, according to the Theory of Evolution, *land* came first, but that only after the melted *rock* 'cooled', with *water* eventually covering the Earth a while after that, and according to some, including Dr. Velikovsky, the *water* being largely delivered to Earth from 'extraterrestrial sources', which we will be able to dismiss in later sections. So is there anyone reading this that still thinks there's anything to Theistic—or Progressive—Evolution?—and thinks that it's just God that is not so 'great' with 'metaphors'? Because really His 'bad metaphors' only get worse, there being other fundamental problems with them you should consider, but we won't any further here.

And not dwelling on the 'out-of-order' presentation of *organic evolution* offered in God's presentation of Day 5 and 6, having said enough about it, I would only add that these particular **days** finish the **creation** of every other **living thing** that is **created...after their kind**, including Adam and Eve, who, evidently not too long thereafter, lose their opportunity to **live for ever** in the **garden of Eden**, are cast out of it, and are re-**ordained** to **die** and **unto dust...return**. And though this 'dust-up' sometime after Creation Week deserves more discussion too, I will reserve further discussion about it for the next **study, *The Fellowship of The Kingdom of God, God willing*** I am granted the **mercy**—and **permission**—to write it for **him**, (the 'unconventional' plural forms of this otherwise singular Pronoun from Genesis 1, etc., always, as appropriate, intended).

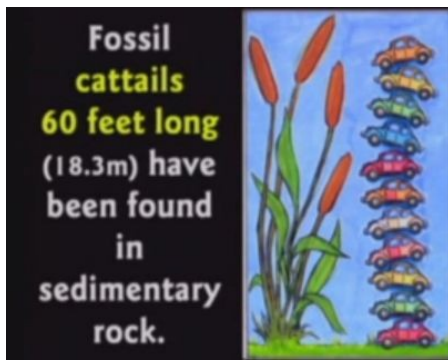
But before we go on with the chronology, there is something else you need to **understand** about the 'God-given' and 'twice diminished capacities' of every **living thing** since Creation Week. And I mean that the *cosmic radiation* 'shield' of *liquid water* in the *sky* was not the only thing still 'magnifying' the quality of **life** before The Flood. And I mean that because there was so much *liquid water* **above the firmament**, there was evidently also increased *barometric* or *atmospheric pressure*, which, though adding further difficulties for The Theory of Evolution, gives the real cause, as you may remember from **SECTION 3**, that there is 'recorded' in the *lower strata* 'abundant amounts' of *rust*, for example, and this evidently because of *higher levels* of *free oxygen* than what we experience today.

And maybe you've heard of *barometric chambers* or *hyperbaric chambers*, now used in the *medical science* called *hyperbaric medicine*, where the 'specialists' in this *field* practice *barometric pressure therapy* or *hyperbaric oxygen therapy* (HBOT). These *chambers* are incredible really. They are known to have extraordinary 'healing effects'. Scuba divers use them to treat the *bends*. Doctors use them to treat a wide and growing variety of *conditions* and *injuries* from *arthritis* to *autism*. Sports teams also use them to speed the healing of their players. They are *airtight chambers* designed to increase the *atmospheric pressure* inside them, and at the same time raise the *oxygen level*. And it's the 'magnification' of these two factors that give these *chambers* their extraordinary ability to heal, and heal quickly.

And speaking of this extraordinary ability, let me tell you an extraordinary story on point. Maybe you remember the incident that began on October 14, 1987 in a backyard in Midland, Texas. That day 18 month-old “Baby Jessica” McClure stepped into an 8-inch diameter *well hole*, her legs doing the splits with one of them coming up alongside her, allowing her to slide down a little over 20 feet. It took responders over two days to get her out. Lots of her body had turned black due to lack of circulation. Her right leg was totally black. She did lose a toe on that leg to *gangrene*, and one doctor recommended that her leg needed to be cut off, but another doctor recommended treatment with a *hyperbaric oxygen chamber*. So they put Jessica in one of these chambers, and filled it with *pure oxygen* compressed to twice *normal air pressure*. Within a few hours her leg turned *pink*. The *treatment* had restored her *circulation* and saved her leg. She’s now married with children living within 2 miles of that same *well*.

So now **imagine** living in one of these ‘chambers’, but one big enough to surround the entire Earth. Yes, before the Flood it was kind of like that. And I mean that there was higher *atmospheric pressure* and *free oxygen levels* that were the result of all that **‘water in the sky’**, the highest levels, of course, occurring before The Fall. But how do I **know** it was like that? Well, we’ve seen some evidence of it already that you should recognize by reviewing the previous sections. But let’s continue from this point with another incredible story. And the idea is that under a *water canopy* there would not only be an *atmosphere* rich in *pressurized oxygen*, but it would also be rich in *pressurized carbon dioxide*, the *gas* that *plants* ‘breathe’. And though he may not have fully made this connection, Dr. Kei Mori at Kao University in Tokyo, Japan, evidently did recognize the potential benefits of such conditions. He experimented with a *cherry tomato plant* in his basement, raising it in a ‘greenhouse’ with ‘fiber-optically piped-in’, *ultraviolet-screened light*—like what a *water canopy* would do to *sunlight*, while providing *pressurized carbon dioxide* ‘gasketed’ around the *roots* and *stem*—like what a *hyperbaric atmosphere* would do. When this *plant* was 2 years old it was 16 feet tall and had produced over 900 *tomatoes*. It was moved to a shopping center where scaffolding was built to hold the branches up and similar conditions were continued. After 16 years it was reported to have reached 45 feet high and had produced over 15,000 *tomatoes*. And though it was a *cherry tomato plant*, the *tomatoes* produced were the size of baseballs that remained *green* until picked. And surely the *plant* would live as long as *trees* do if kept under these conditions. Starting to **see** the picture?

But of course this has many ramifications. After The Flood, huge *dinosaurs*, for example—like the *lizards* of today that apparently never stop growing till they die—would not only have been constantly ‘short of breath’, but ‘short of food’ too, as we will discuss further. And though *evolutionists* are correct in thinking that all the *plants* presently on Earth are not enough to have produced the abundance of *coal* now *buried* in the Earth, they are wrong in thinking that this means that a lot of time was needed to lay it, given that there would have been a lot more *vegetation* on Earth before The Flood than there is now. The evidence of how much is *buried* in the World’s *coal deposits*, some of which are around 300 feet thick. And remember you have to multiply that thickness by 12 to calculate the height of the ‘stack of trees’ it took to ultimately make a *coal deposit* that *thick*. Yeah, before the *sediments* from The Flood ‘settled out’ to *bury* and *fossilize* such a ‘heap’, it must have been about $\frac{2}{3}$ of a mile high. But I think Dr. Hovind is incorrect in attributing all this *coal* to just The Flood—the bigger *deposits*, yes, but not all of them, because, no thanks to Drs. Whitcomb and Morris, some of it should be attributed to Venus, and maybe a little to Mars too. And yes, of course, this means attributing it to God, silly. However I don’t think you’re silly if you already **understand** that everything



that happens, both *'naturally'* and *'supernaturally'*, is attributable, in one way or another, to God.

And this brings us back to that evidence provided by Dr. Hovind that I told you we were going to get back to, about *giants*, but not just *giant* people, also *giant sea and land creatures*, and other *giant living things of all kinds*. By-the-way, I learned of the *barometric chamber* and *hyperbaric tomato greenhouse* stories from him too. And you can find all the following evidence, and some of the

previous, at his "official" You Tube site, [Kent Hovind OFFICIAL](http://www.kenthovind.com). And maybe you remember he was imprisoned—read *persecuted*—for 'tax evasion', a charge pretty much any of us could somehow be 'interpreted' to be 'accountable' for, especially if we were as worthy as Mr. Hovind to be *persecuted*. So let's *bless* him, *'eternally'* I mean, by letting him further *bless* us with the 'treasure trove' of evidence he has unearthed on the 'enhanced nature' of God's *wondrous, marvellous*, Pre-Flood Creation. However much of the following information and evidence originated from the Creation Evidence Museum of Texas, in the city of Glen Rose, founded and directed by "Dr." Carl Baugh. His title of 'doctor' is in quotes, though will not be hereafter, because none of his doctorates, and he evidently has a few of them, are from 'accredited schools' either, but again, I wouldn't necessarily think this is a bad thing, any more than think an 'accredited degree' is a good thing. Remember when it comes to the World, we 'accredit' *not after the flesh* ([Rom 8:4](http://www.bible.com)), and certainly not by 'accreditation organizations', but by, well, by now you should already *know* who really 'makes the grade'. And I will let some of Dr. Baugh's accomplishments speak for him. He is Discoverer and Excavation Director of fourteen *dinosaurs*, including *Acrocanthosaurus* in Texas, and *Diplodocus* in Colorado, and he is the Scientific Research Director for the World's first Hyperbaric Biosphere, which more or less 'recreates' Pre-Flood condition. His independent *research* involves the *application* of the *technology* that he has pioneered in *biospheric science*. This *independent research* includes *hyperbaric pharmaceutical potentials* in *living plants and animals*, *energized water systems*, *energized systems for enhanced production of plants as food sources*, *energized systems for enhanced production of fishes*, *energized systems for enhanced production of livestock*, and *energized water recovery systems*, all of which you should be able to *understand* significantly *better* as we *continue*. So you might say he has taken Dr. Mori's experiment to a whole new level. See more about Dr. Baugh, his museum, biosphere, and work at <http://www.creationevidence.org>.



And consider the following exhibits from our *beloved* and *persecuted* brothers in Christ, Drs. Hovind and Baugh:

Exhibit A - **Giant Plants**: Dr. Hovind reports that, for example, **Fossilized cattails** 60 feet long (18.3m) have been found in *sedimentary rock*, and he offers a comparison ([p.333](#)) to help us see how tall these *plants* really were. And yes, the illustration depicts 11 'old-style' VW "Bug" cars stacked on top of one another still coming up short of the height of this Flood-buried, *fossilized plant*.

Exhibit B - **Giant Sea Creatures**: Among the *giant* 'Flood-buried' *fossils* of *living... things* from *the sea*, Dr. Hovind offers us a photo from Yale Museum, New Haven,

Connecticut, where he is posing with the *skeleton* of a *giant sea turtle fossil*, which is observably near twice as long as his height (p.333). He also has a picture of a *shark tooth* that by its size must have belonged to one about 80 feet long. And he shows a newspaper article picturing *giant clams*, one 11½ feet long, and he points out that when *clams* die they open their *shells*, but that virtually all *fossil clams* have closed *shells*, an indication of their ‘fast’, ‘cataclysmic’, ‘buried-alive’ deaths. And he also has a picture of *fossil oysters* found atop Mount Everest, which, contrary to Dr. Hovind’s perspective, required more than just The Flood to ‘perch’ them up there, as we will eventually see.

Exhibit C – **Giant Creeping Things**: Among his offerings of ‘Flood-buried’, *giant fossil* of *insects*, there are impressive examples. There are *cockroaches* that are over 18 inches long, and a *grasshopper* that is over 2 feet long. And there is the “50 inch wingspan” (1.27 meters) *dragonfly fossil*—yeah, over 4 feet—which gives new meaning to its name (photo from Dr. Baugh’s site, <http://www.creationevidence.org>, but also, along with a lot more, from the folks at [streetwitnessing.org](http://www.streetwitnessing.org). You can check out their site at <http://www.streetwitnessing.org/creation-evolution/noah-flood/noahs-flood-giants>. He also reports an 8½-foot long *centipede fossil*. And though technically not an insect, but certainly in the category of **creeping things**, he shows us a picture from *Highlights for Children* magazine of a man’s hand, the real ‘creepy thing’ being that it’s next to a ‘scary-looking’ *giant tarantula fossil*, one about twice the size of his hand (May 2001, p.9). See pictures p.333.



Exhibit D – **Giant Land Creatures**: In the ‘quickly-buried’ and ‘fossilized by Flood sediments’ category for *giant land creatures*, Dr. Hovind exhibits a 6-foot *salamander* from Wisconsin, a 10-foot *kangaroo*, a *wombat* the size of a Mini Cooper car, and “giant lions”, all of course from *caves* in the Australian Outback, as well as a 9-foot tall *donkey*—at the shoulders—excavated near Lubbock, Texas. (Disclaimer: everyone knows that ‘Australians see everything up-side-down’, and that ‘everything is bigger in Texas’.)

And Dr. Hovind also reveals a *beaver jawbone* evidently belonging to one that was 7 to 8 feet long, shown in a picture of Mr. Jim Erb holding his discovery. And Dr. Hovind also reports that, “beavers over 8 feet long have been found.” Other examples of *giant land creatures* include *deer-antler-spans* and *buffalo-horn-spans* of 12 feet, a 13



foot tall *emu*, a 1,000-pound, ‘elephant-sized’ *goose*, who, according to a *scientist* at the Museum of Central Australia, “could have easily sheared your hand off with a bite”. And depicted from *fossil remains* at the University of Nebraska Museum is a *rhinoceros* that was 18 feet tall. Pictures, p.334.

Exhibit E – **Giant People**: And if

you're from my generation you might call this the real 'E ticket', because Dr. Hovind's presentation is arguably 'crowded' with evidence of **giant people fossils**. To start with, there are several newspaper articles and book references, from 1879 to the year 2000, reporting evidence and testimony of the *fossilized remains* of "hundreds" of 9 to 12-foot *people*, some wearing armor, one apparently wearing an American Indian headdress, some 'buried in clamshells', (must have been some 'clambake'), and **giant parts** including **giant**



skulls, one of which came with corresponding parts about 3 times the present average size. Of course the implication of a 'triple-sized' *skull* is that it belonged to man over 15 feet tall. And the "hundreds" of **giant person remains** associated with this 'triple-sized' *skull* and *parts* were *buried* in "mounds" near Lake Noqueby, Wisconsin (*The Index*, Wausaukee, Wisconsin, October 14, 1904, Vol.11, no.9). Dr. Hovind also tells of a 12 foot tall *skeleton* that was reported in many newspapers near Tucson, Arizona in 1891. This man had six toes, long hair, and was the one wearing an evidently American Indian, 'bird-shaped' headdress. By the way, other **giants**, including

those with **six fingers** and **six toes**, have been even more 'reliably reported', like in [2 Samuel 21:15-22](#), and the corresponding history in [1Chronicles 20:4-8](#), for instance.

But a man over 15 feet tall—that can't be real, right? I mean he would need, say, an 18 foot bed. Uh-huh, just like the one used by **Og king of Bashan**, who was one of **the remnant of giants**, the last of them to be cleared out east of the Jordan River under Moses. And speaking of 'reliable sources', it was Moses who reported about **Og king of Bashan** that,

...his bedstead was a bedstead of iron... nine cubits [18+ feet] was the length thereof, and four cubits [8+ feet] the breadth of it [Deu 3:11](#).

But I guess I need to repeat here, as it is already explained in length in [RGT](#), that your Bible likely overlooks Isaac Newton's calculation that a **cubit** was about an inch longer than 2 feet, and that 'commentators' really just 'guess' that a 'cubit' was 18 inches, mostly because it's just too fantastic to believe that Goliath was 12 feet tall, 9 feet being more believable—except that Goliath was **six cubits and a span** in **height** [1Sa 17:4](#), or closer to 10 feet tall even with the shorter 'cubit', and over 13 feet tall if you prefer using a lot more scrutiny of the available information. And speaking of 'available information', or evidence, besides the 'eyewitness testimony' of people climbing Ararat and seeing Noah's Ark, Dr. Hovind reported that the Government of Turkey claims to have found the grave of Noah, his skeleton being 12 feet tall.

And there is a reliable historian's testimony we need to hear from. He's that historical novelist we've heard from a time or two already, Sir Walter Scott. And we need to hear from him again because he wrote about a real **giant** of relatively

recent history in one of his stories. This **giant** plays a part in 'The Party of the Century'—the 16th Century that is. It is during the reign of Queen Elizabeth I, and the time of Sir Walter Raleigh, who famously gains her favor by laying down his cloak for the queen to save her from having to step in a mud puddle. It was also the time of William Shakespeare, except that at the time of the 'party' he was still a young boy, though the evidence indicates he, along with most everyone else in the region, and many far beyond, must have attended this 'party'. It actually took place in 1575. It was a 'party' thrown for the queen by her "favorite" courtier, the Duke of Leicester, at his castle, its name the same as the title of Sir Walter's book, *Kenilworth*, which now stands in ruins (photo, p.335).



And what an extravaganza it was. Fireworks, dramatic and historical plays, recreations of famous battles, as well as magicians and a variety of other entertainers, and all the 'court intrigue' you could possibly want, most all of it intended to honor the queen, England, and to entertain everyone who attended, most of whom remained just outside the Castle walls. Talk about your Renaissance Faire. It was indeed the unrivaled 'Party of the Century', maybe of the millennium. Of course only nobles and their servants were allowed inside the castle during the several days of this event. And there was someone in charge at the gate to insure those not allowed inside would not get in. He was the porter. And he was a "giant", a real "son of Anak". So consider then yet another passage by Sir Walter Scott:

WHEN THE COUNTESS of Leicester arrived at the outer gate of the Castle of Kenilworth, she found the tower, beneath which its ample portal arch opened, guarded in a singular manner. Upon the battlements were placed gigantic warders [gate keepers], with clubs, battle-axes, and other implements of ancient warfare, designed to represent the soldiers of King Arthur; those primitive Britons, by whom, according to romantic tradition, the Castle had been first tenanted, though history carried back its antiquity only to the times of the Heptarchy. Some of these tremendous figures were real men dressed up with vizards and buskins; others were mere pageants composed of paste-board and buckram, which, viewed from beneath, formed a sufficiently striking representation of what was intended [that is, of 'giant men']. But the gigantic porter who waited at the gate beneath, and actually discharged the duties of warder, owed none of his terrors to fictitious means. He was a man whose huge stature, thewes, sinews, and bulk in proportion, would have enabled him to enact Colbrand,

Ascapart, or any other giant of romance without raising himself nearer to heaven even by the altitude of a chopin [a high-heeled shoe]. The legs and knees of this son of Anak were bare, as were his arms from a span below the shoulder; but his feet were defended with sandals, fastened with jerkin of scarlet velvet, looped with gold, with short breeches of the same, covered his body and a part of his limbs; and he wore on his shoulder, instead of a cloak, the skin of a black bear. The head of this formidable person was uncovered, excepting by his shaggy black hair, which descended on either side around features of that huge, lumpish, and heavy cast, which are often annexed to men of very uncommon size, and which, notwithstanding some distinguished exceptions, have created a general prejudice [or stereotype] against giants, as being a dull and sullen kind of persons. This tremendous warder was appropriately armed with a heavy club, spiked with steel. In fine [or, to conclude], he represented excellently one of those giants of popular romance, who figure in every fairy tale, or legend of knight-errantry (*Kenilworth*, Vol.III, beginning of *Chapter One*).

Now all the background details in Sir Walter's account of this 'party' were meant to be strictly historically accurate. So there's no reason to think that his account of this 'gate-keeper giant' was any less so. It might be helpful to know that English society, of which Sir Walter was a part, had by the early 1800's, when he was writing, abandoned much of the 'superstition' that had held previous generations captive. Astrology was on the way out. So was alchemy. It was The Renaissance. But Sir Walter remained, if nothing else, and besides always well-documented historically, fervently supportive of Christian morality. And I add this just to assure you that though the account is undoubtedly fiction, he meant the account of this "giant" as entirely historically accurate, just like all the other details about this party that there is no reason to question. So yes Virginia, there were—and likely will again be—**giants**, and some of them may have been 20 feet tall or taller, though most of the evidence to prove this has been mythologized or fictionalized, if not otherwise literally and irretrievably 'gotten rid of', in a number of ways, as we will begin to see next.

To start with, one reason why so many of these discoveries have been 'disposed of' is not God's doing. And again, yes, I'm taking about fraud, and what Paul identified as the **wickedness** of **principalities** and **powers** in **high [spiritual] places**. And we've spent some time on the subject of how *evolutionists* 'distort', 'fabricate', 'hide' or 'destroy' evidence that doesn't fit their 'theories'. But there is really no end to the ways they and others, because of the consistently enforced, ongoing '**spiritual conspiracy**', 'dispose of undesirable evidence'. Here, for examples, I can add to the list 'reburial' and 'submersion'. Dr. Hovind, though apparently it's not his focus, provides plenty of evidence of all this '**spiritually motivated chicanery**', showing that it's been going on for a long time, and not just among *evolutionists*, but must be part of a '**supernatural conspiracy**', as it has been successfully carried on universally and through many lifetimes.

For example, and to quote Mr. Jim Brandon from his book, *Weird America*,

At Walkerton, 20 miles southwest of South Bend [Indiana], a group of amateur archeologists opened a [burial] mound in 1925 and unearthed the skeletons of eight 'giants' ranging from eight to nine feet long. All were wearing heavy copper armor... Through the bungling of these diggers and

the total disinterest of the archaeological museum establishment, these discoveries have now been scattered and lost [emphasis Dr. Hovind's, p.84].

Dr. Hovind also tells of a 12 foot tall *skeleton* found by soldiers near Lompoc, California in 1883. The remains were reburied due to objections by local Chumash Native Americans.

On July 24, 2000, Dr. Hovind interviewed Charles Hankley of Temecula, California. In the early 70's Mr. Hankley had been vacationing in Virginia City, Nevada. While there he went to a small private museum where he saw 2 *skeletons* about 9 feet tall in a glass covered pit. The owner had found them nearby in, yes again, a *cave*. About 10 years later Mr. Hankley stopped at that museum again to see the *skeletons*, but the owner told him someone from the government had taken them and would not return them.

And somehow those burial mounds in Wisconsin where hundreds of *giants* are buried, including that 'triple-sized' *skull* and corresponding *parts*, have been 're-zoned' to a *lake bottom*, and are presently now *underwater*, evidently due to the planning of a resort nearby. And what about these "burial mounds"? Turns out there are actually thousands of known Ancient Native American *burial mounds* all over North America. So, besides 'evolutionary bias', why don't we know more about them? The research of Gregory Little, revealed in his book, *Path of Souls: The Native American Death Journey: Cygnus, Orion, the Milky Way, Giant Skeletons in Mounds, & the Smithsonian*, 2014, explains the two biggest reasons he discovered, but also a lot of what is known about them, and what they have in common. The first reason most know so little about these "mounds", according to Mr. Little, is—SURPRISE!—because of the 'unscientifically biased' behavior of 'scientists'. Even so, Mr. Little documents that *scientific excavations* from the 1800's and early 1900's found *giant skeletons* in 'large tombs' *buried* deep inside these either 'pyramid' or 'conical-shaped mounds'. But he also found that if these 'giants' were 'too tall', over 8 feet, as so many were, that they were ignored or discredited, the Smithsonian Institution being the prominent leader of this kind of 'cover-up'. And Mr. Little tells of the Ancient Native American legends that there was an 'elite ruling class' of 'giants', which even the 'accepted' documentation of 7-8 foot 'giants' found in these *burial mounds* corroborates. I mean even the 'smaller giants' are big enough to validate the legend since, for example, the average height of Ancient Adena natives in West Virginia was 5 ft. 4 in. And evidently this 'ruling class' of 'giants' oversaw construction of the *mounds* and other *geometric earthworks*, which were evidently ritualistic devices used to facilitate their "leap of faith" journey from this World to their 'ancestral home' among the *stars*. To make a long story short, since these 'giants' were able to teach them such things as how to grow corn, etc., the natives also accepted what these 'giants' told them about the afterlife. And Mr. Little provides ample evidence that Ancient Native North Americans commonly believed that people had 2 souls, and that the way they were buried—or not—affected their second soul's path in the afterlife, including either to better or worse 'destinations in the sky', though in either case they believed they were returning to 'the home of their ancestors'. This *post mortem* 'journey' involved going to the vicinity of Cygnus and Orion, and 'traveling the Milky Way', and being 'judged' along the way by "The Adversary" who at a particular fork in the Milky Way would determine the traveler's ultimate destination. And yes, their most ancient legends are about how humans were 'created' by 'gods from space', and that later there came a time when they were invaded by 'giants' who took over their 'tribes', and taught them many things, including their burial beliefs, but also severely oppressed them, until, at a time when the people were the most heavily

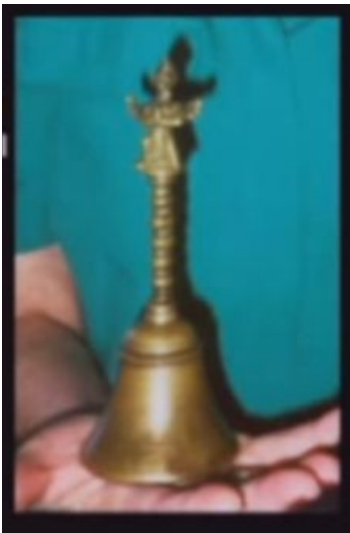
exploited, these 'giants' escalated their 'sexual abuses', at which time the people banded together and exterminated them, with only few 'giants' escaping to the south. Unlike Lot, sounds like enough fathers were no longer willing to put up with what was happening to their daughters, and sons. But it also sounds a lot like what Joshua and David fought against, huh. In fact, it makes sense that some of these **giants** that showed up in North America were the ones Joshua chased out of Southeast Asia.

Mr. Little also elucidates the similarities between Ancient Native Americans and Ancient Egyptians, who also believed in two souls and dealt with burial similarly. Of course, since these 'beliefs' evidently came from 'giants', and apparently ones originally from Egypt, or thereabouts, it also makes sense that it originated with the ancestor of all '**Post-Flood**' **giants**, and from those in her line. And of course I'm talking again about Ham's wife, and Canaan and his brothers, some of whom surely *expressed*, or whose descendants in turn *expressed*, the worst of **giant** '**angel-human**' DNA, but whom also likely spread the 'seeds' of the "two-souls", '**spiritual propaganda**' that probably originally started before The Flood with **angels** now **imprisoned** in Tartarus, with *propagation of giant* '**angel-humans**' beyond The Flood through Ham's wife. But we will more clearly '**correct, improve and expand**' this '**perspective**' before we're done with this **study**, as it is really a lot more complicated than this.

It was the "first soul", by-the-way, that remained with the body after death, and was believed to make 'reincarnation' possible, but only if buried properly in a 'pyramid' or 'conical-shaped mound'. Hence a lot of these *mounds* hold **giants** who were evidently hoping to be 'reincarnated' —or at least hoping everyone would believe they would be anyway. And if the body was not otherwise entirely *cremated* or had its *bones* ground to *dust*, which supposedly made it possible for this "first soul" to return to the Earth, it was believed 'improperly buried bodies' resulted in potentially harmful 'paranormal phenomena' such as 'ghosts', etc.

And what is the other big reason most know so little about these thousands of "burial mounds" containing **giants** in North America? Well, besides the 'evolutionary bias', including 'cover-ups' by the Smithsonian and others, there was a federal law passed in the 1990's that made it illegal to excavate any of these "burial mounds" without permission from the Native Americans they are connected with—which of course never has been or will ever be granted.

A lot of this information, by-the-way, was contained in the *CoastToCoastAM* radio interview of Gregory Little on January 21, 2015, except for my '**scriptural interpretation**', of course (<http://www.coasttocoastam.com/show/2015/01/21>). And speaking of '**spiritual warfare**', Mr. Little uncovered a lot of this information about Ancient Americans by way of being an 'expert' on the 'sleeping prophet', Edgar Cayce. Mr. Cayce also believed, through some of his thousands of sessions of 'spiritual channeling' that in his case are called "readings", that our 'souls' are able to move through the universe, and reincarnate on different worlds, as part of their evolutionary process. Mr. Cayce also believed in a coming new race of people that would have expanded lifespans. However much of Mr. Cayce's famous 'cataclysmic predictions'—that, for example, America would be inundated by water—have not come to pass in the time frame predicted, yet his thousands of 'health readings' have been amazingly accurate. And dozens of his readings were about these Ancient Native American *burial mounds*, including correctly predicting their origins in Southern North American, contrary to original, finally retracted *paleontological theories* that they originated more to the North. Uh-huh. And I add this just to give another example of how this longtime-ongoing '**spiritual warfare**'—or '**spiritual propaganda**'—works. I mean from this we could guess that it has been going on



since before Ham's wife. But again, we will see how this **'spiritual propaganda war'** has fundamentally changed before were through.

And yes, the suppression of evidence that there used to be **giants** of all kinds is not just carried on by *evolutionists*, or just by **'false religions'**, or just by the governments, or even just by 'real estate developers', but is clearly, as the Apostle Paul tells us, a worldwide, 'well-hidden', or 'well-buried', and even sometimes completely 'submerged', **'spiritual conspiracy'**, which is the **'orchestrated' wickedness of principalities and powers, in high places**, and it has been going on for quite a while ([Eph 6:12](#)). But there's much more to hide than just the remains of **giants**.

Exhibit F - Evolutionary 'Oopsies': Although the designated letter for this particularly category was originally only randomly applied, it would not be inappropriate to confuse, or recognize it could also be associated with an overall letter grade for the Theory of Evolution itself, because in this category alone we have, from Dr. Hovind, 'plenteous damning evidence' of 'scientific neglect' suggesting the appropriateness of this 'poorest of marks', none of which will ever be acknowledged by most *evolutionists*—I mean not before they see this huge, 'unbearably bright', **great white throne** anyway.

What kind of evidence would an *evolutionist*, and others, be most motivated to suppress in order to **gain the whole world**, though in the process **lose his own soul?** ([Mat 16:26](#); [Mar 8:36](#); [Luk 9:25](#)) To start with, Mr. Michael A. Cremo, in his book, *The Hidden History of the Human Race*, reports that in the 1950's, Thomas L. Lee of the National Museum of Canada found advanced stone tools in glacial deposits at Sheguiandah, on Manitoulin Island in Lake Huron. The *deposits* were estimated to be 65,000 to 125,000 years old. The director of the museum was fired for refusing to fire the discoverers (- the 'under-lining emphasis' originating with Dr. Hovind). Tons of artifacts disappeared into storage bins at the NMC. The discovery was entirely suppressed. (This information is also found in the book, *The Beginning*, by Walt Brown, p.22).

In the book, *Ammunition*, by Norm Scharbough, it is reported, (and pictured on [p.338](#)), that a small, broken—or *fragmented*—*clay doll* was found by a well driller at a depth of 320 feet near Nampa, Idaho in 1889. The rock layer it was found in was dated at 12 million years old. The *doll* is reportedly being kept at the Idaho State Historical Society.



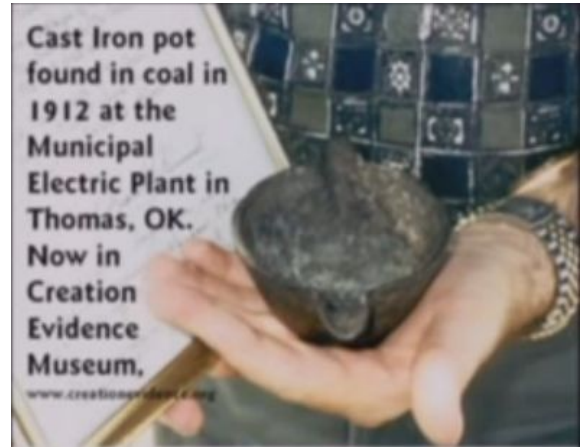
And how on Earth *human artifacts* could end up inside coal deposits should 'ring a bell'. Pictured on [p.339](#), and reported by the finder, Mr. Newton Anderson, in the book, *Ammunition*, p.177, is a skillfully ornamented, hand-held, **metal bell with handle**, found inside a lump of *coal*, (photo 10/22/1999).

Also in Mr. Cremo's book he affirms that on Thursday, June 11, 1891, *The Morrisville Times* reported:

A curious find was brought to light by Mrs. S. W. Culp last Tuesday

morning. As she was breaking a lump of coal apart, [she found] embedded in a circular shape a small gold chain about 10 inches in length of antique and quaint workmanship (p.113).

Another *human artifact* found inside coal, in 1912, in Thomas, Oklahoma at the Municipal Electric Plant is a *cast iron pot*, complete with lid and spout, and now on exhibit at Dr. Baugh's Creation Evidence Museum in Glen Rose, Texas (pictured on p.339).



But there is harder evidence, 'rock hard', and I mean *human artifacts* found *encased* in *solid rock*. One example is this small, elaborate *carafe-like vessel*. It's a 4½-inch zinc and silver 'carafe' *encased* in supposedly 600-million-year-old *rock*, found in 1851, in Dorchester, Massachusetts, (again, p.339), which has been reported in several sources including:

Scientific American, June 1851, p.289; *Reader's Digest Mysteries of the Unexplained*, p.46; in Mr. Cremo's book, p.104; and in Erick A. Von Fange's book, *Noah to Abram: the turbulent years*, p.126. Quite an exquisite piece for one supposedly older than the dinosaurs.



Another *artifact* formerly *encased* in *rock* was found by a family fishing near London, Texas in 1934. In this case a piece of *wood* was found protruding from a *rock*, which when 'cracked open' revealed an 'octagonally-shaped', **wooden-handled**



iron hammer, with the *wood* containing *quartz* and *calcite crystalline inclusions*. Density tests indicated the *casting* was of exceptional quality and revealed an unusual coating of *iron* that does not readily form under present *atmospheric conditions*. It's a *high pressure coating* that inhibits *rusting*, uh-huh, and it too is on display in Dr. Baugh's museum, and is pictured on [p.339](#).

By-the way, *evolutionists* have tried to discredit Dr. Baugh in every imaginable way, including suggesting that this *hammer* was somehow 'dropped down a crack' between *rocks* and was later, and over time, 'encased' with *sediments* in *water*. Uh-huh, like *iron submerged* in *sediment-filled water*—no matter how well it was

mysteriously 'rust-proofed'—would not simply just 'rust away' to nothing, not to mention that it's also surrounded by *clam fossils* (look closely), which must have somehow also been 'washed down the crack'. And though I am not implying that in all respects Dr. Baugh's conclusions are without flaws, and have already admitted that mine and other *creationists* aren't, evidently at least one Christian *creationists* organization previously mentioned has jumped entirely on the bandwagon against him. For **shame**. Of course most *evolutionists*, including some Christians, and even an alarming number of *creationists*, wouldn't recognize some of the best evidence against the Theory of Evolution if it crashed over them in a big, sediment-filled wave, and relatively quickly fossilized them.

And Dr. Baugh has some Paluxy River 'intersecting' *dinosaur and human footprints* excavations in his museum too (pictures [p.340-41](#)). In the Paluxy River, south of Dallas, Texas, also near the location of the Creation Evidence Museum, a storm in 1908 ripped off a layer of limestone, revealing underneath another layer with hundreds of *dinosaur footprints*. Because of this discovery this area in Glen Rose, Texas has since been named Dinosaur Valley State Park. Problem is —to *evolutionists*—that *dinosaur footprints* weren't all that was found. Intersecting and even connecting *human* ones were also found. But there was a problem for *creationists* too. Knowing that *erosion* would eventually ruin them, as many of the *footprints* as possible needed to be cut out and moved to museums ASAP.

And this work has been going on ever since the late 60's, including excavations from the (Joe) "Taylor trail" intersection where dozens of *man* and *dinosaur* footprints cross at a 30° angle. See the picture on [p.340](#), and more at <http://www.bible.ca/tracks/taylor-trail.htm>, and at <http://www.omniology.com>, and more from Dr. Hovind, including the news we've been waiting for about *living trilobites*, but also about *fossilized dinosaur skin*, and about the *lie detector test* challenge that vindicated the authenticity of the Paluxy River finds contrary to the best efforts of *evolutionists*, and some *creationists*, to discredit them.



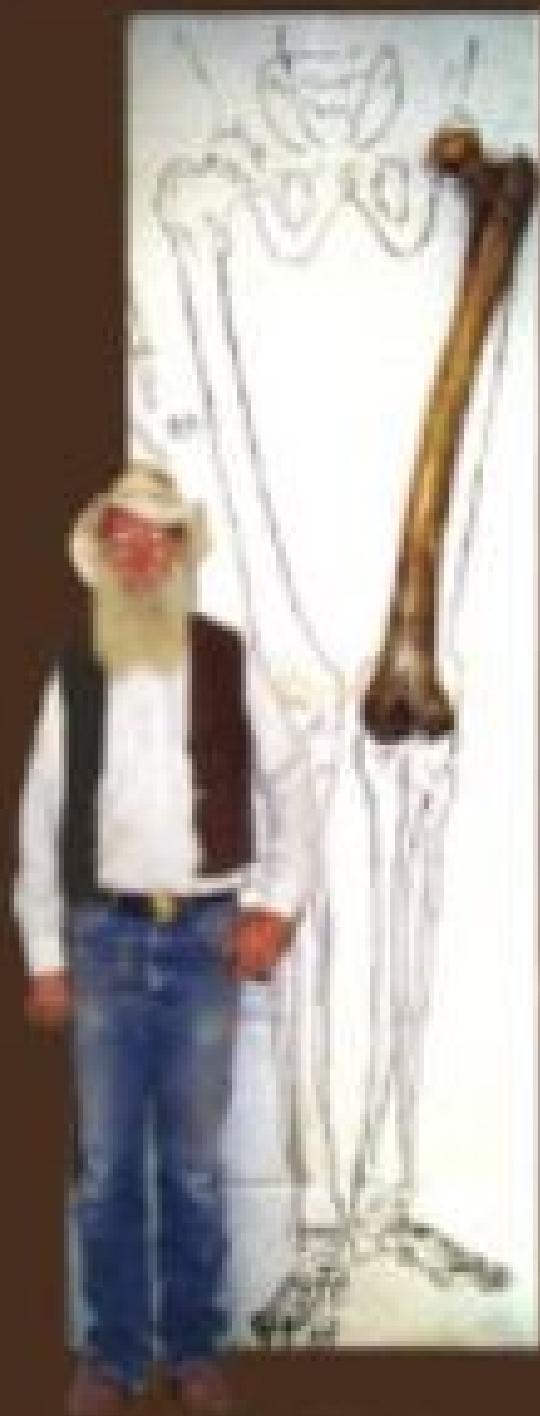
And, touching again on the evidence for **giants**, there is the 40-pound **ax head**, weighing in the ballpark of 5,000 shekels, (about the same as Goliath's coat of mail ([1Sa 17:4-7](#)), though Goliath's *spearhead* may have weighed up to 75 pounds itself), and there's also the **giant fossil human footprints**, including a cast of one that's nearly a foot and a half long. It's a size 24; pictures, [p.341](#).

And if I haven't 'made enough bones' about all this yet, let's take a look at one more 'whopper'. And again it's Mr. Hovind that brings this information to our attention. Evidently in the late 1950's, during road construction in South East Turkey in the Euphrates Valley, many tombs containing the remains of **giants** were uncovered. At two sites the *thigh bones*, that is, *femurs*, were measured to be about 120 cm long—less than an inch short of 4 feet long. **Mr. Joe Taylor**, Director of the Mount Blanco Museum in Crosbyton, Texas—"the largest working Creation fossil museum, as far as we know, in the World", sculpted and cast an *anatomically correct, to scale, human femur* of this length. From it he estimates that the original **giant** stood 14



GIANTS

AGAINST EVOLUTION



JOE
TAYLOR

to 16 feet tall, and, with his arms at his sides, his *finger tips* would have been about 6 feet above the ground. This exhibit is pictured on the cover of his book, *Giants Against Evolution*, 2012, (p.342), which is available at the museum website (<http://mtblanco.com/2013/04/giants-against-evolution-book>), or see his YouTube interview at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TpVw_FmN9ns. In this 28 minute interview he tells about his book and museum, including how his book offers many both Pre- and Post-Flood examples of *giant plants, insects and animals*, and also of Post-Flood *giant humans*, all like the ones we've already covered. But it also covers evidence of what he believes to be '**Pre-Flood**' *angels* and '**angel-human hybrids**' that were from 2 to 5 times taller than all the examples we've seen so far, and that is, 40 to 100 feet tall. And yeah, that would be far beyond **natural**, even under the *water canopy*, and must instead be due more to '**supernatural**' causes, specifically, '**angelic**' ones.

And best of all, his presentation offers what I would call an 'all but an entirely correct' perspective about *why* there were *giants* of various kinds. And he also explains that the lack of abundant evidence for *giants* is a *conspiracy of evolutionists*, in the United States most notably because of the Smithsonian Institution, to 'hide' or 'destroy' evidence of any kind of *giants*, since it would discredit their 'fairytale' that is the Theory of Evolution, not to mention threaten their 'turf'.

And I say "all but..." because I heard one significant flaw in his presentation—that he thinks the '**war in heaven**' already occurred. Who doesn't? But I agree with him that '**angelic rebellion**' to some degree has occurred and is ongoing, and that **war** among *angels* on Earth occurred before The Flood—an idea Dr. Velikovsky unwittingly helps us support further next section—but not yet **war in heaven**, because that is still **yet to come**. And I **learned** from Director Taylor's arguably strange teaching too, in the process expanding my perspectives in a number of ways.

And thanks to the folks at streetwitnessing.org, and Michael Tellingner of gaia.org, I can offer 'concrete' evidence of '**supernaturally**' *giant people*. But I should first at least mention that Mr. Tellingner is a South African author who is a proponent of the writings of Zecharia Sitchin, someone you may have heard about on *CoastToCoastAM* broadcasts, who proposed the idea—or was **deceived** to propose the idea—that the *giants* were *aliens* that came in *spaceships*, and were called the Anunnaki, who in "early creation" supposedly coveted Earth's *gold* and created a 'black race' to use as slaves to mine it. But at least they, Mr. Sitchin and Mr. Tellingner, have acknowledged and provided evidence that there indeed were *giants*.



And one of the reasons that **Mr. Tellingner** believes in *giants* is quite 'concrete', well, as 'solid as granite' anyway. Here is a picture of him taken with a **giant footprint** (p.343). In 1912 in eastern Transvaal, Africa, a hunter by the name of Stoffel Coetzee found this *footprint* in *solid granite*. It is reported to be in a very remote location, and supposedly remains in its original condition, surely more so than Mr. Tellingner does. It is also reported that *geologists* that have studied the site claim it appears to be authentic, and that it must be in its current ordination—nearly

vertical—due to the ‘natural movement’ of the Earth’s *crust* over time. Of course it is more likely due to ‘movements’ during the ‘visits of planets’, as we will see. It is imprinted in *phenocrystic (hard, crystallized) granite*, and is one of the best preserved *fossil footprints* still in its original location in the World.

And did I mention that it is by far the largest too, and by so far that it is beyond the possibility of being of just *human* origin. I mean what’s your guess as to how tall this ‘person’—in this case likely an ‘**angel-human hybrid**’—must have been? But you might wonder, with a *footprint* so large, why do I say ‘**angel-human-hybrid**’ and not just **angel**? Well, think about it. Would an **angel** have had to stick around, and walk through *melting granite*? So I’m thinking we’re talking an ‘**angel-human hybrid**’ with a *significant percentage* of **angel** here. And one simple comparison we could make is to use Director Taylor’s extrapolation that a 4-foot *femur* meant a 14 to 16-foot—*lower percentage* of **angel**—‘**angel-human hybrid**’. So I could estimate that with a 4-foot *foot*—as I estimate from the picture, and given that one of your *femurs* is about twice as long as your *foot*—this implies the *femur* associated with this *footprint* would be about twice as long as Mr. Taylor’s *femur*. So yeah, were talking probably around 28 to 32 feet tall.

Of course I could not resist noticing that this ‘supernaturally large’ *footprint* makes Mr. Telling look, appropriately enough, quite Lilliputian. You know, like those tiny fictional townspeople in that story in *Gulliver’s Travels* by Jonathan Swift, who foolishly try to tie down their sleeping ‘giant invader’. Hence it is a word that has come to mean extremely small, but also petty and trivial. I mean his foolishness is striking, since he evidently believes such a fantastic story about ‘giant aliens’, while somehow entirely missing or ignoring that there is a so **much better** story in The Word of God. But thanks again, nevertheless, to the folks at streetwitnessing.org, because it was on their site that I found this picture and information, which from their perspective, wisely enough, supports the **better** story.

And if you’re still looking for ‘strange and stranger’, and evidence *evolutionists* would want to hide or destroy to protect their ‘fairytale-supported turf’, consider that even “stranger” than finding *living coelacanths* and *trilobites* and other supposedly *extinct species* would be finding *living fossils*. And though such evidence is likely routinely disposed of by *evolutionists* too, not to mention ‘scrubbed’ from ‘mainstream information sources’, if you hunt persistently enough you can find lots of testimonial evidence that *living organisms* have indeed been found alive inside rock!

But I’m only going to cite a couple of sources on this subject, the first being excerpts from the necessarily much maligned 1959 book, which I own a paperback copy of, by Mr. Frank Edwards, *Stranger than Science*, from Chapter 8, entitled, *Living Fossils...*

Living Creatures embedded in solid stone? Science says it can’t happen... but the evidence indicates that it does... and more frequently than most people are aware.

The date—April 22, 1881. Joe Molino was at the sixty-foot level of the Wide West Mine near Ruby Hill, Nevada. He drove his pick under the jagged bit of stone that protruded from the side of the tunnel and pulled it loose. As the stone fell it struck Joe on the foot, and that infuriated him so much that he grabbed a sledge and smashed the offending rock. He was astounded to see a cavity about the size of his fist exposed by the hammer blow, a cavity in the solid rock, and it was filled with white

worms of some sort. Joe picked them up. They showed no signs of life at first... but after half an hour a few of them began to move... and within an hour, as the half dozen miners watched in amazement, the worms were crawling slowly around on the floor of the tunnel. The mine operators took charge of the worms and the stone, sent them to the U.S. Bureau of Mines, and received a letter some weeks later informing them that it was all a misunderstanding; since it could not have happened as the miners had described the circumstances!

Fully as inexplicable was the case of the dull, reddish gray beetle found entombed in a tight-fitting mould of iron ore taken from a famed Longfellow Mine near Clifton, Arizona, in 1892. When the lump of ore broke and the beetle was discovered in its iron sarcophagus, the sample was turned over to a geologist in El Paso, Mr. Z. T. White. He placed it on a piece of paper in a specimen case that stood in his library, and there, about a week after the thing had been removed from the mine, he detected a movement in the beetle.

Examining it under a magnifying glass, White saw a small beetle slowly emerge from the body of the specimen. Witnesses were hastily summoned. The young beetle was placed in a jar where it lived for several months. Eventually the ore, the beetle encased in it, and the young beetle which had emerged, were turned over to the Smithsonian Institute in Washington, which could only join the others in bewilderment at the evidence.

At Black Diamond Coal Mine on Mount Diablo, near San Francisco, in 1873, miners discovered a large frog partially embedded in the face of a limestone layer they had just blasted, The frog fitted tightly into his stony crypt; in fact, when he was carefully removed, the stone showed the imprint of his body. Both frog and surroundings were brought to the surface, where the frog lived about a day, evidently blind and only able to move one leg slowly. When the creature died, he and his age-old tomb were presented to the San Francisco Academy of Sciences, visible refutation of the scientific assertion that such things cannot happen...

Well documented—and baffling—is the case of the solid blocks of granite removed from the underwater footing of the docks at George's Basin in Liverpool, [England] in 1829. One of the blocks had to be cut up to make new steps, and the cutting disclosed a small toad which was liberated by enlarging the hole around it.

The creature lived for a few hours, during which time it tried feebly to rise a few times before it finally sank down to rise no more. The British scientists who examined the toad and the 'tomb' could only shake their heads. There was the evidence, but it clashed with dogma; so it had to be shrugged off—and it was.

And again showing that evidence can come even from the 'spiciest' of places, the second source and collection of suchlike testimony comes from Stephen Wagner, self-styled



"Paranormal Phenomena Expert". His 21st Century article on the subject of *living fossils* I discovered at the web address, <http://paranormal.about.com/od/earthmysteries/a/aa011704.htm>, among other places. See Mr. Wagner's article, *Animals Sealed in Stone*, with the picture of the 'rock-encased and mummified' frog (photo, p.345), which was not alive when broken out of the rock. But Mr. Wagner's collection of testimonies is full of **creatures** that were *alive* when broken out of the rock that confined them:

Toad in a stone. In 1761, Ambroise Pare, physician to Henry III of France, related the following account to the *Annual Register*: "Being at my seat near the village of Meudon, and overlooking a quarryman whom I had sent to break some very large and hard stones, in the middle of one we found a huge toad, full of life and without any visible aperture by which it could get there. The laborer told me it was not the first time he had met with a toad and the like creatures within huge blocks of stone."

Toad in limestone. In 1865, the *Hartlepool Free Press* reported that excavators working on a block of magnesium limestone taken from about 25 feet underground near Hartlepool, England, discovered a cavity within the stone that contained a live toad. "The cavity was no larger than its body, and presented the appearance of being a cast of it. The toad's eyes shone with unusual brilliancy, and it was full of vivacity on its liberation. It appeared, when first discovered, desirous to perform the process of respiration, but evidently experienced some difficulty, and the only sign of success consisted of a 'barking' noise, which it continues to make invariably at present on being touched. The toad is in the possession of Mr. S. Horner, the president of the Natural History Society, and continues in as lively a state as when found. On a minute examination of its mouth is found to be completely closed, and the barking noise it makes proceeds from its nostrils. The claws of its fore feet are turned inwards, and its hind ones are of extraordinary length and unlike the present English toad. The toad, when first released, was of a pale colour and not readily distinguished from the stone, but shortly after its colour grew darker until it became a fine olive brown."

Toad in a boulder. Around the same time, an article in *Scientific American* related how a silver miner named Moses Gaines found a toad inside a two-foot diameter boulder. The article stated that the toad was "three inches long and very plump and fat. Its eyes were about the size of a silver cent piece, being much larger than those of toads of the same size as we see every day. They tried to make him hop or jump by touching him with a stick, but he paid no attention." A later article in *Scientific American* said: "Many well authenticated stories of the finding of live toads and frogs in solid rock are on record."

Lizard revives. In 1821, *Tilloch's Philosophical Magazine* wrote how David Virtue, a stone mason, was working on a large chunk of rock that had come from about 22 feet below the surface when "he found a lizard embedded in the stone. It was coiled up in a round cavity of its own form,

being an exact impression of the animal. It was about an inch and a quarter long, of a brownish yellow color, and had a round head, with bright sparkling projecting eyes. It was apparently dead, but after being about five minutes exposed to the air it showed signs of life. It soon ran about with much celerity."

Toad and lizard in solid rock. During World War II, a British soldier was working with a team in the quarrying of stone for making roads and filling in bomb craters. They often used explosives to crack open the rock. After one such detonation, the soldier pried a stone slab away from the quarry face when he saw "in a pocket in the rock a large toad and beside it a lizard at least nine inches long. Both these animals were alive, and the amazing thing was that the cavity they were in was at least 20 feet from the top of the quarry face."

Living creatures surviving The Flood and 'living' thousands of years by being forced into hibernation inside 'flood-formed' *solid rock* or *coal*? Sure. Remember that people lived above ground near 1,000 years under the *water canopy* before The Flood. How much longer could such robust, Pre-Flood *organisms* survive by being suddenly *buried* in *sediment* that rather quickly becomes *rock* or *coal*, and where they are forced into 'deep hibernation' that requires almost no *oxygen*, but where plenty of minerals are available to be 'absorbed'? Well, if it's a *beetle*, it would be at least from the year The Flood began in the year 1656 since Creation Week (say about 2300 BC) all the way to 1892 A.D., or about 4,200 years, and if it's a worm, from The Flood to 1881 A.D., also near 4,200 years, and if it's a *toad* or *lizard*, surviving till at least the 1940's AD, it's even a little bit longer, because at least this is true by the accounts of these particular long-surviving *living organisms*. And I mean in 'deep hibernation' and entirely protected from all *harmful solar radiation* by being surrounded with *rock*, evidently some *organisms* could live indefinitely, or longer than **creation** itself will last anyway. And whether there is any validity to these 'living fossil stories' or not, we will uncover many *fossils* that still retain *color, skin, hair, even flesh* with *viable DNA* that is supposedly millions, and even 10's of millions of years old, before we're done. And in a bit we'll get through a detailed explanation of the chronology I've just suggested too, as it's actually the primary goal of this section.

But before we get back to the chronology of God's 7 Day or 7 Thousand Year Plan of Creation, depending on the perspective, and speaking of things 'science says just can't happen', we already know *Neanderthal DNA* has been recovered. And *mastodon DNA* has been too. This *DNA* is believed to be less than a million years old by *evolutionists*, recovered because it was supposedly *frozen* all that time, though you have to overlook that their prescribed cycles of 'alternating warmer climates with Ice Ages' seem to refute this possibility. Well, now there is irrefutable evidence—though again, *evolutionists* refute even irrefutable evidence all the time—from *dinosaur fossil finds* both on the island of Madagascar and in the Badlands of Montana, where it would be appropriate to use the term 'fossil' nearly as loosely as is necessary with 'living fossils', because after these 'fossil bones' of a *Tyrannosaurus* and another *dinosaur* were *dissected* and 'soaked' a while, they revealed, inside these *bones, soft tissues, blood vessels, blood cells*, even evidence of *fragments of DNA*. Uh-huh. This indeed could not happen if they were really around 65 million years old as the *strata* that these *bones* were found in indicates to *evolutionists*. Of course you must remember the supposed 'age' of the *strata* is

really only determined by the *fossils* generally found in it as predetermined by the imaginary Geologic Time Scale. But more to the point, the condition of these *dinosaur bones* containing *viable DNA* prove that neither the *strata* nor the *bones* could be tens of millions of years old, but must instead be about the same age as the *living fossils* we just heard testimony about. And I can't pass up giving you more details about the discovery of this 'Dino DNA'.

And this brings us to Dr. Mary Higby Schweitzer, a *paleontologist* at North Carolina State University, who is known for leading the groups studying the finds from both Madagascar and Montana involving the discovery of the remains of *blood cells* in *dinosaur fossils*, including the discovery of *soft tissue remains* in the *Tyrannosaurus rex specimen* MOR 1125. as well as the biological evidence that the *specimen* was a *pregnant female* when she died.

Dr. Schweitzer earned a B.S. in Communicative Disorders from Utah State University in 1977, received a Certificate of Secondary Education in Broadfield Science from Montana State University in 1988. And it was under the direction of her mentor, paleontologist and Honorary Dr. Jack Horner, the director of the Museum of the Rockies, (and maybe more notably, the Technical Advisor for all Steven Spielberg's Jurassic Park films, who also provided some of the inspiration for one of the films main characters), that she received her Ph.D. in Biology from Montana State University in 1995. Presently based at North Carolina State University, Dr. Schweitzer is currently researching *molecular paleontology*, *molecular diagenesis* and *taphonomy*, *evolution of physiological and reproductive strategies* in *dinosaurs* and their (supposed) *bird descendants*, and, if that's not enough, a field we've considered to some degree already, *astrobiology*.

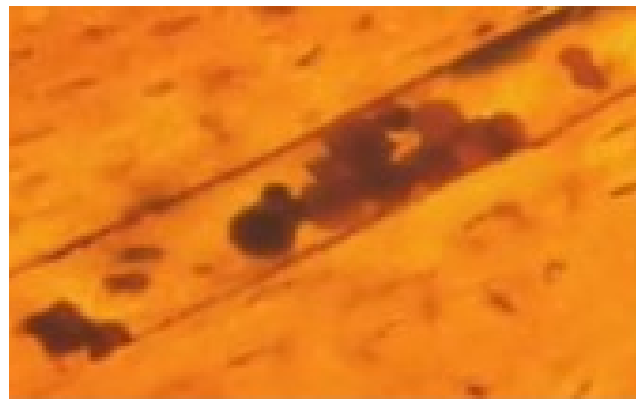
And it was back in 2000 that Bob Harmon, Chief Preparator of Paleontology at the Museum of the Rockies, discovered a *Tyrannosaurus skeleton* in Hell Creek, Montana. After a two year retrieval process, Honorary Dr. Jack Horner gave the *femur leg bone* to Dr. Schweitzer, and she was able to retrieve proteins from this femur in 2007. Dr. Schweitzer was also the first to identify and isolate *soft tissues* from this *fossil* which are 'loop-dated' at 68 million years old. The *soft tissues* are *collagen*, a *connective protein*. *Amino acid sequencing* of several samples have shown matches with the known *collagens* of *chickens*, *frogs*, *newts* and other *animals*. Again, prior to Dr. Schweitzer's discovery, the oldest *soft tissue* recovered from a *fossil* was believed to be less than a million years old. Dr. Schweitzer has also isolated *organic compounds* and *antigenic (immune system) structures* in *sauropod egg shells*, a 'brontosaurus-like' *dinosaur*, which is commonly 'loop-dated' around twice as old as the supposedly 68 million-years-old *tyrannosaurus* she studied.

Respecting the significance of her work, Dr. Kevin Padian, Curator of Paleontology, University of California Museum of Paleontology, stated,

Mary Schweitzer is just the best there is, so it's time to readjust our thinking...

(<http://www.sfgate.com/news/article/T-REX-TISSUE-OFFERS-EVOLUTION-INSIGHTS-2603263.php>)

By-the-way, Dr. Schweitzer, before becoming a doctor, announced similar discoveries in 1993. And though a 2008 study challenged hers regarding *soft tissue in specimen MOR 1125* (<http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC2483347>), research finished in



2010 contradicts the 2008 study and supports her original conclusions (<http://journals.plos.org/plosone/article?id=10.1371/journal.pone.0013334>). Sounds familiar, huh. Photo, p.347, of a magnified *blood vessel* with *blood cells* still in it.

And more recently, with the assistance of ‘state of the art equipment’ and 3 *scientists* at Harvard, Dr. Schweitzer has led the testing of the existence of *dinosaur DNA*, confirming its existence in “multiple lines of evidence”. Among other conclusions, her team resolved to...

...propose mechanisms for preservation of [dinosaur and other ‘prehistoric lifeform’] cells and component molecules, and discuss implications for Dinosaurian cellular biology

[[http://www.thebonejournal.com/article/S8756-3282\(12\)01318-X/abstract](http://www.thebonejournal.com/article/S8756-3282(12)01318-X/abstract)].

Dinosaurian cellular biology... Probably not a good idea trying to say that three times fast, because you’ll not only get your tongue all twisted, but you may also end up ‘twisting in the wind’—career and/or reputation-wise, that is.

But I should mention its been pointed out by some *evolutionists*—with a straight face—including by Honorary Dr. Jack Horner, that the reason these particular *dinosaur fossils* were preserved longer than most was because the *sandstone* these *fossils* were buried in helped preserve them (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=97jYngUaepA&NR=1>). I mean it’s baldfacedly asserted that the *sandstone* allowed the more *toxic decomposing fluids* to ‘leach away’ from the *fossil* allowing it to be ‘better preserved’ than *fossils* forming in more ‘muddy conditions’. But maybe the *sandstone* was a factor allowing these *bones* to *preserve DNA* for thousands of years, though certainly not for millions, let alone tens of millions or more. And I’m hoping you can guess what I think about such ‘little-minded’, ‘self-aggrandizing’ *evolutionists*, such as Honorary Dr. Jack Horner. I mean I don’t just see them as appropriate for inspiration for ‘blockbuster’ Hollywood movies, but instead for ‘starring roles’ in productions of fairy tales and nursery rhymes. I mean wouldn’t he be perfect for “Little Jack Horner, the Movie”?

And there are still a couple more disturbing images from Dr. Hovind’s presentations we should attempt to consider before we get back on the clock. I’m talking about the evidence that attests to a

superrich oxygen atmosphere before the Flood. Strong, indirect evidence for this conclusion comes from simple observations, and even stronger, direct evidence, by means of a very small drill. One simple observation is that the *nostril openings* of some of the more enormous *dinosaurs* are pretty much the same size as those of *modern horses*. For such relatively small apertures to have sustained such gigantic *creatures*—such as an 80 foot *apatosaurus*, for example, one of the *sauropods*—the *air* must have been much more *oxygen rich*

than it is today. And with ‘*water in the sky*’, it would have been. In fact, Dr. Hovind references a *Time* magazine article from November 9, 1987, and a *New Scientist* article from March 11, 2000, both reporting that *air* extracted from inside a ‘bubble’ inside *amber*—*petrified* or *fossilized tree sap*—was over 30% *oxygen*, about 50% richer in *oxygen* than today. Such conditions—‘water-canopy-induced’ *higher air pressure* and *oxygen levels*—would not only supply your *blood cells* with



all the *oxygen* they could use, they would also *supersaturate* your *blood plasma* too, so that it would take much, much longer to reach *muscle fatigue* than today. In other words, 24-mile marathons would not be much of a challenge. The fittest may have been able to, with a few short breaks, run across entire continents. But after The Flood, with less *air pressure* and *oxygen*, not only did every **living thing** stop growing as big, the larger **creatures** that could no longer *breathe* in enough *oxygen* fast enough would be much weaker, and much more vulnerable, if they could survive at all. And remember that the *lizards* of today apparently never stop growing till they die. If this was also true of the larger *dinosaurs*, this would be a frequently fatal handicap for them, especially after The Flood. However I have heard relatively recent eyewitness reports of larger *dinosaurs* seen still living in Africa and in the Amazon Rain Forest. And it makes sense a few still might be able to survive in such remote, *heavily-forested regions*. Of course they naturally would not grow as big in the present higher exposure to *cosmic radiation*, and in the lower levels of *air pressure* and *oxygen* that have existed since **their kind** was released from the Ark. See picture, [p.348](#).

So it's not just *dinosaurs* that used to be big. Every **living thing** used to be, or at least comparatively so. And all this evidence validates the existence of the Pre-Flood, 'water-canopy-covered', *oxygen rich, hyperbaric atmosphere*. And such evidence is helpful because the literal Biblical descriptions alone likely aren't enough to overcome your worldly programming. And the evidence can help you to **understand** increasingly **better** the Biblical testimony. And now that we've considered some information and evidence that attests to the fact that the Pre-Flood *atmosphere* 'magnified' all *lifeforms*, you should be ready to **understand** much **better** yet another phenomenon that formerly increased the '**capabilities**' of every **living thing** in the Pre-Flood **ages**. And by now you should be getting the idea that though there must be an end to this **study**, there will never be an end to such **revelations**. And this other phenomenon I am referring to has, since The Fall, and more so since The Flood, 'reduced' the '**capabilities**' of all *lifeforms*—especially the ones with *brains*. And yes, I'm talking about diminished *brain power*. And I mean that every **living thing** with a *brain* has been 'dumbed down', twice, since Creation Week. Let me explain.

Dr. Alan Snyder is the Director of The Center of the Mind at the University of Sydney, Australia, and spends much of his time studying the limits of our problem solving capabilities. His experiments with Transcranial Direct Current Stimulation (*TDCS*) are documented to enhance mental problem-solving abilities. This treatment uses *electric charge*—or *electromagnetic fields*—to simulate and/or dull particular regions of the *brain*, 'tuning' and 'modulating' it so to speak, to enhance particular targeted *mental capabilities*.

And then there's Dr. Michael Wisen, a neuroscientist at The Mind Research Network for Neurodiagnostic Discovery in Albuquerque, New Mexico. He was drafted by the U.S. Air Force to improve its most powerful *image processors, human brains*. *Military technicians, not computers*, analyze the images from *unmanned aerial drones* looking for enemy targets to strike. It's a 'high-stakes task', where one mistake could result in a strike on an ally instead of an enemy.

What were Dr. Wisen's goals? He explains,

Only humans interpret the data that comes off the drones. So there's a need for a greater number of image analyst to look at data. And... we wanted to enhance the ability of the brain to experience and record information from the environment...

Computers are not yet smart enough to pick out enemy targets on the ‘grainy imagery’ from the *drones*. Only *humans* have enough skill to recognize their distinctive shapes when distorted by sunlight and grainy pixels. It typically takes many months of training to become proficient at this task. So Dr. Wisen decided to locate and target the region of the *brain* that is most active while the *experts* were looking for targets. Then he would use Transcranial Direct Current Stimulation to amplify that activity in the trainee’s *brains* and see whether it made them faster learners. Dr. Wisen observes from comparing the *brain scans* of *novices* to *experts* that,

One of the things that’s quite obvious in these scans is that when you are a novice there’s low level activation in the medial temporal lobes, but in experts there’s very high level activation and so we targeted TDCS at these areas that increase this activity in order to accelerate training.

Novices were tested for a short period without *TDCS*, then again after receiving this targeted *stimulation* for a short period. Dr. Wisen explains the results of his *experiments* saying,

On average, novices who’ve had TDCS identify twice as many targets compared with those who haven’t.

In the individuals who got *brain stimulation* every individual was performing at “expert level” after an hour of training. And when subjects were put back in the scanner, Dr. Wisen discovered that *pattern activity* in their *brains* is permanently changed. Their newly acquired skills stay with them even after the *stimulation* wears off ([Through the Wormhole, Season 3, Episode 8](#)).

Naturally the applications for this newly acquirable ‘brain power’ are endless. But what would be possible if this kind of *electrical brain stimulation* was available in Earth’s *atmosphere*, and was *tunable* and *modulatable* simply by turning your head in relation to existing *electromagnetic field lines*? But I guess you can now see that it already is, though at a much lower *charge* than it used to be before The Flood. Again, the planet Mercury had something to do with this reduction in the existing *electrical stimulation* we now experience, as we will see, but evidently The Fall had even more to do with the lesser—and now decreasing—amount of *energy* that is now available in our *electromagnetosphere*. Yes, Virginia. God saw fit to dumb us down. Twice. But again, both this **curse** and this **‘cataclysmic judgment’** were for our own good. But the time is coming when these advantages will return, and they will be further enhanced by our **immortality**, and eventually also by an **‘uncursed’**—or **‘eternally sustained’**—and surely further **‘improved’ new heaven and new earth**.

And with this ‘magnified’ **understanding** about every **living thing** of all **kinds** that existed after The Fall but before The Flood, we’re almost ready to apply this **understanding** to the real whole story—the literal 7,000 year story, that the Apostle Peter assures us ([2 Pe 3:8](#)), and as can be seen though God’s representation of Himself through **the prophets**, is expressed as just 7 days to Him. But we are not quite ready because I want to briefly address how much time expired between when **God created the heaven and the earth** and when the first day began, and speculate, including identifying some of the more popular ideas, about what went on just before the Earth was set ‘spinning like a top’ in *empty space*.

But I’m not so much really going to address “Gap Theory”, the one which

imagines there was, before Adam and Eve, a Preadamic Race—a race that supposedly lived and was finally destroyed by God between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2—except to say this theory's existence relies on the hope that at least some of the Theory of Evolution is true—whether its proponents realize this or not—and also on the theory's '**misinterpreted**' foundational 'scriptural proof'—a passage where the Prophet Jeremiah really **beheld** the future, not the past—and **foresaw**,

...the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light [Jer 4:23](#) ...

This, however, must be a glimpse of the future, specifically of the end of The Great Tribulation, naturally revealed in God's '1000-year-day perspective', not the original **creation of the world**, because this **prophecy** of Jeremiah, starting in Chapter 2, is part of Jeremiah's mission to,

...Go and cry in the ears of Jerusalem [Jer 2:2](#),

and is in no place in this **prophecy** directed to people who lived before Adam, but instead to **Zion**, as can be read, for example, in the last verse of Chapter 4. In other words, yes, **the earth** will again be, because of The 3rd Great Earthquake at the end of The Great Tribulation, made 'flat', by being 'shaken flat', and therefore again be mostly **without form, and void**, except in Israel, and Earth's *atmosphere* will become so 'smoke-filled' that **the sun [shall] be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light**.

And the last verse in Chapter 4, [Verse 31](#), by-the-way, you should now see, having '**mastered**' [RGT](#), tells us about the midpoint of The Great Tribulation, as it clearly connects to Revelation 12.

But there is another 'nail for the coffin' of this Gap/Preadamic Race Theory I should mention.

According to the Apostle Paul, it is by Adam that **sin entered... and death by sin** [Rom 5:12](#), not by some imaginary 'Preadamic Race' that God 'created and destroyed' before Adam.

So getting back to the reality, what does God say about how long it took when He **created**

the heaven and the earth? We have it from reliable sources that it happened as fast as He—or They—said it. The psalmist explains,

By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth. He gathereth the waters of the sea together as an heap: he layeth up the depth in storehouses [*water in underground caverns*]. **Let all the earth fear the LORD: let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of him. For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast** [Psa 33:6-9](#).

So the psalmist's testimony is that the original Creation of Heaven and Earth took place—'**awesomely**'—as fast as it was **commanded**, and evidently this **understanding** was originally given to Adam by God, and passed from Adam to Noah, from Noah to Shem, from Shem to Abraham, and from Abraham's descendants to Moses. We also seem to have testimony here that They—or God—originally made **the waters** not just to lie on Earth's surface, but also in *caverns* inside Earth's *strata*. And I don't think They had to get especially wordy. I'm guessing this **breath of his mouth** that They **spake** may have been something as simple as "be" or "be created". I mean when Jesus was telling us about **'the**

potential power of faith', He said that if someone who had a small amount of it simply said to a **mountain**,

Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done
[Mat 17:20](#); [21:21](#); [Mar 11:23](#).

And from my language you should see that I think that The Father, Jesus and The Spirit **spake** somehow in unison when Their **'creating breaths'** was uttered. Yes, and again, the connection of the plural noun, **'breaths'**, with the singular verb, "was", would normally be considered a grammatical error, except we're talking about the way God represents Himself, as you should remember from [RGT](#). Not to mention that the Apostle Paul thought it appropriate to reveal the 'teamwork' of Creation when he said,

And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ... Eph 3:9.

And maybe it is implied here that this 'group effort' only required that Jesus actually **spake**, acting as the mouthpiece, though I can only think that God nonetheless **spake** by The Spirit **through him**. The Apostle John, by the inspiration of God, also seems to imply, writing,

In the beginning was the Word [Jesus], and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made Jhn 1:1. (See also, e.g., [Rom 11:36](#), [1Cor 8:6](#) and [Heb 2:10](#).)

And remember we have the testimony of Jesus too, that,

...my Father is greater than I John 14:28. (See also [John 10:29-30](#).)

This evidently implies that Jesus could not have not done it all by Himself. And we have repeated admissions of Jesus that He does absolutely nothing but exactly what His Father tells Him to do ([John 8:28-29](#); [5:19,30](#); [12:44-50](#); etc.). Further ramifications of this will be seen in the **judgments** of God in the later sections. But again, and I mean including my testimony in [RGT](#), these things are, at least presently, mostly beyond our **understanding**. So I don't want to get carried away or pretend I **understand** the roles that The Father, Jesus and The Spirit played when They **created the heaven and the earth**. For the purposes of this **study**, the fact that They **created the heaven and the earth** as fast as They **spake**—or pretty much instantaneously—and that this happened the instant before the first day started, immediately before the **earth** began its first *revolution*, is enough for now, but at the same time it's more than enough because it's now part of our present but ever growing perspective in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God. And it does, increasingly and beyond, **shew** us not so much that God is keeping things from us, but that presently there is only so much we can **know**, let alone **understand** about Him, because what we can **taste and see**, only some of which we can **understand**, inevitably goes to the 'short-circuiting limits' of our **'abilities'**, but which we can nonetheless **prove**, so that we can **'wholeheartedly'** and **'wholeheadedly'**, and therefore **confidently** and **fervently**, count ourselves among the **blessed...that trusteth in him**.

But naturally, this begs one more question. What happened before God

commanded the Earth and endless *space* to come into existence. I do not know. And yes, that's my best answer. And if you think you have any better ideas about it, I'll tell you where your likely **false**, or at least unsubstantiated ideas probably originated. It has come to my attention that much of what is thought to have happened before the **creation of the world** is the fault of the 15th Century poet and statesman, John Milton, but specifically because of his most famous poem, *Paradise Lost*, written in 1667. The problem is that it's pure conjecture, and worse, established on a foundational error, and so is no better than a 'fairy tale', or Gnosticism, and it has **corrupted** Church **doctrine** ever since.

The story he tells in this 12 part, blank verse poem involves a conflict of Satan and his followers against God that supposedly began before **creation**, and where the incident in the **garden of Eden** involves a 'prison break' to get retaliation against God by corrupting and attempting to control His Creation. Nowadays, versions of this story tend to take on much more 'color'. It is believed by some, for example, that Satan's forces, sometimes referred to as Luciferians, including both **mortal** and '**angelic**' and/or 'alien' members, who, being bitter because they have been unfairly condemned and oppressed by God, or in another version, oppressed by The Queen of Orion, oppose out of spite the 'good work' of 'seeding the Earth'. The beginning of this vicious but covert retaliation on God's Creation by Satan is either literally or symbolically portrayed—depending on the version of the story—in Genesis 1-3. And of course there are many variations of the nature and players of this ongoing conflict. But what else do we really know about it? The longest passages that give us the most information about Satan are found in **the prophets**. God, speaking about Satan through Ezekiel, says that,

Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God [obviously including when tempting Eve, after Creation]; ***every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God*** [being **set** there by God, apparently after this **mountain** was **created**, and that seemingly after God **created the heaven**, which I assume happened immediately before **the first day**, and so I also assume that Satan and **the angels** were **created** no sooner than immediately before **the first day**, and either after or simultaneously with the **mountain** that they were given to stand upon]; ***thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day [the first day or maybe the fourth day—when **the stars** were **created** too] that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee*** [evidently **in Eden the garden of God**]. ***By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will [1] cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I [2] bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all***

them that behold thee. [So this **cast** to Earth then **devour** by **fire**, 2-step **judgment** had not yet occurred in the time of Ezekiel, because **Step 1 will** occur during the **war in heaven** just before the **abomination of desolation** ([Mat 24:15](#); [Rev 12-13](#)), and **Step 2 will** occur at The Last Rebellion, when it **will** be seen that **fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them** [Rev 20:7-10](#)]. **All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more** [Eze 28:13-19](#).

And I hope you caught all the future tense verbs in this passage, and that though much—but certainly not yet all—of Satan’s **iniquity, corrupted...wisdom, defiled...sanctuaries, and iniquities of...traffick** have already manifested, none of this **judgment** that is **prophesied** for him has yet come to pass. And you should **understand** that none of this **judgment** really begins until he is **cast out** of Heaven, and **cast down...unto the earth** in the middle of The Great Tribulation as a result of the **war in heaven**, which is just before **the abomination of desolation**, and this happening around the time the Jews **flee** to Petra, with all these events being portrayed in Revelation 12 and 13. And the second part of this **judgment** on Satan **will** happen when all **rebels** [H4784; H4775](#) are **‘flash-burned’** at the end of The Last Rebellion, at the end of The Millennium, as portrayed in Revelation 20, when **never shalt Satan be any more**.

And the Prophet Isaiah speaks for God about Satan, foretelling,

Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us? Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee. How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit... [Isa 14:9-15](#).

Now I’m not saying there is no ongoing conflict between God and Satan. Surely there is. I’m just saying that his **punishment** for it is still forthcoming. And I’m not saying that Satan has not been knocked off his ‘high horse’ repeatedly, because he has. As we saw in [RGT](#), the seriousness of this conflict has made it necessary for God to mislead or misdirect Satan from time to time. But it was really Satan that **digged** all these **pits** himself, becoming, again and again, the one **fallen into the ditch which he made** [Psa 7:15](#). So God has really only **judged** the World and misled Satan so far, like when God **‘brought’ in the flood upon the world of the ungodly**, and when He purposed to **confound...language** by making many languages at the **tower of Babel**, and when He misled Satan to orchestrate the crucifixion of Jesus. And I think we have **learned** enough to **know** God will mislead Satan again on the best timing to start the soon coming War In Heaven—maybe something like in that scene in the movie, *The Princess Bride*, with the single poisoned cup that was really two poisoned cups. Maybe. But all we really **know** is

that it's related to a **'multi-thundered mystery'**, one that will, again, change the paradigm in ways we couldn't have expected. So how could I **know**?

Still, in later sections we will see how God, again using the *planets*, **made a shew** of **Lucifer**, the **son of the morning, openly, triumphing over him in it**. Or more specifically, we will **see** how to correctly identify Satan as **fallen from heaven**, contrary to more popular, but incorrect ideas about him started by Mr. Milton. And we'll also confirm which **angels** are already **cast... down in hell... to be reserved unto judgment** contrary to more popular, also incorrect ideas about the 'general operations' of **spiritual wickedness**. Or as the Apostle Peter sums it up,

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished [2 Pe 2:4-9](#).

And **we**, as His **friends**, or 'would be' **friends**, can and should **know** about such things too.

And surely God makes sure, by many means, to keep Satan from getting irretrievably far 'out of line', to make sure the **work** of His Son will not be wasted, or cut short, always using Satan's intent to do **evil** to instead **accomplish** His **will**, often in profound and unexpected ways, sometimes with universal ramifications, but this conflict will always **work** to keep His 7,000-year plan on course, and will also, after the fact, always and in every case be seen to have **spoiled principalities and powers**, again and again, along the way. But I also mean that if you're up to speed in [RGT](#), and in this **study**, welcome to your **better** 'seat' to this so-called **shew**.

And what I am saying, for God, is that since we **know** that Satan...

...was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. [and that] When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it [John 8:44](#),

that the popular stories about this conflict are likely just 'embellishments' of Satan's original **lie**. I mean, although this is speculation, neither of these passages from Ezekiel and Isaiah confirm that this conflict between God and Satan began before the Garden of Eden. And I am yet unaware of—or have forgotten—any other supposed confirmation. So it seems to me that Satan first **sinned in** The Garden of Eden. And since we **know** that Satan is not yet **cast out** nor **cast down** nor **fallen from heaven** in the literal sense—remember this occurs at the midpoint of the future 7-year Great Tribulation, then the ideas popularized by Mr. Milton's, *Paradise Lost*—that Satan is already **fallen** from Heaven, and was 'imprisoned', but 'escaped'—are **false**. Satan will keep his access to **heaven** ([Rev 12:6-12](#)), even his access to the **tabernacle of the testimony in heaven**, and even to come **before** the Throne of God ([Job 1:6](#); [2:1](#); [Rev 12:10](#)) until the mid-point of The Great Tribulation. So it is very likely—because we can count on Satan to be a **liar**—that this conflict that results in his **fall**, that really can't be completed until it includes this **fall**, instead has its beginnings not before Creation, but after Creation, and likely in The Garden of Eden.

And I mean that though to some degree I'm just speculating about all this, it makes more sense to me—having removed some clearly erroneous fundamental **'misconceptions'**—that Satan originally **sinned in** The Garden of Eden, and that this is when the conflict, including the start of his **iniquity of...traffick** (read, **'evil schemes'**) for the purpose of supporting **defiled... sanctuaries** (read, **'false religions'**), and making **merchandise** of **souls** to do them **violence**, began, there

apparently being no conflict until, at The Garden of Eden, such ***sin entered***, and this being some time after Creation Week. And it was in The Garden of Eden, by the way, and because of what happened there, and not for any reason that may have occurred before Creation, that God ***decreed*** for ***that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan*** [Rev 12:9-10](#), that,

...I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel [Gen 3:15](#).

And all this seems to suggest that what really happened before Creation nobody really knows, and that apparently there was no ***sin***, either of Adam, Eve or Satan, until this incident sometime after Creation Week in the Garden of Eden. And evidently we're not supposed to ***know*** what happened before Creation Week, as if we could ***understand*** such things anyway. And I mean that dealing with any meaningful ***understanding*** of such 'Pre-Creation concepts' is more likely and simply, at least for now, beyond our present '***capabilities***'.

But we also ***know*** Satan was ***created***, as we are told this by God through Ezekiel...

Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created...
[Eze 28:15](#)

And again this is speculation, but if Satan was ***created*** one ***day***, doesn't this imply that it happened on a ***day*** when the Earth was already rotating, or maybe just as it began its first *rotation in space*? I mean maybe the ***creation*** of the ***angels*** happened when God ***commanded*** Heaven and Earth instantaneously into existence, and when at the same time he set the Earth 'spinning' in *space*. Or maybe he ***created*** the ***angels*** on The 4th Day along with the ***stars***. Either of these scenarios is certainly ***possible*** as, again, ***all things*** for God ***are***. Think about the unimaginable *complexity* of the *laws* and *forces* He ***created*** in that first instant of Creation? And you should remember He didn't take 7 days to ***create*** everything else because it would have been too hard for Him to have done so any faster. Again, His testimony is that it was done that way to show us how to ***live, work*** and ***rest***—a ***day*** and a ***week*** at a time [Ex 20:9-11](#). So He could have ***created all things*** instantaneously if He wanted. And it appears to be ***prophesied*** that He will ***create new heavens and a new earth*** instantaneously at the end of The Millennium, having evidently no need to teach us that 'work-rest lesson' again.

And if I add a ***precept*** from Revelation, that ***angels*** are our ***fellowservants*** [Rev 22:8-9](#), and other ***precepts*** from other places that reveal that their job, primarily, is to minister to us (e.g., [Psa 91:11-12](#); [Mat 4:6](#); [Luk 4:10-11](#); [Heb 13:2](#); [Mat 18:10](#)), then they could have been ***created*** during or immediately before Creation Week for that ***purpose***. And how much time after that would Satan need to 'blow it' anyway? It didn't take Adam and Eve too long.

Plus we could add the idea that ***angels*** are referred to as ***stars*** in Revelation 9 and 12. And though at first glance these references seem to be just metaphors for ***angels***, I ***believe*** it is connected to a deeper symbolism, that ***the stars of heaven*** symbolize all the ***people and angels***, whether '***brighter***' or '***dimmer***', that God has ***created***, since, when ***angels*** finally ***fall*** from Heaven, I believe literal ***stars*** will 'fall from heaven' along with them—and I mean somehow they'll be extinguished, not necessarily 'crash on Earth'—all to maintain a symbolic but somehow accurate record of the '***eternally redeemed***' by the more or less visible ***stars of heaven***. And there is much more to the connection between us and the

stars which I will not pursue here, but this alone is sufficient to suggest that **angels** were **created** at the beginning of The 1st Day, or maybe of The 4th Day, and supposedly after the time God **created** His **temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven** on **mount Zion/Sion** to ‘host’ them all, if you can pardon the pun.

But to be more specific, we also **know** it is **prophesied** that,

...the city [of new Jerusalem] had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof [Rev 21:23](#).

And we can also ‘**deduce**’ that in the **new heavens** there won’t be any **stars** either, because, according to [Daniel 12:3](#), **we** ourselves, and I mean at least some of us,

...shall shine as...the [visible] stars for ever and ever.

And I mean this verse clearly implies that we **shall shine** only with the appropriate **brightness** corresponding to the **reward** for the **work** we have **done**, where the ‘**ability**’ to **shine as the brightness of the firmament**, or **as the visible stars**, comes by the **wisdom** to find the **means** God provides, and make **use** of the **gifts** God gives, to help both **turn many to righteousness**, as well as **keep** them in that **righteousness**, which necessarily requires much more than just the Gospel, and that is, if **we** don’t want to make things **worse** than never sharing the Gospel at all. Indeed the **brightness** I speak of requires **things that accompany salvation**, and it requires **diligence** if **we** are to **keep** the **full assurance of hope unto the end** [Heb 6:4-11](#); [2Pe 2:20-22](#).

Or as the Apostle John puts it,

Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full [and bright] reward [e.g., [Luk 8:16-18](#); [11:33-35](#); [Rev 22:16](#)] [2Jo 1:8](#),

Hence we can expect **people** in God’s Eternal Kingdom will vary in actual ‘luminosity’, from **the bright and morning star** Himself, Jesus, all the way down to relatively ‘dim and hardly perceptible stars’. And yes I know that there are only up to about 10,000 **stars** that are **visible**, and only up to half of that at a time. But that’s since the ‘magnifying-glass-like’ **water canopy** came down. Before it did—and before we lost those ‘enhanced conditions’—a lot more **stars** must have been **visible**, maybe millions more, as we will see. And on this point I feel it appropriate to be clear that I am speaking for God. And I mean **you** should **understand** that a goal of all our **study** is that **we** will not end up **for ever** ashamed to be ‘**dimlits**’, and especially that **we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward**, which will include the ‘**brightest eternal luminosity**’ possible according to the **means** and **gifts** that **God giveth**. Praise God.

But why doesn’t Genesis 1 or the rest of the Word of God make clear on what **day** that the **angels** were **created**? Well, I think the Apostle Paul answers that. Supposedly having died on one ‘wild-dragged-though-the-streets’ visit to Corinth, when afterward he returned to life, and that is, when just before that his **spirit** ‘visited’ **paradise**, all he says about this ‘trip’ is that he,

...heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter
[2Co 12:2-4](#).

So yes, God is keeping some things from us, including *mysteries*, and including that,

For now we see through a glass, darkly [1Co 13:12](#),

meaning that for *now* God intends that we have only an ‘obscure view’ of the ‘goings-on’ in Heaven, surely for our own *good*. But Paul also tells us here that *face to face* time is coming.

And the point of course is that we *know* nothing about *the day* the *angels* were *created*—not much more than that they were *created* on some *day*, that is. Still I think the only speculation that fits with what little *scripture* is available on the subject implies that the *angels* are about the same age as Adam. And according to an *angel* that spoke to John in his *vision*, they are not to be ‘bowed-down to’ by us, but were *created* to be, like you and me, just *fellowservants* of Jesus and The Father, and to *worship God* [Rev 22:8-9](#).

So the best fit for me is that *angels* were *created* Creation Week too, and that some of them were led astray by Satan’s *pride, vanity* and *iniquity* shortly following the Garden of Eden incident, where Satan also began his *iniquity of... traffick* in all manner of ‘*evil schemes*’, along with the operation of ‘*false religions*’ in *defiled...sanctuaries*, all to make ‘*damned merchandise*’ of *all the world*, but as a result he too became *damned* to be *cast out* of Heaven just before The Abomination of Desolation, and into the *bottomless pit* for The Millennium, and after that, *cast ‘deepest’* into *the lake of fire* for *eternity*. And because of *his* presently ongoing ‘*pit digging*’, he will continue to be *made a shew of...openly* by God until then.

But another thing I want to be more specific about is that we also *know* that Satan,

...wast upon the holy mountain of God... Eze 28:14

and that in this case we’re talking about the *holy mountain of God* in Heaven. And I mean its possible that such *heavenly places*, that now accommodate the *angels*, did *not* exist until *after* God *created the heaven and the earth*. And I mean when God *created the heaven*, this may have been more of a ‘mouthful’ than we ever thought. And maybe God *created* the *angels* near a *week* before he *created* Adam and Eve, but not before the time He *created* a place to ‘host’ them, and that is, *the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony*, described as being *in heaven*, a *heaven* that apparently did not exist before Creation Week. So it occurs to me that *angels* became aware within that *week* what their *purpose* was, and that is, to be our *fellowservants*. And I mean they would seem to be relatively useless without us. And you’d have to agree that their existence might be comparatively boring without us to *fight* over. So at this point I’m guessing that *angels* *and* the place they would originally be ‘*stationed*’, *were created* when God *created the heaven and the earth*, or within a few days thereafter.

And by-the-way, it wouldn’t be necessary for God to take even a whole *day* to *create* the *angels* as they are ‘*immortals*’ that are apparently not challenged with the kind of ‘*cursed work*’ and need for *rest* that ‘*mortals*’ are. I mean apparently they never sleep. So a lesson about *rest*—in their case only in a *spiritual* sense—I’m guessing was plain enough for them to

understand indirectly, and that is, through the limitations God has imposed upon **'mortals'**.

And speaking of being bored, God tells us one of the reasons why He **created** us. Evidently He was 'bored'. I mean you could put it that way. Because remember **the four and twenty elders**, after The Rapture, who were **round about the throne** of God, **the throne** that is now **upon the holy mountain of God**, that is **mount Zion/Sion, in heaven**, are the ones who will...

...worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created [Rev 4](#).

And this is exactly where Satan has always presumed to want to sit. He wants to...

...sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north... [Isa 14:13](#)

And it is evidently on this...

...mount Zion, and... [in] the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and... [among] an innumerable company of angels [Heb 12:22-23](#)...

...that this conflict will soon begin its final 42 months—I mean besides The Last Rebellion. And I mean a few decades from now The War in Heaven **will** take place in the middle of The Great Tribulation. And this is when Satan and His followers **will** finally be **cast down** and **out** of **heaven** to **earth**, only ultimately, by **iniquity**, to 'work his way' inside the **earth**, and become **imprisoned** there 1,000 years, and finally become **imprisoned** inside **new earth**, and that **for ever and ever**. But again, for now Satan still has access to The Throne of God (see again [Job 1:6](#), [2:1](#), and [Rev 12:9-10](#), especially Verse 10). So maybe The War in Heaven **will** begin right there on the **sea of glass**-style floor inside **the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven**, in **the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem...** [unavoidably involving] **an innumerable company of angels**.

And by-the-way, it occurs to me that **the dead** will be **judged** and **cast into the lake of fire** right after Satan and his **angels** are, kind of like how 'original sin' **entered** the Garden of Eden, where Satan's 'original sin' involving Eve immediately preceded Adam and Eve's 'original sin' against God. This too implies that there may not have been any conflict before The Fall. And that these 'original sins' all occurred not too long **after** the committers of them were **created**.

So the point is that **if** these **heavenly places**, where all the **angels** 'hang out', is and always has been **in** God's Creation, then this **innumerable company of angels** were **created with** Creation, and not really before it, and all for their original **purpose**—to be **fellowservants** with **mankind** of God. Maybe. I mean I find the alternatives I have considered less likely. For example, what would the **angels** have had to do before this present Creation? Was God not the only one who was bored? Maybe. Of course they could **worship God**. But that's not the God I **know**. And I mean He is presently **worthy** of the Worship He gets not only because of Who He is, and because of what He has **created**, but even more so because **he hath done great, wonderful, marvellous and excellent things with** what and who He has **created**, and certainly **this is known in all the earth**. So I can only conclude at this point that if God **created** the **angels** earlier for some other

purpose, I don't know what it would be. And I mean the God I **know** wouldn't **create** anyone just to **worship** Him just for Who He Is. I'm not saying that this would be inappropriate. As King David acknowledges, we are **fearfully and wonderfully made**, and this alone makes God worthy of **praise** and **worship**. But the next appropriate **words** out of David's mouth are,

...marvellous are thy works... [Psa 139:14](#)

So I am saying that **worship** of God without a growing **understanding** of his **marvelous... works**—beyond what and who He has **created**—may be appropriate and enough for **babes**, but only 'for a time', and is surely too shallow for **them that are perfect**, because it is an '**immature perspective**' of Who He Is. And I mean it is easier for me to **believe** He **created** the **angels** for their present **work**, along with the rest of this present Creation, knowing there would be **rebellion**, because **both** were meant to **glorify him** beyond Who He Is and what He has **created**.

But one more thing about speculation before we go on. All of it is not 'created equal'. And I mean that all opinions or speculations beyond the Gospel **not** based on a '**growing knowledge**' of The Word of God are more likely useless to harmful than helpful. The reality is that, inevitably, **Satan...deceiveth the whole world**, and that when it comes to just **salvation** alone, according to Jesus, **few there be that find** His **narrow...way**, because, also according to Him, only those who **strive** should expect **to enter in at the strait gate**, where He concludes,

...for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able [Luke 13:24](#).

And going '**farther**' and '**deeper**', as we are in these '**studies**', and surely **higher** than you've ever gone before, your opinions contrary to mine are more likely useless to harmful **if** you're **not** using all the **precepts** I am using or more. And, 'fyi', in such cases I will have little interest and tolerance for them. And I may be appropriately intolerant because by God I have already **finished** two, 'graduated', 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style studies' that are more than sufficient to keep you at a challenging level of **growth** for years. So it is appropriate for me to tell you, in order to leave me free and undistracted for the years it will take to complete the final 'graduation' of these '**studies**', to first **master** the **exercise** in all the **precepts** of all the topics of at least these first two '**studies**' **before** you hazard wasting my **diligently** used time otherwise. Generally speaking, and like I put it in [RGT](#), the one **rightly** connecting the most **precepts** 'wins' and 'rules'. Indeed, a primary reason I **believe** God has allowed me to offer these 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style studies' is that they make it possible for those, who truly **hunger and thirst after righteousness**, to apply their **vehement desire** and **zeal** to '**grow spiritually**' in **the knowledge of God**, and to do so **without direct teaching**. And remember I am just one, fallible man, so I am pleading with you, for now, to use these '**studies**' rather than me personally, and even beyond what you think is possible, because **questions are answered** by God, especially with help in generating '**better questions**' like these '**studies**' provide, but only **if ye continue** in them. And **if** you engage these '**studies**' in this way, we will **fellowship** soon enough, and **for ever**.

But I also mean that adding just one more **precept** to any topic covered in these '**studies**', and connecting them all, as I do, may make your opinion—on that topic—**better** than mine. And this is something that I long to regularly experience, as it is

surely an aspect of the highest form of **fellowship**. However there will always be the dominance of **those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil**, meaning, generally speaking, that more **experience** with a number of **precepts** will usually ‘trump’ newly acquired conclusions using those same **precepts**, as I warn you of throughout these ‘**studies**’. But I’m not necessarily speaking of myself, for I am old and sick and fallible enough that it occurs to me that it may not be God’s will that I make it to The Rapture, leaving, with enough time, and there indeed may be enough, a chance for someone else, or even **a cloud of witnesses**, to attain positions ‘atop my shoulders’, who I can look forward to teaching me beyond the end of my **work... while it is day**, and that is, by their **continued...work** in their remaining time, all in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God. And concerning you, I mean that when you reach a place where you are ‘**exercising**’ in all the **precepts** in all the topics of these ‘**studies**’, then you are ready for ‘**helpful participation**’ in ‘**correcting, improving and expanding**’ the **knowledge of God** at a ‘**cutting edge level**’ in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God, which, if God is willing, and I mean if you are in this way **predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will**, is your **duty** and **reasonable service**, but from your ‘**perspective**’ should feel more like **joy unspeakable and full of glory**.

But whatever the ‘perspective’, The Word of God, like God, **is no respecter of persons** [Act 10:34](#), except that, like God, and if I may be so **bold** to say, like these ‘**studies**’, it is designed for **disciples**, for those with **diligence** and **sincerity**, and only for such a one who **seeketh truth**. Without such qualities there can be no ‘**mature growth**’ in **the knowledge of God**, as it is otherwise a ‘minefield’ of **dangerous** to ‘**eternally fatal misunderstandings**’. And this includes **leaven**, as Paul uses the term, and that is, in the cases where he extends Jesus’ metaphorical use of it concerning **the Pharisees and of the Sadducees**. But I also mean that like God, The Word of God both **searcheth** and **trieth the hearts and reins**, or **the reins and hearts**, as the case may be. In other **words of God**, and like to The Word of God, only **disciples indeed** need apply themselves to these ‘**studies**’, because anything less than **diligence** with **sincerity** can do great **harm**, both to themselves and others.

But again, if you’re still reading, you’ve passed this little ‘**searching-and-trying-of-your-hearts-and-reins**’ test of mine. Welcome ‘**farther**’ and ‘**deeper**’ into ‘**mature discipleship**’, or at least to the pursuit of such **deep things**. But for now, let our **fellowship** continue only by means of these ‘**studies**’, until the day, even if after The Rapture, we meet **face to face**. And I mean it has for years been my intention, and an ongoing trial of my **patience** and **diligence**, to devote myself entirely to this **work** in the **faith** that it is God’s **calling** and **purpose** for me, this **work** requiring me so far to refrain from **fellowship**, maybe until finished with these ‘**studies**’, but ultimately, whether before The Rapture or after, and **endeavouring** to be a **servant of all**, I hope to fully embrace **fellowship** with those who are ‘up to speed’ in all 3 ‘**studies**’, and can therefore help, and even surpass me in this **work**. And I mean that I **believe** that this is what my Father intends for me to do, and that it will enhance the **fellowship** I will eventually attain, the kind that I have been **hungry** and **thirsty** for to **comfort** me for decades. And I mean I **believe** that this ‘drought’ of direct **fellowship** for me—and you—which is really but a **light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory, God willing**, though only **if ye** and I **continue** our assigned **work**, which is to **labour in the word and doctrine**. And by-the-way, ‘**Church doctrine**’ is part of the intended ‘final graduation’ of

these **'studies'**, which again, neither you nor I will be fully ready for until we get there.

So now, though we don't really **know** what God was doing before He **created the heavens and the earth**, we do **know** that The Creation of everything that was made—when God **appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth**, both *organic* and *inorganic*, and evidently also both **spiritual** and **heavenly** too—actually happened with 'one command' along with several others over the next 6 literal **days**, including exactly 6 complete *rotations* of the **earth**. And we **know** that the original **ordinances** were potentially **everlasting**, but that not long thereafter no longer were, as these **ordinances** themselves were 'changed' by the **curse** of God on **creation**, which initiated the slow **death** of not only **Adam** and **Eve** and their progeny, but also of **creation** itself, which from that point continued in an irrecoverable process where...

...the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain... [Rom 8:22](#)

...as it *decays* toward *disorder* and **death**, though plainly it must be sufficiently sustained for, altogether, let's say, exactly 7,000 years, at the end of which time it will **'vanish'** ([Rev 20:11](#)), and that is, sometime before it would otherwise relatively soon thereafter **die**. However we will **see** that Earth has repeatedly along the way 'exhausted herself', as well as received occasional 'life-sustaining restorations', so to speak, which has made the effects of The Curse only the biggest factor in the 'up and down process' of Earth's **'slow, groaning, travailing, painful decay'**, as we will **'better see'** in the following sections.

And now we're finally ready to start accounting for these 7,000 years. And I mean that we're finally ready for the Pre- and Post-Flood genealogies of Genesis 5 and 11. Because The Word of God is clear, mostly with only the necessity of some simple math, that The Earth is presently in the ballpark of about 6,000 years old since the **creation** of Adam on the literal 6th Day of Creation. How does this all add up? The first step to 'ballpark' what year it is now "since creation" would be to determine the approximate number of years since The 6th Day of Creation Week—when Adam and Eve were **created**—up to the **birth** of Noah, which is plainly available in the genealogy in [Genesis 5](#), and plainly 'tabled' in the chart labeled, **Step 1 - Adam to Noah**, on [p.360](#).

Step 1 - Adam to Noah

And Adam	lived	130	years and begat	Seth
And Seth	lived	105	years and begat	Enos
And Enos	lived	90	years and begat	Cainan
And Cainan	lived	70	years and begat	Mahalaleel
And Mahalaleel	lived	65	years and begat	Jared
And Jared	lived	162	years and	Enoch

			<i>begat</i>	
<i>And Enoch</i>	<i>lived</i>	65	<i>years and begat</i>	<i>Methuselah</i>
<i>And Methuselah</i>	<i>lived</i>	187	<i>years and begat</i>	<i>Lamech</i>
<i>And Lamech</i>	<i>lived</i>	182	<i>years and begat</i>	<i>Noah</i>
So there were about...		1056	years from Adam's creation to Noah's birth	

So we **know** there were about 1056 years from Adam's **creation** to Noah's **birth**. And I say "about" because we don't know the month and day that any of these Pre-Flood Patriarchs were **born**, and therefore cannot account for the unknown partial years that may give or take another couple of years or more. And I hate to 'burst your bubble', because it 'burst' mine, when I realized this. I mean that before I realized this simple fact I thought there might be a way to 'pinpoint' the exact 'feast-days-determined' month, and maybe even the day of the end of The Age of Grace at The Rapture, and thereby the beginning of The Great Tribulation.

But of course I have 'always known' that Jesus said,

But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only [Mat 24:36](#).

However decades ago I also realized that '**scripturally immature**' Christians apply this to The Rapture, and all 'date setting', though more commonly it's just one of the excuses not to **take heed** to the **more sure word of prophecy**, all of which I knew was '**misinterpretation**', not to mention **devices** of Satan, because this really only applies to His 2nd Coming at the end of The Great Tribulation, as we will confirm in the rest of this **study**, but especially in the final section. And I mean that with Velikovsky's help, I realized why no one, even Jesus, can know that particular **day and hour**, and that it would not be because of any 'calendar confusion' or 'math errors', and even though it should seem to be calculable after The Rapture, or so you might think, and so you might argue that up to this point I have led you to think. But it will not be that easy. And even now you can see we can't calculate the **day** or **hour** or even the month of The Rapture because we **know** that there are already an unknown number of months and years unaccounted for because God chose not to provide us more than just the 'annual ages' of the Pre- and Post-Flood patriarchs. And this problem can only increase our inaccuracy as we proceed.

Still, 1056 years is an excellent approximation of the period from the **creation** of Adam to the **birth** of Noah to continue with. And if we also know that it was...

In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened [Gen 7:11](#),

And that,

...it came to pass in the six hundredth and first year [of Noah's life], in the first month, the first day of the month, the waters were dried up from off the earth: and Noah removed the covering of the ark, and looked, and, behold, the face of the ground was dry [Gen 8:13](#),

then we know that Noah was in his **six hundredth year** when The Flood began, and that it lasted about 1 year. And knowing that,

Shem was an hundred years old, and begat Arphaxad two years after the flood [Gen 11:10](#),

from all these facts we can deduce that **Shem** was 97 years old when The Flood began, and that 97 years before The Flood **Shem** was **born** when **Noah** was 503 (600 - 97). And I mean Noah's wife evidently did not have triplets where Moses records,

And Noah was five hundred years old: and Noah begat Shem, Ham, and Japheth [Gen 5:32](#),

but apparently just had all her sons shortly after Noah turned 500. And given only this information about Noah's sons, apparently only Noah's age at Shem's **birth** can be determined from **scripture**. But this is all we need to go on.

So having discovered Noah's age at Shem's **birth**, 503, we move on to **Step 2**, and into [Gen 11:10-26](#), to find the approximate number of years from Shem's **birth** to the **birth** of **Abram**, who of course is later known as **Abraham**. See the chart on [p.361](#).

Step 2 - Noah to Abraham

And Noah	lived	503	years and begat	Shem
And Shem	lived	100	years and begat	Arphaxad
And Arphaxad	lived	35	years and begat	Salah
And Salah	lived	30	years and begat	Eber
And Eber	lived	34	years and begat	Peleg
And Peleg	lived	30	years and begat	Reu
And Reu	lived	32	years and begat	Serug
And Serug	lived	30	years and begat	Nahor
And Nahor	lived	29	years and begat	Terah
And Terah	lived	70	years and	Abram

		<i>begat</i>
So there were...	893	years from Noah's birth to Abraham's birth
And there were...	1056	years from Adam's creation to Noah's birth
So there were about...	1949	years from Adam's creation to Abraham's birth

Adding the about 1056 years from Adam to Noah to the about 893 years from Noah to Abraham reveals about 1949 years from the **creation** of **Adam** to the **birth** of **Abraham**. But from here on it gets a lot more complicated. One reason is because the popular or “classic chronology” that should be able to help us go on to **Step 3** is over half a millennium off in two separate periods of history between The Exodus and the rise of the Greek Empire, and mostly because “classic historians”—who control most institutions of ‘higher learning’—refuse to acknowledge the overwhelming evidence of the cataclysms caused by the 2 passings of Venus in The Middle of The 2nd Millennium BC, and the several “commotions” caused by the passings of Mars in The Middle of the 1st Half of The 1st Millennium BC, let alone acknowledge The Flood, and the fact that all these cataclysms have literally buried or destroyed whole civilizations again and again, along with most of the evidence of them, as Dr. Velikovsky makes abundantly clear in the totality of his works, especially in his *Ages in Chaos* series that to a great extent corrects the chronology of these last two, key, ‘cataclysmic centuries’ BC.

So though the easiest solution seems to be to determine the year Abraham was born relative to our current calendar, we only mostly have the perspective of horribly misguided—and misleading—*historians* to account for Abraham's birthdate.

In the 2000 edition of [*Eerdmans Dictionary of the Bible*](#), for example, the chief editor, Dr. David Noel Freedman, an ordained Presbyterian minister from Princeton Theological Seminary, (and I usually like Presbyterians), whose formidable qualifications include undergraduate work at UCLA, earning a doctorate in Semitic Languages from Johns Hopkins, and teaching at numerous universities and seminaries including UCSD and Johns Hopkins, approved the entry entitled, “Chronology of the Old Testament”, authored by William H. Shea, who explains,

In general terms, biblical chronology places the date for the entry of Abraham into Canaan [or his birth] at ca. [circa or about] 2000 [BC], with a margin of error of plus or minus a century. There has been considerable debate about which archaeological period should be identified as the time of the patriarchs ([p.248](#)).

And remember in [RGT](#) where I said something to the effect that ‘Christian historians’ were as much a ‘misguider’ of **believers** in Christ as ‘secular historians’. This is because most ‘Bible colleges’ teach or are influenced by secular “classic chronology” too. And the problem is that “classic chronology” disagrees so greatly with “biblical chronology” that students are convinced to admit that The Bible must be flawed. But really, and again, the reason why such **lies** are made believable is that leading *secular* and even *Christian historians*, who are standardly in agreement with the Theory of Evolution too, ‘ignore’, ‘hide’ and ‘distort evidence’ that disagrees with their false chronology, and they do this, as **scripture** assures us, for

lust and/or **pride**, as well as for ‘turf’, or for some form of **‘self-aggrandizement’**, (but this is ironic, isn’t it), and that is, they tend to **‘attack’**, **oppress**, **deceive**, **‘extort’**, **‘sabotage’**, and surely in some cases even **murder**, etc., just like *evolutionists*, and therefore have their metaphorical ‘feet’ so far down their metaphorical ‘throats’ that it would take a literal **miracle** to metaphorically ‘remove them’, or, on the **oppressed** and **deceived** ‘side of the coin’, they just ‘go along to get along’, submitting to **‘coercion’**, **‘blackmail’**, **extortion**, or worse, as they see it as acting in **‘self-preservation’**, (but this is ironic too, huh). And I can only **hope** that **some** of this ‘lot’ is simply **‘duped’** and **ignorant**, and that they don’t continue to ‘participate’ in such **wickedness** after they begin to see through the **lies**, though evidently more submit to the **‘coercion’**, etc., and continue to **‘participate’**, if they’re not somehow **‘eliminated’** from **‘participating’** at all.

Again, Dr. Velikovsky’s work alone overwhelmingly proves this must be the case. Nonetheless he also absolutely settles the “considerable debate about which archaeological period should be identified as the time of the patriarchs”, in the process demonstrating how the “archaeological periods” themselves are really only part of the **‘subterfuge’** facilitating keeping this ‘jumbled mess’ that is the “classic chronology” in favor. And again, for now I’ll leave the review of this extensive research by Dr. Velikovsky that dramatically revises the chronology of *ancient history*, that is, the *Ages of Chaos* series, to you. But to give you a relatively brief example of how seriously flawed the “classic chronology” is, and how ‘dramatic’ Dr. Velikovsky’s revision is, maybe you’ve heard that the “classic chronology” places Pharaoh Ramses II as the pharaoh at the time of The Exodus, at the end of Egypt’s “Middle Kingdom”, which popularly misplaces him the better part of a millennium before the time he really lived, but more recently he has been placed in the middle of the “New Kingdom”, though not too long after The Exodus, at least by implication, but still no less than half a millennium or more earlier than where he actually belongs, this ‘dramatic misplacement’ identified by Dr. Velikovsky, where he proves that Ramses II didn’t really live in the time of the height of the imaginary “Hittite Empire” in the 13th and 12th Centuries BC, but was instead really a contemporary of King Nebuchadnezzar in the 7th to 6th Centuries BC, these two ‘real life’, ‘lifelong’, ‘chief rivals’ ultimately making peace, though Ramses conceding a small part of Egyptian coastland in the bargain. But there’s much more to this ‘mess’ that is called, or that used to be called, “classic chronology”—and I should make clear here that this formerly popular term has been rejected, even ‘scrubbed’ from the internet, some thanks for that surely due to Dr. Velikovsky. Nevertheless this still ongoing travesty of ‘academic’ and ‘scientific integrity’, whether going by this or any other name, cannot be happenstance, but is propaganda, propaganda that shifts, as well as renames itself from time to time, all in order to hide it’s more striking **lies**. And surely such propaganda is one of the more involved but successful **devices** of Satan, as it is part of the **prophesied ‘ongoing satanic conspiracy’** that already to a great extent successfully **deceiveth the whole world**.

And by-the-way, remember I first read *Worlds in Collision* over 25 years ago, and have read it repeatedly since, as well as *Earth in Upheaval*, and this **study** will feature the evidence offered from these two works in the following sections. But it was only in the last few years that I finally got around to finishing the *Ages in Chaos* series, and I mean the published volumes. It is not light reading, the difficulty as much or more because of the ‘mess’ so-called ‘historians’ have made with their so-called “classic chronology”. So it might be easier for you to start with *Worlds in Collision* and *Earth in Upheaval*, and then expect to take your time ‘sorting through’ the *Ages in Chaos* series. And we’ll fully cover the first volume of the

Ages in Chaos series in **SECTION 11**. But here's a **'scripturalized'** and updated summary, with 'series connections' (in parenthesis), of the 4 published volumes in the *Ages in Chaos* series, in the order they were published, just to 'tide you over'. (Warning: 'tidal action' in 'rough waters' may cause *dizziness, confusion, nausea*, etc., but, again, the best remedy in this case is to simply, uh-huh, just 'suck it up'.)

AGES IN CHAOS, Volume I, From The Exodus to King Akhnaton, 1952, the "reconstruction" of the chronology of the time following the fall of the "Middle Kingdom" of **Egypt**, (that is, the time following The Fall the Egyptian Empire and The Rise of the Assyrian Empire), beginning with The 1st Assyrian Occupation of Egypt, which is followed by "The Eighteenth Dynasty of Egypt", which also marks The Rise of the "New Kingdom" of **Egypt**, where The Rise of the Assyrian Empire immediately follows The 1st Visit of Venus at The Exodus, starting with the invasion of **Egypt** by the "Hyksos Dynasty", (the "Hyksos" being predominantly **'giant-led', 'Amalekite-Assyrians'**, who eventually allied, most notably, with the **'giant-led', 'Philistine-Assyrians'**, and that is, **giants** that were the **remnant** of such peoples as the **Anakims**, the **Emims**, the **Zamzummims**, and of those that lived in **the valley of the giants**, as well as **the remnant of giants** in **Bashan**, and in **Gath**, and evidently, etc., which eventually led to **Goliath of Gath**—a **span** over 12 feet tall (**six cubits and a span**), and though still of **great stature**, surely **not** as much of a **giant** as **giants** used to be, more just **the son of the giant**), which Dr. Velikovsky, (not seeing **giants** or any still 'unusually longer lifespans' either), calls the "Hyksos-Amalekite rule" of "king shepherds", and shows us in **scripture**, including in the KJV, how **Amalek** is identified as **the first of the nations** [Num 24:20](#), that is, the leading **Canaanite** people of the time, (which I assume must have still included at least some men of still fairly **great stature**), and their more northern 'compatriots' opposing or oppressing **Israel** too, (you know, that **stiffnecked people** who early on are made to, because of God's **anger** for their **evil, wander in the wilderness** in the 15-to-25-year-long, **shadow of death** "gloom" that at first totally hides and finally just obscures the Sun, though they are reportedly directed, protected and provided for otherwise), this new **'Canaanite-Assyrian'**, originally **'Amalekite-led'** Empire, et al., continuing such opposition to **Israel**, including both while and after **Israel** 'forms' their new **kingdom** and **nation**, (that is, especially when, **again** and **again, ...the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the LORD**), and continuing their 'domination' of **Egypt** throughout the lifetimes of **Moses** and the **judges**, until the **Amalekites** finally lose control of **Egypt** with the help of **king Saul**, at which time they are greatly slaughtered, initially in northern (or just north of) Egypt ([1Sa 15](#)), (the precise 'ancient location'—like precise 'ancient dates'—of the **Amalekite** king's city, Auaris, the city Saul evidently conquered, disputed), yet some **Amalekites** are left for **king David**, (and of course others), to **fight against**, (as well as to **scatter** their **remnant**—as we will further see), and Saul's victory at Auaris helps establish the first pharaoh of "The Eighteenth Dynasty", Ahmose I, (who probably, like Saul, is at least **from his shoulders and upward...higher than any of the people** too, that is, also at least of fairly **great stature** too, etc., maybe approaching **Goliath** in size, since they lived near the same time), and so began the "New Kingdom" of **Egypt**, (though this is really only a 'slump' in the Assyrian Empire, as other **'Canaanite-Assyrian'** peoples still dominate, like the **Philistines**, and others further north, especially in the region of **Nineveh**, so that, evidently, they mostly at this time only lose full control of **Egypt** and **Israel**—and I say "evidently" because this must still be the period of The 2nd Head of The 7-Headed Beast, the **beast 3** times depicted in John's **vision** in The Book of Revelation ([12:3](#); [13:1-3](#); [17:3-18](#)), and

less directly in one of Daniel's **visions** ([Dan 7](#)), and that is, it is apparently the time of Satan's Angel-prince who is The 2nd Head of The 7-headed Beast, and the time of Satan's 2nd Kingdom, or of The 2nd Kingdom of The 7-headed Beast, which we have so far called **Assyria**, and which must at this time be, as much as God allows, still 'dominating'), the rise of this 18th Egyptian Dynasty corresponding to the rise of **Israel** under Kings **David** and **Solomon**, who remain 'friends' with **Egypt** during their reigns, **Solomon** being contemporary with and hosting the famous visit of the 5th New Kingdom, 18th Dynasty, Egyptian pharaoh, Hatshepsut, that Dr. Velikovsky positively identifies as the **queen of Sheba**, though he also reveals that the next Pharaoh of Egypt, her son-in-law, Thutmose III, 'oppresses' and 'conspires' to 'divide' **Israel**, adding 'extra oppression', and that is, adding onto the more northern **Assyrian** 'oppression', (**where again and again whenever the kings of Israel and/or her people—and whether of Judah or Israel—did evil in the sight of the Lord**), this 'multiplied oppression' continuing to the time of **Ahab king of Israel, Jehoshaphat king of Judah**, and Akhnaton Pharaoh of Egypt, one of the last pharaohs of The 18th Dynasty, shortly after whom this dynasty mysteriously ends, at which time apparently both Libyan and Ethiopian Dynasties arose to some degree, the implications being that The 18th Dynasty ended, if not a little earlier, in the late 9th or early 8th Century BC, and that is, simply by a resurgence of the **Assyrians**, apparently led by **Canaanites** then based in or around **Nineveh**, a city dating back to the time of **Nimrod**, see [Gen 10:8-11](#), then a little later, and that is, later in The 8th Century BC, or a little into the 7th Century, the **Assyrians** then getting the 'assistance' of the 'destabilizing effects' of The Visits of Mars, and this "reconstructed" account for the end of The 18th Dynasty, which sets the stage for the much later start of The 19th Dynasty, greatly contradicting my encyclopedia's 'information', for example, that the last pharaoh—or the second to last?—of The 18th Dynasty "appointed" Ramses I as the next pharaoh, supposedly immediately starting The 19th Dynasty", this imaginary transfer of power 'classically dated' at the beginning of The 13th Century BC, but this 'way-to-early', 'imaginary succession' is proved by Dr. Velikovsky, especially in the later volumes of this series, to involve much erroneous duplication, and that it instead actually happened significantly later, so that the gap created in the timeline became filled by an 'overflow' of such 'duplication' of this dynasty, including identical names of pharaohs, identical lengths of their reigns, and similar descriptions of periods of war or peace, though it really starts for the first and only time sometime after The Visits of Mars, somewhere in the 7th or 6th Century BC, and in this first volume Dr. Velikovsky proves that the entire 18th Dynasty, (**again, really just a 'slump' in the Assyrian Empire's control of Egypt**), though he seems understandably 'over-conservative', spans the period from no earlier than The 11th to 10th and to as late as The 9th or 8th Centuries BC, his 'over-conservatism' understandable because the "classical" and now popular 'placement' of this dynasty's 'timespan' continues to be 'way too early', presently starting in the mid-16th, and ending near the start of The 13th Century BC, that is, starting half a millennium before it really could have, and ending long before it could have started, which—at least by implication—requires 'bumping forward' the time of The Exodus too, (**a period that my encyclopedia only at best implies was when "the Delta region was struck by a prolonged famine and perhaps a plague lasting until the end of the 14th dynasty [and where the] same famine may have affected the 13th dynasty, which also exhibits instability and numerous ephemeral [or short-lived] kings in its last 50 years of existence, from c. 1700 BC until 1650 BC"**)—though, and despite the 'timeline misplacement', this may have instead been one of the **greater** of God's **great judgments**, that caused The Fall of Egypt and The Rise of Assyria to '**world rule**', and which surely 'left its mark' in a variety of

other ways too, that is, as Dr. Velikovsky so well documents in *Earth In Upheaval*), but specifically, it needs 'bumping forward' from its now just 'implied position' in The 18th to 17th Century BC to, according to Dr. Velikovsky, to no earlier than the middle of The 15th Century BC, which places the end of this period, in this case the end of The 18th Dynasty, that he more precisely marks as during or shortly after the contemporary reigns of **Ahab king of Israel, Jehoshaphat king of Judah**, and Akhnaton Pharaoh of Egypt, in about The 8th Century BC, (though in *World's In Collision* as it connects to *Ages In Chaos* Dr. Velikovsky also marks one of the middle '**visits**' of Mars with the funeral of **king Ahaz**, this surely, by his own accounting, suggesting that Mars may have been, in about 747, 717, and/or 702-1 BC, a factor in The 18th Dynasty's demise, and though I am also tempted to 'bump forward' the time of the Exodus still further, even as far as midway into the 13th Century BC, this being a timeline marker Dr. Velikovsky and I seem have a significant disagreement about, but this disagreement really only in terms of how long The 1st Assyrian Occupation of Egypt lasts, that is, as it appears impossible it lasts 400 years, but really no more than 150 to 200, which implies that the time of The Exodus needs moving forward from 1450 to about 1300, or as early as 1250 BC, thus shortening the period of The 1st Assyrian Occupation of Egypt, as well as the time of **Moses, Joshua** and the **judges**, such an adjustment seemingly necessary so the story will fit in God's 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan, which, thanks again to the 'view atop' Dr. Velikovsky's 'shoulders', we will eventually, by **scripture**, more thoroughly examine and attempt to sort out).

OEDIPUS AND AKHNATON, 1960, otherwise identified as *Ages In Chaos, Volume II*, the time of the close of The 18th Dynasty, and of the real Egyptian Pharaoh Akhnaton, and his wives, his sons—including his most famous son, Pharaoh Tutankhamen, more popularly known as "King Tut"—and his daughters, all of whom the Greeks base their mythological "King Oedipus" and his family upon, this Pharaoh Akhnaton, originally Amenhotep IV, (possibly reigning during the period Mars began '**visiting**' the Earth in the 8th Century BC, if not already subdued by a resurgence of The Assyrian Empire—or call it The 2nd Assyrian Occupation of Egypt—in the late 9th or early 8th Century BC), Akhnaton being one of the last pharaohs of the 18th Dynasty, which shortly thereafter, contrary to the "classic chronology", mysteriously ended, (evidently leaving a century or two gap of time between the end of The 18th Dynasty and the start of The 19th Dynasty in the 7th or 6th Century BC, which again, this 'gap' possibly due to The 2nd Assyrian Occupation of Egypt and/or the 'destabilizing effects' of The Visits of Mars, while The 19th Dynasty's 'later restart' is more likely the result of, besides again, the 'destabilizing effect' of Mars, by a second and final 'slump' —or call it the 'decline'—of The Assyrian Empire, necessarily also marked by The Rise of Babylonian Empire), but despite The 18th Dynasty's 'long-past conclusion', it's 'true story' was co-opted in Greek myth beginning in The 5th or 4th Century BC, becoming a story instead about a Greek king named Oedipus, that, as Dr. Velikovsky conclusively shows, is clearly and extensively based on Pharaoh Akhnaton, his family, and his 'circumstances'.

PEOPLES OF THE SEA, THE CONCLUDING VOLUME OF THE AGES IN CHAOS SERIES, (or as it might otherwise be entitled, *Ramses III of Egypt, the Persians, Phoenicians and Greeks*), 1977, a skip to the end the story, to the time of The 20th Dynasty, the last dynasty of the "New Kingdom", and going through the 29th (or 31st), the so-called "Late Period" of Egypt, the story ending with The Rise of Alexander the Great, a story that includes the involvement of The Medo-Persian Empire, (the preceding end of The Assyrian Empire, and of The Chaldean or

Babylonian Empire dealt with in the next volume, as well as in the unpublished volume about Assyria), this **Persian** involvement in The 20th Dynasty happening when they first allied with the Greeks, and at least some Phoenicians, (read, **Canaanites**—the **Assyrians**, '**Chaldean-Babylonians**', and **the Medes and Persians** all apparently **Canaanite** peoples too), but in this case Dr. Velikovsky most prominently identifying the assistance of the coastal, evidently Phoenician, '**Canaanite-Philistines**', to finally conquer **Egypt**, who, despite their joint effort, failed, and where after that the Greeks instead allied with **Egypt** to fight against **the Medes and Persians**, this story unfolding when Pharaoh Ramses III held **Egypt** against this alliance under The Medo-Persian Empire, Ramses famously referring to these defeated "Persian", "Phoenician" ", and "Greek" attackers as "peoples of the sea", now more commonly translated, "Sea Peoples", all this evidently occurring during the reigns of **Darius** and/or **Cyrus**, and certainly preceding the later 'atrocities' in **Egypt** at the hand of the son of **Cyrus**, the '**Canaanite-Persian**' King Cambyses, Dr. Velikovsky's "reconstructed" chronology showing that the misplaced and misidentified 13th and 12th Century BC, 18th-20th-Dynasties-era **Hittites**, and "The Hittite Empire", were really The 8th-6th Century BC, 'resurging' '**Canaanite-Assyrian**', then '**Canaanite-Babylonian**', but finally '**Canaanite-Medo-Persian**' allied with '**Canaanite-Phoenician**' and **Greek** enemies of **Egypt**, and showing that Ramses III, rightly belonging in the mid-to-late 6th Century BC, (as did **Belshazzar**, **Darius**, **Cyrus**, **Croesus** and **Cambyses**, etc.), is 'classically' misplaced back in time the better part of a millennia too, and in the process Dr. Velikovsky's chronology showing me that this 'involvement' of the Medo-Persian Empire, (again, likely including the influence of **Darius** and/or **Cyrus**, that is, this grandfather and/or his grandson, though around this time they may have been at war with each other too, and **Cyrus**, who during his 'involvement' may have also been at war with Croesus, his grandfather's wife's father), must have also 'involved' the cooperation, as well as the seafaring and warfaring skills, of the '**Canaanite-Phoenicians**', evidently most significantly the inhabitants of **Philistia**, which apparently then was still a 'place of refuge' of various displaced **Canaanite** peoples, such 'refugees' scattered from other parts of **Canaan**, that is, from the land of and around **Israel**, to the coast and islands of The Mediterranean, these peoples evidently including the **Tarshish** and **Chittim** shipmasters—the word **Chittim** associated with the Eastern Mediterranean island of Cyprus, for example, likely derived from the word **Canaan**—and this makes sense because the Phoenicians are a 'culture' that dates back to a time following The Exodus, their growth in the Mediterranean corresponding with when the **Israelites** began chasing **Canaanites** of all kinds into that sea, or to its coasts and islands and beyond, one of their eastern-most coastal strongholds remaining at **Tyre** until Alexander the Great literally pushed them off this coastal island into the sea, (these Mediterranean shipmasters being the ones I'd guess that also have a lasting 'phi' (pronounced 'pie') legacy as well, and I mean the Phoenicians are known as the inventors of 'Galleon-style' ships, and my encyclopedia traces the origin of piracy itself to the "people of the sea", yes, evidently to these "peoples" who were literally 'chased into the sea' by Israel, these being the displaced **Canaanite** peoples that adapted themselves to seafaring).

RAMSES II AND HIS TIME, A [4th-and-last published] Volume in the Ages In Chaos Series, (which Dr. Velikovsky suggested could instead be titled, "*Ramses II and Nebuchadnezzar*"), 1978, the time of Ramses I, Seti I, and Ramses II, and the 'restart' of the "New Kingdom" with the start of The 19th Dynasty of Egypt, the period, when added to the 'successes' of Ramses III in The 20th Dynasty—this later

dynasty's events being reported by Dr. Velikovsky in the previously published, though chronologically "Concluding Volume"—thought to bring the "New Kingdom" to a close, and where in the following 'decline', in the 21st through 29th (or 31st) Dynasties—also reported in the previous volume—the pharaohs of Egypt were at best only "vassals" of The Medo-Persian Empire, with this 'decline' identified as Egypt's "Late Period", a period preceded by the 'successes' of Ramses III in the 20th Dynasty, as well as—as this volume shows—by the 'successes' of the early 19th Dynasty, including the initial 2-year reign of Ramses I, (though which particular 2 years it was—"as with all dates in Ancient Egypt"—is widely disputed), and by the 'resilience' of his son, Seti I, who more or less held his ground, which became ground that is added to by the far reaching 'victories' of his son, Ramses II, who Dr. Velikovsky identifies in *scripture* as **Pharaohnecho[h] king of Egypt**, or just **Necho**, (who pushed 'declining' **Assyria** all the way back to the **river Euphrates**, but later was "defeated" by **Nebuchadnezzar** there ([2Ki 23:29](#); [2Ch 35:20-24](#); [Jer 46:2](#)—evidently near the time that the father of **Nebuchadnezzar**, **Nebopolassar**, and the father of **Darius**, **Cyaxares**, had conquered **Nineveh**—though if you haven't yet sufficiently '**studied**' SECTION 7 of [RGT](#) then you won't understand very much of this), and where after this period of war there was an eventual 'truce'—but again, not in The 13th or 12th Century BC, nor preceding or more immediately following The Exodus, or with imaginary **Hittite** foes, but in the late 7th to early 6th Centuries BC—Dr. Velikovsky proving in this volume that the real foe of Egypt, in its 'revival' in The 19th Dynasty, a foe who finally 'made peace' with Ramses II, and who was finally 'allowed' to occupy a small northeastern part of the Egyptian coast ([2Ki 24:7](#)), is unquestionably, no, not the **Hittites**, but **Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon**.

And if that doesn't have your head spinning, anymore, there are two other unpublished works of Velikovsky's in the *Ages in Chaos* series I haven't yet really '**studied**', *The Assyrian Conquest*, evidently filling in more detail in that 'big gap' between the 18th and 19th Egyptian Dynasties, and *The Dark Ages of Greece*, apparently covering about the same period when Greece seems to have been 'blasted back into the Stone Age', though both of these volumes are now available free to read, along with many other of Dr. Velikovsky's resources, at [varchive.org](#).

But you should have **understood** that *Peoples of the Sea*, which takes it's readers to the end of the story, to The Rise of Alexander the Great, actually mostly follows *Ramses II and His Times* chronologically, with *The Assyrian Conquest* more or less preceding them both, this "unpublished" volume likely filling in the time between Akhnaton and the rivals Ramses II and **Nebuchadnezzar**, and the "unpublished", *The Dark Age of Greece*, exposing the 'mis-imagined' half-century 'gap' in Greek culture—a supposed 'period' when absolutely no 'Greek' writing has been recovered, while an abundance exists from before this supposed 'gap', with Homer marking the end of this "dark age", his works, including on the topic of the "theomachy" (war of the gods) of the preceding centuries, evidently written in the 7th Century BC, apparently following The Visits of Mars.

And of course there are the first two volumes in his *Ages in Chaos* series—unless you consider *Oedipus and Akhnaton* just a long 'appendix' to the 1st volume—these volumes covering the time following the "cataclysm" at The Exodus, including Egypt's fall and Assyria's rise—Assyria otherwise identified as the "Canaanite Empire", uh-huh—but also covering that first 'slump' in the Canaanite Empire's full control of Egypt, namely, The 18th Dynasty of Egypt.

And it's my impression that the main ideas offered in Dr. Velikovsky's unpublished works are to some extent already covered in his published ones, just

with less detail, etc. And you should also be aware that it appears 'unavoidable' that we'll need to 'bump' Dr. Velikovsky's chronological estimates up another century or two in one respect, that is, concerning the time of The Exodus, from 1450 to 1300, or to as early as 1250 BC, and thereby significantly shorten The 1st Canaanite Occupation of Egypt, (yes, more 'renaming' needed, huh), this period synchronized with the time of **Moses, Joshua** and the **judges**, where the transition from The 1st Canaanite Occupation of Egypt to The 18th Dynasty of Egypt is directly connected to the help of **Israel** under **king Saul**, not to mention shortly thereafter to a little help from a young man named **David**.

But it is also my impression that, with a still somewhat 'clouded evolutionary perspective', and with 'overwhelming opposition'—including '**satanic conspiracy**'—and without a complete **understanding** of the entire Biblical chronology, Dr. Velikovsky restricted himself, often just for the sake of argument I gather, not to be moved quite as far as he might have been from the more "classic" perspective, at least concerning the placement of The Exodus. But it appears it must be moved a little more, because his placement of The Exodus must be a century and a half to 2 centuries too early, otherwise it appears we will be 'overtime' on God's 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan, which I **hope** we will shortly, and more graphically, establish, and further so in **SECTION 11** and **12**. So what can we do from this point? Or how can we see The Exodus must be moved forward from Dr. Velikovsky's placement? Or how instead can we even attempt a '**Step 3**' approximate calculation from **Abraham** to today? We could estimate a 'range of time' for Abraham's **birth**. Some historians have already done this, placing his "emergence" at about 2000 BC, plus or minus a century. So, since it was about 1949 years from the **creation** of Adam to the **birth** of Abraham, and if it was about 2,000 years from then, give or take a century, to the birth of Jesus, whose birthday is also disputed by a very few years, by-the-way, then, at the time of this writing in 2015, we've reached 'about' the year 5964 since Adam's **creation**. And since,

...one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day [2Pe 3:8](#)...

...from God's perspective, we could conclude from our perspective that there are 'about' 36 years left till the start of The Millennium, which would be about 29 years till The Rapture and the start of The Great Tribulation. And this seems to be in the ballpark, because this analysis, along with the **work** in [RGT](#), which establishes that The Rapture cannot be imminent until there has been Israeli-enforced, Middle East peace, and for some time after all their security walls have been taken down, seems to be a reasonable amount of time remaining for what still needs to happen before The Rapture will be imminent. But from this it also seems that **Abraham** could not have been born much before the year 2000 BC, or we should have already had The Rapture, which would have been before the **prophesied** events that are supposed to precede it are completed. And also seemingly, neither could Abraham instead have been born as much as a century later either, since this would leave too much time given what is now imminent. I mean, again, Israeli military and technological superiority are plainly imminent. So it is not likely that Israeli-enforced, Middle East peace is that far away either, and that neither is the time that the **walls** can start coming down, and when as little as a generation later The Rapture could be imminent. And that is, you should be **able** to **see** here, even without the 'help' of "classic" *secular historians* and their 'chronology', that The Rapture is maybe more than a couple decades, but certainly much less than a century away. And *secular historians* do get some things right before the time of The Greek Empire. A broken clock is right twice a day after all.

But it would seem safer—and more accurate—to use another reference point, one established by Dr. Velikovsky, that being the date of The Exodus, which he places at 1450 BC. Of course this would require determining the timeline from the **birth** of Abraham to the year of The Exodus. And in this case we could work backward from The Exodus to Abraham’s birthdate. To use this date we would have to remember that **Moses** tells us that,

...the sojourning of the children of Israel, who dwelt in Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years [Exo 12:40-41](#).

And remember that **Moses** records that when **Jacob** and **the children of Israel** entered **Egypt**, the **Pharaoh** of **Egypt** asked **Jacob** his age. And,

Jacob said unto Pharaoh, The days of the years of my pilgrimage are an hundred and thirty years... [Gen 47:9](#).

And also remember that,

...Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah to wife... And Isaac intreated the LORD for his wife, because she was barren: and the LORD was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived [Gen 25:20-21](#).

And this reads like when Moses tells us that **Noah was five hundred years old** when he **begat** his children in [Gen 5:32](#), so Isaac’s age may not have been significantly beyond 40 when **Rebekah** gave birth to **Jacob** and **Esau**, though because prior to that she was **barren**, possibly so. But 40 is the only number we have here, making it as close as we can get.

And if we also remember that,

Abraham was an hundred years old, when his son Isaac was born unto him [Gen 21:5](#),

then we’re ready for another attempt at **Step 3**. See the chart on [p.369](#).

Step 3 - Abraham to The Exodus in 1450 BC to The Present

And Abraham	lived	100	years and begat	Isaac
And Isaac	lived	40*	years and begat	Jacob
And Jacob	lived	130	years and entered	Egypt
And Israel	stayed	430	years in Egypt until	The Exodus
So there were...		700*	years from Abraham’s birth to The Exodus in 1450 BC	
And there were...		893	years from Noah’s birth to Abraham’s birth	
And there were...		1056	years from Adam’s creation to Noah’s birth	

So there have been...	2649	years from Adam's creation to The Exodus
And if there have been...	1450*	years from The Exodus to Jesus' birth
And if there have been...	2015*	years from Jesus' birth to the present
Then 2015 AD is the year...	6114*	AC - After Creation

* more uncertain

So if there were about 700 years from Abraham's **birth** to The Exodus supposedly in 1450 BC, added to the about 893 years from Noah's **birth** to Abraham's **birth** from Genesis 11, added to the about 1056 years from Adam's **creation** to Noah's **birth** from Genesis 5, then there were about 2649 years from Adam's **creation** to The Exodus in 1450 BC, and accepting the popular date for Jesus' **birth**, then this is the year 6114 since the **creation** of Adam. But this apparently only confirms for me that Dr. Velikovsky's date for The Exodus must be near two centuries too early, though nowhere near so far afield as is common in "classic chronology". The problem is that this would put Abraham's **birth** around the year 2150 BC (1450 + 700), and from God's perspective we would be already well into 'Day 7' of His 7 day - 7,000-Year Plan, or over a century into The Millennium. And though confirmation should be neverending, we have supposedly already confirmed well enough that this cannot be.

More specifically, I am suggesting that The Exodus and The 1st Visit of Venus, which took place near The Year 2649 AC, should instead be placed in about 1300 BC, which would leave—in 2015—about 29 years till The Rapture, and 36 till the end of The Year 6000, The Year 6001 being the start of The 7th Day, though I acknowledge that the numbers used to arrive at this conclusion are somewhat uncertain, and for at least the number of reasons already identified.

But have we really **proved** this '**invisible precept**'? Is there really an exact 7 Day - 7000 Year Plan of God for Mankind and Angels? I mean so far it may seem we've really only established that the Earth was originally **created** to last **for ever**, like the next one will be, and that our present Earth 'changed' to 'temporary status' because Adam and Eve **sinned** sometime early on, which would be another '**invisible precept**', like that The Great Tribulation is literally and exactly 7 years long.

And there are other **sevens**, by-the-way, and other questions to go along with them. Maybe the most obvious being, besides why **every clean beast** was taken onto the **ark** by **sevens**, why has God chosen to make The Great Tribulation 7 years long, divided up by 3 sets of 7 **judgments**? And I'm sure there's a reason—or reasons—which would make this an '**invisible precept**' within another '**invisible precept**'—'**invisible**' because such **precepts** can't be **seen** or **proved** in any one verse or passage, but must be **spiritually discerned** from verses and/or passages literally and/or metaphorically, as well as contextually, '**connected**' **line upon line**, including from both **here** and **there** throughout **scripture**.

By-the-way, let's identify God's reason—or reasons—for a 7-year Great Tribulation, and likewise His reasons for the 3 sets of 7 **judgments** as '**stronger**

meat scripture', or more specifically, as **'2nd-level invisible precepts'**, which are **spiritually discerned** by **'connecting'** together **'1st-level invisible precepts'**, and where **'1st-level invisible precepts'** are **spiritually discerned** by the **'connection'** of **'visible milk precepts'**, the **milk** of **scripture** being **'visible'**—by The Spirit—without the need for any **'connections'** whatsoever. And of course such **'levels'** naturally **'rise unendingly' higher**, or you could say **'dive unfathomably' deeper**.

But on with the questions. Are there really such **'higher-level invisible precepts'** here? I mean can we **prove** there really is a '7 day - 7,000-Year Plan'? Well, remember we've seen some **scripture**, including both **instruction** from the Apostle Peter, and examples from the Prophets Jeremiah and Daniel that show "God's transcendent perspective", all of which would fit into such a '7-day plan'.

And we also **know** that the Prophet Jonah waited 3 days in that **great fish** partly to **'symbolize'** and **'foreshadow'** how Jesus would spend 3 days in **Abraham's Bosom**, where **he...descended ...into the lower parts of the earth** [Eph 4:8-10](#), and **...went and preached unto the spirits in prison** [1Pe 3:19](#). And to some degree this **'symbolism'** is not even **'invisible'**, as Jesus told us directly that Jonah's experience was **'symbolic'** of what His would be. The Patriarch Abraham's experience too, when he was sent by God to **sacrifice** his **only son** Isaac was **'symbolic'**, **'foreshadowing'** God's **sacrifice** of His **only begotten son** at **Moriah/Calvary** ([Gen 22:2](#); [Heb 11:17](#); [John 3:16](#), etc). The point is that we already **know** God uses **'symbolism'** to **'foreshadow' things to come**. And that it's presently The Spirit's **ministry** to **shew us** such **things**. Further, Paul tells us that **in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days—sabbath days** being Saturdays, you **know**, the last day in each 7-day week where Jews are required by God to **rest**—are **each** to be considered a **shadow of things to come** (see again [Col 2:17](#)), **'foreshadowing'** events in God's timetable most prominently involving Jesus. So the question is not really if, but how much does God use such **'symbolism'**—and specifically 'meaningful numbers'—to **'foreshadow'** His 'specific time plan' for His Creation.

Well, we could start with the fact that God doesn't just give 'symbolic hints' about his timetable for His plan, He also openly announces that He has **'declared' the end from the beginning**, telling, for example, **Jacob, and all the remnant of the house of Israel**, in this case referring to all his **children**, and so really also to us, to,

Remember the former things of old: for I am God, there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure [Isa 46:3, 9-10](#).

So yes, surely His **counsel** or **'plans' shall stand**. And what kind of **friends** of Jesus would **we** be if we couldn't **remember the former things of old**, not really **knowing** enough about them, and not really **knowing** His **counsel** or **'plan'** for the future either, let alone what's going on now? So let's keep on track here and look at some other **lines** both **here** and **there**—in context— that more specifically identify this **'higher-level invisible precept'**—that God does indeed have a 7,000-Year Plan for Mankind and Angels, and that one way to see it is 'by the numbers'.

And not that I **ever** expect to identify them all, but you should come to **understand** that God's **'symbolisms'**—of all types—are common throughout **scripture**. And there are some that many of us will be **ashamed** we missed before

The Rapture. And this one where God throughout *scripture* more or less '**declares**' His 7,000-year, '**beginning to end plan**' is one of them.

And **God** starts it all off with one of His bigger 'hints'. He **created** the World in **six days** and rested on **the seventh** ([Exo 20:11](#)). And He tells us that His people must 1) work 6 days and rest on the 7th; 2) let their fields rest every 7th year, 3) return land, and 4) free servants, and 5) let their land rest another year after every 7 x 7 years, and that is, every 50th year, which is called the **year of jubile**. They also must attend 3 of their 7 annual **feasts** in the 7th month of every year, and 1 in the 4th month, **the feast of weeks**, which takes place following a period of a **jubile**, and before this 'mid-year' **feast** the 'beginning-of-the-year' **feasts** take place, including 3 **feasts** in the first month, the first of them being **the feast of the Passover**, where God **commands** His people,

Six days thou shalt eat unleavened bread: and on the seventh day shall be a solemn assembly to the LORD thy God: thou shalt do no work therein [Deu 16:8](#).

And again that single 'mid-year' **feast, the feast of weeks**, is placed 7 weeks after the 3rd **feast** of the first month, **the feast...of firstfruits**, or **the feast of harvest**, originally placed **from such time as thou beginnest to put the sickle to the corn** [Deu 16:9-10](#).

And Daniel's [Chapter 9 prophecy](#) reveals a 7 x 70 'completion plan' of God for **his people**. And all this seems to imply that **seven** is a number '**symbolizing**' what we could call '**completeness**', but surely other **things** too, like **patience**, '**endurance**', and **suffering**, even **godliness**. I mean God uses this number way too often along such '**lines**' for it to be just coincidence, and if you're paying close enough attention, you'll surely keep running into such 'themes' in your '**connections**' of **precepts** again and again.

And notice the number **six** in all this too. All the **work** and/or **suffering** seem to be done in this timeframe, another example of this being when **Joshua** was told to take his **men of war** and **go round the city of Jericho**, and to **do** this **once** each day for **six days**, it's destruction coming on the 7th Day after they **compassed the city seven times** [Joshua 6](#), this to me being like God's **predestinated** 6-millennium-long **days** of '**fallout**' beginning with **the curse**, and ending with the establishment of Christ's **everlasting kingdom** on Earth.

And Jesus waited **six days** after Peter's revelation of Who Jesus is, at the time when Jesus also said, **some of them that stand here... shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power**, and what happened after that **six days** wait was that Jesus was **revealed** in His **glory** on the Mount of Transfiguration ([Mat 16:13-17:8](#); [Mar 9:1-8](#)).

Then there's Jesus' trip to Bethany **six days before the passover** feast, described by John and Mark as the place **where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead**, and where on **the next day**, from there He rode into **Jerusalem on an ass's colt...as it is written**, evidently shortly after which **certain Greeks**, yes obviously **gentiles**, asked to **see Jesus**. ([John 12](#)). And you should know the rest of this story.

And this brings us to 'time-markers' in 2 and 3 Day periods, or in various other 'parts' of God's '**grand week**' that most often 'present' the 'concluding end' of God's 7-day Plan. And let's start with that earlier visit to Bethany, where Jesus waited 2 days after hearing Lazarus was dead before going there to **raise** him. This seems to '**symbolize**' and '**foreshadow**' that after the Jews reject Jesus, which would confirm they were '**spiritually dead**', Jesus will wait 2,000 years before

reviving them, and others. Of course this gives us a simple timetable for when The Rapture could be. If Jesus died in 33 AD, and symbolically the Jews did too, He will **revive** them and their land in 2033. But is this **'revival'** marked at that time near the midpoint of The Great Tribulation where the Jews recognize Jesus as the **Messiah**, or at the end when He comes for them to escort them home from Petra, or is it marked otherwise, and using which **feast days**? Well, at least I was **able** to **ask** these **questions**. But whatever the case, The Millennium, or 'The 7th Day of Rest', is Day 3 in this timeframe.

And for another 'more focused perspective'—and surely there are many examples of such **'symbolism'** and **'foreshadowing'**, in various contexts, **revealed** in the 'presentation' of 'parts' of this **'grand week'**, all adding to the 'overall picture' of God's **'week-long plan'**—let's revisit King Nebuchadnezzar's **dream** in [Daniel 2](#), which begs the question, why sometimes just a 'part' of this **'grand week'**? In this case, why does God in this **dream**, according to Daniel's **interpretation**, give an 'allegorical presentation' that really only gives an **account** of 5 out of The 7 **'world-ruling' kingdoms**? One reason must be that these 5—**'visibly'** represented as just 4, remember?—were the present and future **kingdoms** of that time, God evidently deciding not to include the 2 past **'world-ruling' kingdoms** in this particular 'presentation' of His **'grand perspective'**. Surely another reason was to help keep **hid** the then still coming Age of Grace, not to mention **hide** such **knowledge** from the **careless**, or **worse**, who would **'misuse'** it.

Again, there are many examples of God's 'more focused', or 'partial presentations' of His **'grand week'**, each **a shadow of** ([Col 2:17](#)) His specific and exact 'time plan' that altogether further reveal The 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan of God for Mankind and Angels.

And **the prophets** are rich in such **'hid in plain sight'**, **'grand perspectives'**. A case in point is found in the accounting of time throughout the Book of Hosea, where the **prophet** only **revealeth**, if you are **'spiritually mature'** enough to **understand**, only 'soon-coming' and 'far-future' events, not so much past ones, but he does **not** **'visibly reveal'** the then still **hidden** Age of Grace, though because it is **now revealed**, we can **now** identify these last 3 to 4 Days of God's **'grand week'** in Hosea's **prophecies**, and even, to a certain extent, our **now revealed** place in them too.

The opening **line** to this book sets the starting point in time, actually approaching the middle of Day 4, where it is explained that...

The word of the LORD... came unto Hosea ...in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash, king of Israel [all living during the time of The 7 Visits of Mars, these **'visits'** evidently occurring in about 15-year intervals between about 776 to 687 BC]... [Hos 1:1](#).

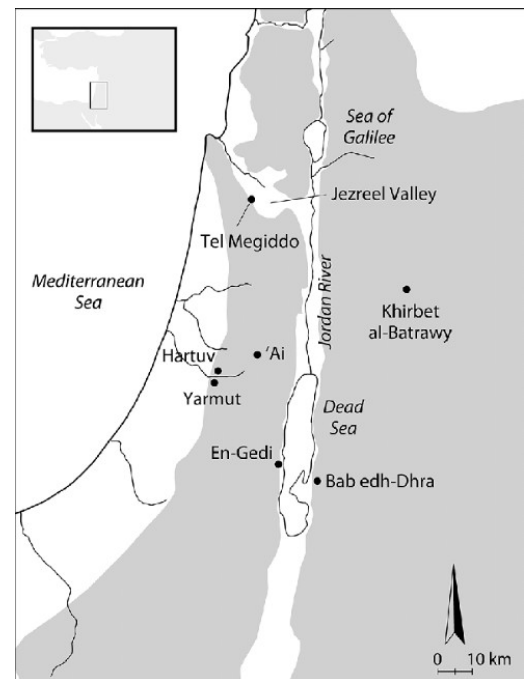
And no, we're not quite ready to see the details of how Mars is involved in all this yet, but yes, if you've kept up, I think you're ready to **understand** more about how God commonly **revealeth** this "transcendent perspective" of His, which goes a long way toward **'revealing'** exactly what His 7 day - 7,000-year plan is. And to get even more **understanding**, that is, to help you become **thoroughly furnished** to **prove** your **own work**, we'll need to establish the context of the whole Book of Hosea. So we're going to do a little **'line-upon-line, precept-upon-precepting'** in this **book** in order to get an **'approved understanding'** of it. And by-the-way, if you're still 'floundering' in [SECTION 11](#) of the last **study**, I mean in that part about The Millennial Temple, this may help you become **thoroughly furnished** enough to take another run at that **'unbearable'** subsection. And I mean that these

prophecies of Hosea are, like in Ezekiel 40-48, and most other **prophecies** really, presented by God in kind of like a ‘deconstructed puzzle’ that must be **‘rightly divided’**, including preceptually and chronologically, and **‘correctly connected’** back together **line upon line**, and **precept upon precept**, in order to get the fully **‘day-dawned’** picture that God offers by them, let alone to **rightly** identify more of the **‘human’**, **‘historical’**, and **‘spiritual perspectives’ revealed** by them. So here we go. Let the ‘puzzle work’ begin.

In the first chapter of the **book**, we learn that Hosea’s 3 children by his **wife of whoredoms**, the former **whore** Gomer, were named by God to **‘foreshadow’ things to come** upon the then divided Kingdoms of **Israel** and **Judah**. And God—or is it Jesus—tells us that the first child’s name **‘foreshadows’** the coming **judgment** by God on the 10-tribe **kingdom of the house of Israel**—who’s leading tribe and offender is **Ephraim**, whose kings rule from **Samaria**—one of their many **offences** that **provoke** this **judgment** being their breaking away from The 2 Tribes of **Judah** in the first place, their final defeat taking place in **Jezreel** ([Hos 1:1-5](#)), which, besides in other **‘prophetic’** and **‘historical scripture’**, you can get much more information about in Dr. Velikovsky’s 1st volume of the *Ages in Chaos* series. And most of the rest of the **prophecy** of Hosea is about how and why God is going to permanently **cut off** kings from **Ephraim** ruling from **Samaria**, and where, after some evidently insufficiently effective **chastisement by captivity** in **Assyria**, and a couple of **days** of being **scattered** worldwide—this ‘2 step’ **wounding**, but also to some extent **cure** of **Israel**, (at least the first step, if not both, seen, e.g., in [Hos 5:13-15](#))—**Israel** is finally reunited to **Judah**, this final **‘reuniting’** apparently at a time when,

...the children of Judah and the children of Israel... [are] gathered together, and appoint themselves one head [- ultimately again King **David** [Hos 3:4-5](#)], **and they shall come up out of the land** [of Edom, Moab and Ammon, that is, from Petra in present day Jordan]: **for great shall be the day of Jezreel** [or **Armageddon**] [Hos 1:11](#).

And if you haven’t yet, it’s time you pictured these ‘corners’ of what I call The Lord’s Triangle, and from this particular ‘angle’ how **Jezreel** and **Armageddon**—the former ‘seat’ or ‘capital’ of **Ephraim** in **Samaria** (e.g., [1Ki 21:1,18](#))—are all essentially the same place, though this should probably require a little follow-up ‘encyclopedia’ and/or ‘map work’ on your part to more fully **see**. And I mean that the **Jezreel Valley** (map, [p.373](#)), named after that old city in this valley, will evidently one day soon hold a **‘lake of blood’**, such that it will become for a short time fittingly enough called **‘Lake Armageddon’**. And overlooking this valley there is also a “tel” or “tell” called Megiddo—a low, flat-topped hill, in this case ‘rebuilt upon’ many times, which is named after the founder of an “important city-state” that once existed there—this *tel* being strategically positioned like a sentry over this valley, and part of a major trade route, especially for trade with **Egypt** and **Assyria** ([Hos 7:11,16](#); [12:1](#)). So the Jezreel Valley—which is what it’s called today—is bounded by the Mount Carmel Range to the south, including Mount Gilboa, with **Tel Megiddo** situated on the southwestern side, and with the Jordan Rift Valley—including the



Jordan River running south from the **Sea of Galilee**, connecting at the eastern end of the valley, the Jordan Rift Valley evidently being where all the **blood** will 'drain'. **Scripture** offers other names for this same valley, or location, and that is, **the valley of Megiddo** (e.g., [2Ch 35:22](#)), or **a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon** ([Rev 16:16](#)), which means '**mount Megiddo**'. Get the picture? Again, consult—and 'spiritually filter'—whatever 'encyclopedias' and 'maps' you need to until you do, and I mean until you can **see** the site of this coming literal '**bloodbath**', that, **God willing**, you will one day actually personally **witness**, and in that case, actually know where you are.

So the 1st child of Hosea by Gomer that God names '**foreshadows**' the end of the rule of **Ephraim** from **Samaria**, and therefore the end of The Kingdom of the House of Israel at **Jezreel** when they are conquered there by the Assyrians who **besieged** them, and **carried Isreal away into Assyria** ([2Ki:17:5-7](#)), which again, as God also indicates in His usual '**transcendent**' way, is where The Battle of Armageddon will also occur ([Hos 1:2-5,11](#); [13:16](#)).

The 2nd child of Hosea by Gomer that God names '**foreshadows**' the demise of **Israel**, and that is, of **Ephraim** and **Samaria**, but **mercy** for **Judah** ([Hos 1:6-7](#); [4:15](#); [5:5-15](#); [11:12](#); [13:16](#)), though later, and more '**transcendentally**', God also suggests that **Judah** will eventually **fall** too, evidently first to **Babylon**, and later to **Rome**, after which they will also, along with **Israel**, be **scattered** ([Hos 5:5-15](#); [6:1-11](#); [8:14](#); [12:2](#)). And this can be seen again when God apparently indicates that the **fall** of **Ephraim** will become a **harvest** that **Judah** '**reaps**', supposedly meaning that after **Judah** returns from **captivity** in **Babylon**, then '**Medo-Persia**', that the **whoring** and **idolatrous** ways of **Ephraim** and **Israel** still practiced in the land will lead **Judah** to **fall** yet again ([Hos 6:10-11](#)), this time to **Rome**, when evidently at this point all 12 Tribes are **scattered ...among the heathen** (e.g., [Psa 44:11](#)), evidently for a '**couple of days**'. Sound **right**?

The name of the 3rd child of Hosea by Gomer most directly '**foreshadows**' the first **captivity** by **Assyria** of the apparently also finally 'twice-conquered' 10 tribes of **Israel**—the second time by **Rome** a while after returning with **Judah** from '**Medo Persia**'—but the name also apparently '**foreshadows**' their eventual second '**rejoining**' with **Judah**, and their later '**reuniting**' in the **land of Israel** under **one head**, and that is, under **David their king** ([Hos 3:4-5](#)), this being finished apparently after the surely greatest of a couple of '**great days**' at **Jezreel**, the first being when the **Assyrians** conquer The 10 tribes, and the second being when the '**reunited**' 12 Tribes are **delivered** from the Empires of the Antichrist and of The Kings of the East, both times at **Jezreel**, and that is, at **Armageddon**.

However it appears to some that this first defeat of The 10 Tribes leading to their **captivity** in **Assyria** is only rectified by the full reunion of The 12 Tribes in Israel **after Armageddon**, which suggests that instead, generally speaking, that The 10 Tribes of Israel may have been **scattered** from **Assyria** when Nebuchadnezzar's father, King Nebopolazzar of **Babylon**, in an alliance with Darius' Father, King Cyaxares of **the Medes**, conquered Nineveh (in 612 BC, **remember?**), and that, again generally speaking, The 10 Tribes were not so much enslaved and taken to **Babylon** from **Assyria**, but were at that point **scattered... among the heathen**, and though surely there were exceptions, supposedly only **Judah** returned from '**Medo-Persia**' to be later—'**half a day**' later to God—finally **scattered** by Rome ([Hos 1:8-11](#); [3:1](#), [3:4-5](#)). I mean there seems to be two ways of looking at this, or more, maybe kind of like how God might look at The Second Russian Communist Revolution alongside The Second Chinese Communist Revolution when talking about, for example, **another horse that was red** ([Rev 6:4](#)) in relation to, let's say, **the kings of the east** ([Rev 16:12](#)), or not, but you should at least **see** the possibility

of different '**perspectives**' here, and **understand** that maybe only one, or maybe both of them, might be **right**, and that is, in any given context. Of course any suggestion for the need of any **correction** to '**perspectives**' found in [RGT](#) becomes a **questions** you **ask**, and then **believe** God will eventually **answer**, as long as **ye continue** to **ask, seek** and **knock** for such **answers**. Then again, such uncertainty may be from compartmentalization—from **forgetting** something you already **know**. But surely **God knoweth** our need to be '**re-answered**', or just '**reminded**', just as surely as **he knoweth** when to give us new **revelations**.

And remember some **answers** come quicker than others, and some, as maybe in this case, before you **ask**. And this particular **answer** may appear right here in Hosea 3, which we have already covered to some extent. By the time the events of this chapter take place, apparently Gomer has already died, and God—or is it Jesus—directs Hosea to take an **adulteress**—who is apparently more an **idolater** (read, '**planet worshiper**')—to be his wife, and God seems to tell us that this marriage '**foreshadows**' that **Israel** must mostly not return with **Judah** after the Babylonian/ Medo-Persian **captivity** to rebuild the Temple in Jerusalem, but are, evidently for the most part, **scattered** when Kings Nebopolazzar and Cyaxares conquer **Nineveh of the Assyrians**—a short version of this story found in [Zephaniah 2:13-15](#). Or as Hosea puts it,

[After **Israel** is **carried...away into Assyria** [2Ki 17:6](#)] **...the children of Israel shall abide many days** [about 2 ½ millennia?] **without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim** [and supposedly not return with Judah to build a new temple when released by Cyrus and his successors, as they seem to have been previously **scattered** from Assyria by Nebopolazzar and Cyaxares, so that supposedly only...]: **Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall fear the LORD and his goodness in the latter days** [and that is, generally speaking, only after coming home to Israel from Petra after **Armageddon**] [Hos 3:4-5](#).

And notice too here that God is speaking in '**human perspective**' when He says, **many days**, as He also frequently does, the 'jumping around' from His to our perspective, along with the purposely heavily 'deconstructed' and 'disconnected' **precepts**, making **rightly dividing** them so naturally **hard to be uttered**.

But did you think this was the **answer**? No! '**Corrected, improved and expanded perspectives**'—on the '**levels**' we have reached—are no longer that '**easy to be uttered**', and indeed this can only at best be part of the **answer**, because now were ready to add the compartmentalization, you know, something you already **know**, but are **forgetting**, without which you '**misinterpret**' God's Word here. Specifically, you should **remember** what we **learned** about The 10 Tribes of Israel near the end of [SECTION 7](#) of the last **study** that,

...now [in the Prophet Micah's time] **shalt thou** [The 10 Tribes?, e.g., [Mic 1:1 & 5-6](#), [3:1&9](#), [Mic 6:16](#) & [1Ki 16:25-30](#)] **go forth out of the city** [of Jezreel of The Tribe of Ephraim in Samaria?], **and thou shalt dwell in the field** [in Assyria?], **and thou shalt** [later?] **go even to Babylon; there shalt thou be delivered; there the LORD shall** [by **Cyrus** & his successors?] **redeem thee from the hand of thine enemies** [Mic 4:10](#).

And yes, God's sometimes more 'soon-coming' but otherwise 'Days-away', what I could call, 'mix' of **prophecies**, including in The Book of Micah, requires a

'spiritually mature focus'—as well as The Spirit's direction—to **'rightly divide'** them. And I mean such 'mixes' of **'prophetic perspective'**—and that is, of our **'human perspective'** with God's more **'transcendent'** one, such 'mixes' being common and varying throughout **'prophetic scripture'**—are as impossible to **interpret** by the **'spiritually immature'** as it was for most anyone—except Daniel—to have **interpreted** King Nebuchadnezzar's **dream**. Nevertheless in this verse the more 'soon-coming' part of this **prophecy** marks the beginning of a succession of events that seems to only all apply to The 10 Tribes, and to events that have since come and gone, though the following verses return to the **'Days-away perspective'** again. And I mean that only The 10 tribes **go forth** from **Samaria**, its capital **the city** of **Jezeel** under the control of The Tribe of Ephraim, to **the field** in **Assyria**, and then to **Babylon**, before being **delivered** by **Cyrus**, et al., from **there** 'back home'.

And by-the-way, you should remember the encounters Jesus had with **Samaritans** in **Samaria** in the Gospels, these **Samaritans**, as we are evidently **'pre-informed'** by Micah, being the descendents of those who 'came back' from **Assyria** via **Babylon** then **'Medo-Persia'**, but according to Hosea, remaining **without a king**, and not accepted by The 2 Tribes, and so remaining **without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim**, that is, **without** access to The Temple in Jerusalem, though we are also assured by Hosea that their Jerusalem Temple access comes, **Afterward**, at the time when **all the children of Israel return**, after the second **scattering**, which started in and around 70 AD, and that is, in the one happening now, ultimately again under **David their king... in the latter days**.

And all this supposedly means, generally speaking, that The 10 Tribes weren't really **scattered** by Nebopolazzar and Cyaxares—not mostly anyway—but were more 'transferred' from **Assyria** to **Babylon** to **'Medo-Persia'**, and finally **delivered** 'home' from **there**, God's **promise** through Micah supposedly being that He would **redeem** them from **there** ([Mic 4:10](#); [Eze 1:1](#)) in The 1st Gathering, as opposed to **from all the nations** (i.e.; [Jer 29:14](#); [Eze 38:8](#)) in The 2nd Gathering.

But here it gets even harder, because if you think we now have the 'complete picture', you're still mistaken, one reason being that a **'better question'** occurred to me, one that revealed a mistake of mine, a **'misinterpretation'** really, where the **answer** to this new question made me not as sure as I used to be about the former one. So I read Micah again, this time looking for the context that I wanted to **'better see'**. Turns out the 'popular general interpretation' of Micah, that it's "Isaiah in miniature", except that Micah's job was more to The 10 tribes, while Isaiah's was more to The 2 Tribes, is not as **'approvable'** as I thought. And I mean that in this reading I saw **Judah** being **chastened** by God a good deal too, except it became clear **Isreal** would have to be **chastened** first, as it had become like a 'cancer' to **Judah**, a 'cancer' that needed to be 'cut out and removed' if there was any chance for **Judah** to carry on thereafter. And you may remember that **Judah** did carry on after **Israel** was, in stages, **carried... captive to Assyria** [2Ki 15:29](#), where finally **Samaria was taken** [2Ki 18:10-11](#), this 'extended period' of **grace** for **Judah** evidently being mostly because,

That which thou [Hezekiah king of Judah] hast prayed... [God] heard
([2Ki 19:20](#); [Isa 37:21](#); [2Ki 20:5](#)),

where one of the **wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible 'God-given' answers** involved God's **promise** to **defend** ([2Ki 19:34](#); [20:6](#); [Isa 37:35](#); [38:5-6](#)) **Jerusalem** against **Sennacherib king of Assyria**, which we will get to in much more detail, especially in **SECTION 10**.

So what's the '**better question**'? The old question, implied near the end of [SECTION 10](#) in [RGT](#), was, "Where is this **field**"? I told you this **field** was where Ezekiel was when first called by God, where I assumed just The 10 Tribes of Israel were spending their time of **captivity** in **Assyria**, except this **calling** was really **in fifth year of captivity of Jehoiachin king of Judah**, who was **carried away**, along with **the mighty of the land... from Jerusalem to Babylon** ([2Ki 24](#)), this being about 5 years before Ezekiel **saw visions of God**, and when, **The word of the LORD came expressly unto Ezekiel**, he being then **among the captives by the river of Chebar... in the land of the Chaldeans** [Eze 1:1-3](#), this evidently being when **both Israel** and the 'better part' of **Judah** were already **captives in Babylon to Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon**.

So where is this **river of Chebar** really? Isn't it near this same **field**? It's evidently in **Babylon**, at least during **king Jehoiachin's captivity**. And Ezekiel reveals that it's a place where Jews are kept as **captives**, and that it was one even before **Jehoiachin** was **carried away**, apparently implying that a transition from Assyrian to Babylonian World Rule has fairly recently occurred.

However remember I have led you to believe that The 10 Tribes **shalt** first...

...go forth out of the city [of Jezreel of The Tribe of Ephraim in Samaria], **and...shalt dwell in the field** [in Assyria], **and thou shalt** [later] **go even to Babylon...** [Mic 4:10](#).

Yet in this more recent reading of Micah I **see** this to be directed at **Judah** too, and possibly even instead at **Jerusalem** as opposed to **Jezreel**, but at a time when **Israel** will be involved with this chain of events too. Whatever the case, I no longer **see** this **field** as **just** where The 10 Tribes were supposed to **dwell**. And I do see it to be next to a **river**, the name of it being **Chebar**. And I mean that since this verse seems directed at **Judah**, as well as at **Israel**, this **field** can't be just a 'stopover' for The 10 Tribes on the way to **Babylon**. And I mean that the place of the entire **captivity** of The 10 Tribes in both **Assyria** and **Babylon** seems to be in this same **field** by this same **river**, and that is, with only a change of 'wardens'. And yes, I no longer **see** the need for these **captives by the river Chebar** to have moved at all. They evidently are originally The 10 Tribes, who really only **go...to Babylon** simply because Kings Nebopolazzar and Cyaxares conquer **Assyria**, and because of the subsequent death of the Median King Cyaxares, such that The 10 Tribes are later joined in this same **field** by this same **river** by The 2 Tribes by the hand of Nebopolazzar's son, **Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon**.

And again, remember that **Samaritans** lived in **Samaria** at the time of Jesus, meaning at least some came back from their originally Assyrian, then Babylonian, and finally Medo-Persian 'camp', this concluding the first time **Israel** is **scattered** and **gathered** (e.g., [Est 3:8](#)), and meaning that they were more or less 'all back' to be **scattered** again the second time in and around 70 AD, and that they are presently being '**reunited**' by the now ongoing 2nd Gathering of Israel.

In the Easton Bible Dictionary, we also see that **Chebar** means "length", and is...

...a river in the "land of the Chaldeans" ([Eze 1:3](#)) [which was for a long time in the control of the Assyrians], on the banks of which were located some of the Jews of the Captivity ([Eze 1:1](#); [15,23](#); [10:15,20,22](#)). It has been supposed to be identical with the river Habor, the Chaboras, or modern Khabour, which falls into the Euphrates at Circesium. To the banks of this river some of the Israelites were removed [from **Samaria**] by the Assyrians ([2Ki 17:6](#)). An opinion that has much to support it is

that the "Chebar" was the royal canal of Nebuchadnezzar, the Nahr Malcha, the greatest in Mesopotamia, which connected the Tigris with the Euphrates, in the excavation of which the Jewish captives were probably employed [and all this makes the connections to both The Captivity of Israel and Judah obvious].

But did you get all that this time? And are you ready for the next *revelation*, or 'rediscovered compartmentalization', that *'corrects, improves and expands'* your *'perspective'* still further? Because you'll too often *'misinterpret'* too much of what we do from now on otherwise, and that is, without *understanding* how each originally *'disconnected milk-precept'* of God's Word, as well as His largely *'transcendent'*, and seemingly random, 'jumping-around-from-Day-to-Day presentation' of *prophecy*, is all *'designed'* by Him so that *they* who *would not hear* God's Word His *way* will miss this *rest* and *refreshing* that it is otherwise meant to provide. And *remember* it is also *'designed'* to do something else to those who *would not hear...* And I mean that *the word of the LORD* instead becomes the means by which *they...go, and fall backward, and be[come] broken, and snared, and taken, the blood of Christ* by The Spirit *'withstanding', God willing*. And I just mean that there's no point in going on if you don't *understand*, or if you're not ready for more.

Because this brings us to a clear case where God is speaking in His Own *'grand perspective'*, and where He is evidently speaking both to *Judah* and *Israel*, identifying *Israel* by their leading tribe, *Ephraim*, (see [Hos 6:10](#)), and comforting them, by *'foretelling'* that both *Israel* and *Judah* will have an epiphany, which, if you have been keeping up, must ultimately be followed by some 'travel', though preceded by some *great mourning*, all near the middle of The Great Tribulation, when they are finally *'reborn'*. Here the LORD identifies this 'long-time-coming' experience from both His and their perspective, *the LORD* initially speaking for them to Himself, saying,

Come, and let us return unto the LORD: for he hath torn, and he will heal us; he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the LORD: his going forth is prepared as the morning; and he shall come unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain unto the earth. O Ephraim, what shall I do unto thee? O Judah, what shall I do unto thee? for your goodness is as a morning cloud, and as the early dew it goeth away... [Hos 6:1-4](#).

This tells us, from God's perspective, that once *Judah* joins *Israel*—I mean by both of them becoming *scattered*, and that is, by the Romans—they will all remain *scattered* for *two days*, or 2,000 years, *after* which, on *the third day*, and that is, in The Millennium, God will not only *raise* them *up*, but also *raise us up, and we shall live in his sight*, these 3 *days* obviously being the last 3 of The 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan of God for Mankind and Angels.

And by-the-way, since we *know* from the pervious *study* that The Father will not yet be *in...sight* during The Millennium, but will remain in Heaven, we must be talking about Jesus in the first 3 verses, and therefore in the 4th verse too. Another reason it must be Jesus, not The Father, communicating through Hosea here—and otherwise at least some of the time elsewhere—is found in [Hosea 13:4 & 10](#). But the most convincing example is when Jesus is speaking in [Chapter 2](#). There He speaks

of events during Day 4, but jumps—in Verses 14— to events occurring at the end of Day 6 and the start of Day 7, showing us how the **‘grand perspective’ of the LORD**—commonly—is so abruptly revealed, as if He’s just ‘jumping around’ in the discussion of events that are all happening in the same ‘regular week’. Jesus says,

[In Day 4, Hosea’s time] **...I will visit upon her [Israel] the days of Baalim, wherein she burned incense to them [Venus and Mars], and she decked herself with her earrings and her jewels [- remember the Venus jewelry and art?], and she went after her lovers [read, the ‘planet gods’ of her neighbors], and forgot me, saith the LORD. [- jumping to end of Day 6 -] Therefore, behold, I will allure her, and bring her into the wilderness [at the midpoint of The Great Tribulation], and speak comfortably unto her [in Petra]. And I will give her her vineyards from thence, and the valley of Achor for a door of hope [near Jericho, evidently through which the Jews will both escape to Petra and return to Israel]: and she shall sing there, as in the days of her youth, and as in the day when she came up out of the land of Egypt [Isa 35:10; Isa 51:11]. And it shall be at that day, saith the LORD, that thou shalt call me Ishi [“husband”]; and shalt call me no more Baali [“master”]. For I will take away the names of Baalim out of her mouth, and they shall no more be remembered by their name [see Verse 13 which takes place about 2 to 3 days earlier]. And in that day [7, The Millennium,] will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground [so they won’t have the fear of mankind again, like before The Flood (Gen 9:2)]: and I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and will make them to lie down safely. And I will betroth thee unto me for ever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in lovingkindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth thee unto me in faithfulness: and thou shalt know the LORD. And it shall come to pass in that day, I will hear, saith the LORD, I will hear the heavens, and they shall hear the earth; And the earth shall hear the corn, and the wine, and the oil; and they shall hear Jezreel [- meaning that the ‘sword out of Jesus’ mouth’ at Armageddon will be heard from Petra, and throughout the Lord’s Triangle?]. And I will sow her unto me in the earth; and I will have mercy upon her that had not obtained mercy; and I will say to them which were not my people [which is now revealed to also include us!], Thou art my people; and they [including us!] shall say, Thou art my God Hos 2:13-23.**

Keeping up with all the **‘line-upon-line, precept-upon-precepting’?** Hope so, because I should add here that this passage is one of the better examples, though somewhat hidden by the use of the term **Ishi**, that shows that the Jews are the originally **‘betrothed wife’** of Jesus. And with The Mystery Age of Grace **now revealed**, we can **now see** that this applies to **us**, to the **‘station’** of Immortal Sons of God that becomes His **wife**, both Jews and Gentiles, and that,

After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight [in Millennial Israel and beyond] Hos 6:1-4...

And this shows **us** that The Age of Grace must also last about—or exactly—**two days**, and that it’s finally getting relatively close to being over. **See it?**

However it occurs to me that if the last of Jews weren't finally **scattered** until about 70 AD, then either Jesus didn't mean **after two full days**, but instead about two days, or we have a little more time left before The Rapture than I thought, which I think is entirely possible. I mean it would just mean that Abraham was born and the Exodus occurred another 3 decades or so later than previously estimated. Of course the Jews are already being **gathered** back (e.g., [Eze 38:8](#)), and for some decades now, the completion of this supposedly marked by The 6th Seal Judgment, remember? But after that **they** must **flee** to and **return** from Petra. And maybe we should instead mark the beginning of these **two days** when Jesus **is taken up... into heaven... from the mount called Olivet** [Acts 1:11-12](#). He surely did **give... up** the **unbelieving Jews** ([Act 14:2](#)) at this point, ultimately to **consume** their **filthiness... out of** them ([Micah 5:3](#) & [Ezekiel 22:15](#)). So what are the actual starting and ending points of these **two days**, and that is, for this **scattering** and **gathering** of the Jews? Maybe only God knows.

But to be more specific about God's overall time plan, **we** can also deduce that this **third day** is the last of The 7 Days, and that from our '**human perspective**' it is **a thousand years** long—The Millennium. Going backward then, we **now** know that in and around 70 AD, when the Romans 'finish' the **scattering** of all 12 Tribes, that this is, possibly exactly, **two days** or 2,000 years before the start of The Millennium, this period being Day 5 and 6 in God's perspective, this period being also marked by the mostly simultaneously occurring Church Age of Grace.

The previous '**four days**', however, I cannot as clearly distinguish, at least as '**easily**'. Still, Day 4 must begin near the time, say, when King David ushers the **ark of the covenant** into Jerusalem for the first time, with The Exodus being in the latter half of Day 3. And Day 3 may begin with The Call of Abraham by God, with Days 1 and 2 covering The Pre-Flood Period, the Flood occurring over half way through Day 2, and that Tower of Babel incident coming at the end of Day 2, when also The Period of The 7 World-ruling Kingdoms begins. I mean it must be something like that, and certainly all this accounts for very close to all the time available from now back to Creation. And from this '**perspective**', (yes, pun intended), you should now be **able** to **see** that the whole time of Creation must be very close to, but more likely exactly, 7,000 years—which, according to Peter, would be just one **week** to God, and, from His '**transcendent perspective**', the same to Him as the time we **know** He took to **create** the World, including that '**day of rest**', ultimately symbolizing the coming '**millennium of rest**'—as the '**perspective**' may be.

And **knowing** God as much as you now do, how could it be other than exactly a 7 Day - 7,000-year plan? And by-the-way, having been further '**awakened**' to this particular **revelation**, you should also realize that it must **continue** to **grow**, yes, that it should **continue** to be '**corrected, improved and expanded**' over time. And just one of the things I mean by this is that you—being now at least passably '**spiritually mature**'—should be increasingly **seeing** God's '**grand perspective**' of time everywhere in **prophecy**. And I mean you should notice how commonly They 'jumps around' (*gic* - grammar is correct) **day to day**, and not necessarily consecutively or chronologically, in Their 'presentations' of Their '**grand perspective**', many of which involve multiple **days** that often seem 'randomly presented', and little if any of which the more '**spiritually immature**' ever **discern**, and too often '**misinterpret**', this being just one of the **ways** God keeps '**higher revelations**' from the **careless** or **worse**. But **disciples indeed**, who are real **lovers of God** and **the truth**, who with **vehement desire** to **know the truth**, **study** and **labour in the word**, and naturally '**ceaselessly**' **continue** in it, can eventually **understand**, and of course I mean preferably before The Rapture, as all Immortal Sons of God will eventually **understand**.

But there's another distinction in God's 'presentations' of His **'grand perspective'** it would be helpful to be **awake** to now. I mean sometimes God's uses 'more literal presentations' of His **'grand perspective'** of time, like the **two days** in [Hosea 6:2](#), or like in the case of The 7 World-ruling Kingdoms—spanning from the start of Day 3 to the end of Day 6—identified as the **seven kings** of [Revelation 17:10](#), etc. But He also 'presents' such **'perspectives'** by more allegorical means, including 'mixing' and 'jumping back and forth' from the 'more literal' to 'more allegorical presentations', like in [Hosea 6:3](#), where there we also see that **rain** is a metaphor for the cause of both the **latter** and **former 'growth'** of God's people. Specifically, the **former rain** represents The Pre-scattering Period when God is originally seen to **pour out** His Spirit to **raise up** His people, when He is seen to **establish** the Nation of Israel, and apparently as well to **gather** The 2 Tribes of **Judah** from **'Medo-Persia'** to rebuild their **nation** and **temple**.

The **latter...rain**, then, evidently represents how God **will** again, though evidently to a greater degree,

...pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications [Zec 12:10](#),

with this **latter 'outpouring'** climaxing in the middle of The Great Tribulation, when...

...they [all the Jews] **shall look upon me** [Jesus] **whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn...** (See [Zec 12:8-14](#) for fuller **'transcendent'** context.)

And by this and other **instruction**, both **'visible'** and **'invisible'**, and presented both literally and allegorically, not to mention 'puzzle-style'—which has been **revealed** to **us** by God's Word God's **way** from the beginning of these **'studies'**—**we** have become **able, God willing**, to **watch** the **end** coming, and that is, **able** to **see** the **signs** that The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church is close to becoming imminent, though surely **not** yet, because we can **see** how it is **now revealed**—working backward—that...

1. There is a literal 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan of Creation for Mankind and Angels that all events of God's entire 7,000-year plan must fit into, meaning that The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church must occur at the end of the year 5,993, or at the beginning of the year 5,994 since Creation Week, with exactly 1007 years left before **heaven and earth shall pass away...**

2. And though we can't yet exactly determine the year of Abraham's birth—nor any other Old Testament birth really—or the precise year of any event from biblical times, that is, in terms of any presently operating calendar—we can narrow down Abraham's birth to be **between** no later than about 2000 BC, which would make this as late as the year 5964—in 2015—and likely between 3 or 4 decades till the start of The Millennium, **and** no earlier than about 1975 BC, to give time—to 2070 AD—for exactly **two** full **days** of **scattering if needed**, which would make it as early as the year 5939—in 2015—with The 2nd Gathering ending in 2070 AD at The 6th Seal Judgment, less than 2 years into The Great Tribulation—and making it closer to 6 decades till the start of The Millennium. But whatever the case, decades remain—from 2015—because...

3. Before The Rapture can be imminent, Israel must be known to **dwell safely**, in

‘peace and security’ for ‘a while’, and to do so without any **walls** or **gates** used to provide this ‘security’. And this period of ‘peace’ enforced by Israel, likely more or less becoming global, probably lasts about a ‘generation’, but it cannot be fully established until the **walls** ‘come down’, because...

4. Before the ‘coming down’ of these **walls** can be imminent, Israel must establish a reputation of ‘military and technological invulnerability’ in the Middle East, which again, must be the kind of ‘security’ that does not involve **walls** or **gates** to be absolutely effective, and because...

5. What is now imminent is Israel’s ‘military and technological invulnerability’. But before that can be established, evidently Iran, Hezbollah in Lebanon, and the “Palestinians” in Gaza, and all other Muslims supporting attacks on Israel everywhere else, have to be further and absolutely ‘beat down’, inaugurating a period when everyone knows, especially all Muslims, that there is no longer any hope of successfully even attacking, let alone defeating Israel anymore.

And yes, all this should take at least a few decades, but since Israel’s ‘military and technological invulnerability’ is imminent, then it should not be much longer, especially considering that we may be running out of time, one way or another, for God’s surely exact 7,000-year plan to finish on schedule. And as it was documented in [RGT](#), remember most all this was ‘predicted’ by me before 2009—as a **teacher** of The Word, not a **prophet**—but with less detail, as **revelations** should **grow** in time, though I have known all this more generally for decades.

So again, Abraham could not have been born as early as 2100 BC or the we would already be late for the start of the last ‘**grand day**’ of God’s ‘**grand week**’, and Abraham would not need to have been born as early as 1900 BC because we apparently only need about a quarter century, especially given what’s now imminent, to exactly complete the **two days** of **scattering** in time to complete The Great Tribulation, in time for the start of the last ‘**grand day**’, completing God’s ‘**grand week**’. And again, exactly when the **scattering** started is in question. Did it begin in and around 70 AD, or had it begun sometime before that? And when does it technically end, at The 6th Seal or after Armageddon? But if Abraham was born no earlier than 2000 BC and no later than 1975 BC, and if it’s been between 4015 to 3990 years since then, to 2015, and since we know it’s close to 1949 years from Creation to Abraham’s birth, then it would **now** be in the range of 5939 to 5964 years since Creation Week, with therefore, in 2015, from 36 to 61 years to go till The Millennium, and 29 to 54 years to go till The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church.

So yes, we appear to have the time of The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church narrowed down to a quarter of a century, and within a few decades to several away. But in the following sections we will have more to say about why no one knoweth, and why even Jesus cannot know, but only **the father**, the exact day and hour, that is, the **day and hour** that begin the year 6001, marked by The Second Coming, which involves different, and ‘**invisible**’, ‘**line-upon-line**’, ‘**precept-upon-precepting**’ altogether.

But let’s have our **senses exercised** a little more ‘**along these lines**’. Again, how can we **know** these are close estimates, and that we can really **see** what we **watch** as well as we think we do? Working forward this time, we **know** that Israeli ‘military and technological invulnerability’ is imminent. And we **know** that before that can be ‘securely established’, a succession of Israeli ‘**firestorms**’ on the surrounding Muslim ‘**kindling**’ must occur, where, evidently very soon,

...I [God] will make the governors of Judah like an hearth of fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; and they shall devour all the [Muslim] people round about, on the right hand and on the left: and Jerusalem shall be inhabited again in her own place, even in Jerusalem... [this being “Stage 1”] [Zec 12:6](#).

And surely these **‘firestorms’**, more than they have already, are about to explode, making it likely that it is no more than a few decades till the **walls** ‘come down’, and no more than a few more till we should be able to say that the people of the modern Nation of Israel are, and have been for ‘a while’, appropriately described as,

...at rest, [and] that [they] dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates [Eze 38:11b](#).

Again, since Israel’s ‘military and technological superiority’, that will force a ‘strong, sustained peace’ in the Middle East, is now imminent, and being limited to 7,000 years altogether, we can see that Abraham must have been born very near or within a quarter century after the year 2000 BC, because we’re not looking at days, months, or even years, but evidently ‘in the ballpark’ of a number of decades before The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church will be imminent.

But again, from yet another perspective, how do we really **know** this? Because again, though we’re not getting anywhere near to pinpointing the **day and hour**, still for those truly **able** to **watch** the **end** coming—as Jesus counsels ([Mark 13:37](#))—we can **see**, metaphorically speaking, this ‘ballpark’s players’, and the ‘ballpark’s bases and baselines’, and its ‘fences’, and we can **see** we’re in the ‘9th inning’, but that there are still, say, ‘three outs’ left, because we’ve been **‘watching’**, starting in the last **study**, and have **seen** this whole, **now revealed**, ‘game’, and **know** that the opposing team’s ‘strikeouts’ in ‘the top of the 9th’ help set up Israel’s ‘military and technological superiority’, which I see happening with the ‘1st out’ in ‘the bottom of the 9th’, and this being what must happen next, and soon. And we can **see** the final ‘2 outs’ can’t follow that long afterward, the 2nd coming when the **walls** and **gates** ‘come down’, and the 3rd when Israeli-enforced, sustained and stable, though **‘unwalled’**, Middle East Peace has gone on for ‘a while’, this ‘final out’ marking the end of this game. Yes, ‘game over’. But there is one last ‘slugfest’ to ‘play’, and we call that ‘game’ The Great Tribulation.

But we can see much more than this too. I mean we can see much more than just this one short ‘inning’ and ‘game’, and more than just this one ‘ballpark’, but really we can **see** the whole ‘season’ and all the ‘ballparks’, and all the ‘players’ on all the other ‘teams’, all revealed by ‘The Commissioner’ of this ‘league’, through His ‘rulebook’, including His associated comprehensive ‘rosters and stats’. But of course I’m talking about the whole Word of God—where more and more ‘players’, ‘bases’, ‘baselines’, ‘fences’ and ‘ballparks’ can be **seen** by those who are **able** to put together the **‘visible’ and ‘invisible’**, (read **‘milky’ and ‘meaty’**), ‘statistics’, (read, **precepts**), that define this whole ‘season’, (read, God’s 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan), which all together becomes our ‘behind-home-plate, box seat, season tickets’, including what we have **‘rightly divided’** in the last **study**, and so far in this one.

And yes, while this analogy may be too complicated for those who are not really fans of baseball, let alone for those who are not yet ‘real fans’ of God Word (read, for **babes in Christ**), they are analogous to the kind of **‘mysteries’**, (read also, **wisdom**), that **we**, the ‘real fans’ of God, naturally **speak**—because you’re not really a ‘fan’ of God if you’re not also a ‘fan’ of His Word—‘fans’ also being those who naturally desire the **fellowship** of other **zealous, fervent, vigilant** ‘fans’, and that is, to **speak** [God’s] **wisdom among them that are perfect**, yes, I mean —

or Paul and I mean—to have **'close' fellowship** with other 'real fans' of God.

But here is where my maybe 'overplayed' analogy 'strikes out'. And I mean that the Apostle Paul assures us that such **'mysteries'** and **wisdom** are far beyond **the wisdom of this world**, since plainly such **'worldly wisdom'** will never acknowledge the **'transcendent perspective'** of God, and unfortunately, neither are **babes in Christ** really **able** to **rightly** do so, and that is, not at the **'level'** that the **perfect** can, who **study** to be **able** to **see** the **'invisible' precepts** that, along with the **'visible'** ones, reveal a both **deeper** and **higher 'perspective'** of God's 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan for Mankind and Angels.

And before we leave Hosea, let's do one more **'line-upon-line, precept-upon-precepting' exercise** in God's **'grand perspective'** in this **book**. Every Chapter of Hosea has it, along with some of our **'human perspective'** too. So now try Chapter 13, and look in this Chapter for **1)** Day 3 references to The Exodus, **2)** Day 4 both literal and metaphorical references to **idol** and **'sacrificial' worship** (of Venus and Mars), and **3)** to the demise of both **Israel** and **Judah**, including by the **'beasts'** that await them when they are in **captivity** or **scattered**, and **4)** Day 6 and 7 references to their 'coming' **ransom...from...the grave**, and, beyond **5)** their Day 4 past **kings**, to **6)** their—and that is **our**—'coming' Day 7 **king**. But don't stop there, because **now** you should be **able** to **take heed** in this **way**—God's **way**—to the whole **book**, and to all the **more sure word of prophecy** for that matter, and that is, like me, at least **'continuingly'** so.

But also before we leave Hosea I want to reference a few of the past but 'coming attractions' of this **study**, that is, references in Hosea to the nature of the Day 3 Venus. and Day 4 Mars **'visits'**, and the subsequent **incense, earrings and... jewels**, and **silver and...gold** and other **graven images**-style **idols**, and **sacrifices**-style **worship** of these **lovers** of **'planet gods'**, specifically, [Hosea 2:5,7,13](#), [3:1](#), [4:13-14,17,19](#), [8:6,11,14](#), [10:2,8](#), [11:2](#), and [13:2](#).

Understand? Or as God both asks and answers in the last verse of this **book**,

Who is wise, and he shall understand these things? prudent, and he shall know them? for the ways of the LORD are right, and the just shall walk in them: but the transgressors shall fall therein [Hos 14:9](#).

Sound familiar—kind of like [Isaiah 28:9-13](#) combined with [Revelation 17:9](#)? I mean this reveals that the whole Book of Hosea, but really all **prophecy**, is a test for the **wise**, and therefore mostly incomprehensible, as well as **'misinterpreted'** otherwise. And surely part of the **wisdom** that allows only the **wise** to **understand** such things can again be **understood** from God's Own **question**, and His Own **answer** to that **question**. His **question**:

Who hath declared from the beginning, that we may know? and beforetime, that we may say, He is righteous? [Isa 41:26](#).

His **answer**:

Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure [Isa 46:9-10](#)...

So God has told us straightforwardly and outright that He has **declared** the **things that are not yet done**, but **also**, as He puts it through the Prophet Hosea,

I have also spoken by the prophets, and I have multiplied visions, and used similitudes [metaphors], by the ministry [or lives] of the prophets [Hos 12:10](#),

which means that God and Jesus ***have also spoken*** both literally and metaphorically, including ***by the ministry***—or through the lives—***of the prophets***, to ***'symbolize'*** and ***'foreshadow' beforetime... things that are not yet done***, as can be seen in the early chapters of The Book of Hosea, but ***also*** by other ***visions***—like Joseph's and Daniel's—and by all kinds of ***similitudes*** (meaning, 'figurative language') too. Yes, there is a lot to look out for when it comes to context. But They imply, ***here a little, and there a little***, that They have ***used*** these ***ways of the Lord*** so that only the ***wise*** and ***prudent...shall know them***, but also so the ***wise*** and ***prudent*** can ***participate*** more ***fully*** in this ***divine nature***, 'modeling' that God's ***counsel***—read, what He has ***predestinated—shall stand***, and that what God has ***spoken...***

...shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it [Isa 55:11](#).

So God and Jesus ***have... used similitudes***, including analogies or metaphors, and that is, 'figurative language', and do so whether such ***similitudes*** themselves are more metaphorically or literally presented, in either case sometimes to show God's ***'transcendent perspective'*** to us, and otherwise just 'hint' at His 7 Day - 7,000-year plan, even sometimes 'modeling' us mortals in such 'presentations', and thereby, including when ***used*** or combined with similarly 'multileveled presentations' in our ***'human perspective'***, giving us a glimpse of God's ***'unendingly higher thoughts and ways'***, and that is, when all these different ***'perspectives'*** are ***'rightly divided'***, then properly altogether ***'connected'*** or ***'constructed'***, and that is, ***line upon line, precept upon precept***, these becoming some of God's ***ways*** for us to ***understand***, and therefore, by His definitions and ***ways***, not ours, to become ***wise***, which, as you should now ***know***, is really to 'embark' on an 'eternal journey', which is a 'road' entirely ***'invisible'*** to ***babes***, and therefore the cause of much ***stumbling*** for them, or ***worse***, as long as they remain so.

Or, as God through Hosea also puts it, if we ***reject*** the ***ways of the LORD***, ignorantly or not, which over time is the same as ***'dwelling carelessly'***, we can instead be...

...destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge [- where ***now we*** can ***see*** that ***if*** God will ***reject*** the Jews for remaining a ***foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not*** (e.g. [Jer 5:21-22](#)), then He] ***...will also reject thee [Hos 4:1&6](#); [6:6](#) [[& Rom 11](#)]***..

So, again, ***wherefore the rather, brethren, fear*** God and ***seek*** to ***understand*** that you no longer ***walk*** in ***a way that seemeth right***, with those who are really ***blind***, and likely to ***fall***, but ***walk***, while ***endeavoring*** as best you can ***not*** to ***stumble*** others, in ***the ways of The Lord***, and ***with*** those who ***continue*** to ***seek*** to be ***wise*** and ***prudent*** and ***just***, though if you try to do this, you'll more than likely find that you must, at least for a time, ***walk*** alone, one exception being in these ***'studies'***, where, ***if ye continue in*** them, you are catching up to the place where you can actually ***walk***, and ***fully fellowship***, with me, and with all that ***follow*** Jesus as ***'closely'*** ([Jas 4:8](#)) as ***we*** do.

But back in the present, if you **understand** and can begin to **'preceptually construct'** the complex, multileveled, both metaphorical and literal, sometimes symbolic and/or foreshadowing, as well as chronologically and transcendently widespread **'perspectives'**, all entwined with a similar mix of **'human perspectives'**, you may be **ready** and **able** to **watch**, because all that we have **'studied'** from the beginning of [RGT](#) to this point supports the conclusion that we are still at least a generation or two away from The Rapture, but also surely no more than a small number of decades from this eternally blessed **'transformation to immortality'**. And, **praise God**, having been **faithful** to **watch**—and if you are 'up to speed' at this point, you have been too—we **shall** be **able** to **watch** the development of the **time of the end** in all the **'God-glorifying'** detail that He intended His most **diligent, 'continually lamp-trimming' watchmen**, to **see**, even as our growing **vehement desire** to **know** Him, and **watch** for Him, endlessly motivates us to be **so doing**. See [Matthew 24](#), especially Verses 42-46, and [Luke 12](#), especially Verses 32-43.

But we also **know** this is because, as we **take heed** to His Word, we **understand** that it is not just **'divinely protected information'**, it's also our personal experience that God's **word...**

...goeth forth... [and] shall not return...void, but it shall accomplish that which [God] please[s]...and...prosper in the thing whereto [He] sent it [Isa 55:11](#)...

...including giving us that **promised**, ever **'brightening', light in a dark place**, as we continually **take heed** to, as Peter identifies it after The Resurrection, the **more sure word of prophecy**, where, in this **'growing revelation'**, we can **continue to rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory, glory to God**. But again, we've only just begun, by these **'studies'**, to become **vessels** of God that are filled to overflowing, again and again, and that's just on this side of The Rapture.

And the consideration of all this **'completion perspective'** led me to a still **higher 'invisible' precept**. I mean if the 7 Day - 7,000-Year Plan of God for Mankind and Angels is a **'2nd-level invisible precept'**, requiring at least one **'1st-level invisible precept'** to **prove**, there must be **'3rd level precepts'**, and so on. And here's maybe a **'4th level'**. In [RGT](#) I have already supposed The 6th Plague Judgment to last longer—given the **time, and times, and half a time** available—than the average length of **judgments** in this Days of Vengeance set, expecting that the earlier more severe **judgments** need shorting—to **'save the elect'**—and needing a longer period of **strong delusion**—that **'the tribulation is over'**, except the final conflict between The White and Red Revolutions—all giving support for the **precept** of a **'year-long 6th Plague Judgment'**, and suggesting that most of God's **work** is done in the first 6 years—that He **'rests from judgment'**, at least comparatively, in the last of these 7 years. Lay this out more **'perceptually'** if you can.

And by-the-way, there's something else that shows **Abraham** was not born too long after The Flood I don't want to pass by. He lived 175 years ([Gen 25:7](#)), while his grandson **Jacob** lived 147 years ([Gen 47:28](#)), and **Moses**, born centuries later, lived the 'maximum possible lifetime' decreed by God at the time of The Flood, **an hundred and twenty years** ([Gen 6:3](#), [Deu 34:7](#)). From this we can **see** that God must have meant that the changes he implemented with The Flood required a period of 'stabilization', where lifespans would steadily decrease until they were no longer than 120 years, **Moses** evidently being a marker that this 'stabilization' had been reached in his lifetime. And remember we are already anticipating that when God restores a **water canopy** in the sky for The Millennium that the Pre-Flood

'longevity' will slowly return too. Remember **Shem** lived 600 years, 502 of them out from under the *cosmic radiation protection* and *hyperbaric oxygenation* formerly provided by the *water canopy*. This gives us an idea how comparatively strong **Shem** was at age 98 when he lost that 'shielding'. He was strong enough to live another over 500 years without it. And you should be **able** to calculate that he must have lived long enough to personally tell **Abraham**, and even **Isaac** and **Jacob**, everything they passed on to their descendants, including what was recorded for us by **Moses**. For example, we can tell that if **Abraham** was indeed born in the year 1949 since The Creation of Adam—in about 2000 BC, and it must have been near then—then **Shem** must have survived **Abraham**, who was born about 3 centuries after The Flood, by about 35 years, and we can tell that **Shem** died when **Isaac**, who lived 180 years ([Gen 35:28](#)), was about 70, and likely sometime after **Jacob** was born. In this estimation **Abraham** died in about 2124 AC—"after creation"—and **Shem** died in about 2159 AC, again, 35 years later. But I will leave this math to you, which will likely eventually lead to the need of some **correction**, as should always be expected.

But besides the perspective observable throughout the Old Testament that God through His **prophets** commonly **prophesied** in terms of one or more 1000-year periods of His 7,000-year plan, and at the same time as if these periods were all part of a total of 7 **days**, whereby we can also come to **understand** that the duration of this entire present **creation** is **predestinated** to be exactly 7,000 years, is there another 'chronological recourse' available? Really, and besides the fact that we have already established that we are 'in the ballpark' of a 7,000 year plan, all I can think of left to add is the strategy given to us by Jesus for accounting for such things, where He implies that it is not so much the uselessness, but the comparative inferiority of the calendar for such 'fine tuning', while revealing that the most effective means of improving our '**prophetic perspective**' over time is to, as He puts it,

Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh. [Mat 25:13](#).

But did you catch what Jesus and I mean? He said to **watch** the **end** coming, but not to expect to account for it in advance as precisely as by days, let alone hours, meaning that we should be **able** to **see** the **time of the end** coming, but more like we can **see** the '**blossoming**' of a **fig tree**, or more by scripturally defined events, that we can identify by '**preceptual analysis**', unavoidably '**using**' some '**invisible**' **precepts** in the process, and not so much '**calendar analysis**'. Of course '**preceptual event analysis**' is a neverending lot of work, and only for the **diligent**, and that is, for **friends** and **disciples indeed** of Jesus. Others never seem to be interested enough for such demanding **work**. But you'll never be one of our Lord's '**close friends**' if you have the opportunity to **do** such **work** but instead spend little or no time on it, and that is, on the things that could help you get to **know** His '**future plans**' **better**. I mean do you think you can really **follow** Him but remain uninterested in the both past and future details of His '**life and death battle**' to **save some**, and **worse**, remain '**unable**' to do so His **way**?

But I should also be clear here that Jesus was talking to Jews, and most specifically to those who would live in The Great Tribulation and be looking for His 2nd Coming, and not as much to Gentiles in The Age of Grace that are instead waiting for The Rapture.

And though these calculations of years since Creation are only estimates, they are accurate enough to help us **watch**, being **profitable** to consider along with the more **'event oriented approach'**, which should be the **'primary watching approach'**, using **'time of the end events'**, otherwise identifiable as the **'parable of the fig tree approach'**, like we tried to do in [RGT](#). And now we can recognize, having become **able** to **see**, that Jesus uses this **parable** to instruct us that we should be **able** to recognize many specific approaching **'end times events'**, saying,

...When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors [Mat 24:32-33](#) ([Mar 13:28-29](#)).

So I say with the confidence that Jesus gives me—when He says **ye know**—that none of **all these things** He speaks of in this chapter have begun, except maybe the **persecution** of Christian Jews by Jews in Israel ([Luke 21:12](#)), and except some other **things** not described by Jesus at this time—that He implies we should be looking for—that must precede **all these things**, that is, events spoken of elsewhere in The Word of God, which must lead to **all these things** He speaks of on the Mount of Olives, and all this working together throughout the Word of God, **line upon line** and **precept upon precept**, so that, as precisely as God has enabled us by His Word, **we can know when it is near, even at the doors**, and specifically, that **all these things** Jesus speaks of on the Mount of Olives are a very few decades away at most, though, except maybe for the **persecution** of Jews by Jews in Israel, are certainly not presently occurring or even yet imminent, meaning they, including **the beginning of sorrows, the abomination of desolation** and **the days of vengeance**, will not begin this decade (the 2010's), nor even in the next, and probably no sooner than late in the one after that. And don't **'misunderstand'**, I'm talking about what Jesus was talking about, the **beginning** of the **'blossoming'** of this metaphorical **fig tree**, which in this case, and besides that Jews already **persecute** Messianic Jews in Israel, (though scale may be the issue here), starts at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, along with the revealing of The Mystery of Iniquity, which, though initiating what Jesus identifies as **great tribulation** [Rev 7:14](#), and also **the beginning of sorrows** [Mat 24:8](#), is still 3½ years before there...

...then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be; [Mat 24:21](#),

which is when God will **pour out** His final **seven plagues** ([Rev 15:8](#); [21:9](#)) or **vials** [or "bowls"] **of the wrath of God upon the earth** ([Rev 16:1](#); [17:1](#); [21:9](#)), and it is when **power** is **given** to Satan, the Antichrist and the Pope **over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations** (e.g. [Dan 8:23-25](#); [Rev 13:7](#); [17:3,15](#)), whereby each of them in their own way **deceiveth the whole world** (e.g. [Rev 12:9](#); [13:8](#); [13:14](#)), which is also when God **shall send...strong delusion** ([2Th 2:11](#)). And certainly this time is **near**, though just as certainly not yet **at the doors**.

Of course all this may mean there is not much use in squabbling over the exact year Jesus was born, as these few years don't really change this 'ballpark' much, and even though looking to the **stars can** settle this small uncertainty. But since I **believe** by experience that The Word of God can be found in places other than in **scripture**, like **1)** in that **pillar** and **altar** [and 'riddle' and 'puzzle'] **to the LORD in the midst** [and **border**] **of the land of Egypt** ([Isa 19:19-20](#)), the Great

Pyramid, as Dr. Joseph Seiss, with '19th Century integrity', so well testifies (see p. 6), not to mention 2) in the surely endless information **hid** or 'coded' within the structure of **scripture**, as Dr. Chuck Missler, even though very recently, so well testifies, and since it surely also can be **interpreted** 3) in **the stars**, as Dr. Joseph Seiss also, a century and a half ago, testifies, (*The Gospel in the Stars: or, Primeval Astronomy*, <https://archive.org/details/gospelinstarsorp00seis>), then I will recommend another resource, despite it too being more recent, as an introduction to God's Word in the **stars**, which I mentioned in **RGT**, its 'usefulness' being because of the added **understanding** given to '**biblical astronomy**' coming from today's computer-enhanced, star-charting capabilities, and that is, as directed and limited by **scripture**, that, I **believe**, can aid in the dating of 'more recent' events by *extrapolating* the *movement* of **stars** backward in time—at least till about the time of the last **visit** of Mars to Earth early in 7th Century BC—evidently possibly helping to pinpoint to the day the birth of Jesus, as well as pinpoint His crucifixion on April 3, 33 AD, while, and though mostly unwittingly, giving further '**improved perspectives**' to **prophecies** beyond what I have up to now offered, which might even eventually provide a way to connect ancient and modern calendars, I don't know.

However before I reveal this resource, and this is a big 'however', I should remind you that you should be **able** to **discern** instances of **error** in all '**spiritually immature perspectives**', as, to start with, they lack the broader scope of '**perspectives**' provided in these '**studies**'. So yes, and as usual, some '**spiritual filtering**'—read, '**discernment**'—is required. But this newer information may be further recommended because it does not come from a *scientist*, but from a *lawyer*, who is a Christian. Specifically I'm referring to Attorney Mr. Frederick A. Larson's presentation that he has entitled, *The Star of Bethlehem*, available at <http://www.bethlehemstar.net>.

So at least for now, instead of troubling ourselves—likely ultimately wasting our time—with attempting to establish a modern date that could connect us to any particular more ancient year "after creation" available from **scripture**, all in order to establish the year of The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church and the beginning of The Great Tribulation, we should instead recognize that it has apparently been God's intention all along that this can only be helpful for distinguishing the 'ballpark' of **the time of the end**, and that the best way we can '**improve**' upon such estimates is by focusing on the '**preceptual event analysis approach**' that Jesus recommends, and in particular, on the events of The Great Tribulation that He describes on the Mount of Olives, and as He puts it,

...what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch [Mark 13:37](#).

But remember we also have the clue Paul gave us, that every **feast day** was originally **a shadow of things to come**, but more specifically, that they are **similitudes** of the biggest and most important events involving Jesus and His mission to **save** us all, the first 4 being revealed by His First Coming, the remaining 3 evidently to be revealed by His Second Coming.

Still, and even though, by these combined perspectives, and by other perspectives we have yet to consider, you might think we can ultimately come to know the **day and hour** of at least the last **triumphing** event, it being at the end of exactly 7 years, there remain other **marvellous** and **wondrous** events to consider, and therefore reasons, reasons we can come to **understand** increasingly **better** in the remaining sections, that finally reveal in fact why we cannot precisely **know** even when this conclusion of the 7 years will be, and why even Jesus cannot know the exact timing of this event. And while some of the more '**more visible**' reasons

have already been presented in [RGT](#), and even others that are **'less visible'** because they require some **'connecting'** and **'constructing'** to **see**, we nonetheless too often—and by whatever means—either do not remember or have not yet recognize them. And yes, I say **we**.

Yet still, with what we have **'studied'** so far, **if ye continue, we** can experience that **giving all diligence to 'heeding'** the **counsel** of Jesus to **watch**, and that is, by having our **senses exercised to discern** what we're watching for, **we should** be **'increasingly' able** to **see** what must be imminent—or **at the doors**—before The Rapture can happen, and in turn, before the Antichrist can be **revealed**, and **we should** also be **able** to **'increasingly correct, improve and expand'** our **understanding** of God's entire 7 Day - 7,000 Year Timeline.

And no, I didn't forget to include a 'timeline graphic'. But I struggled with finding a version of it that would be acceptable for this **study** and this section. And I wasn't ready after finishing the first draft of this section to present one. However I was finally ready near the end of the first draft of **SECTION 6** and decided—in accordance with my experience that **in all things** I am directed by God—to put it here, and to explain the **'expanded' revelation** that led to me finally being 'able' to complete it. And of course I mean I originally considered not including one at all, and would not have without the **'expanded' revelation** that made what I **believe** is an **'acceptable'** version of it 'presentable', and yes, as usual, pun intended. And it's in a way 'hidden' here in **SECTION 4** because I needed to wait until you were ready for it too, when you were ready to **understand** how both a **'chronological analysis'** and an **'event analysis'** could be used together to supposedly 'connect the calendars', but at least **reveal** a 'complete view' of 'the plan'.

And I call it an **'expanded' revelation**—not just an **'improved'** one—because it combines two approaches, or two topics of **study**, these being both the **'chronological analysis'** and the **'event analysis'** of God's 7 Day - 7,000 Years Plan of Creation. So here's an oversimplified explanation of how this **revelation** worked for me. With **'event analysis'** I—and I **hope, we**—have determined that The Rapture is not yet imminent, but, given what's left to be accomplished before it happens, it appears to be as little as a few, but certainly no more than several decades away. So if we add to that the fact that The Exodus took place very near the Year 2649 AC, and that Jesus was born probably even closer to 2016 years ago, (yes, I'm writing this part a year later), then this limits how much time that could have transpired between The Exodus and The Birth of Christ. Specifically, that limit—in this particular year—could be as far back as 1328 BC. Why? Because $2640 + 1328 + 2016 = 5993$, and $5993 + 7 = 6000$. And The Great Tribulation must end at the end of Year 6000 AC, with The Millennium beginning at the start of the Year 6001. But of course that means that The Rapture would have to take place within a year too. However though it must be 'close', **we now know** it is not yet that imminent. We need at least 2 or more decades before The Rapture can possibly be **at the doors**, and that is, at the **doors** Jesus describes, and because the still standing **walls** and **gates** of Israel, specifically identified by the Prophet Ezekiel, are 'standing testimonies' that The Exodus must have occurred closer to, or even a few decades after 1300 BC, leaving, if it occurred that year, and this being 2016, 35 years till the start of The Millennium, and therefore 28 years till The Rapture.

But how much later could The Exodus have occurred? Remember that Dr. Velikovsky places it around 1450 BC, seemingly much too early. Even 1350 BC must be too early because that would make this the year 6015 AC. And it's supposed to occur even earlier by the more popular —though now usually just implied—estimations. Nonetheless you should see we now have to—as briefly

explained in the *Ages In Chaos* series summaries earlier this section—shorten how long the events just after The Exodus took, specifically, shorten the supposed 400 years of **'Amalekite-Canaanite-Assyrian'** “rule” over **Egypt**, this also the time of **Moses** and **the judges**. Yeah, this period must have instead been closer to 200-250 years. Remember the World was twice devastated at the beginning and half a century into this time, likely making record keeping, let alone even the accurate accounting of time, less of a priority, if possible at all. And remember that **shadow of death** “gloom” may have seemed very much longer than it really was to many different peoples, this period pretty much impossible to precisely account for without The Word of God. (We will also finally see in **SECTION 9**, for example, that the ancient Chinese reckoned the 3 days of **thick darkness**—even if altogether closer to 4 or 5 days of sunshine for them, if adding as much as a day to one or both ends of this particular Plague Judgment ‘fits’—as 10 days, thinking it was at least twice as long as it really was, having had no way to really tell for sure.) But placing The Exodus before 1250—leaving less than 200 years for the ‘post-Exodus wanderings’ and the period of The Judges—seems to be squeezing too

'WORKING TIMELINE' OF THE 7 DAYS - 7,000 YEARS OF CREATION*

*9 'standard entries' per Day of ~1111 years each | Timeline-charts accuracy limited by the parameters | God Zone focused | Detailed explanation of chart entries in RGT and JAC

EDEN	
The PRE-FLOOD WORLD World Lives by Conscience but Under Angelic Tyranny and Deception	ABEL Mystery Religion Begins
The AGES of CREATION	
ABRAHAM'S PROMISE	The LAW and The 69 WEEKS
The MYSTERY CHURCH AGE of GRACE	
Jews Live by the Promise of God and the Hope of a Coming Kingdom	
Gentiles Live by Conscience but Under Beastly Kingdoms and Temples by Mystery Religions	
70 th Week	
The MILLENNIUM...	

The 7 (or 14) GREAT JUDGMENTS, PEOPLE and EVENTS of the AGES of CREATION	
1	Evil Reigns There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them...
1 (or 2)	Noah born
3	Enoch taken
	Shem born
The FLOOD	
	Demons Survive Flood
	Noah dies
The Tower of Babel	
	Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and the Patriarchs
	Jacob Multiple in Egypt and Enter into Bondage
	Moses
The EXODUS & Joshua's Day	
	The Judges
	Saul, David & Solomon
	Amos, Isaiah & Hosea
The EARTHQUAKE, etc.	
	Ezekiel, Jeremiah & Daniel
	Ezra & Nehemiah's Temple
	Marathon & Thermopylae
	Alexander - Ptolemy I-IV
	Julius & Augustus
	Jesus & the Apostles
	Early Church "Fathers"
	Roman Emperor Constantine
	"The Dark Ages" of Satanic Papal Oppression Through Roman Catholic Church Domination But God by The Spirit Withheld Throughout the Age
	Wycliffe & Huss
	Luther, Simon, Calvin Cranmer & Knox
	Wesley & Darby
	2 Witnesses & 144,000
The GREAT TRIBULATION	
	Jesus Reigns ...for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.
The LAST REBELLION	

BC AD	A C
3839*	112
3617*	334
3396*	556
3173*	778
2951*	1001
2728*	1223
2452*	1558
2350*	1656
1945*	1944*
1951*	1949
1730*	2223
1617*	2334
1380*	2570*
1300a	2650a
1173*	2780*
951*	3001
747-689	3300*
560	3440*
490	3490*
330	3610*
176 BC to 16 AD	
0	3951*
51*	4001
273*	4223*
606*	4566*
828*	4778*
1051*	5001
1273*	5223*
1496*	5445*
1717*	5667*
2044*	5994
2051*	6001
2273*	6223
2496*	6445
2717*	6667
2939*	6889

* more uncertain dates

a chronological-event analysis, calendar-connecting dates

margin of error ▲ ± 50 years

DAY 1	Radiation-shielded, hyperbaric, magnetic intelligence-and-long-life-enhancing, bad-Angel-infiltrated greenhouse atmosphere...
2	resulting in bigger plants, animals & people & giant giants
MERCURY	Canaan Cursed
	Nimrod
MERCURY	
3	Shem dies
Jews in Egypt 430 Years	
VENUS	Moses' Temple to Solomon's Temple
4	Tribes split
MARS	
	Nebuchadnezzar
	Darius & Cyrus
	Darius I & Xerxes
	Seleucus I & II
	Mr. Grease-ball
0 - 70 AD	
5	Mr. Pompous-ass
	Neo-platonism
	Assyrian Church of the East forms
	Muhammed Islamic Caliphate grows
6	- Papal States form
	The Crusades
	The Black Plague
	The Protestant Reformation & The Renaissance
	Acusa Street, etc.
	The RED PLANET
7	Pre-Flood atmosphere restored, minus the bad Angels
	John's Ministry & The FIREBOMB

The PLANETS, PEOPLE and EVENTS of The 7 DAYS - 7,000 YEARS of CREATION

The PRE-FLOOD TYRANNY, The 1 st BABYLON, The 7 HEADS WORLD RULERS, and The LAST REBELLION of The 7 DAYS - 7,000 YEARS of CREATION	
INNOCENCE	The PRE-FLOOD ANGEL-HUMAN-GIANT MEN of RENOWN TYRANNY
1 st BABYLON	Nimrod, Semiramis & Tamuz
EGYPT	
ASSYRIA	
2 nd BABYLON	
MEDO-PERSIA	
GREECE	
ROME	
3 rd BABYLON	Byzantine Empire Charles the Great NO WORLD-RULING KINGDOMS Napoleon & Hitler Church of Rome
ANTICHRIST	The MILLENNIAL KINGDOM OF CHRIST...
LAST REBELLION	

much of what is known into too little time. So here we can imagine a 50 year range, from 1300 to 1250 BC, which, minus the period of The Great Tribulation, leaves 43 years, and minus at least 2 decades for what needs to happen before The Rapture could be imminent leaves maybe another couple decades leeway, this period being both the connection between the AC and BC/AD timelines and the margin of error in the following ‘timeline-charts’.

And there is so much more I could say about the following timeline, or group of timelines, but I have decided for now to leave it to you, as there is really no end to it. However I will point out that it’s a **Working Timeline** (p.388), meaning it surely contains **errors**, and that it is more “for spiritual exercise and inspiration of revelations”, and therefore not to be equated with **scripture**, at least as much as the simpler graphics in **RGT** may be. But it nonetheless suggests many ‘**acceptable revelations**, all of which will ‘**naturally**’ need ‘**correction, improvement and expansion**’. And I just mean I don’t see much wrong with it at this particular ‘**cutting-edge**’ point in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God.

And there is something else we should be **watching** connected to the topics of this section. But the problem with this is that, even though I have **endeavoured** to remove ‘self-centered prejudice’ from my **work**, not that much unlike **babes** who are ‘**naturally carnal**’—in this case read, again, ‘self-centered’—even **we** who are more ‘**spiritually mature**’ still tend to think that all God’s plans and timetables focus mostly on us, and we tend to think this way even when we have been shown repeatedly that they really do not. Of course suchlike compartmentalizations are **natural** for such ‘helplessly self-centered beings’, and an unavoidable and literally never-ending problem, however decreasingly so, simply because we will forever remain finite beings, who, without **knowledge** and **understanding** that *is infinite*, will never be **able** to entirely avoid accidents, mistakes, oversights, presumption, inconsideration, etc.

So yes, before we move on to the next section let’s talk a little bit about God’s ‘other class’ of ‘**created beings**’ who, not that much unlike humans, have to a significant extent ‘gone awry’ too. I’m talking about **angels**, but more specifically about the ‘bad ones’. And when talking about ‘**bad angels**’, and how they have ‘gone awry’, nowadays it’s easier to talk about ‘aliens’, because when they supernaturally manifest themselves in this way—in our physical reality—it’s probably the best way that we can **see** them beyond the ‘**dark glass**’ that otherwise makes them too obscure to scrutinize. And though we can **understand** from God’s Creation—being only about 6,000 years old—that there can be no such things as ‘aliens’, in ‘actuality’ there are. And as I said before, there are a couple of types of them. One type of them, though mostly unknown, are what they appear to be, which we will deal with further in later sections. The other type operates as imposters. They are ‘**bad angels**’ who masquerade as ‘Earth-seeding’ and/or ‘Earth-guiding’, or ‘Earth-exploiting beings’, some taking credit for ‘creating us’ and ‘guiding us’, and others simply abusing, manipulating and oppressing us, both often representing themselves as ‘allied’ with a ‘federation of aliens’, supposedly from relatively nearby *constellations*, one group pretending to be a ‘benevolent confederation’ that is supposedly attempting to both ‘guide our evolution’ and ‘defend us’ against the other, ‘malevolent federation’, the ‘malevolent’ one pretending to be jealous and hateful of the ‘benevolent’ ones, professing they have been mistreated by them, and so instead exploit, oppress, and supposedly, though not likely actually, interbreed with us to corrupt our *DNA* —I mean “not likely actually” as they should remember how that worked out last time—even threatening to annihilate us, and often, as much as God allows, do harm, even kill unsuspecting Earthlings. And there are others masquerading as desperate *gene* and *animal-parts* ‘harvesters’,

abducting whatever 'biological materials' they seem to need to save their supposedly failing *gene pool*. But all of them are masquerading as 'higher-evolved', and/or 'technologically superior', and more recently, 'worm-hole' or 'star-gate traveling', visitors to Earth from 'other dimensions', or from 'galaxies far, far away'.

The 'higher-dimensions' variety of '**bad angels**'—as opposed to the supposedly just 'technologically-advanced kind'—by-the way, who masquerade as beings that are 'spiritually ascended', often represent themselves as having experienced many reincarnations, professing they have completed many 'revolutions' around the so-called 'karmic wheel', while in the process ever 'evolving', over millions or billions of years, toward higher and higher 'levels of godhood', and who want us to believe they are here to 'guide us' in that direction too. Uh-huh.

But there are many other masquerades going on, or used to be going on, than these, such as 'ghosts' and other 'paranormal phenomena', 'vampires', 'werewolves', 'gnomes', 'banshees', 'goblins', 'trolls', etc., not to mention 'gargoyles', 'chupacabra', 'Big Foot', 'Yeti' or 'Sasquatch'. And the point is that anything people will believe, or used to believe, that is possible, these imposters can 'manifest'. And yes, we are talking about types of **lying wonders**.

Furthermore there is the damage done by **angels** who attempt to induce various forms of insanity by their 'targeted manifestations'—usually only seen by individual victims—that either cause or mislead their victims to think they have *schizophrenic* or other *psychotic symptoms*, provoking their victims to testify to things that can only eventually lead to them being drugged and/or locked up. I have experienced this kind of 'psychological warfare' firsthand, having narrowly escaped such consequences. Of course I am not denying that *brains* also, with or without such internal or external 'spiritual exploitation', really do sometimes just 'break'.

Still, and though none of this 'angelic activity' is 'really real', these '**bad angels**', using their '**spiritual powers**' and **lying wonders**, really do manifest everything necessary to make the 'phony roles' they play believable to their dupes and victims, leaving behind undeniably 'real evidence', and eye-witnesses to substantiate their **lies**. In other words, for some examples, they fly around in 'real spaceships', 'abduct and experiment' on real people and animals inside them, creating scars and leaving implants in these people, many not remembering anything of such experiences without 'therapy', except that they are 'missing time'. And they slice up animals, evidently inside these 'spiritually-manifested ships', in ways that are presently humanly impossible, and then often drop them from the sky when they are through 'toying with them', all really just in order to 'toy with us'.

They also, evidently at least sometimes using "glowing balls of plasma", and other means, create mysterious and taunting "crop circles", making fantastically elaborate designs, some that are coded messages, some schematics for advanced technology, while others remain indecipherable, except that it is evident—with the ones that are not obviously hoaxes—that they could not have been produced by any known human technology or means.

And apparently The US and other countries have secretly 'back-engineered' some of their supposedly 'accidentally crashed spaceships', and by treaties, yes secret treaties, and secret cooperation, have been assisted by 'aliens' in underground bases with further Earth-based applications of their 'alien technology', so that now not only they—but maybe also some of us too—are seen flying in UFO's in apparently physically impossible ways, as growing multitudes of credible witnesses continue to testify.

And with the advent of modern cameras with faster and faster shutter speeds, these '**bad angles**' are now being photographed performing what looks like

'stargate' or 'worm hole travel', as there are now shots of what appears to be 'alien spacecraft' both disappearing into or coming out of 'stargates' or 'wormholes'.

So really, all of this is 'real', just not really what it appears to be, and therefore not really 'real'. But because of the popular acceptance of the Theory of Evolution, all this may be believably manifested by '**bad angels**' to trick us into believing that they are really the 'aliens' they say they are, and that they've been around for millions to billions of years. And by all this you should have a better idea how powerful and orchestrated such **lying wonders** are and will increasingly be, especially in The Great Tribulation. I mean in light of such tangible and believable but fraudulent misrepresentation, it is no wonder that Satan, during this '**worst time ever**', **deceiveth the whole world**, and that it will therefore take some mindbogglingly **great wonders** from God to **save some**. **Lord, have mercy** on us all.

And I could go into the sources and specifics that substantiate these general false stereotypes and **interpretations**, but there is a source I have already repeatedly mentioned that is readily available to you, that offers a steady 'parade' of such 'expert testimony', 'information' and 'documentation'. So I'm just going to refer you to the Coast to Coast AM radio broadcasts and their website:

<http://www.coasttocoastam.com>. I have been tuning in from time to time for nearly a quarter of a century. In North America there is likely a show on the radio every night on a station near you starting at 10 PM your time, maybe earlier on the weekends, and the best reception is probably in your car, even if you don't have anywhere to go. And I mean to avoid getting on the wrong lists, it would be better to listen to their presentations on the radio, though evidently even this is now traceable. And you can listen online anytime, find topics of past shows and their detailed summaries online, and for a small fee listen to past shows online. Well, all this is still possible at the time of this writing anyway. And if you are able to tune in just occasionally, that will be sufficient to get up to speed and keep up with most of what they cover. And it's not all about just UFO's and their 'alien federation conflicts'. They embrace a wide range of topics, aliens being one of their staples. And I mean that most of the topics in this **study**, and even in **RGT**, and even other profitable ones, are to some degree addressed by their 'expert-guest-interview-style' shows. So I listen when I can, and as much as I can stand, and as often as not, along with a necessary degree of '**spiritual filtering**', **C2CAM** helps focus my perspective a little **better** over time. But these shows are not for '**baby Christians**', because they indeed must be '**filtered**' with a '**mature biblical perspective**'. Because yes, you know there is no other source but **scripture** itself where you can avoid more or less—though usually more—'digging through the trash'.

And I mean, for example, the 'masquerading of aliens' must be seen for what they really are, nothing more than the **powers** of **spiritual wickedness** doing **lying wonders**, all orchestrated as part of Satan's **prophesied** plan to promote **that man of sin, that Wicked** one, the one who successfully **deceiveth the whole world**. But as you have read this far in these '**studies**', you should by now have a perspective that can only be '**improved**' by such 'information', as you should be **able** to 'sift out' the **error** and '**misconceptions**', or simply recognize the propaganda, adequately enough. And like me, you should be **able** to make these radio broadcasts one of the **ways** you **watch** the end coming too. And if you haven't checked it out yet, my **RGT** website at *Internet Archive* has a *Working End Times Chronology* file you ought to take a look at, (click to download on WORD DOCUMENT files, and find it near the bottom of the list), because it attempts to account for a lot of this 'alien activity' during **the time of the end**.

And by-the-way, on 7/21/15 I heard the “inaugural broadcast” of the return of Art Bell, but it wasn’t long afterward that he had to abandon the program because of a threat to his family from a stocker. Other broadcasts worth a listen besides <https://www.coasttocoastam.com> include <https://www.groundzeromedia.org> with Clive Lewis, and <http://beyondrealityradio.com>.

And speaking of getting on the ‘wrong lists’, I should make clear you need to **be careful**. And I mean that if you are frequenting websites or other sources dealing with ‘anti-big-government’ and/or ‘conspiracy theory’ and/or ‘secret/satanic organizations’, and whether ‘Christian ministries’ or not, which in any case is only ‘digging in the trash’ at best anyway, you need to stop, because if you continue to do so some government agency or another, or some other representative of **our adversary** from **high places**, wittingly or not, might come after you, like they did Dr. Hovind, for example. And I mean that *C2CAM*, *Ground Zero*, and/or *Beyond Reality Radio*, are sufficient and the only sources I consider safe enough—preferably exclusively by listening to a radio—for all this kind of reconnaissance. Because you should know how Jesus himself, on numerous occasions, hid from and avoided people that might have endangered Him or His ministry. If you are not familiar with this tendency of His during His earthly ministry, read the Gospels again. It’s glaring. And if Michael the Archangel avoided unnecessary fights with Satan, who do you think you are to pick fights with him? And what for? I mean if you do it as much as I do you should, like I do, expect to eventually die for it. I mean I want you to **understand** that I weigh every **fight** I take on with Satan in the balance, to **see** how it may be of **‘service to all’** or not. And if you can’t do this too you are more likely just someone whom **he may devour**, but tragically, I mean to little or no advantage to The Eternal Kingdom of God. And I mean if you’re going to provoke him to want to **devour** you—and just knowing too much about him and his **devices** is enough for that—first make as sure as you can that it’s going to cost him, or it may simply be more of a waste of your life for Christ than not.

But of course it’s true that if you are **persecuted** or **martyred** for Christ’s sake, you should,

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven

[Mat 5:12](#).

And we already **know** something about the **reward** and **‘stations’** of **martyrs**. I expect they will ultimately be **‘higher-foundation’** New Jerusalem dwellers, but maybe—though they spend more time in the presence of The Father and Jesus because of their **‘station’**, or **‘stations’**—they are ‘confined’ to some extent, and that is, in order to keep them ‘uncontaminated’, not unlike mortal Levites, and maybe they are rarely free to personally explore the rest of the **marvels** that are in New Jerusalem, or on New Earth, let alone in the endless New Heaven that will surround us all.

And I mean like Jesus did during His earthly ministry, and as the repeated **proverb** says,

A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself [and retains his freedom]; ***but the simple pass on, and are punished*** [and/or confined]

[Pro 22:3](#); [27:12](#).

And yes, I means that most **martyrs**, especially **‘spiritually immature’ martyrs**, are often **‘unable’** to be **prudent**, not knowing how to **be careful**, which is by definition **foolish**. Indeed, the **simple** in this case are the **foolish** who, even if **in Christ**, are **babes** at best, who, in matters **that pertain unto life and godliness**,

do not **have their senses exercised to discern both good from evil**, and who therefore, even if genuinely **sincere, naturally** too easily and **'unprofitably'** make themselves vulnerable to **persecution**, or to become **martyrs**.

But don't get me wrong. I **know** that Paul warns us that,

...all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution
[2Ti 3:12](#).

And again, I expect to eventually become a **martyr** or be severely **persecuted** for Jesus' sake myself. This is what Jesus asks of all his **'close friends'** anyway, remember? And I agree with Jesus, and the Apostle Paul who agrees with Him, when Jesus says,

Take no thought for your life... [Mat 6:25](#), [Luk 12:22](#),

or as Paul puts it,

Be careful for nothing... [Phl 4:6](#),

because in these cases they speak about anxiety for your livelihood. But to **resist** and finally **mortify** such **carnal, temporal, cares of this world** is too often too great a challenge for the **simple**, and that is, one that, generally, they are **not** entirely **able to bear**, God protect them. And who always can? So when I say you should **be careful** I mean you should **think** (e.g., [Rom 12:3](#); [1Co 8:2](#)), which again, in matters **that pertain unto life and godliness**, can only really apply to those who **have their senses exercised to discern both good from evil**, because this kind of **carefulness** requires being **spiritual**, being a **disciple indeed**. And I mean that anyone that can **think** would not engage in any kind of 'Satan taunting', because it will likely lead to **'premature persecution'**, which may end your ability to **continue to work while it is day**, and end your ability to **abound** further in your potentially **'increasingly' greater...reward** and **glory for so doing**.

And by-the-way, you can look up definitions of these different Greek and Hebrew words at [blbclassic.org](#). For example, search "**careful**", then choose verses in the list with different contexts and definitions—the different **words** having different H(ebrew) and G(reek) *Strongs Concordance* numbers/definitions—and click on the *Strongs* numbers, or on the verse, and then the 'block C' next to each verse to get access to concordance/dictionary information for all the **words** in that verse, which necessarily is not flawless information, but the least flawed available I am aware of. I mean you must come to **understand** that establishing **correct** definitions and context of **every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God** is an unavoidable part of **rightly dividing the word of truth**, and should become a regular practice in your **study to shew thyself approved unto God**, by whatever sources you prefer, but primarily using, in English, the **pure** KJV, with other 'versions', (yes, read 'commentaries'), used only to help you better **understand** the KJV, and used warily, remaining conscious of the fact that all the newer ones—starting with the ASV—unacceptably too often 'help' with erroneous, contradictory, and as I've most recently learned, redacted 'translations', and by redacted I mean that hundreds to tens of thousands of **words**, as well as many whole verses are removed that are in the KJV. (See, e.g., <https://wordcounter.io/blog/how-many-words-are-in-the-bible>.) Nevertheless, antonyms can sometimes help you **understand** definitions better than just synonyms, right? See [RGT](#).

But to be more specific about the kind of **carefulness** I'm talking about, it would be **'safest'** to assume that you have no one you can **safely** fully **fellowship** with

about these '**studies**' unless they happen to be someone who has **laboured** in them as much and as far as you have. If not, extreme caution in their **use**, and even in attempts to share too much of their contents—that is, with those **not able** to make it on their own through the first **study**—can be a matter of **eternal life** and **death**. Yes, I mean the same extreme caution Jesus used in His earthly ministry, where he only offered generalities, or **milk**, often using analogies and **parables**, and often otherwise just avoiding contact with those who really weren't interested even in the **milk**, let alone any **meat**, is vital, crucial, essential, urgent and imperative in order to avoid otherwise unnecessary '**spiritual danger**' with **eternal** consequences **!!!**—the triple exclamation point used in case I didn't use enough underlined adjectives.

And remember Jesus reveals both **wrong** and **right** reasons for following Him when He **said**,

Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. Labour not for the meat which perished, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you... [John 6:26-27](#).

So here, as part of this 'ocean' of **truth**, He **teacheth** that the **meat** that He **shall give** takes **labour** to **obtain** and **eat**. And you should **know** how relatively little the **disciples** then **understood** about what Jesus then **taught**. This is glaring in the Gospels too. For example, once Jesus used the metaphor of **meat** meaning '**spiritually mature knowledge**' when obviously the **disciples** did not **understand** what He was talking about, but only later could—but not as fully as we can today, and that is, because of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God. And I mean Jesus makes clear that He knew things that He had no intention of trying to **teach** to them while He was still on Earth. John records, in this case,

In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat? Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work [John 4:32-34](#).

At which time Jesus launches into a 'harvest of souls' analogy which at the time they could not really **understand** either. So it is obvious here that Jesus expects them to **understand** relatively little of what He is saying to them. But later they, and now even more we, can **understand** that this was for their own good, because they were not yet ready for the **deep** meaning behind His **similitudes** and **parables**. In fact it was not **safe** for them to even try to **understand** them yet, because such '**mature spiritual**' **understanding** is most **safely** acquired by **labour in the word**, which at this time is missing the entire New Testament, as it is still being 'acted out'. And by this you can **see** a reason why **patience** is so important, and that it is not just for **babes**; it is for every '**level**' or '**graduation**' or '**progression**' of **the knowledge of God, for ever**. And I mean those who are **exercised** in **strong meat** are not completely invulnerable to **stumbling**, because any brother given **knowledge** that is **too high** for him, on whatever '**level**', occasionally **stumbleth, or is offended, or is made** comparatively **weak**, comparable to a **babe** ([Rom 14:21](#)), because there is no end to how '**stumblingly**' **high** God's **knowledge** goes. So like Jesus, every **step** of **the way**, we need to be

careful with **babes**, but also with **disciples** that have not yet had the chance to 'climb' as **high** as **we** have.

But another difficulty—with these '**studies**'—is that, a lot like Jesus' experience on Earth, most everyone you **know** is probably still a **babe** or **worse**, and not ready for this '**level**' of '**meaty teaching**', since there is likely no one you **know** who really knows how to **rightly**—at least consistently—**study** The Word of God, without too often falling into compartmentalization or other pitfalls. This is the general state of today's Church, and most likely true enough even for those who you think are the most **spiritual**. And by-the-way, what Greek or Hebrew **words** and definitions do you think I mean by **safe** in the previous paragraph? And don't you now have a 'bigger picture' about how much '**rightly dividing**' there is to do?

Also by-the-way, all this begs a question. Do the **spirits** of the Apostles, and everyone else, have access to The Word of God in **paradise** right now? I certainly **hope** so. And this could mean that they are way ahead of us by now—especially if they also have access to what's going on down here. And this would also mean that we will have a lot to do to get 'up to speed' with them when we **meet** them. Or maybe time passes differently in **paradise** and they will need our help to catch up, though probably no more than we will need theirs about events from their time.

But you should remember that this is **unlawful** 'territory', and that our view of it is behind the **glass** that we can **now** only **see through...darkly**, and the same may be true of their view of us, except that, like in **Abraham's Bosom**, they must have a steady flow of newcomers from Earth, some of whom may be of help to keep them 'up to date'. And I say 'some', because even in this **dispensation**, that is, even with **the blood of Jesus** and The Ministry of The Spirit of God working together, there is no 'sure cure' for the **natural, fleshly, carnal** and innate **foolishness**, and yes, '**desperately wicked nature**' of the **heart of man**, not to mention there are still 'language barriers', such 'barriers' evidently not intended to be removed until The Millennium.

But I also mean that, at least upon arrival in **paradise**, though surely **saved** by **the blood of Jesus**, a **spirit** then is no less **ignorant** and **foolish** than when they left their body on Earth. And the Apostle Paul, who I **believe** visited the place before now residing there, said Jesus **led** those in **captivity** in the Earth **captive**, that is, to become **captives** in **paradise** ([Eph 4:8-10](#); [2Co12:1-4](#); [1Pe 3:18-19](#)), however 'comfortably accommodated' they are, and where evidently they are to remain **captives** until The Rapture. So what they **know** that we don't, and what we **know** that they don't, who can say?—which I guess is exactly the way God wants it, at least for now.

But let's **think** a little more. Speaking of the **parables** Jesus **teacheth**, one of them **teaching** that **persecution** does not necessarily lead to **godliness**, especially for **babes**, because, according to Him, and especially nowadays, by **tribulation** and **persecution** the **simple** can be **offended** and **depart from the faith**. Remember in '**the parable of the sower**' Jesus **teacheth**,

...when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he [the 'spiritual' babe in Christ] is offended [Mat 13:20-21](#); [Mark 4:16-17](#); [1Ti 4:1](#).

So again, besides looking after them, and like Jesus was **careful** not to do, you don't want to endanger helpless **babes** with too much **knowledge** that Satan is likely to come after them for, let alone 'poke at him' too much yourself, as Jesus never really did, and whether this was just an example for us or not. This too is glaring in the Gospels. However we **know** that the **day** is coming when He really

will 'poke at him', and that is, at least at all his armies that God intends to **gather... to the battle of that great day of God Almighty** ([Rev 16:12-14](#)), I mean with that **sharp sword** coming **out of his mouth** ([Rev 19:15](#)), and apparently it's not just us that will be tempted to get a little impatient waiting for it.

Considering then the **patience** required for all of us to get to that 'point'. The Father and Jesus, through the Son's strict obedience to His Father, together **warn**, whatever you do,

Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you [Mat 7:6](#),

because that would be asking for both **tribulation** and **persecution**, and for no good purpose, wouldn't it? I mean Jesus is making it pretty clear here that trying to convince **the world of the truth** is not always '**praiseworthy**', nor will it always really **glorify** God, but is, probably more often than not, **foolish** and, especially nowadays, **perilous** to everyone, and especially if you are **not by reason of** [regular, long-ongoing] **use** [of **scripture**] **exercised to discern both good and evil**, don't you think?—though again, The Spirit is always to some degree '**withstanding**'.

And by 'to some degree' I mean you should also remember Jesus knew The Spirit was coming to **comfort, guide** and **teach us all things**, and be the One who **withholdeth** the **rulers of the darkness of this world**. Still, there is evidently a limit to this Ministry of The Spirit, as Jesus surely was not contradicting Himself, or what His **disciples** would later **teach**. And this is where you should **understand** that all The Ministry of The Spirit, without your **sincerity** and **diligence**, can accomplish relatively little. And I mean the reason that when...

Every man's work...shall be revealed by fire... [and their] work shall be burned... [such that most] shall suffer [significant to total] loss [1Co 3:13](#) (see also, e.g., [Mat 16:27](#)),

with little to nothing surviving this **fire of judgment** left for their eternal **reward**, is because most who think they are doing the will of God are **not** even **able** to **understand** that they really don't, and that is, maturely, **know** how, and even if they did **know**, they are still **not** yet **able** to **do** it.

It's like that time when even Jesus, **in his own country, and in his own house...**

...did not many mighty works there because of...unbelief [Mat 13:58](#).

And I mean it's like that with the **knowledge of God** in general. In one sense, the **power** of The Word of God is in proportion to how it can be '**rightly divided**' and **received**. Because only with such **weight** of **the knowledge of God**, and without **handling the word of God deceitfully** or **carelessly** or **ignorantly**, but **rightly dividing** it, can seemingly contradictory **precepts** be reconciled, and the **error** and '**misunderstandings**', including as necessary, **deceit**, be removed, so that God's **word** becomes a **better** and **better**...

...lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path [Psa 119:105](#),

that naturally helps best the **sincere** and **diligent**, who...

...live... by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God
[Mat 4:4](#) ([Deu 8:3](#)),

and who can increasingly **discern** the **good** from the **evil... paths**, where the more **careless** and **ignorant** cannot, because they too often **naturally** confuse the two.

And such broad, far-reaching 'reconciliation' of **precepts** takes a lot of **study**, whereby you only eventually **shew thyself approved unto God**. And such '**approval**' of God reveals you as **perfect**—no, not flawless, but '**spiritually mature**'—in **rightly dividing the word of truth**, meaning you have become **diligent** to **continue** to **correct** and further **correct**, '**improve**' and further '**improve**', and '**expand**' and further '**expand**' your **knowledge** of **every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**. And though this '**grand eternal adventure**' may begin with the '**dawning**' **daystar** that the Apostle Peter speaks of, because this '**dawning**' can be simultaneous with becoming **approved unto God**, a '**dawning**' you may have experienced in these '**studies**', this is not an absolute requirement', because such '**approval**' from God can come other than by a focus on **prophecy**, but of course sooner or later requires it. For me, and my **calling** and **purpose** in God, I came to the **revelation** that my **path** to this '**approval**' and **perfection** relates to the **time of the end** we now live in, where **study** in **prophecy** could be considered foundational, or at least preferable, even as it is presented in these '**studies**'. And I mean there are other reasons nowadays for taking this particular **path**, that, **if ye continue**, you will eventually be ready to **see**, uh-huh, in the next **study**.

But at this point, the most important **precept** that you need to **understand** is that too much **truth** too fast can leave your **brother**, or you, let alone **swine**, only **offended**, as The Word is designed by God this **way**—to limit how fast anyone can grow—for our own good, and also to eventually expose the '**ignorantly**' or '**deceitfully**' **careless**, but ultimately **reward** the **sincere** and **diligent**, who, like hopefully **you** are now doing, make it a lifestyle to **continue** to expose **your** own **errors**, and thereby **continue** to ever '**correct, improve and expand**' **your** perspective of God and His Word, all in order to '**increasingly better**' **serve** Him, which is to '**increasingly better**' **love** Him, and that is, until such **admonition** as this becomes no longer **needful**, because **your perfect love** of God not only **casteth out fear**, but also '**increasingly helps to gain strength**' over **your flesh** from '**hindering**' **you** from '**increasingly eating**'...

...that which is good, and let your soul ['increasingly'] delight itself in [spiritual] fatness [Isa 55:1-3](#).

Uh-huh, the goal is to '**pig out**'. But never forget that **stumbling** by '**growing too fast**' can happen at any '**level of growth**', since there's never an end to our '**growth in the knowledge of God**'. And I mean that just like you can eat more and more literal meat as you mature, so you can **eat** more and more **spiritual meat** as you '**spiritually mature**', though there will **for ever** be a limit to how much you can **eat** at any time without '**choking**'. **Understand?**

But to stretch your brain a little further, I think this kind of '**stumbling**' and '**choking**' are a couple of the things **the leaves of the tree [of life]** that are **for the healing of the nations** will be for. And don't feel bad if you don't **understand** this yet. I'm not sure I do so well yet either.

And I shouldn't fail to reemphasize that there are limits, set by God and His Word, to The Spirit's Ministry to protect you from **spiritual wickedness in high**

places. Sure, the *diligent* and *sincere* are more than conquerors, who can rightly rhetorically ask,

If God be for us, who can be against us? [Rom 8:31b](#).

But this, at least nowadays, is because they have *searched diligently* the *scriptures* to '*correct, improve and expand*' their *understanding* of *the knowledge of God 'continually'*, making them *confident* that God's 'got their back'. And it's also because they *know* they are...

...given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake; [even possibly like Paul did, e.g., [2Co 11-12](#)] [Phl 1:28-29](#),

and, by showing their true *love* of God and His Son in this *way*, they are therefore *promised* and *worthy* of such '*abiding protection*' from God, while those who aren't so interested to *continue in* the *truth*, let alone *to suffer*, and are too often satisfied, unwittingly or not, to remain in *error*, and are satisfied with just the compartmentalized, contradictory-precepts 'merry-go-round' they call 'church', aren't *worthy* of as much '*protection*', *Lord, have mercy*.

On the other hand, this brings to mind a story of mine. When I was in college, on Summer break, and backsliding, I drove down to LA with friends, where all but one of us—not me—drank too much. So when we were traveling the Pacific Coast Highway back home very late that night, or early the next morning really, the 3 who were drunk were asleep, and the driver, evidently at highway speed, fell asleep at the wheel. The car obviously rolled in the crash, ending up in the center area between the roads. It was smashed in on all sides. The front windshield was gone, the roof caved in. And it was lying on its side.

I woke up 20 to 30 feet in front of the car, being urgently roused by the driver that we had to push the car over to get the other two out. How either of us got out of the car I never found out for sure. So we rocked the car, a Volkswagen Sirocco, until we were finally able to push it over, and with some difficulty I pulled the door partially open, and the other 2 emerged.

There are cliffs, both natural and manmade, everywhere on the Pacific Coast Highway between Santa Barbara and Goleta, and to crash into one at highway speed would seem to be certain death. And there are cliffs to drive off everywhere too, likely also resulting in death. We ended up on a much more uncommon, flat, grassy area between the roads.

We waited for the tow truck for 4 hours, from still dark to daylight, at quite a remote location. Cell phones were still several years away, but a California Highway Patrol officer stopped, and judging by the appearance of the car, must have asked us if we were all alright, and with us apparently all responding in the affirmative, he just called a tow truck for us. And for the entire time we waited we talked. No one spoke of any pain or injury, or looked as if they were injured at all. I felt entirely uninjured myself. This, of course, was impossible. The car was beyond totaled. And I don't think any of us were wearing seat belts. I wasn't. And it occurs to me that the CHP officer must have assumed that we were all wearing them. But I was *backsliding*, and *blind*, and did not realize that we had been saved by *angels*—I'm guessing more than one—till later, after my *backsliding* ended with another 'angels-involved' affair, which, God willing, I'll recount sometime later.

And I mean if you're *predestinated* for some future *service* to God, even if presently not serving him, then no one can kill you. But who fully knows their '*predestination*'? That's God's perspective, not ours, and you shouldn't presume

to know it unless He tells you about it, and if He does, then it's still a greatly limited view of it compared to His complete view.

So getting back to the first hand, though we **know** that,

...God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it [1Co 10:13](#),

we should also remember the Apostle Peter's **warning** to '**slackers**' that we all must...

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world [1Pe 5:8-9](#).

So yes, there are limits. And I mean it is best to **be...vigilant** and **stedfast** or expect to get 'gobbled', 'turkey'. And remember that all the **sincere** and **diligent** 11 original **apostles** and Paul were eventually executed for their faith, as Jesus **warned** them they would be, except John, who reportedly survived by a **miracle**, though exiled to that Mediterranean island, **Patmos**, "a small Greek island in the Aegean Sea... off the [south]west coast of Turkey and the continent of Asia".

So am I saying to **be careful** and **safe** you should just 'clam up'? **Yes!!!** (There are those three exclamation points again!—and another one for **good measure**—and you noticed there was also underlining involved, right?). I mean until you reach the place where you have long **exercised to discern both good and evil**, and then **know**, when it comes to most **things that pertain unto life and godliness**, how to **speak as the oracles of God**, shut up, while in the mean time your priority should be to **master** these '**studies**', though there is something you can and should do, 'evangelism-wise', and that is, **work** to be ready to...

...give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear [1Pe 3:15](#).

The key **words** for the '**spiritually immature**' in this verse are, **that asketh you**. If you don't

yet possess the **great boldness** a '**spiritually mature**' elder—and don't prematurely presume you do, because nowadays it should take a couple decades of '**rightly-directed**' study, and that is, until you **know** when to **speak** when not asked—then in the meantime cultivate your **hope** in God through His Word. And to be more specific, only when this **work** eventually and actually '**attracts**' someone to you, who **asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you**, yes, only then allow yourself to **answer**. But again, if still without the **boldness** of a '**spiritually mature**' elder, only answer... with meekness and fear.

And by-the-way, you should already **know** that the **spiritual** are **able** to **purchase... great boldness**, while others who don't '**continually**' buy...gold from Jesus cannot, at least **rightly**. So how can they become **able**? They must **learn** how. But again, how? Primarily, we have the **counsel** and **rebuke** of Jesus Himself telling us how, who says,

I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with

eyesalve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent [Rev 3:18](#).

So to use Jesus' metaphors here, and since He's talking to His Church, we can **understand** that He means that we start, after being **saved, naturally** in '**spiritual poverty**' and **nakedness**, and that is, in a **shameful** condition, **knowledge-wise**, where His prescribed **way** of escaping this **shame** is to **buy** His **gold**, which is to **study** the **knowledge** of His Word, and to **be zealous** about it, but also have a **contrite** and **humble**, even a **broken spirit** and **heart** about it (e.g., [Psa 34:18](#); [51:17](#); [Isa 57:15](#); [66:2](#)), whereby we can expect to become **rich** and '**finely clothed**', and that is, **God willing, receive a...[great] reward at the judgment seat of Christ**; where...

...every one may [read, will] receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad [2Co 5:10](#),

and that is, **receive** the **reward** for **work** that isn't **burned** in the '**judgment fire**', if any, or in still other **words**, to **receive** either '**riches and fine clothing**' or **nakedness**, or something in between, where even 'buckets-full' of His **blood** may only guarantee a relatively '**shameful entrance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ**'. Yes, and again, to **receive** an **entrance** that is **ministered unto you abundantly** you have to **work** for it, and it can't be the kind of '**blind work**' that gets **burned** up, and brings only **shame** and **nakedness**. No, in order **not to be ashamed** it has to be **work** where you become **able** to...

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, [and become] a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth [2 Ti 2:15](#),

not to mention, again, where you are **able** to **discern**, by that **work, both good and evil**.

But again, (and can you hear Peter cheering!), being **rich** vs. **naked** are metaphors that Jesus uses to **admonish** us to **continue** to **get, grow in, abound in**, and...

...be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding [Col 1:9](#) (see also [Pro 4:5-7](#); [16:16](#)).

And all this implies you **can attain—for evermore**—some degree of **glory** while keeping **shame** to a minimum by **reason of** [the '**rightly-divided**'] **use of scripture** wherein you are **exercised to discern both good and evil**, and therefore **able** to avoid **shame**, and **able** to **discern** the **things that pertain unto life and godliness**, and thereby be...

...given exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust [2Pe 1:4](#),

where, as the Apostle James more simply puts it, you become...

...doers of the word, and not hearers only [Jas 1:22](#). (See also [Rom 2:13](#).)

since **doing** otherwise you are really only **deceiving your own selves**.

So yes, though 'travel speeds' vary, or to use another metaphor, though 'profits vary according to investments', there are no other 'itineraries' or 'markets' for Christians. So please **understand!** Both **shame**—or call it '**lack of honour**'—and **glory** are **eternal**, including for the Immortal Sons of God. And I mean that **now** is the only time you have. And you can only use this time to either **strive** to '**grow up**', or otherwise **naturally** be '**backsliding down**'. and if **backsliding** more than not expect to **suffer** more **shame—for evermore**—and I mean it will be apparent in your **lack** of '**finer clothes**', **crown** and **brightness**—which, please **understand**, you are not **given to...suffer**, though many nonetheless will, **for evermore**, and that would be to the degree you do not **get, grow** and **abound** in **the knowledge of God**. No kidding, I **speak** for Him.

And to be clear about **shame**, more of Peter's encouragement of repetition being in order, here, I say again, when it comes to **things that pertain unto life and godliness**, only those who **have their senses exercised to discern both good from evil** are **able** to avoid the most **error**, or recognize it if at first they don't, while those who are **not spiritual** too often don't **know** when they **err**, and think God in all cases is **for** them, while they in **ignorance** or **worse** actually stand **against God** and His Word in an overwhelmingly **shameful** number of ways.

Are you **awake to righteousness**, as well as to your **shame** yet? This is the **natural** state of those **in the world**, but also of those **in Christ** who are **not spiritual**. But the 'starting line' for those joining the '**eternal race**' in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God is where you become truly **awake to righteousness**. And yes, Paul's metaphor, that compares it to a **race**, makes it sound so competitive, because it unavoidably is—where '**lead runners**' **press toward** the '**cutting edge**' of **the knowledge of God**. Or to use another of Paul's metaphors, you should expect to eventually **purchase** some of this **boldness**, maybe even **great boldness**, to, as the Apostle Peter puts it, **speak as the oracles of God**, that is, **if** you, **giving all diligence**, being **vigilant** and **stedfast**, and with some **vehement desire**, become long **exercised** in your **work** to **press toward** this limitlessly distant **mark**.

In the mean time, if you are only a few months or years into this '**eternal investment plan**'—to **lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven** [Mat 6:20](#), and don't confuse this with how long you have been **saved**—remember that **meekness and fear** is Peter's **counsel** until you are more '**fully invested**'. And, by-the-way, I wouldn't **wrestle** with either of Peter's **epistles** either.

And until you are '**fully invested**', and that is, reach '**spiritual maturity**' and are **approved unto God**, your job is to increasingly better **understand** not just every verse, but **every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God** in context. Those who are and remain **babes in Christ** are **not able to bear** this. And yes, this goal requires a **transformed** lifestyle, not to mention a lifetime, while to be one of The Lord's '**closest friends**' may also require you, though hopefully only eventually, to **lay down his life for** Him, and for all who are or may become His.

But I should also elaborate on The One exception to all this, and that is, The Spirit of God. I have said before, hopefully repeatedly enough, that The Spirit is able to **work** in spite of us, even including through us in spite of our **ignorance** and '**spiritual immaturity**', though there is comparatively little **glory** and **reward** for this—the **glory** being mostly God's—compared to those who can **discern** what they **do** and **say** for God by His Spirit, and thereby appropriately **receive a [great] reward**, and that is, **in heaven**—but that would be if you're not '**spewed out**' into The Great Tribulation, and ultimately **beheaded** for Jesus sake, in which case you

may instead **receive** whatever **reward** you may get at your **'rapture-to-the-Earth' judgment**, evidently in Millennial Jerusalem. And many other of the Immortal Sons of God may **receive** their **reward**, if any, on Earth—or New Earth—in one case possibly all over the planet, making apparently 2 **'to-the-Earth raptures'** spanning 1,000 years, not counting that brief 'stopover' on Earth by The 2 Witnesses on their way to Heaven. Yeah, see [RGT](#) if you don't get it.

But also in this particular **dispensation of the grace of God**, Jesus has given **gifts unto men**. Though USUALLY they are mostly useless to **babes in Christ**, because they are **ignorant** of them, and if **known** USUALLY **'misunderstand'** and/or **'misinterpret'** them, this being who **babes** are. Nonetheless The Spirit can use these **gifts** as needed by the **grace of God**. And it has been my experience that The Spirit may work though **a babe** by this and other means as God may **ordain**. But at this point it is **safe** to say no more about **gifts of the Spirit**, that is, besides directing you to what **the sincere milk of the word** says. And I mean a **'strong-meat perspective'** of the **gifts of the Spirit** is something else that **we** must have the **patience** to wait for, and that is, till we are fully ready for it, **God willing**, again yes, in the next **study**.

And this brings us again to a foundational reason for these **'studies'**, a topic that I may **speak** for God about not only with **great boldness**, but also with His **indignation**, because it is part of the foundation of my **purpose** and **calling** in Him. It is that, generally speaking, the Church is not really doing even its primary job. Because at this point, when someone **asketh you a reason**, you should **know** whether you will be **able** to **save...them that hear thee**, or not. And I don't just mean delivering the Gospel, but delivering the opportunity for a level of discipleship that eventually **maketh** their **way perfect**, and in the meantime **keepeth** their **way**, and **preserveth** their **soul**. I mean if you can't **'disciple'** **them** then you should at least **know** where to take **them** where there is someone who can. And this is really what these **'studies'** are for, since, again, your local church is likely **not able** to do this **work** effectively enough, and that is, beyond **'evangelism'**. And this **'inability to disciple'** is what I have long called **'meat grinding'**, as I had this **revelation**, and have used the various forms of this term I coined, since not long after I became **weaned from the milk** of The Word in the late 1980's. And by **'meat grinding'** I mean, again, that so many nowadays are **'evangelized'**, and...

...were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come...

But then, mostly because they are not adequately **'disciplined'**, they...

...fall away, [where it becomes impossible] to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame [Heb 6:4-6](#).

Indeed, more often than not, the **'evangelism'** of our, (to use a little **meekness and fear**), **'spiritually immature'** Church today—and I'm talking mostly about within Protestant countries, and that is, within the **young lions** and their allies, (see [RGT](#))—when such 'ministry' leads to genuine **salvation**, much more often than not it also leaves those who **were once enlightened, by and by**, to **fall away**, where, as Peter puts it,

For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire [2Pe 2:20-22](#).

So are you still ready to run out to the nearest street corner and **save** someone? I've done it. But I'm telling you that you are likely not ready, not without likely causing much more **'bloody carnage'** than not, not until you are truly ready to **save...them that hear thee**—which means you are **able** to **keep** those that **hear thee**, and that is, **after** they are **converted**—because it's also not likely you know someone who can. And haven't you noticed that your Church usually can't, except for the **faithful, merciful kindness** of **the Spirit of God, the Holy Ghost**?

And you can disagree with the Apostles Peter and Paul if you will, but I'm siding with them, who **teach** that despite The Spirit's evidently **longsuffering** ministry, way too many of those **once enlightened... fall away...** But I'm also siding with my experience of watching the Church for decades, where I **see** that Satan's got quite a **'meat grinder'** going on in the Protestant Church right now. And I mean that evidently unlike it was in the days of the Apostles, a horrifying percentage of the **'once enlightened'**, who were simply led through a 'sinner's prayer', **fall away**, ending up in the **impossible** condition where it would be **better for them not to have known the way of righteousness** at all, and where **the latter end is worse with them than the beginning**. This is what I mean by **'meat grinding'**. And remember Paul taught that...

...in the last days perilous times shall come [2Ti 3:1](#)

And yes, he may be referring mostly to The Great Tribulation here, but we're getting awfully close to that, not to mention that he also **taught...**

...that evil men and seducers shall wax [or become] worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived [2Ti 3:13...](#)

...from his time on. Uh huh. And Peter goes on and on about the **pernicious ways** of the **false prophets** and **false teachers** already at work in his day, who...

...through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you... [and who are] natural brute beasts... Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin... For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error... [2Pe 2](#).

The point is that overall it's only gotten **worse and worse**, and even harder to detect by our **churches** that are nowadays increasingly full of **babes**. And yes, I mean that Satan's **'meat grinder'** has become an almost invisible, but 'monstrous', 'well-oiled machine'. Is this a picture that **seemeth right unto** you? If not, begin to be **transformed by the renewing of your mind**, because these are the **words** of our **'apostle-prophets'**, not mine. But again, we won't really

begin to expose such **deceiving** and **pernicious ways**, and all the ‘machinery’ involved in this **‘meat grinding’** of **souls** until the next **study**.

But now it is time you should acknowledge a more personal **revelation** here. Remember when you recognized that you were **a babe**? **God willing** you already did, because if you never have you have no business **continuing** with this **study**. It’s the necessary real ‘first step’—the ‘starting line’ for the **race** to becoming a **disciple indeed**, without which you can’t really properly fully **grow...in the knowledge** of God, nor really be one of the **partakers** in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Word of God, and certainly not one of the **partakers** in the **high calling** that this **study** offers. And **we** should not leave out, at least occasionally to remind ourselves, that this is an **eternal** process whereby **we** also **continue** to **grow in grace** too, **knowing** that we must, by our **vehement desire**, and by **giving all diligence**, and remaining ever **vigilant** and **stedfast** in order to **walk worthy**, including **being fruitful**, whereby **we** demonstrate our **humility** in each of our **steps** that are **ordered of the Lord**, who tells us that He **delighteth in** such **obedience**, including each time **we ‘correct, improve and expand’** our perspectives of Him, thereby ever **increasing in the knowledge of God**, and in the **love** of God, by which means God **shall lift you up** ever **higher, without end**, even as you **press toward a better... understanding** of His **higher ways** and **thoughts**, and also **toward a better resurrection**.

But there is another ‘starting line’. This second ‘starting line’ is for those who would not just **‘run the race’**, but would also **go on unto perfection**, that is, to be a **servant of all**, because for this, just being a **disciple** is not enough. And I mean you must also recognize that **all** who are newly **saved**, ‘start’ with **corrupt minds**, or as Paul also puts it, as **carnal** and **not spiritual**, and so much so that no matter what **seemeth right** to them, listen **man**,

There is a way which [or that] seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death [a repeated **proverb** you should be able to cite by now].

And I mean you must at some point come to another **revelation**, that is, that you are originally and **naturally**—at **salvation**—not just still **carnal**, but also necessarily a **‘meat grinder’** yourself, and that this condition is the hardest of all to escape. And no, just being **able** to define what **a babe** is doesn’t mean you are no longer one, because it’s only your ongoing committed relationship to God to **continue in** His Word His way that makes you really **weaned from the milk and drawn from the breast**. And it’s kind of the same with **‘meat grinding’**. Just being **able** to define this **‘invisible’ precept** doesn’t mean you’re **able** to provide consistently **saving**, actually **edifying**—not to mention **harmless—service**, including to the Church, let alone that you have a clue what it is to be a **servant of all**. No, before you reach this second ‘starting line’, you most often—unavoidably and ignorantly—tend too often to **stumble** others in Christ, let alone everyone else in the World, in too many **things** that you **say** and **do**. And yes, The Spirit, to a limited extend, as well as **angels, withstand**, but you should now **understand** a little **better** why Solomon lamented that,

For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow [Ecc 1:18](#).

Yes, my testimony is that this has become my longtime experience with **grief** and **sorrow** concerning the Protestant Church today, even with most leaders of the

Church today. I mean that there is at least generally too little **wisdom** and **knowledge** accessible to the leadership to provide effective **'discipleship'**, and thereby avoid the too common consequences of the **'meat grinding'** of **souls**, which The Spirit seems to be able to do increasing less about, now that we have passed the start of **the time of the end**—marked by the **'unsealing'** of Daniel's final **prophecy**, occurring no later than May 6, 2007, where apparently there's been an acceleration of things getting **worse and worse** as we get closer to **the end of the age**, that is, with surely only a few decades to go till The Rapture from this start of these **'end times'**. Yeah, see [RGT](#).

And I mean you must **understand** that, with the **time** we have left, **we** need to **learn** how to administer Jesus' Church His way, and in the process **discover** the **errors** in our **ways**...

And let ours [or us] also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful [let alone excessively 'meat grinding']
[Tit 3:14](#),

and **learn** to put into practice everything that ensures that **the gates of hell shall not prevail** **against** what God has **predestinated** for us to **accomplish** by Jesus' Church by the time of The Rapture. And in **so doing**, also **learn 'God's way'** as to how real **'mature fellowship'** with other **predestinated** Immortal Sons of God should best be carried out, beginning with His **ways** and **means** of directing **'evangelism'**, but also including all **'soul-keeping' operations of the church** of Jesus Christ that are necessarily best supported by **disciples** and their **fellowship**. And I must expect in **faith** that this is exactly what God **predestinated** He would **accomplish**, including fulfilling Jesus' **prophecy** that **the gates of hell shall not prevail against His church**.

However I remain uncertain as to what degree God will **prevail**, because I **know** with the certainty of another **prophecy** of Jesus' that—in numbers of the 'second-starting-line' **disciples called** to this **work**—there can only be a **very few** of the **few**. But there must be some if **we** are to some degree going to turn back this **'doubly-bloody tide'** of **souls**. And no, you should **not** have, other than maybe some ideas that **seemeth right unto** you, much idea of what I'm talking about yet, because, to put it simply, you are likely still **not spiritual** enough yet. So here again more **'spiritually mature patience'** is required, because, again, **we** won't be ready for this **work** either, that is, **God willing**, until we get passed the next **study**.

But truly I say to you now, with the state of the Church of Jesus Christ today, unless you or someone you **know** is ready to follow up, until The Rapture, with **'mature spiritual discipleship'**, **'evangelism'** has become, more often than not, at least in Protestant nations, a **'cruel ministry'**. And I'm saying that your local Church leadership likely **cannot** dependably **'disciple' converts**, not knowing how, nor even really knowing how to **rightly** directly **study** The Word, so that they are likely little better than unwitting participants in this **'bloody meat-grinder'** of **souls**. But you should now **see** a little **better** why Jesus tells us that so **few** will end up being **saved**, let alone become **disciples indeed**, and therefore **understand** a little **better** the real **purpose** of these **'studies'**. They **can** help you, **after** they **'disciple' you**, **'disciple'** others, even prepare you to be a **servant of all**, and for the last **strong...exploits** of the Church of Jesus Christ on this Earth.

But is it **wrong** to **will**, and that is, to **want** or **desire** to be **great** or to **be servant of all**? No. Jesus only says that there are qualifications involved, saying,

...whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all
[Mat 20:26-28](#); [Mar 10:43-45](#) [and review [Col 1:9](#), [1Co 14:1](#) and [Phl 4:17](#)].

But again, **be patient**, because this is another topic for the next **study** that **we** won't be fully ready for until **we** get there.

However you must now **understand** that if you or those you **'disciple'** ever become too widely known by these **'studies'**, it will eventually, as Jesus has required of His **'closest friends'**, bring **great persecution**, even cost you and your **'closest friends'** your **lives**, as such **understanding** puts you 'high' on Satan's 'hit list', you being in a position to expose his increasingly successful **'meat-grinding' devices**. I mean he won't abide such things being too widely exposed, not without a **fight**. And this is one of the reasons you are not yet ready—not for this **'level'** of **fight**. So **wait** for it, really, and for now just **study**, and may God, and you, and our **friends** in this preparing **fight**, including Jesus, and The Spirit of God, **help** us in the meantime to **stand fast** until the coming **victory**, and, until **that day**, remain **faithful** in...

...Holding forth the word of life...[wherein **we] may rejoice [and **glory**] in the day of Christ...[having] not run in vain, neither laboured in vain**
[Phl 2:16](#) [and [1Co 2:5-7](#)].

And being **given to...suffer for his sake**, and to **'acceptably' take it patiently**, we become **more than conquerors** by **love**, which is expressed through our **purchased**—but freely given away—**gold** and **pearls** and **precious stones** that, **God willing**, when **delivered unto the saints** provide **stability and strength of salvation**, which is the **reason of the hope that is in you**, and that is **in** everyone **predestinated to accomplish** such a **high calling**, who will, with God, receive **glory** and **great riches**, which is a **reward that is great in heaven** (– location qualifications again appropriate). So I **encourage** those who will **work, strive, press, run** and **fight** to be **partakers** with those who are so used of God, and, from His perspective, **predestinated to greatly help accomplish** God's **word** whereto it **goeth forth**, and, **God willing**, **before** inevitably becoming exposed to **wolves** and **swine** and **persecuted** or, again from His perspective, **chosen** as one who must **lay down his life for his friends** for **so doing**, and like for the work of Bishop Timothy and his Church, I may **glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure**, where **in all things, with all thy heart, soul, mind** and **strength** by your **'ever growing' love** of God, you **continue** in **so doing**, all the while **comforted** that **if these things be in you, and abound**, it is **right** to **fear not**, and **fret not**, knowing this is how we **press** the **fight** to **the gates of hell** with the **faith, hope** and **love**, (or **charity**, same Greek **word**, though not limited to the definitions prescribed by **babes** in 1 Corinthians 13), which is Jesus' **promise** and **prophecy** that it is really **we**, by the Church, who will **prevail**, and not only **prevail**, but become among those who have a part with God in...

...having spoiled principalities and powers... [and **having] made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it**
[Col 2:15](#).

Yes, He will **accomplish** this through us, even the **'cutting edge' work** that will make it eventually undeniable that **the gates of hell shall not prevail against**

the Church of Jesus Christ, though for now we must **weigh**—like Jesus did—the need of every **fight** with Satan, as **whosoever of you will be chiefest** (read, **‘multiply-gifted’ apostles, bishops, deacons**, etc.) must, which again, the more **‘meaty’** details of which you must **wait patiently** for.

Until then, may **the LORD** be **thy keeper**. Indeed, may you also **be partakers of** all the **promises** of His Word, including in [Psalm 121](#), that...

The LORD is thy keeper: the LORD is thy shade upon thy right hand. The sun shall not smite thee by day, nor the moon by night. The LORD shall preserve thee from all evil: he shall preserve thy soul. The LORD shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, and even for evermore [Verses:5-8](#).

Amen. But I should add I am not against the Church even as it is. You and I are all products of it by one **means** or another. And I have **acknowledged** on many occasions over decades to the few that best know me that, “It’s the only game in town.” And I must ultimately **accept** the Apostle Paul’s conclusion on the matter, and that is, that we must...

...by [any and] all means save some [\[Rom 11:14\]](#) [1Co 9:22](#).

And the Church is still the best thing available for **babes** that are not yet really, and fully, **awake to righteousness**, and offers the best chance to them (from our perspective) of **redemption**, that is, compared to those who are entirely—whether **lost** or **‘re-lost’**—**without God in the world**. Still, **we can do better**. And it is already my testimony, yes, speaking for God, that these **‘studies’**, and especially the next one, though yet incomplete, **shall**, supernaturally by the Spirit of God, **teach you**—and me—**His ways of so doing**, and it is obvious to me by now that I am **called according to his purpose to teach**, that is, to be used of God to help **accomplish** something **much better**, and that is, than the pervasive **‘meat grinding’** now going on.

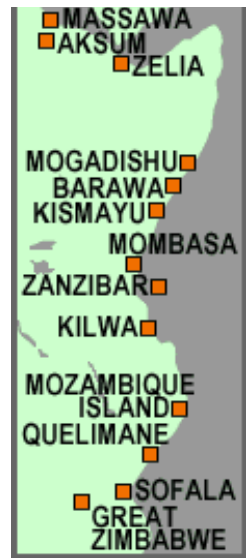
However, and though I believe I am in the process of being used of God to **teach** such **things**, I can only **continue** to **hope** and **pray** that He is willing to **disciple** very ‘many’ by this **means**, and that is, now that we are entering **the time of the end**. And I mean maybe this is just all or mostly preparation for The Millennium more than anything else. **Lord, have mercy**.

And getting back to the chronology of **giants** that we’ve been covering, which includes—to recategorize a little—3 kinds, including, from smallest to largest, **1) ‘environment-enhanced humans’**, **2) ‘angel-human hybrids’**, and **3) ‘manifested’ angels**, the first 2 of these 3 kinds being at their largest in the Pre-Flood World, and beginning to ‘shrink’ at the time of The Flood. And one of these kinds continues to be marked in our chronology by their decreasingly **angel** and increasingly **human DNA**, including the ancient, supposedly fabled, ‘giant demigod kings’ up to, during, and—in the Americas hemisphere—beyond King David’s time, to the ‘king-gods’ of the Greco-Roman World, (not to be confused with the much later “Holy Blood” kings and ‘popo-gods’ of Europe, which we’ll get to eventually), to the ‘isolated’ and/or ‘dumbed-down’ Medieval **giants** that apparently finally died out, to today’s fascination with ‘super-heroes’—which is self-idolatry. And what’s left today? Certainly some play basketball for the NBA, or still live in isolated places, like the commonly still over 7-foot tall, now mostly Muslim, Swahilis of Western Coastal Africa (see maps, [p.404](#)), earlier known to be...



"Men of greatest stature, who are pirates, [and] inhabit the whole coast and at each place have set up chiefs." From Periplus of the Erythraean Sea, 100 AD

(http://www.bbc.co.uk/worldservice/africa/features/storyofafrica/index_section5.shtml).



And speaking of 'spiritual aberrations' caused by **angels**, remember there are also **angels** 'masquerading' as 'aliens', etc., but there's arguably really only one kind of **giant** left today, the 'spiritually aberrant' kind that tends to be bigger and taller, and often darker, due to their percentage—however still decreasing—of 'angel DNA'. But to be still clearer, let's again more specifically review these—arguably otherwise categorizable—3 kinds, one being the 'manifestly' largest in size (pun intended), the **angels that sinned** [2Pe 2:4](#), who are now in *Tartarus*, which is evidently a "subterranean" **prison**, their incarceration there still a 'behavior reminder' to the still 'free' **angels** who can still **manifest** as they like, though it's evidently mostly only the **bad** ones that are motivated by their **fear** of God, in this case by their desire to avoid 'premature incarceration', because they mostly only show themselves when 'masquerading' as 'aliens' or 'ghosts' or other **lying wonders**. And it's evidently the **obedience** to God of the twice as many **good** ones, on the other hand, motivated by their **love** of Him, to mostly only **manifest** for our **protection** and **service** (e.g. [Mat 18:10](#); [Psa 91:11](#); [Mat 4:6](#); [Luk 4:11](#)), or when otherwise, and at least initially, **entertained** by us **unawares** ([Heb 13:2](#)).

Moving to another kind—and from the largest to the smallest in size—there are the natural ones, who are no longer really around anymore either, but they should make a come back in The Millennium, because whether *man*, *animal* or *plant*, they generally grew larger because they were better-shielded from the damaging effects of *cosmic radiation* under a *water canopy* that also naturally produced a 'growth-enhancing' *hyperbaric*, *high oxygen*—and *high carbon dioxide* for *plants*—*atmosphere*, but, with these advantages lost with The Flood, they gradually began to 'shrink', evidently corresponding with the Biblically recorded 'shrinking lifespans' of the **patriarchs**, though again, I'm expecting a reversal of both these trends in The Millennium.

The remaining kind—in size, and still around today—are the 'spiritually aberrant' **giants**, the ones I've called '**angel-humans hybrids**', who were surely also originally bigger when more 'atmospherically protected' and 'enhanced' before The Flood, though after it they too began to 'shrink', but nonetheless continuing to be—relative to entirely 'natural humans'—**giants**, since they were also originally spawned by **the angels that sinned**, who **God spared not...but cast them down to hell** (*Tartarus* [G5020](#)), because they had passed on their 'bad-angel-genes' to humanity when they mated with **the daughters of men** [Gen 6:4](#), these first human mothers likely most often dying in childbirth by 'giving birth' to enormous 'half-angel/half human' offspring, these offspring 'naturally' growing significantly larger than the 'natural human' **giants** did, and their lineage continuing—though at one point evidently narrowing to just Ham's wife—to produce offspring to this day, and that is, offspring that still tend to grow larger than 'normal', though decreasingly so, and evidently corresponding with the decreasing percentages of the 'bad angel genes' still involved. And yeah, read these last few paragraph as many times as necessary, and over time as necessary, until your **understanding** of all this finally fully 'dawns', because you're not really ready to go on until it does.

And you should now also **understand** that, except for Ham's wife, the Pre-Flood-

born, 'half-breed', '**angel-humans**', and their descendants, apparently lost their **bodies**, or their 'human component', because of The Flood, making them 'bodiless' **demons**, some less and some **more wicked**, evidently depending on how **powerful** their presently *Tartarus*-imprisoned **angel** ancestor was, and also depending on the percentage of 'bad angel' *DNA* that was passed on to them, these being the 'entities' that since The Flood are found inside people, and that is, people known to be **possessed with devils**, the kind of **devil** that Jesus called an **unclean spirit**, which is also the kind He is famous for **casting out**.

And I mean you should now **understand** why there are such 'entities' that, because they lost their 'human component' in The Flood, are 'bodiless' **spirits** who prefer to enter, and to some extent commandeer, human **bodies**, including the kind that **taketh to him seven other spirits** into one person, as well as a **legion** of such **devils** in some cases, who if they are **cast out** by God's **power**, unlike **angels** they commonly only leave a **body** 'kicking and screaming', preferring to live in animals, even **swine**, rather than the alternative of living outside a **body**, which to them, according to Jesus, feels like being someone who...

...walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none
[Mat 12:43-45](#); [Luk 11:24-27](#); (see also [Mat 8:28-34](#) and [Mar 5:1-20](#)).

Understand? If not, again, review theses last several paragraphs—and everything up to this point—as necessary, until you do. I mean you should now **understand** the difference between **natural** and '**supernatural**' **giants**, both before and after The Flood, and why there are now 'bodiless' **devils** (modern translation: "demons") in the World since The Flood.

And you should also **understand** that it's because of **angel** and '**angel-human hybrid**' **giants** that the Theory of Organic Evolution is no where near dead. Instead, as we should expect, it's on the verge of a 'renaissance', this being a renaissance where *materialism* and *random accident* finally 'take a backseat' to *special creation* and *intelligent design*, except the identity of this 'creator' and the means of this 'design' come from that same **liar** who is **the father of it**. What am I talking about? I'm talking about the **lies** of imposter **angels** who pretend to be 'evolved gods', who claim to have 'seeded' and/or 'created' us, this being part of Satan's newest game plan, a plan he could not have gotten away with in **other ages**, which I hope to give continuing attention to, and especially in the last section.

But don't be confused. How can something with so much 'testimony' and 'evidence' that it is real, not be real? You have to **understand** it's just a masquerade, and a con made palpably 'real' by **lying wonders**, and that is, 'real' to all your senses, but not to 'good sense', because these 'aliens' and/or 'gods' at least imply that they are the products of millions to billions of years of *evolution*, and by this alone we can be sure that they are **liars** and **deceivers**, and that they are really just out to 'flush us all down to **hell**', and doom us all to be **tormented** in **the lake of fire, for ever and ever**. And yes, again, it supports that old, old adage: 'misery loves company'.

And we **know** that this con, **manifested** as 'real' by **lying wonders**, climaxes with the help of the **false prophet**, who,

...deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do [Rev 13:14](#),

and by which Satan finally, generally speaking, **deceiveth** most **the whole world**. So we are talking about real miracles, and awesome ‘manifestations’ of tangibly ‘real’ things and beings, but ones that lead you to believe in **lies** instead of the **true** nature of God’s Creation, and ones that ultimately, by the midpoint of The Great Tribulation, lead **the whole world** to believe that they are the ‘real work’ of ‘highly evolved races’ and ‘highly ascended gods’, especially when they all finally bow down to Satan and the Antichrist, this being the climax of **vain deceit**, or in other words, ‘the sting’ of this ‘long game con’. Or as the Apostle Paul puts it,

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ [Col 2:8](#)

And yes, again, I mean that there are no such ‘evolved beings’. The Earth was created less than 6,000 years ago. So though they appear real in every respect, they are only Satan’s **angels** who **manifest** themselves in ways that **deceive** the **lost**—and even many Christians—into playing their lying, cheating, and soul-damning games.

And what are the phony but **eternal** ‘stakes’ of this game, or in other words, what is the **life** and **death** ‘bait and switch’? It is that you too—like the ‘evolved aliens’ and ‘ascended gods’ that pretend to either exploit or assist us—are inevitably also evolving toward being a ‘god’. Yes, it’s the ‘revival’ of the original **lie**,

Ye shall be as gods [Gen 3:5](#),

along with the ‘fading away’ of the ‘interim’ **lie**, where mankind finally gives up primarily **worshipping** the Creation, and instead turns directly to Satan and the Antichrist, and also to **worshipping** themselves as ‘evolving gods’. And **proving** this is a focus of this **study**.

But it’s true. Satan’s **angels** are physically ‘masquerading’ as such ‘technologically higher-evolved’ and ‘spiritually higher-ascended’ entities as part of their ‘long con’ to keep **the whole world** believing **evolution** is real, and believe that, sooner or later, each of us too—if not ‘purged’ in a ‘mass abduction’—will, one way or another, also become **gods**. And Satan is playing this game to win. And for the most part he will win, that is, he’ll win the numbers game.

Or what else did Jesus mean when he said, **few there be that find it, it being life and salvation**? And what else do we **learn** from His **revelation**, where John is given to write, **Satan...deceiveth the whole world**? Surely this means that this deception, which climaxes at the midpoint of The Great Tribulation, kills and dooms a **broad...many** of **the inhabitants of the earth**, and that only a **narrow...few** will **escape the damnation of hell**, my guess being that this 7-year period begins with nearly many people alive on Earth than have altogether died up to that point. And yes, these questions should now be rhetorical (see [RGT, SECTION 4](#)), though I hope to make this even clearer as we go too.

And yes, in the same way that these **liars**—**Satan...and his angels**—also try to mislead us about the ‘afterlife’ by masquerading as various kinds of ‘ghosts’, or ‘toying’ with us in “near death experiences” (NDE’s—again, listen to *C2CAM*, etc.). However we should now not only **know** that there has not been near enough time since **creation** for the popular Theory of Evolution, but we should now also realize that after the **body** becomes irresuscitable, and **the spirit** it contained is ‘delivered’ to **heaven, hell** or **Abraham’s bosom**, there is not a ‘ghost of a chance’ of anyone escaping from there to come back to the surface, (except by

'Lazarus-like' **miracles**), and likely little chance that anyone has the option after they die of loitering around on Earth very long, and that is, before being 'escorted up' or 'down'. And no one needs to 'hang around' anyway, because Satan's **angels** are evidently 'staging' such 'masquerades', including 'long-term hauntings', etc., quite convincingly, and do so quite diabolically, and that is, damningly. (Uh-huh, listen to *C2CAM*, etc.)

So stop falling for **lying wonders**, be they 'alien' or 'paranormal' or 'out of body', and instead practice **casting down** such **imaginings** already! Because the only sure way anyone is getting out of **hell** is on a visit to a certain **great white throne**, on their way to a permanent 'poaching' in **the lake of fire**. And the only sure way they're getting out of **Abraham's bosom** is by rapture, and to get out of the **paradise in the third heaven** you evidently must become **immortal**, but to get out of **heaven** altogether it also takes, in one case, plenty of **white horses** for **riding**, in another a rapture, and in yet another a **ride** in New Jerusalem down to New Earth.

And since God is presently so 'tight-lipped' about what's going on in Heaven, and evidently about what's going on inside the Earth too, 'irresuscitable escapees' from the **paradise** of either **the third heaven** or **Abraham's bosom** must be very, very few—'irresuscitable escapees' from **hell** maybe being non-existent—though again, after becoming '**immortals**' they will at some point escape **heaven**, but this won't happen until 7 years after The Rapture or a millennium later.

And by-the-way, if Samuel's 'postmortem visit' to King Saul was really an exception to such rules, and not just another 'con', it's only safe to **believe** that it's one of the extremely rare exceptions, if not the only one, meaning I'm assuming that God otherwise never allows the escape of 'irresuscitable' **spirits** from **Abraham's Bosom** either, an exception being when Jesus **led captivity captive** to **paradise**, and neither is there opportunity for escape for those presently in **captivity** down there, until a certain Mid-Tribulation **resurrection** of Jews to Israel.

But there's another way to look at Samuel's 'postmortem visit' to King Saul. I mean we **know** God did not send everyone in the 'prejudgment period'—who he expected to eventually **save** by Jesus—to **Abraham's Bosom**. And I mean maybe like Enoch, God also took Samuel straight to Heaven too. And we know of at least 2 others who died but apparently didn't enter the Earth (at least yet), because they were seen **talking** with a **transfigured** Jesus on Earth shortly before His crucifixion. So I must acknowledge that with God there are sometimes exceptions to His general rules, but maybe not in the case of those in **hell**, and any 'evidence' of such 'escapes' must really be just more of Satan's 'masquerades' and 'propaganda'.

And to be clear, I must **believe**, based on the totality of scriptural evidence I've considered, that exceptions of 'escape' of **spirits** from inner-earth or heavenly **captivity** indeed happen, including returns to resurrected or just resuscitated bodies, and whether it be from **the third heaven** or **Abraham's Bosom** or **hell**, but that such cases must be at most very few, especially compared to the number of so-called 'ghost sightings' or other 'paranormal activity', the vast majority of such conspiracies just 'propaganda' by **lying wonders**, and that is, 'performances' by Satan's 'masquerading henchmen', whose 'presentations' are only meant to **deceive**.

And of course I mean that in cases where a **spirit** has left a **body** and shortly thereafter has opportunity to return to that same living body—I'm taking about cases where people are medically resuscitated or miraculously **raised from the dead**—then such 'short trips' and 'returns' must be possible and occasionally occur. But we also **know** that when it comes to **the third heaven**, the **unspeakable words**

that anyone might speak of what they have heard or seen on such trips would be, according to Paul, **not lawful for a man to utter**. And by this we can assume that God has a pretty 'tight reign' on at least **heaven**, and I'm guessing on the Inner Earth too, at least for the time being. And He likely shows very little of such things to those He knows will not be staying, or evidently just 'wipes their memory' of the **'unutterable parts'** of their visits.

And here's the 'wake-up' I should reemphasize: all testimony of 'Heaven', however wonderful or encouraging, is suspect, because we must also deduce—as I have when I confirm that testimonies actually contradict **scripture**—that Satan's **lying wonders** are not limited to **deceiving** living mortals, but also may **deceive** the 'bodiless' **spirits** of mortals too, and I mean that 'masquerades' to **deceive** such **spirits** sometimes happen in *near death experiences*, which include **lying** 'trips' to all the 'pre-judgment' places of **captivity**.

And yes, it is my testimony that Satan **deceiveth** some who are *resuscitated* and return, who think that while they were gone they were in Heaven or Hell or Abraham's Bosom, but really were being in some way **deceived**, and thereby become dupes who in turn give unwitting false testimony for Satan, all because of these elaborately **manifested** 'charades'.

And yes, we **know** the Apostle Paul **'knew a man'** that is an exception to this, but again, this must be the much more rare exception, there being so **many** more who are **lost** when they **die**, and go to **hell**, and so **few** who are **saved** when they **die**, and go to **heaven**. And how do you convince those whose testimony contradicts **scripture**—and that is, if they don't **know** it and won't **hear** it—that their 'out of body' experience was a 'con' to mislead them to 'believe' **lies**? And yes, Satan is doing this, and worse.

But in the following sections you should also become more fully aware that this present 'lying game'—that **Ye shall be** [eventually, through *evolution*,] **as gods**—is a major change from the one that was played in Post-Flood up to Modern Times, that game being no less 'real' too, but relying less on **lying wonders** 'performed' by 'satanic angel manifestations', and not as much on 'lying-wonder-assisted propaganda' either, but primarily on 'stealing the credit' for God's awesome **great judgments**, all to trick mankind into **worshipping** the Creation instead of The Creator. This we will **prove** too in the following sections. So enough of evolutionary fantasy. Time to 'get real', or in other words, 'old game on'.

But before we go on to the next section, there is one more point of focus I want to reemphasize about *modern science* in general. Although it's a 'peripheral interpretation' of a verse from the Prophet Isaiah, I believe it's appropriate to relate it to the leading practitioners of The Theory of Evolution and its supporters, and that is, when the prophet says,

A grievous vision is declared unto me; the treacherous dealer [in evolutionary science] **dealeth treacherously, and the spoiler** [of those that oppose evolutionary science] **spoleth** [Isa 21:2](#) (see also [Isa 24:16](#)).

And I mean that the **vain deceit** of Theory of Evolution does not just **spoil** and **pervert** all of 'science', it has distorted popular perceptions of reality, teaching instead billions of years of imaginary fantasy. Of course we can't just blame the 'theory'. Such perversion is really primarily due to the human...

...heart [which] **is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked...**
[Jer 17:9](#).

But **we** who **are perfect** must **continue** with the **understanding** that this **deceit** and **wickedness** has contaminated and corrupted 'science' in general, and to a lesser but significant extent also 'creation science', as it has significant faults of its own, including its own, however lesser—or are they worse?!—**treacherous dealers**. And we must recognize that this problem has become so fanciful as to make 'science' increasingly worthless, and increasingly unworthy of our time, except for exposing increasingly **treacherous dealers** and **spoilers** of **truth** in any and every way possible.

In other words, **things** are only getting **worse and worse**, where **modern science**, not to mention **modern history**, as well as most other 'disciplines', are now so polluted with **lies** that they have become mostly useless and/or counterproductive for understanding reality, and ultimately a waste of our time to continue to expose them as such, at least beyond what we've already done in this **study**. And I mean I think its now best, as much as possible, to simply start practicing **casting down** such '**mis-exalted**' **imagination**s, and abandon such increasingly 'fruitless digging-through-trash', but more than that, abandon this distraction from what we should really be focusing on, which would be to focus as little as we can—though unfortunately in too many cases it will be unavoidable—on **evil** or **wickedness**, and as much as we can on God's **goodness, faithfulness** and **love**, on the **greatness** of His **excellency**, and on the **marvellous, wondrous** and **terrible** nature of His **great judgments**. Game for that?

To better accomplish this, and for the rest of this **study**, we will attempt—as much as it is possible—to avoid 21st and even most of 20th Century **modern science**. And this is not only to minimize the amount of trash we will have to dig through, but also because information from before this modern era is more than sufficient to introduce you to who God really is, but more to the point, to introduce you to what He is capable of, and I'm talking about His ability to show us overwhelmingly amazing details of what He has already done, and by this perspective show us how unimaginably awesome He is and will be, and how He does all this barely within our growing ability to **understand** His **great works**. And I mean He really does **meet** us wherever we are, thereby elevating us **higher** and **higher**, making it like getting to **meet** Him anew every step **higher** we take.

So we're going to go back in time over half a century, to the work of a researcher who gathered an impressive amount of scientific, historic, and supposedly mythological information, and resift through it all, most of it predating the 20th Century. And when were through with all this **work**, we'll be ready to finish this **study** with a greatly elevated ability to see what God plans to **accomplish** in The Last Day or so of His Creation, and it may reveal a further '**corrected and improved**' timeline of The Ages of Creation, I mean, especially concerning the soon coming end of The 6th Day.

So do you think you're really ready to **meet thy God**—again? I can only **hope** so. But I guess I just told you that we never really will finish **meeting** Him. And I won't have finished with my '**ever-expandable**' introduction of Him until you finish the next study, God willing I may write it, and God willing you are **able** to 'travel this road' with me. But, **first....things** first.

There was no hiding The Flood from mankind before the birth of Christ. This is because the Planets, those mindbogglingly awesome **instruments** of God's **great judgments**, kept returning to Earth often enough, each time with cataclysmic effects, and they kept having universally observable interactions among themselves in the Solar System too, making all of these events both stinging and enduring

reminders of the past, but also harbingers of the future, where in the process of time Satan used each of the Planets as representations of **gods**. And to some degree these **gods** were similar in the various religions around the globe, because the world's experience with each of them was more or less shared, not to mention 'scripted' by a single diabolical **liar**. In fact, during Jesus' 1st Coming, it had been only about 700 years since the 90 year period of 7 earthshaking, close 'passings' of Mars. And it had been about the same amount of time from then back to the 2, half-century-separated, World-devastating, close passings of Venus, making both these '**god-planets**' prominent and unforgettable, even to this day. And I mean that before Jesus 1st Coming, Satan's game was to 'spin' these awesome displays of God's **wrath** and **judgment** on **the wicked**—which included His **protection** of and **provision** for **his people**—and thereby **steal** the credit for himself, and use it to coerce the World into **worshipping** him in the many ways inspired by these 'planetary visitations' and/or 'solar system interactions', all of them witnessed by **the whole world**.

And I mean that **worship** of The Creation, instead of The Creator—evidently beginning even before The Flood, the first focus being on Saturn as we will see, especially in **SECTION 7**—experienced a revival with the **worship** of the Planet Mercury following the Flood, as 'he' and Saturn played a commonly observed role—by **eight** people—in bringing down the *water canopy*, etc., Mercury being the name given to 'him' by to the Romans, Hermes by the Greeks, etc., but 'he' was likely originally considered a 'son' of Saturn, and only later as a 'son' of the 'thunderbolt-throwing' **god** Jupiter, or Zeus, etc., Jupiter being the new king **god** (on Olympus, for example) who, at the time of The Flood, and evidently with the help of Mercury and other (Olympian) **gods** (read, *planets*, along with their *moons*, including aspects of Earth and its Moon, etc.), defeated 'his father', the former king **god** (of the Titans), Saturn, or Cronus, etc., and put 'him' in "chains", and Jupiter, et al., also defeated and imprisoned (in *Tartarus*, for example) all Saturn's 'sons' (the Titans, 'they' being other *planets*, *moons* and/or aspects of Earth, etc.), who were evidently part of the 'rebellion' when Saturn had earlier killed 'his father', Uranus, this evidently when he was somehow 'knocked on his side', and/or when his apparently protruding 'genitals' were 'castrated'—a *volcanic bomb's* 'dislocated' *tail?*—which is an event also associated with the 'birth' of Aphrodite, who later is instead seen by some as Athena, or Venus, a later *volcanic bomb* 'birth' from Jupiter likely to blame. Get all that? Continue and you eventually will, but not likely your first time through this and the next few paragraphs.

Anyway, worship of Creation became even more prevalent after The Exodus, and after the 2, half-century-apart, 'passings' of Venus, which was also seen by some as simply Jupiter's work, or by others as Aphrodite, Athena, or Venus' work—and that is, by some as Venus or the 're-fathered' 2nd Aphrodite when 'she' was 'born' out of Jupiter something like 1st Aphrodite had earlier been out of Uranus, or instead by others as Athena when 'she' appeared to 'escape out of Jupiter's head', 'he' having earlier 'eaten her' along with some other **gods**, and being understandably afraid 'they' would depose him like 'he' did 'his father', Saturn, and like Saturn did 'his father' Uranus. Of course this is all just Satan's diabolical, 'fictional script'.

And by 'eaten' I mean that evidently sometime before 'she'—and evidently other **gods**—were in one way or another 'expelled' from Jupiter—Mars possibly included—apparently these supposed 'same' **gods**, but really different *objects* in our Solar System, were 'seen'—evidently with the help of the *water lens*—crashing into Jupiter, as some had evidently done before into both Saturn and Uranus too.

And apparently Aphrodite, Athena, or Venus cannot be just called the 'goddesses of love', but also of 'jealousy', who surely inspired the old adage, 'hell hath no fury

like a woman scorned', this being the primary reason why one of these '**planet-goddesses**' was considered responsible —twice over—for the devastation of the entire Earth. And the 'angry', 'vengeful', 'fighting-mad', 'swallowed and expelled', 'warrior goddess', who is thought to have 'fought her way out of Jupiter's head' with 'her' famous 'sword'—in the process giving 'him' the 'worst headache ever'—'she' being also famous for her confrontations with Mars and 'his' famous 'sword', and otherwise known as Athena, or Pallas Athena, as well as **Ashtoreth, Ashtaroth, Ashteroth, the queen of heaven**, or **Diana**, etc. in the KJV, was used by Satan to institutionalize human sacrifice in religions around the World, supposedly to appease 'her wrath', 'she' being considered 'angry' enough with Earth's mortals to have literally nearly annihilated Earth's population twice, with this misguided, brutal practice of offering human sacrifices to appease 'her' wrath only fairly recently nearly finally dying out, but still practiced in remote places, not to mention by Satanist, to this day.

But Satan was finally forced to slowly 'back pedal away' from the universal prominence that Venus, etc., gave him, and that is, after the 7 close 'passings' of Mars in the late 8th and early 7th centuries BC, this during the reigns of Uzziah, Ahaz and Hezekiah, Kings of Judah, because it initiated a new **worship** of war and spoil—from the Romans to Ghengis Khan, and from the Vikings to the Apache and Aztecs—that ultimately superceded, but never completely eliminated, Venus' devotees. And this 'dominating change' was due to the nature of the Planet Mars, or to its lesser but still severely and universally 'unsettling effects' on the Earth, including when 'he' wiped out by suffocation, and that is, by delivering a suffocating, 'gravitationally-attracted' **blast** of its atmosphere to Earth, which killed the entire 185,000-strong Assyrian army of King Sennacherib during his attempt to besiege King Hezekiah's City of Jerusalem in about 687 BC, this being during 'his' last 'visit'.

So worship of Venus and Mars, including by human sacrifice and war, continues to this day. And since it originated so very long ago, it testifies of the world-shaking awesomeness of these 'visits'. And the **worship** of Mercury endures to this day too, as well as Saturn **worship**. For example, I recently learned that the two most significant **gods** of the Apache were "the Sun/fire" or "Killer-Of-Enemies/Monster Slayer" and the "Water/Moon/thunder" or "Child-Of-The-Water/Born For Water", the later said to have destroyed a number of creatures which were harmful to humankind (*dinosaurs?*), but both of whom we will get to know much better in the next sections.

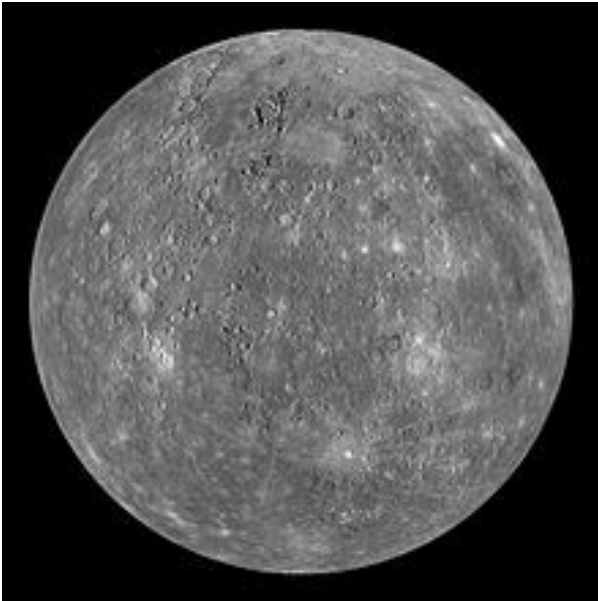
And of course before The Flood everyone knew Adam, and all the other Pre-Flood **patriarchs**, and it would seem then that no one could reasonable deny the existence of God, except that the activities of the **angels** who 'interbred' with women—who ended up in *Tartarus* for it—and are likely chiefly responsible for the **only evil continually** activities promoted by their offspring, and which evidently made a 'fast track' for Satan's original **lie** that everyone could be **as gods**—ultimately made an unsalvageable and irreparably destructive mess of things, which, for our sakes, had to be almost entirely 'washed away'.

But after The Flood, with both Mercury and Saturn making memorable performances, and a lot of the past 'washed clean away', and being limited to what was passed on by **eight souls**, Satan, with an avenue available through the wife of Ham, became committed to a changed game plan. From then on, and through her descendants, he mostly succeeded in tricking the World into **worshipping** him through misrepresentations of the awesome **judgments** of God. However when necessary, at various points along the way, and for our sakes, God **made a shew** of Satan **openly, triumphing over** [the **spoiled principalities**

and powers] in it each time, especially and climactically with Jesus Himself, Who became another reason why Satan was forced to change his game plan yet again. But Satan's goal remains the same—to steal the **worship** of the World from God. With some he will be able to continue to do so through the **worship** of **creation**. But now, more than ever before, and different than before, and in the 2½ Days following The Flood, especially considering the universally high level of **ignorance** nowadays of who God really is, Satan expects to accomplish this 'theft of worship' mostly through his 'original' brand of **idolatry**—self-idolatry, **deceiving** people to 'believe', as their **flesh 'naturally'** wants to, that they can 'evolve' toward 'godhood' too, ever toward an 'eternal ascendancy' that is 'sold' to them as 'worthy of worship', starting with self-worship. Can you say "namaste" (pronounce: nuhm-uh-stey)? (Meaning: "the divine in me bows to the divine in you".)

But we'll need to build an **understanding** of all this starting with what happened in the transition from the Pre-Flood to the Post-Flood World, which is the **work** that begins in the next section. And here we go.

SECTION 5 The Sun, Moon and Stars in Science, Myth and Scripture



Let's start with one of the earlier existing of the smaller **wandering stars** in our **Solar System** (not-to-scale picture of its *planets*, etc., p.412), and that is, **Mercury** (photos, p.412)—yes, evidently not created in Creation Week along with the 'father' *gas giants*, but evidently an early 'son'—or 'daughter'—of these 'fathers' as you should eventually see. Mercury is mostly *gray*, and therefore classifiable as a *blue planet*. And this is a good place to start because this *planet* was also the first to be used by God directly to **greatly** change things on Earth. Or as the psalmist and I **interpret** this change,

Who [*in the beginning*, and of course, rhetorically

speaking,] **laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever** [?]. [And on **the second day**] **Thou coveredst it with the deep** [pulling

up **the waters** and spreading **them** above the sky] **as**

with a garment [to stay there **for ever**]: **the waters**

stood above the mountains [again, not submerging

them but above them in the sky]. [But after The Fall, to

secure future opportunity for redemption...] **At thy**

rebuke they [**the waters**] **fled; at the voice of thy**

thunder they hasted away [when an *electromagnetic*

exchange between Earth and Mercury helped drain

them from the sky through the *magnetic poles*.] **They**

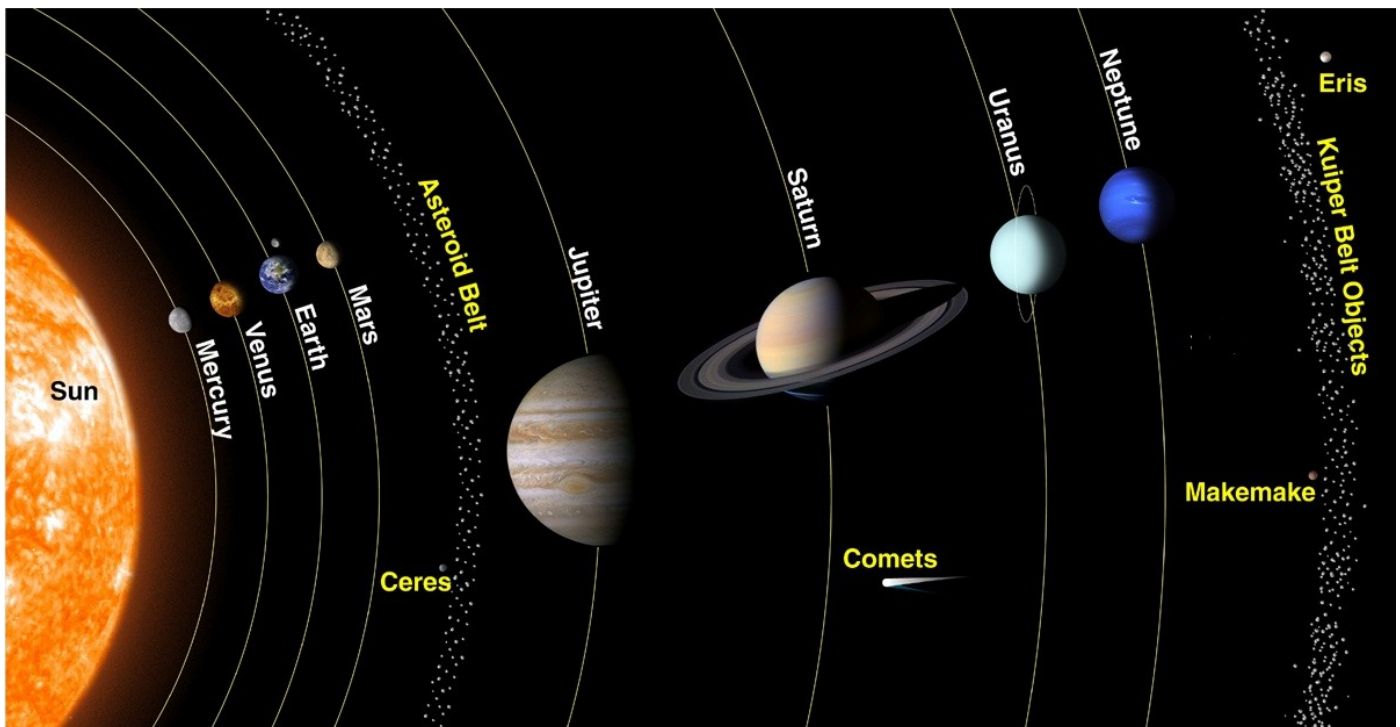
[**the waters**] **go up by the mountains** [submerging them]; [and as The Flood subsided] **they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them. Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; that they turn not again to** [entirely] **cover the earth** [Psa 104:5-9](#).

Have you ever imagined that the present perspective of the sky, of the Sun, Moon, planets, and stars, has little to do with what inspired ancient civilizations to **worship** them as **gods**? You'd be on the right track. And one of the foremost of

these **gods** was Mercury. See the Messenger satellite pictures of it on [p.412](#). The one artificially colored is to reveal Mercury's topography, where the purple is the lowest altitude, then dark blue, then light blue, green being higher, yellow still higher, and red the highest. And all this 'scarring' is not just *volcanic action* (multi-colored *volcanic craters* and *flows*), but also due to lots of *external bombardment* (single to multicolored *impact craters*), and *gravitational-volcanic* 'stretch marks' (including the red and yellow *mountain ranges*). Kind of looks like the Moon, huh? But it has not been exalted to this day because it now darts so quickly—almost imperceptibly—across and around the Sun every 88 days.



No, this more recent 'behavior' has only caused it to lose our attention. Its biggest 'claim to fame' was when it accosted the Earth, causing The Flood of Noah, but it also has the reputation of being the "messenger of the gods", since it apparently originated from—or because of



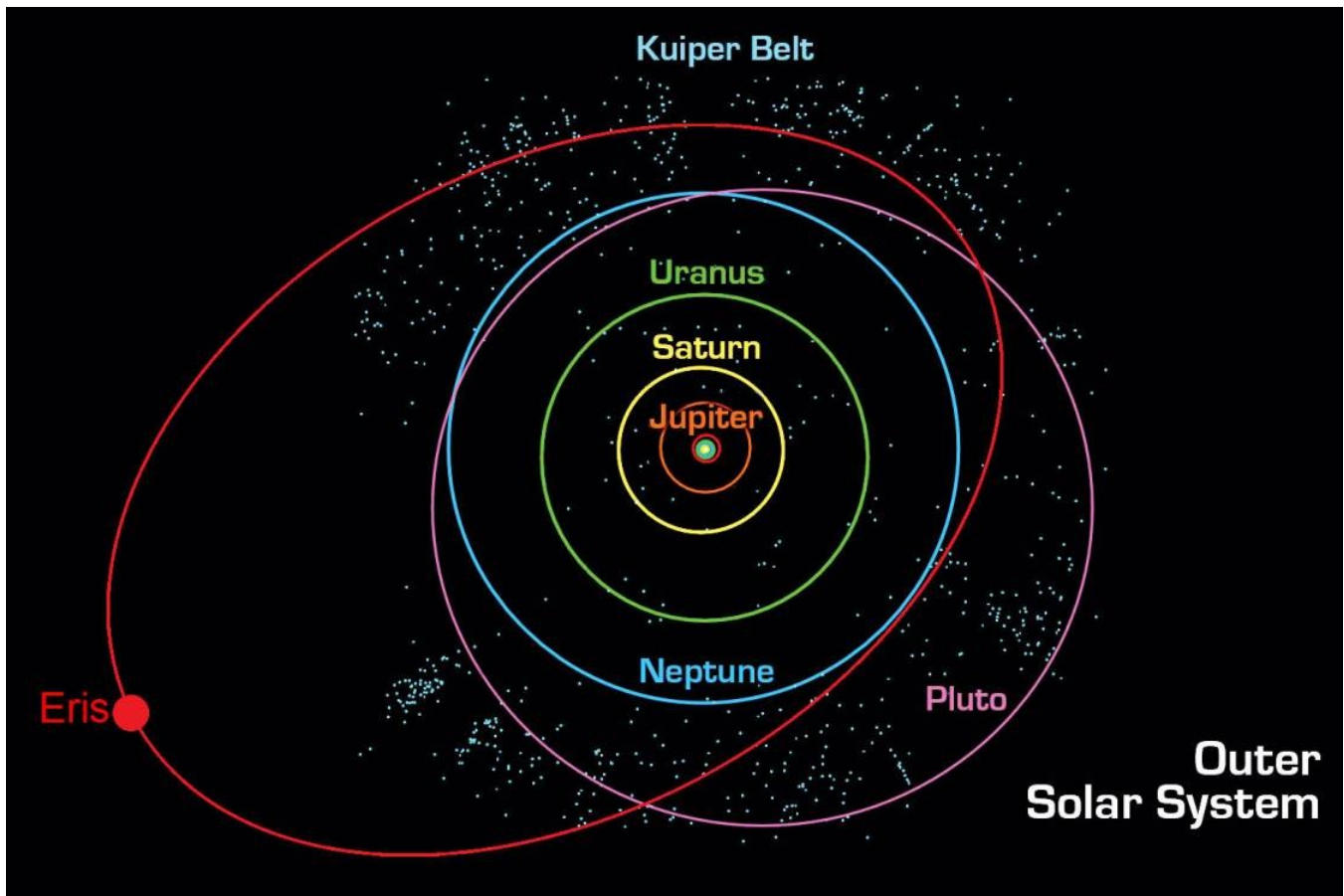
—one of the *gas giants*. The Greeks, for example, considered 'him' a son of Zeus (Jupiter to the Romans), though I'm thinking, by 'his' appearance and composition, and reputation, that 'he' may have really originated from—and because of—one of the farthest-out *blue gas giants*, and therefore 'visited his way'—or in some cases just *aligned* with 'his patriarchal neighbors' and others—from Earth's perspective —'on his way', starting from the deepest regions of our Solar System all the way to where he now resides closest to the Sun. That's 'his' reputation anyway.

But you should already know that, generally and metaphorically speaking, we're talking about a Solar-System-sized, 4-dimensional 'billiards game' played with more or less 'breakable', planet-sized, 'red' and 'blue', *magnetized* 'balls'. And you should know that the *momentum* and *magnetization* of these 'balls' sometimes helps to produce 'soft' or *elastic collisions*, which saves them from the 'breakage' involved in otherwise 'hard' or *inelastic collisions*, all depending on their *vectors*—including *mass*, *linear momentum* (*velocity*), *angular momentum* (*spin*) and *direction*—all given to them by God, and all to **accomplish** His specific and exact **purpose** for them. And *inelastic collisions*, or ones that are 'hard' and often

'destructive', are not uncommon in our Solar System, the *asteroid belts* (2 of them depicted in a [diagram of our Solar System on p.413](#)) apparently

being the evidence of some of the more 'major' ones, while the multitude of *impact craters* we're seeing on most all of our Solar System's *objects* whose surface is viewable is evidence of the pervasiveness of the more minor ones. However God's **great judgments**, amazingly enough, and more like 'billiards', never directly involve 'majorly destructive collisions', but rather only—and I mean besides the accompanying **hail** and/or **brimstone**, etc.—mostly 'non-damaging', 'soft' or *elastic, gravitational-magnetic field collisions*. But I only mean relatively 'non-damaging', and that is, only if you don't have the ability to examine these 'balls' more closely afterwards with the aid of a *telescope*, or if you don't happen to live on one of them. The point is that certain 'balls' in this 'bigger game', against unimaginably fantastic odds, always survive their 'collisions', that is, when they are involved in God's **great judgments**, especially when one of them is Earth. Yet there have evidently been a few *planetary collisions*, and again, there is 'solid evidence' that at least 6 *planets*—or 6 *objects* depending on how you classify them— have been 'demolished', leaving behind as wreckage 3 major *asteroid belts* and a *cloud*, where evidently a lot of this debris continues to *orbit* in the path where the 'collisions' took place. But there is evidence too, from ancient Greek literature, etc., that 2 'bona fide' *planets* survived a couple of extremely close 'visits' to each other—close enough to exchange *atmosphere*—neither of which was Earth, which we'll get to in the later sections.

And we're also going to speculate, or 'theorize', that the so-called "families" of **comets**—including what we might call the more 'free wheeling', 'unbelted' *asteroids*—that orbit closer to the **Sun**, are mostly the result of the ongoing *orbital decay* of *objects* from the Oort Cloud, (a 'spherical asteroid belt'), and from the outer, Trans-Neptunian *belts*, and inner, Main **Asteroid Belt**. More specifically, apparently Oort Cloud Objects, (*OCO's*, e.g., **Eris**), that travel mostly unseen outside the **Kuiper Belt**, and **Kuiper Belt Objects**, (*KBO's*, e.g., **Pluto**, Haumea and **Makemake**), and Scattered Disk Objects (*SDO's*), traveling more off-center and off-the-ecliptic-plane in a *belt* outside Neptune, occasionally get 'bumped' out of their *orbits* and 'migrate' toward the Sun, and I mean 'bumped' mostly by the *gravitational perturbations* from the *gas giants* (Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune), and so move from the arena of Trans-Neptunian Objects (*TNO's*), that are more in Neptune's influence, to becoming Centaurs or Jupiter Family Comets (JFC's) and more in Jupiter's influence. Or along their way they may be *captured* as one of the many dozens of *moons* of the *gas giants*. But if these *comets* and *asteroid*—remember the difference is sometimes indistinguishable, or certainly debatable—aren't *captured* and/or crash into one of these *giants*, they are finally, along with occasional Main Belt Asteroids, (e.g.,



Ceres), *captured* and/or crash into the Sun like Kreutz Sungrazers. Getting the picture? The ones shown on [p.413-14](#) might be of additional help, (Scattered Disc not shown in either chart.)

And to further speculate about the 3 largest, visible 'orbiting debris fields' that we call *asteroid belts*, not to mention the still invisible Oort Cloud, we could reasonably assume that one or more of the 'collisions' that created these belts—and/or this 'cloud'—was involved, one way or another, in 'sending' and/or 'directing' Mercury 'on his way', not to mention with how Venus was 'volcanically extracted'

out of Jupiter, and maybe Mars too, and possibly also with however Uranus got 'rolled over on it's side', but certainly with why so many *moons*, and even a couple *planets*, are 'spinning', and/or sometimes even *orbiting, retrograde*, and that is, in the opposite direction as the Sun and most of the other *objects* in the Solar System.

Yes, this is an ongoing 'demolition derby' on a '4-dimensional billiards table'. In fact it's safe to assume that all the debris in our, or that is, God's Solar System, and I'm talking about everything besides the Sun, the Gas Giants, the Earth and our Moon—and plainly there's a lot of wreckage out there—is the result, and the abundant evidence of God sending His **judgments** on Earth using the interactions of the Planets, that is, using the Gas Giants for the heavy lifting, and to help make smaller 'balls', including the near- and smaller-than-Earth-sized ones as the 'messengers', all 'bumped' and/or 'broken to pieces' in a myriad of ways along their way.

And talking about 'multi-banked shots'. Again, think in terms of a Solar-System-sized 'billiards table', with 1000's of 'many-sized', usually *magnetized*, 'red' and 'blue', 'breakable balls', all with a wide variety of *densities*, and all these being big enough to be, one way or another, 'in play', including 'sphere-itized'—or not—'pieces of balls', 'broken out' of 'larger balls' in *collisions* and/or *eruptions*, where they only become 'sphere-itized' when their originally *extracted* and/or *expelled molten mass* is *gravitationally*, and that is, *naturally* formed into a 'sphere'.

And if you're with me up to here, next try to think far beyond your imagination, because only then are you starting to get the picture, and one that unavoidably will **grow forever**. Yeah, this should be one of those 'short circuits' I was talking about last **study**. But this is what we are going to **prove** in this **study**, and it is the beginning of a neverending 'quest', (or maybe I should say 'trek', huh), that begins mostly with deduction by '**discernment**', but to some extent with more direct **proof** too, and that with a lot of help from Dr. Velikovsky.

And remember that from the wreckage of this ongoing 'cosmic demolition derby/billiards game' we can deduce one of the reasons why God **created** the Gas Giants in the first place. Surely they were meant to shield the Earth from what might otherwise be too much bombardment, while they do most of the *local* work to pull in and, when necessary, 'break down' various forms of 'fuel'—including, besides just delivering fresh supplies of the *elements* themselves, also helping in the process of the *recharging*—or just the 'repowering'—of our Solar System's *ball magnets*, as well as 'stirring up' new *thermal energy*—both for themselves and the Sun, but a little for the Earth too, where their evidently most immediately available, and that is, 'importable material source'—and possibly also a supply of *electromagnetic* and *radioactive energy*, etc.—may be from the Oort Cloud, though surely the entire Universe is 'staged' too, and that is, to replenish this source, and the sources after that, with every necessary resource being potentially forever, with perfectly-timed 'staging', always 'on the way'.

And God must have added to such duties for the Gas Giants and company, and that is, beyond helping to 'refuel' the Solar System forever. But what other jobs and priority could this **host of heaven** have? Surely one of their main 'supporting roles' became the 'staging' of both small and **great judgments** on Earth, before which there must have begun an acceleration of the 'staging' of...

...both wonders [including **signs**] **in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath**

[Act 2:19](#), (also [Joel 2:30](#)).

And surely there must have been some ominous **great signs** of the coming cataclysms seen from Earth before the fact, including—from one perspective—the ‘slaying’ of the original ‘king god’, Uranus, by Cronus/Saturn, evidently the son of Uranus—this presumed ‘slaying’ of Uranus by Saturn maybe by some perceived to occur when Uranus was ‘knocked on his side’. But evidently the first of the **great judgments** to begin ‘his staging’ was Mercury, maybe when a collision near Neptune—ultimately chosen to be the ‘god of the seas’ after all—somehow released Mercury, which maybe coincided with the collision that produced the Kuiper Belt, as well as the creation of the Scattered Disc. See again the charts on [p.413-14](#).

And before you object to me personifying Mercury, and the rest of these so-called **gods**, remember from [RGT](#) that Moses, for example, refers to **the earth** with the pronoun **her**, and Isaiah, for example, refers to **the moon** with **her**, and to **the sun** using **his**, (e.g., [Gen 4:11](#) and [Isa 13:10](#)). Venus and Mars are personified by the **prophets** in **scripture** too. But you should also **understand** that Mercury is still famous to this very day not so much because of man’s perspective, or even so much Satan’s, but because of God’s, and that is, because Mercury was first and foremost one of God’s **instruments of death** [Psa 7:13](#), used by Him in order to help...

...bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven... [His intended **purpose** being that] **every thing that is in the earth shall die** [Gen 6:17](#).

But what do I mean by “one of God’s **instruments of death**”? To start with, though the full explanation will require all the rest of this **study**, Mercury, now the smallest *planet*, (after Pluto’s reclassification to a *minor* or *dwarf planet*, or *planetoid*, or just the largest *asteroid* in the Kuiper Belt), is less than a thousand miles wider than the Moon, has settled into the speediest and most *eccentric*—or *elliptical*—*orbit*, and has a *weak magnetic field*, so I’m thinking it was ‘assisted’ by the Moon to do what it did to cause The Flood, including possibly *gravitationally* ‘squeezing out’ and ‘raising up’ a 150-day *tide* of **waters** from within the Earth, and including helping to *induce* that unforgettable ‘**voiced thunder**’—yes ‘**voiced**’—that in actuality was when ‘he’ evidently became the target of a ‘**perfectly measured**’ *electrical discharge* from the Earth, apparently the **perfect** amount of *energy* released from Earth’s *magnetic field* to release **the water** that **stood above the mountains** by **rain**, but more significantly, also by ‘draining’ this *water canopy* through the *magnetic pole windows*, that altogether, and that is, with the help of ‘gravitational squeezing’ and *tidal action*, raised **the waters** on Earth over the mountain tops.

And this required less *water* than you might think, as the Earth apparently had much smaller *mountains* then, the tallest being, at the time, likely newly formed by Mercury. And more evidence by deduction for all this includes the observation that the tallest *mountains* we now have were ‘raised’ with much more ‘pull’ than Mercury had, and that is, by Venus, as we’ll eventually **see**. We will also see that Mercury may not have gotten quite so close as Mars, and/or was generally traveling faster as it passed, and/or maybe Mars just ‘came in hotter’—temperature-wise—during the time of its apparently 7 encounters with Earth. And evidently Mercury’s presently *weak magnetic field* is mostly what’s left of the charge that was predominantly given to it by Earth.

Another reason I think Mercury had the ‘help’ of the Moon is that it looks an awful lot like it. I mean, like the Moon, it’s awfully ‘beat-up’, both inside and out, and that is, with *volcanic* and *impact craters*, as well as being inundated with ‘seas’ of *lava flows*, and further distinguished with ‘volcano-and-impact-pocked’ *mountain*

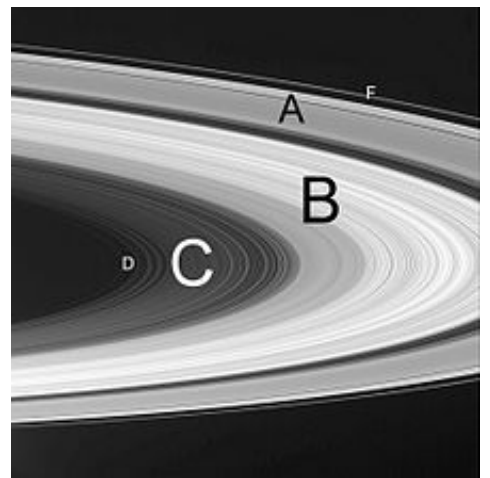
ranges that were likely also ‘quickly lifted’—and ‘pocked’—by the *gravitational interactions* of other *planets*, all this being among the ‘minor hazards’ of all that ‘visiting’ and ‘being visited’ by some of the other ‘**planet-gods**’ in our Solar System’s ‘neighborhood’. And like our ‘blue Moon’, remember it’s classified as a *blue planet*, meaning that despite the evidence suggesting an abundance of *iron* in its interior and all the past *volcanic activity*, its surface remains “iron-poor”, and/or, there is an insufficient amount of *atmospheric* and *liquid water* or *oxygen* necessary to react with the *iron* to produce *rust*.

And you should be beginning to get the idea that God needed little to no ‘**Creation Week abracadabra**’ to ‘pull off’ and ‘spark off’ The Flood—besides when He **shut** the door of **the ark**, that is, and also, maybe, when he spoke through the *electromagnet discharge*—because he surely instead mostly used His **instruments of death** in the forms of the Planet Mercury and the Moon, however awesomely timed, perfectly balanced, controlled and finessed this unimaginably ‘long-shot’ **judgment** that inundated and destroyed the Earth, while simultaneously saving Noah and his family, was. And I mean, again, He apparently used Mercury’s additional *gravitational attraction* to help ‘squeeze’ and ‘pull’ *water* out of the *ground*, and its *weaker* or lack of an *electromagnetic field* to *induce* a *discharge* from the Earth, thereby ‘fauceting’—not all at once dropping, as the Ark couldn’t handle that—the ‘**water in the sky**’ through the *magnetic poles*.

But was all that ‘greenhouse-enclosing’ *water*—so likely not *frozen* as a few have supposed—held up in the sky? Really? Really. How? *Arches* and *domes* are very strong, architecturally speaking. Their ‘staggered-layered’ construction, with bricks, for example, allows them to support incredible weight. I think the *water canopy* was kind of like this, except the center or ‘archlike-domelike peak’ of this structure was a ‘ring’ above the *magnetic equator*, with its two ‘feet’ or *bases* contracting to the *poles*, the bricks, in this case, *water molecules*, each naturally held together in a *tetrahedral configuration* due to the *magnetic attraction* of the *positively charged hydrogen* with the *negatively charged oxygen atoms*—in other words, *water molecules* have a *positive* and *negative pole* too—that not only hold the ‘4-molecule water bricks’ together, but also becomes the ‘mortar’ that holds them all together too. All this is called *cohesion*, and it would have been more than sufficient to hold up this ‘two-footed spherical dome’ formation. And yes, I mean the ‘feet’ of this ‘water-dome’ must have ‘joined’ with Earth’s surface waters at the *poles*, (and again yes, you should eventually see how there must have been *liquid surface water* at both *poles* at that time), allowing the *canopy* to be resupplied with water as necessary with the help of, besides other ‘forces and factors’, *adhesion—magnetic attraction* of different *molecules*, one of the ‘forces and factors’ used by *plants* to raise *water* through their parts, and like how maybe similar ‘forces and factors’ could offer further explanation of how, before The Flood,

...there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground [Gen 2:6](#).

But surely you also know by now that the **understanding** of all this can become much more complicated than this, and unendingly so. Yes, it must, because though our growing **knowledge of God** can **continue, ‘unendingly’**, to take us to **higher** and **higher** perspectives, at the same time we’ll **never** escape our need of ‘**correction, improvement and expansion**’ of our perspectives of Him. Yeah, that’s just who He is, **thank God**.

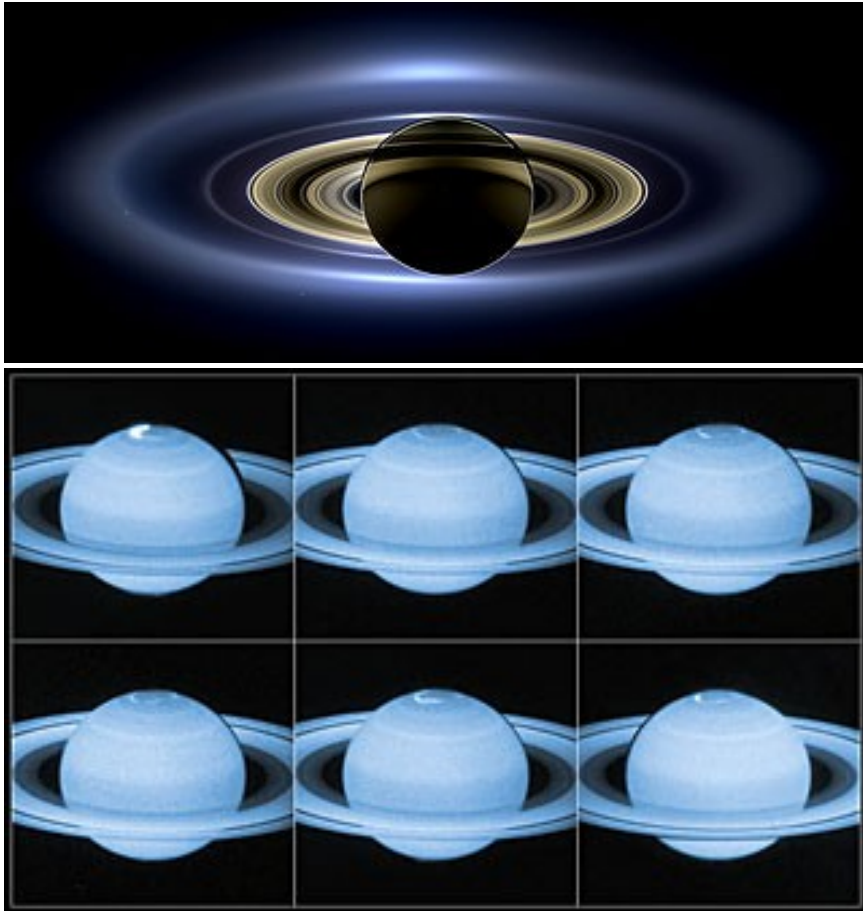


And along these *lines*—couldn't help the pun—in 1980, Voyager 1 made a fly-by of Saturn that revealed **Saturn's rings**, and that one of the narrow outer *rings*, named the **F Ring**, is composed of 3 narrow *rings* that appeared to be 'braided' in a complex structure, but are now known to be 2 *rings* that consist of just 'knobs', or 'kinks and lumps', that give the illusion of 'braiding', with a less bright third *ring* lying inside them. But more to the point here, the dense **main rings** extend from over 4,000 *miles* to almost 50,000 *miles* above Saturn's *magnetic-rotational equator*, Saturn's *diameter* being about 75,000 *miles*, with the diameter of all 'his' *rings* maybe near half a million miles. And the thickness of the denser *main rings* is estimated to vary from as little as about 30 *feet* to over half a *mile*. And by *spectrographic analysis* they are known to be composed of 99.9% pure *water ice*. But this is not a solid construction. It is primarily composed of '*particles*' ranging in size from less than an *inch* to a little over 30 *feet*.

So if Saturn can support 'icebergs' the size of small houses in her sky around her *equator* by 'his' *magnetic field strength*, we can see that the Earth could have offered tremendous center-arch or 'center-ring' support for *liquid water* in 'her' sky too, which in turn, by the *magnetic and structural properties of liquid water*, could have supported a God-designed, 'two-footed spherical water dome'. Can you see it? Some of Saturn's *moons*, by-the-way, cause irregularities in these *rings*, including the *moons* that *orbit* within the *rings*. I mention this because in a little bit we will want to consider such 'forces and factors' on God's *water canopy* too. And did I mention there would be more 'short circuits'?

Also for further contemplation, we know from *data* from the Cassini *space probe* that the *rings* of Saturn possess their own *atmosphere*, independent of the *planet*. The *atmosphere* is composed of *molecular oxygen gas*, O_2 , produced when *ultraviolet light* from the Sun interacts with *water ice* in the *rings*. *Chemical reactions* between *water molecule fragments* and further *ultraviolet stimulation* create and expel, among other things, O_2 . According to analysis of this *atmosphere*, H_2 is also present. But this O_2 and H_2 *atmosphere* is so sparse that if the entire *atmosphere* were somehow compressed flat, it would only be about one *atom* thick.

The *rings* also contain an even smaller amount of *hydroxide*, OH. Like the O₂, this *atmosphere* is produced by the *disintegration* of *water molecules*, though in this case happening by *energetic ions* (*highly reactive positive or negative charged atoms*) which are ejected by Saturn's moon Enceladus that bombard *water molecules*. This *atmosphere*, despite being extremely sparse, was detected from Earth by the Hubble Space Telescope. And it has occurred to more than just me that since this *atmosphere* is being produced, and is still so sparse, then it must be a relatively new process, because with enough time it could not remain sparse. Uh-



huh. Dr. Velikovsky, by-the-way, proposed that Earth somehow came from Saturn, the abundant *water resources* there evidently one factor leading him to this mistake. And remember others mistake that all our water may have been somehow delivered to us from Saturn. But from this evidence we might instead conclude that there was a collision, but also a really 'big splash', where some of the water was caught, then formed and frozen into the Rings of Saturn, and that evidently not very long ago, huh.

Saturn's rings, shown here eclipsing the Sun in an image taken by the Cassini spacecraft in July, 2013, (brightness is enhanced), reveal Earth as a 'pale blue dot' just passed the 8 o'clock position in the *outer ring*.

Also, the now jointly operated NASA-ESA Hubble Space Telescope has captured images of the "flickering" or "dancing" **auroral lights of Saturn**. Taken from Hubble's perspective, these images reveal the "stormy", evidently overall octagonal-shaped, **north pole aurora**, 'illuminating' previously unseen dynamics in the "choreography" of this **auroral glow**, but also suggest further 'forces and factors' would have influenced the 'two feet' of Earth's former 'spherical water-dome' too. Uh-huh, satellite photos, **p.417-18**.

By the way, remember Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune have *rings* too, which were most likely also created by relatively recent *collisions*, where, similarly in their cases, some of the resulting *expulsion* of *gas* and *debris* was caught by their *magnetic fields* so as to naturally identify their *magnetic equators*.

And remember Saturn, similar to Earth, also has a long, 'comet-like' *magnetic tail* blown out by the *solar wind* known as a *magnetotail*, as do Mercury, Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune. Mars and Venus appear to be, understandably enough as we will see, 'all out of charge', at least of enough to exhibit such 'tails'. It is also noteworthy that when *solar flares* reach Saturn, the planet's *magnetotail* collapses

and later reconfigures itself, and it is also an event that is expressed in the ‘dance’ of its *auroras*. But of course more importantly, all these ‘forces and factors’ exhibited by Saturn are noteworthy because they can help us with our growing **understanding** of God’s both past and future **great judgments** on Earth too.

And getting back to the event of Earth’s *water canopy* ‘coming down’, and to the ‘smaller balls’ closer to Earth who are the most likely candidates for previous ‘close interaction’ with Earth, and besides ‘overkill’—and I mean that Mars is about a thousand miles wider than Mercury, and Venus nearly the size of the Earth, either of which would probably have given **the ark** ‘too rough a ride’—we can’t be talking about a *red planet*, like Venus or Mars, or Moses would have passed on Noah’s report that **the waters** of the Earth turned to **blood**. But he didn’t. So it’s deduction, by a process of elimination. Mars and Venus, two of the only three ‘in the ballpark’ (pun intended—that is, both close enough and near small enough), are probably too big and certainly too ‘red’. That leaves only Mercury for the job, a perfectly-sized, *weakly electromagnetically charged, blue planet*, that shows all the scars, like the Moon, of the close *planetary encounters* it’s had with a number of ‘his’ near and far ‘neighbors’. And we will certainly **prove** that this is the case for our ‘similar-looking’ Moon anyway. I mean we’ll **see** that **her** ‘dance card’ has been and still is quite full.

And it’s time to be clear that we can only speculate as to how much God initiated this ‘long shot’ at The Fall, as opposed to before that—I mean on **the fourth day**—and how much He does so ‘along the way’. But it was certainly quite a while before Mercury reached Earth that ‘he was sent on his way’, and certainly it is not **impossible** for God that all this—and I mean all the following **judgments** and ‘judgment-related’ **signs**—was **predestinated** by Him, and that is, **ordained** and **appointed**, and in this case I mean physically ‘set in motion’ at The Fall, not to mention, as necessary, ‘anticipated’ in Creation Week, and ‘managed’ along the way.

So Mercury’s fame endures, even though ‘his’ fame was passed along originally by just 8 people, probably 7 of them **godly**, who would have passed along a **godly** perspective of this event, and even though most of this fame was long ago ‘upstaged’, or literally buried, by Venus. So why does ‘his’ fame endure? It continues because it was nonetheless the first of God’s mindbogglingly awesome **instrument of deaths** to **destroy all flesh**, and has really never been outdone since. So though almost no one anymore remembers Mercury’s involvement in The Flood—especially relatively recently when it has become ‘unscientific’ to even acknowledge that there was a ‘global flood’—it still remains acceptable to acknowledge that ‘he’ is one of the ‘greatest of the **gods**’. And yeah, I’m thinking the original ‘**propagandist**’ of ‘his’ **worship**, besides Satan, would have been Ham’s wife, with this carried on through her children, the **god** Mercury reaching ‘his heights’ just before that Tower of Babel incident, but again just before The Exodus of the Jew at the time of The 1st Visit of Venus.

But sorry, this ‘wild goose chase’ has gone on too long. And you should know by now that they will forever get increasingly subtle and therefore always remain difficult to **discern**. Yes, again I have ‘allowed’ you—since **SECTION 2**—to, at least somewhat, ‘compartmentalize’ part of this picture. And yes, it’s time to **correct** it. What part? The part where you knew better but nonetheless assumed that the Solar System before The Fall needed ‘refueling’. Yeah, that would be ‘compartmentalization’. Remember *polonium halos*, etc., mark in *Genesis rock* the beginning of The Fall. They also **prove** that there was no *radioactive decay* before The Fall, and imply that there was no *electromagnetic decay*, including of the *speed of light*, nor, and however difficult to measure, ‘decay’ in the *acceleration of gravity*,

nor in any of the other *constants* and *laws*, including not even any kind of *molecular* or *atomic decay*. It really used to be a Universe, in this way like the New Heaven to come, that was designed to last indefinitely all by itself, with little or no need to 'refuel' itself. But since The Fall apparently God has 'set in motion', whether by some 'initiation' or just the natural processes of *entropy*, a noticeably robust 'refueling process', or at least a 'redistribution schedule', accomplished by the 'cosmic billiards game' He put 'in play', and I **hope** to help you **understand** this **much better** as we proceed.

And to 'resize' things up yet a little further, there are a couple of *moons* of Jupiter, including **Ganymede**, that are bigger than **Mercury**, four bigger than our **Moon**, and over half a dozen bigger, including our Moon, than Pluto (size comparison chart, p.419). And by-the-way, contrary to how *scientists* have imagined Pluto in the past, it is not a cold, dead 'ball of ice', but, according to the July 2015 New Horizon satellite flyby, extraordinarily geologically and atmospherically active, and that is, still *hot* inside, but remarkably 'unscarred' by *impact craters*, and, though mysterious to *evolutionists*, apparently it at least appears to be much younger than had been previously imagined. Yes, this would mean, given it's place in the 'debris field' which is the Kuiper Belt, that it was 'broken out' of something much bigger rather recently in a *collision*, and has settled into its *orbit* in the Kuiper Belt without yet being sufficiently *perturbed* to draw it under any fire from any of it's neighbors. But we'll consider such collisions and their various consequences increasingly as we **continue**.

And contrary to how I may have misled you so far, size isn't the only significant factor. *Density* is too. **Mars**, for example, though near a 1000 miles wider than Mercury, is not nearly as *dense*, the *gravitational pull* on their surfaces being about equal—38% of that of the Earth. This suggests a couple of things to me, including that some 'preemptive', 'wild-goose-chase-type' corrections are in order. Remember those Galileo Orbiter *spacecraft* pictures of Jupiter I told you about, and that *Science Channel* program about them, showing Jupiter exchanging *charge* with one of its *moons*, (though I can't find these pictures anymore at the NASA site, or anywhere else). The 'point' is, (pun intended), that Mercury, especially during its second visit, being smaller but more *dense*, might have been better at raising more 'pointed mountains' on Earth than Mars could, and thereby be the better 'electrode-maker' for facilitating the *exchange of charge*.

Also Mercury's greater *density* suggests that it was not a *volcanic bomb*, that is, not like Venus, which was a *mass of molten rock expelled* from a *volcano* on Jupiter which surpassed *escape velocity*, probably with the help of the timely 'pull' of an *orbiting moon* and/or *passing planet*, and which naturally thereafter *cooled* and 'crusted over' into a 'ball' while traveling through *space*, and thereby only had its own *mass* to 'concentrate' and 'sphere-itize' its *density*. No, Mercury's *density* must have originally been part of a much larger *planet*, a *planet* that from Earth would have looked like another one of **the stars** earlier **created** by God on The 4th Day, that, evidently sometime after the time of The Fall, by *colliding* with another **star**—I mean

planet—produced many 'pieces' from these 2 *planets*, some of which were not held in the *orbital paths* of their *belts*, but, being more widely 'scattered' by the *collision*, 'got away', only some of them in the process also



being *hot* enough—that is *liquid* enough—to ‘reshape’ into ‘balls’ along their way, that is, before their surfaces *cooled* and became ‘crusty’. And yeah, I’m talking about evidently one of the biggest pieces resulting from such a *collision*, Mercury, but also about most the rest of the ‘pieces’ from the *planet* that Mercury—and possibly also Pluto—may have been ‘broken out of’, which, along with most of the ‘pieces’ from ‘the other guy’ in this ‘altercation’—maybe instead the one ‘breaking-out’ Pluto—have supplied most all the *objects orbiting* in the these 2 Trans-Neptunian Belts, both of them likely also providing a high percentage of the *moons captured* by the Gas Giants, and other of the various and sundry *objects* now ‘scattered’ throughout our Solar System.

And I mean that since Mercury has the reputation of being the ‘far-traveling messenger’, I’m guessing that the bulk of the debris that was ‘broken out’ of the two ‘planets’, one of which that released Mercury, is still *orbiting* in those 2 Trans-Neptunian Belts, and that other ‘pieces’ of these two ‘planets’ evidently were scattered more widely, and have provided most the *moons* of the Gas Giants. But I also mean that some of the more ‘perturbed pieces’ that were originally in one or the other of these 2 Trans-Neptunian Belts have since ‘migrated’ out of too, and if not in some way ‘snagged’ by the Gas Giants, or the Inner Planets, must now be *captives* of our Sun, and slowly slipping toward being ‘consumed’ by it, except of course any of them now already on their way—or just ***predestinated***—to be part of God’s next ***great judgments*** on Earth.

However, the ‘red planet’ I’m expecting in The Great Tribulation, like Venus, must carry with it plenty of *iron oxide* and *hydrocarbons* as you may already ***know***, and since most all the *hydrocarbons* Venus had are all burned up into *carbon dioxide*, and Mars has scarcely any *atmosphere* left at all, while Saturn apparently has too much *water*, I am therefore expecting that the ‘coming red planet’ will be another of Jupiter’s ‘extracted and expelled’ *volcanic bombs*. And this conclusion too should get clearer as we go.

But about the time before this ‘paradigm shift’—I mean when the Universe was still ‘permanent’ and not yet ‘decaying’—I don’t think God is implying that He had specifically ‘pre-prepared’ for the inevitability of The Fall when He ***said***,

Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years [Gen 1:14](#)

No, I ***believe*** these ***signs*** that were ***created*** before The Fall were for a permanent Universe that, like the Earth, ***should not be removed***, nor ‘decayed’ in any way, ***for ever***. And though surely something very near to these ‘permanent’ ***signs*** still exists—I mean ***the heavens*** indeed still do ***declare the glory of God***—there are, since The Fall, new kinds of ‘***natural***’ ***signs***, not to mention a new need for ‘***natural***’ ***judgments***, sometimes even ***great*** ones.

But did God also ***create*** the Universe, all the way down to the size of the Sun and *gas giants*, to ‘refuel’ or just ‘resupply’ our Solar System before The Fall, I mean in Creation Week, in any way? Well, to let this ‘correcting pendulum’ swing back a little in the other direction, probably. I mean remember Dr. Hoyle and I agree that the Sun could burn almost indefinitely by *thermonuclear fusion*, but that a primary ‘waste product’ of this *reaction* would be ‘cousins’ of the *electron*, *neutrinos*. And also don’t forget that even *photons* have a little *mass*, with ‘great streams’ of them flowing from our Sun and ***the stars***, with all this limited but continuous *expulsion of matter* evidently going on before The Fall too. I mean even if the Sun was only losing ‘streams’ of the very tiny, by ‘subatomic standards’, *neutrinos*, and even tinier *photons*, as opposed to a ‘steady stream’ of those *subatomic* ‘big boys’, *alpha*

particles, you'd still think that 'he' would eventually need some 'resupply'. And you'd have to guess that *gases* would escape from *planets*, including by *evaporation*, or because of the Sun's *ultraviolet light bombardment*, causing stuff like what's going on in the *rings* of Saturn, for example, or like the *gases* that would be similarly produced on the outer surface of the *water canopy*, along with reactions with other *gases* that find their way into this *water* from below, that must have at some rate caused *gases* to escape the *water canopy* into *space*, this also happening in a variety of ways on all the *planets*, even in cases without any *photosynthesis* involved, or without *natural* or *organic methane* production, but just the variety of *gases* that can be produced on their surfaces by *insolation*... etc... so... yes, you might think that a 'neverendingly-staged resupply' must have been required before The Fall, that is, even without or with much less severe *laws of entropy* in operation. And again yes, 'dizziness', like when focusing too intently on an *oscillating pendulum*, can be a natural and healthy 'reaction' to increasingly stronger 'doses' of **knowledge** in The Natural Eternal Progression of Knowledge of God.

And to 'swing' the perspective back in the other direction, yet again, remember the Sun is now *bombarding* the Solar System with those 'big boy' *alpha particles*, and others that are evidently the result of The Fall, where the *particles* the Solar System was being *bombarded* with before The Fall, supposedly mostly just *neutrinos* and *photons*, are thousands to millions of times smaller, and not able to produce near as much *gas*, if any, or much of anything else, by colliding with *molecules*—because they mostly just travel right through *molecules* undisturbed, with actual *collisions* being relatively few and much less consequential, so that unimaginably less 'resupply' than you may have imagined in the last paragraph would be necessary. And still, the World before The Fall was a 'physical world', with *friction*, *cooling*, *chemical reactions*, *motion* being *converted* to *energy*, etc., all of which should have eventually led to the need of some 'outside', 'eternally-staged', 'resupply', don't you think?

And still—are you steadied yet?—I'm guessing that our Solar System's 'big boys', the Gas Giants—who, by-the-way, have a lot of *gas* too lose—may have been originally and primarily designed to keep the balance and stability of the still astoundingly precise 'clock' that is our Solar System. But whatever the case, the more subtle 'compartmentalization' we need to 'sweep away' here is that, whatever the level, if any, of 'resupply' that was and is still going on, yes, God could have and would have, including originally forever, 'staged it', and even if it was originally and primarily just for occasional, 'non-judgment-related' **signs**. But no, such original 'staging' could not be to the degree that this present, temporary, 'decaying Universe' would require, which you likely, maybe a time or two, mis-imagined back in **SECTION 2**, and again a time or two in the last several paragraphs. But I also don't think the Universe God originally **created** was designed to be boring—that those 'specks of light' in the sky would always and forever just behave as mostly stationary or routinely moving 'light sources'. You should **know Him** well enough by now that in any timeframe this could never be the case, because it is not Who He is. And we will 'magnify' this particular aspect of Who He is shortly. But if you still don't really **understand** the subtlety of this compartmentalization, yes, you need to go back and start over, and even **better**, start from [RGT](#), and keep restarting every time you get here until you do.

But if you've reached this point without being misled at all, and **understand** it all, good for you. But don't get too **puffed up**. Because even though in this **study** I am really hoping to greatly '**improve and expand**', as well as '**test**' your 'scientific analytical skills', (read, your **understanding** of God's '**natural and supernatural skills**'), in the next **study** it will be at least as difficult to **discern**

the ‘compartmentalizations’, they being as much or more subtle, and a lot more personal, and where ‘scientific analytical skill’ will be of little help, though **understanding** of God’s **‘skills’** will be of some help. And I mean you’re presently still ‘in the thick of it’—that is, of ‘compartmentalization’—and likely will remain so, with no likelihood of escaping it any faster than it took you to become **approved unto God**, and **masters** [Jas 3:1](#) of the last **study**, along with this **study** up to this point. But have I repeated the **admonition to, Be patient**, recently enough? Don’t expect a question like that from Peter, by-the-way, God **love** Him.

And speaking of **admonition**, whatever ‘fault’ there may be of mine that at any time you ‘mis-imagined’ any of this ‘journey’ doesn’t forgive you of yours. Remember **you** are **instructed** to remain responsible for your **every thought** ([2Co 10](#); [Gal 6:4](#)), and however misled. But oh, how this shows us again that the only **hope** is **not** to eliminate, but just to **continue to correct** your **errors**, and thereby to **decrease** your **shame**, and by **so doing** you can eventually also **draw nigh** to God’s **refuge** and **fortress** and **‘dwell’ in the secret place of the most high**—or should I say in Their **abode**—a **place** where **you not only** can **know** that **ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called** ([Eph 4](#)), **nor either just** that God’s got your back, **but even more**, that He’s also got you ‘covered’. Or as the psalmist puts it,

...He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust...

[Psa 91](#) (and you can pause and feel **his feathers** if you think you’re there yet).

But you must also eventually come to **understand** something about God that is very different from us; **his way is perfect**, and **his work is perfect** (read in this case characteristically correct and precise and without error), and that this applies to **all things** and **all his works**, including to the execution of His relatively newly-needed **‘natural’ judgments** and **signs**. I mean at first glance his **judgments** may seem quite messy. But this is a **‘spiritually immature’** view. But since a **‘spiritually mature’** view requires **‘spiritual maturity’**—and **study**—it’s easier to begin to **see** what I mean using some of His smaller **judgments** and **signs**. For example, one of His smaller **judgments**, **‘precisely directed’** at a particular location, happened when,

Then the LORD rained [primarily] **upon Sodom and...Gomorra**
brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven [Gen 19:24](#),

and one of His similarly delivered, smaller **signs** involving a **‘precisely measured’**, water-drenched **sacrifice**, happened when,

Then the fire of the LORD fell, and [precisely] **consumed** [just] **the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench** [1Ki 18:38](#), (and see [2Kings 1](#), another **‘precisely numbered’** pair).

And what about His **wondrous** and **marvellous ‘precision’** with **great judgments** and **signs**? Hang on. The plan is to **‘correct, improve and expand’** your perspective of all of God’s **‘naturally’ great works** as we go.

But probably the best confirmation that Mercury was one of God’s **instruments of death**, this evidence available long before most of the modern **telescope** and **satellite** information about Mercury became available, is found in the work of Dr.

Velikovsky. Turns out, for example, that the Chaldean/Arabic name for Mercury was *Nebo*, and Mercury is honored in the name of King Nebuchadnezzar. And this makes sense because in King Nebuchadnezzar's day Mars was still the formidable 'new sensation', though 'he', as everyone then commonly knew, plainly had not superseded what Mercury or Venus had done, except that 'he' was then the most recently active and therefore the more dominating **god**, since for a long time Mercury and Venus had been settled into their much less 'influential', present *orbits*. However by King Nebuchadnezzar's day, Mars had already settled into its less 'influential', present day *orbit* too. So naturally, and as Dr. Velikovsky documented in *Ramses II and His Times*, though King Nebuchadnezzar's devotion was mostly to Venus, apparently he originally favored his namesake, but had his 'flings' with Mars too. And I mean just like today, traditions—or monopolies—die hard, and even when there 'arises' a formidable enough competitor. And I mean, like volcanoes, the worship of 'active' **gods** continues long after they become 'dormant', especially if they brought 'greater judgments' than ones that follow, because whole institutions and 'priesthoods' that dominate societies are set up, controlling and exploiting everyone and everything, and this **evil** 'turf' literally becomes an extensive amount of wealth and real estate that is naturally, and supernaturally as the case may be, protected by the exploiters, that is, 'principally' by the particular 'power hungry', 'egomaniacal', **spiritual wickedness of principalities and powers** who, thought usually to some degree 'fighting among themselves', actually vie for global domination, and that is to, as Jesus observes, **gain the whole world**.

So Mercury and Venus naturally remained rivals of Mars for the World's devotion even when Mars was dominating, because 'he' didn't cause anywhere near the devastation that Mercury and Venus did, again, as everyone then knew, and as we will see. Of course today all these 'planet gods' have long been dormant and 'their' influence has continued to diminish, though still to some extent their worship continues, like in the many 'gods' of the Hindu religion, for example. More specifically, in the Hindu religion the equivalent to the Roman **god** Mars or the Greek **god** Ares is "the god of war" Kartikeya (pronounce, kahr-ti-**key-yuh**), also known as Skanda, Kumaran, Kumara Swami and Subramaniyan, and who is believed to be the second son of Lord Shiva and Goddess Parvati.

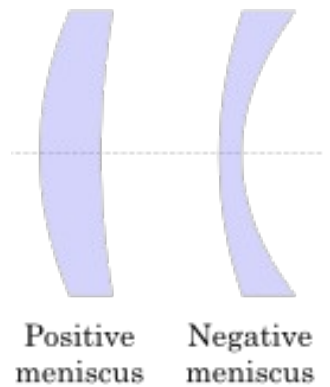
And speaking of our Moon 'helping' Mercury, the equivalent Hindu **god** to the Roman **god** Mercury or the Greek **god** Hermes is Buddha, and according to one Hindu source (the *Linga Purana*) 'he' is the son of the Moon by his wife Rohini, but by most sources (Vishnu Purana, Brahma Purana, Devi Bhagvata Bhagwat Purana, Harivansha Purana, Padma Purana and Vayu Purana) a story is told of the 'seduction' (read, 'cosmic demolition derby/billiards game interaction') of Tara, the wife of Brahaspati or Jupiter, by our Moon, the 'moon struck' Tara being maybe originally one of Jupiter's *captured moons*, and/or an *object* or phenomenon *perturbed* by and/or erupted from Jupiter, and/or just an *object* or phenomenon *aligned* with Jupiter from Earth's perspective, but that later also became connected to our Moon's 'fathering' of Mercury/Buddha. But however these associations were made, Mercury/Buddha is believed to be the son of Jupiter/Brahaspati's wife, but 'he' is also called Saumya, that is, "Son of Soma" or "Son of the Moon". Naturally then—and the pun is intended—the Moon/Saumya, being Mercury/Buddha's father, was 'seen' as 'friendly with' and 'considerate toward' Mercury/Buddha, but 'he', on the other hand, being the son of the wife of Jupiter/Brahaspati, was 'seen' to be 'in conflict with' or 'an assaulter of' the Moon/Saumya, since 'he' had apparently seduced 'his' mother. Uh-huh. Evidently that 'whole long-drawn-out love-triangle' between Jupiter, his wife, and our Moon resulted in what was perceived to be a 'love-hate relationship' between a father and his son, at least according to the

Indian descendents of the witnesses of this ‘affair in the heavens’ anyway.

(http://www.sanatansociety.org/vedic_astrology_and_numerology/vedic_astrology_horoscopes_mercury.htm - .VYmhkFIYGTk) And to this day, by-the-way, “Saumya” means, or has come to mean, “soft natured” and “gentle”, and is still a name given to Indian children, like, for example, to the presently famous Indian “[actress], anchor, poet, performer”, Saumya Tandon.

And Hindus also still believe that Mercury/Buddha ‘springs’ from the ‘lunar race’, or from wherever all ‘moons’ come from—which you should **understand** everyone would have been able to see without *telescopes*, including the ones being ‘grabbed’ by Neptune, that is, before that *water canopy* in the sky came down. Yes, I mean everyone was able—before The Flood—to witness the ‘demolition-derby/billiards-game-style’ *formation* and *capturing* of *moons* by *planets* throughout our Solar System through the ‘giant magnifying water-lens’ over their heads. I imagine that such a *water-lens*, by the way, being *liquid* and *spherical*, would have acted as both a **concavo-convex** and a **convexo-concave lens**, that is, naturally varying from a **positive** to a **negative meniscus lens**, that is, where the *radius of curvature* of each side of the *lens* varied, though in all perspectives *convex* on the *object* or outer-space side, and *concave* on the *image* or viewing side, just like *eyeglasses*, or more particularly in this case, a *spherical monocle*, except when, due to ‘various forces and factors’ affecting or ceasing to affect this *liquid lens*, the *radius of curvature* of the *object* side became longer than that of the *image* side—that is, *negative*—causing *images* to be “inverted”. Study the examples on p.424 until you **‘understand’** what I mean that a ‘flatter’ or ‘less curved’ inner surface makes the *images* “upright” or *positive*, while a ‘flatter’ or ‘less curved’ outer surface makes them “inverted” or *negative*, because you must be able to visualize this in order to **see** how the ‘various forces and factors’ can affect any given observers ‘view’ of *objects* in *space*.

And yes, besides the variation in the *orientation* of *images* due to ‘various forces’ and ‘factors’, *magnification* would vary too due to the varying depth of **the waters**, while of course *images* would also vary depending on from where and to where you were looking. And to give a couple of examples for the ‘various forces and factors’ involved, remember that the Moon creates *tides* by pulling on Earth’s *surface water*, so I expect there would be some regular ‘tidal action’ continually varying the *depth* and *surface curvature* of this *water lens* too, which could further *magnify*, *invert* and/or just *distort* the resulting *images*. Ever seen a ‘fun house mirror’? And *solar wind*, especially the apparently much harder-blowing kind since The Fall, along with its now varying ‘cycle’ of ‘lulls’ and ‘blasts’, should have affected it to some degree too. I mean remember that the *solar wind* today greatly ‘compresses’ Earth’s *magnetic field* on the ‘Sun side’ and ‘blows it out’ on the ‘side away from the Sun’. However, though it blows out a formidable *magnetotail* from Saturn, it seems to have little effect on the ‘ice debris’ in Saturn’s *rings*. But again, I believe Earth’s canopy was *liquid*, and though more *dense* than *air*, and being *magnetically bonded* together in a couple of ways, it would still to a significant degree resist this ‘compression’ and ‘blowout’, but not as well as the ‘ice debris’ in Saturn’s *rings* do. And this is not only because the ‘particles’ in Saturn’s *rings* are *solid*, but also because it’s just a ‘ring of ice particles’, not a ‘liquid canopy’, on which the effects of *solar wind* should be much diminished, especially if Saturn has a stronger *magnetic field* than Earth, which I’m guessing it does, given how insignificantly affected by *solar wind* Saturn *rings* apparently are. But I would expect *solar wind* on the *water canopy* to be more like ‘wind on a tarp’, while the effect on Saturn’s



about half-mile-wide *rings* more like wind blowing on a curved, greatly-perforated sword's edge or angled side. I mean this might be why Saturn's rings tend to stay more 'perfectly round' than I imagine Earth's *water canopy* would have. And so there's reason to imagine that *daylight images* under Earth's *canopy* may have tended to be lesser *magnified* and more often "inverted", while at night tended to be more *magnified* and "upright". See what I mean? You need to, that is, to really keep up. However, surely this perspective will undergo the ongoing 'pendulum swings' of neverending '**correction, improvement and expansion**' too.

Because certainly that's not all. Another 'factor' we should consider that surely significantly 'enhanced the view' is that there was apparently a *medium* change from relatively empty *space* to our *atmosphere* on either side of this 'lens', creating another *lens* really, an 'air-lens', which would have further 'messed with' the *refraction*, most often increasing *magnification* even further, kind of like our present day *air-lens* does. This less *dense* and therefore weaker *lens* created by our *atmosphere* is *convex* on the *object* side and essentially *flat* on the *image* side (*plano-convex*), that is, from our perspective. However when you look toward the horizon—where this *lens* can be perceived at its thickest—you see the *images* of *objects*, like our rising or setting Sun or Moon, at significantly greater *magnification* than elsewhere. And all these *magnifications* and/or *distortions* would be *added* together, making possible, especially at night, some pretty 'spectacular views' of really *deep space*.

But certainly that's not all either. Remember from Saturn we also learned that the 'feet' of this *water canopy* would be 'dancing', maybe sending continuous 'waves' or 'pulses' through the *canopy* at all times. And all these 'factors and forces' put together, and viewed from a certain perspective in Southern Asia, for example, could also, among many other things, mislead you to think, by the more and less magnified images above—and/or on the horizon—that the Moon was bigger, because it really appeared bigger, than Mercury, and therefore was 'naturally' perceived as the 'father' in 'their relationship', and not the other way around. 'Ch - ch-ch-ch - chhhh'. Yeah, that's onomatopoeia for a 'short circuit'. And if you didn't have one or two by now you should read from the beginning of this section over and over till you have at least a few of them. And surely there are more to come, forever, remember?

But hold on to your brain, because from all this we can also deduce, or **discern**, that the whole World witnessed Mercury being 'sent on his way', evidently including 'his involvement' in the 'scattering' of quite a number of 'moons' and other 'debris' before The Flood, or the Hindus couldn't know that Mercury was of the 'lunar race', now could they? But of course Hindu 'views' are exactly that, just 'Godless views', including 'Godless interpretations' of this 'cosmic demolition derby/billiards game'. And I mean their 'views' are 'distorted' no matter how much they are based on the originally *magnified* and/or *distorted*, "upright" and/or "inverted" views of *deep space* their ancestors had, and no matter how such 'views' were modified later by what was seen in the sky directly above, or on the horizon. So yes, we will see that whatever the 'view', the reasons for such 'stories' are 'naturally astronomically exaggerated' because of the 'various forces and factors' involved, but not really as much because of these 'natural causes' as because of the 'supernatural ones', that is, because of the 'various' **principalities and powers**, otherwise known as **spiritual wickedness in high places**.

And yes, all this also implies that Ham's wife must have had a 'magnified view' of all the backstory related to Mercury's visit. I mean all the way back to the time 'he' became a *TNO*, or near all the way back to The Fall. And she must also have heard eyewitness testimony of, if not personally witnessed, the origins and

interactions—or ‘seductions’—of many other **gods** too, that were, by the time of The Flood, also likely already ‘on their way’. And in her case we’re talking about the more or less unified ‘story’ that everyone took away with them from the Tower of Babel, now aren’t we? But we’re really talking about the ‘*magnified*’, Pre-Flood **great signs** of the coming **great judgments** of God, or really, about who God is, or even more specifically, about how he ‘introduces’ Himself. ‘Ch - ch-ch-ch - chhhh’.

However because of the globally destructive effects Venus brought, twice, we don’t have as much information available about Mercury nowadays, and surely this has hurt ‘his’ cause. Still, despite Venus’ twice, nearly-global ‘information purge’ by “conflagration and inundation”, as we will see, Mercury, and ‘his’ other variations from cultures around the World, has remained an ‘active’ **god** in your average local ‘pantheon’. But we will be able to see that Mercury’s decline from prominence due to Venus’ later visits, though ‘she’ did not quite **destroy all flesh**, must have been similar to Venus’ fall from prominence due to the even later visits by Mars, and though ‘he’ was much less destructive than ‘she’ was. Oh, and to this day in India, the natives still get ‘restless’, even ‘excited’, whenever there is a *conjunction* of Mercury with Mars.

But we also have the whole world’s ‘mythology’, which is a deep well of such knowledge, if **rightly** ‘filtered’. For example, an imaginative account, complemented by mythologies from around the world, can be found in the Greek/Roman myth about where seasons came from. And though accounts vary greatly, generally it happened like this. Zeus/Jupiter with the goddess Demeter/Ceres fathered Persephone, who was greatly loved by her mother Demeter/Ceres. But Hades, evidently after participating in the defeat of Zeus’ Father Cronus/Saturn and the Titans, and having taken control of the “underworld”, wanted a wife, and fixed on Persephone, and literally abducted her, taking her to be queen of his realm. Demeter protested to Zeus. Zeus hesitated, not wanting to side against his brother and ally. So Demeter, goddess of agriculture—and marriage—retaliated by making the ground no longer able to produce. The people of Earth wailed in misery and starvation and cried out to Zeus. Wise Zeus established a compromise, one that acknowledged that Persephone had ‘consummated’ her position as queen by eating in the underworld, in her case it was 6 pomegranate seeds, the compromise being that Persephone could live 6 months with her mother and 6 months with Hades each year. And so from then on the ground would produce for 6 months, when Persephone was with her mother, and not produce for 6 months, when she was with Hades. Of course there were no seasons under the *water canopy greenhouse*. Seasons started after it came down. So this story shows that the Greeks and Romans, and many other cultures around the World, were aware that there used to be no fall, winter or spring, just endless summer. And indeed this aspect of the story is not myth, but true, but there are surely other aspects of this story that are essentially true that I am not able to identify—like how the stars and/or constellations that identify Demeter/Ceres were ‘center stage’ in the sky when seasons ‘started’. But surely someone knows more about this, and other things that are related.

And I want to tell you one more Greek myth. It’s the story of a quarrel between a couple of demi-gods. Demi-gods would be anyone with a **god**—especially one of the *planets*—for a father and a human for a mother. Sound familiar? Anyway, seems there was this ‘disagreement’ between Phaethon, son of the Sun-god Helios/Apollo, and this other, to remain unnamed, boastful demi-god son of Zeus. Both insisted they were greater because of their fathers, but Phaethon went too far, lying that his father Apollo would let him solo-steer his chariot—seen from Earth as the

Sun—across the sky the next day. So Phaethon went to his father Apollo, introduced himself—before that Apollo did not know him—and gained Apollo’s favor and any request of his choosing. Apollo was horrified at the request but honored it, and off Phaethon went with the chariot. Of course Apollo knew he could not control the horses, and in the course of his ride Phaethon repeatedly strayed way too close to the Earth setting everything on fire, as well as straying too far from the Earth freezing everything. And referring to such extreme temperature changes, and to the erratic movement of the Sun, and to more than one day, something like this actually happened, including all within the course of a single day, as we will see in the next sections, especially with the help of Dr. Velikovsky.

But most of all we have **scripture**, a neverending well of such **knowledge**. For example, evidently still in the days of Jesus and his apostles, Mercury and Jupiter, (who was the father of Venus), were among the most respected and worshiped of the ‘heavenly’ **gods**. Indeed the Apostle Paul acknowledged that there were **many** such so-called **gods**, including the ones **in heaven** ([1Co 8:5](#)). And remember the time when...

...there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked: The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked. And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker. Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before [or prominent in] their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people. Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein: Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness. And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them. And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and, having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead. Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe [Act 14:8-20](#).

Two points. First, you can see in this passage that these people thought that Paul and Barnabas had done a miracle as mighty as the chiefest of the **gods** could, but that when they would not honor their ‘chief gods’, they rejected them, and stoned Paul, yeah, probably sending him on that brief trip to **paradise** to see some of those **not lawful...to utter** things.

Second, you will eventually see how that Aphrodite/Dionaea/Venus and Athena/Minerva and Zeus/Jupiter were understandably confused with each other, depending on the ‘viewpoint’ of their activities from Earth. In other words, we will see that what some saw as the work of Jupiter, others saw as the work of his

daughter or daughters Venus and/or Athena—who both, as least in some versions, were ‘born out of Jupiter’s head’, by-the-way.

And yes, Aphrodite/Venus was also identified as *Dionaëa* or *Dioné*, which is apparently translated as **Diana** in the KJV. I assume so because, once upon a time in Ephesus...

...when the townclerk had appeased the [assembled] people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter? Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly [Act 19:35-36](#).

Indeed, at that time in that city **these things** could not have been **spoken against**, not without another stoning, that is. So how is it that such people could discount the incredible **miracles** regularly performed by **the apostles**, and all evidently in order to appease their **great goddess**? Because such **gods** had supposedly exhibited even ‘greater power’, even ‘greater power over life and death’ than Jesus’ **apostles** had. And even though these supposed, by far ‘greater works’ of their **gods** had taken place many centuries before their time, they were so formidable that these many centuries could not diminish them. The work of Mercury in The Flood of Noah and the works of Venus—or was it Jupiter?—that decimated Earth twice were too formidable to give up because one guy got his feet healed, or some blind guy got his sight, or a few lepers were healed. Of course this involves more confusion—the confusion that it was actually these planet-**gods** that really did all these overwhelmingly formidable **works**. And this is surely ‘**great confusion**’, because these **great works** actually were the **great judgments** of God, where in all cases His **instruments of death** were primarily not to destroy, but make opportunity to **save some**.



And we also have **mount Nebo** [Deu 32:49](#), rising off the northeast end of the Dead Sea, where God buried Moses (picture, [p.427](#)). But it’s only a hill really, 2680 feet above sea level. Again, Mercury didn’t have that much ‘pull’. But this ‘hill’ was likely among the largest mountains on Earth before the visits of Venus. And remember God is going to **shake** most the entire World flat again at the end of The Great Tribulation, evidently in The Final Great Earthquake ([Isa 40:4](#); [Rev 16:17-21](#)). And I say “again” because I imagine that the land surface of the Earth was mostly flat before Mercury’s visit, and remained relatively so afterward too compared to after The Visits of Venus.

And, as **scripture** indicates, **mount Nebo** is near **Jericho**, where you can see Jerusalem from the summit on a clear day. So I’m imagining Mercury had at least this much mountain-raising pull as it somehow ‘paused’ over this former flatland, maybe because it’s ‘spin’ moved it into a position of stronger **magnetic attraction** with Earth at that point, and/or maybe because Mercury was at its closest point to Earth in its pass making an increase in **gravitation attraction** also a factor in this ‘pause’ or just ‘slowing’, allowing it enough time to raise its namesake there, while at the same time this ‘pause’ or ‘slowing’ could have simultaneously raised an even higher peak on its own surface, altogether creating the shortest path for an **inductive discharge** between the two **planets**, and becoming the means by which this ‘voiced’ **thunder** was globally ‘vocalized’ —and memorialized—because surely something

was communicated that was appropriate to the event and/or The Cause, though I can only speculate as to what that communication was.

But naturally Mercury did not totally ‘stop’ and ‘crash’ but was only ‘paused’ or ‘slowed’ over a point on Earth to make these ‘electrodes’—or maybe, just for this short time, Mercury’s ‘orbit’ around Earth ‘slowed’ or ‘sped up’ to match Earth’s ‘spin’—because evidently these *planets rotations* and *vectors* ultimately overcame the result of an *inelastic collision* with each other. And of course all this must also be related to why the Chaldeans inappropriately, that is, misleadingly, named both this **mount** and this *planet Nebo*. And don’t feel bad about ‘short-circuiting’ whenever experiencing added dimensions to your growing introduction to God. He ‘naturally’ has that effect on people. In fact it’s one way you can **know** it’s really Him.

And there is another time God used one of His **instruments of death** to speak to the entire World that I do **know** what He said, which we’ll get to in the next couple sections. And remember we **know** that **the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind** [Job 38:1; 40:6](#), and that **God called unto Moses out of the midst of the ‘burning’ bush** [Exo 3:4](#). So I’m guessing it must have been something like that. But I’m also guessing God didn’t raise these 2 ‘spark plug’ mountains just to *induce* that *electromagnetic discharge* between them. He must have also had in mind that, in about another **day** or so—and I mean one of His **days**—He would need such a mountain on Earth for another purpose, and He would not want it to be too high, and to have a good view of the Holy Land, since He would want Moses to climb it at the end of his life, so He could bury him on it. Uh huh. And even if He does it ‘naturally’ it’s nothing for God to get **his work**, for both ‘today’ and ‘tomorrow’, done ‘in a flash’.

And yeah, God **laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever**, where, besides **the waters** on and in the Earth, there were also **waters** that **stood above the mountains**. But those **foundations**, and everything else, were only **promised to not be removed for ever** before The Fall, before Adam and Eve broke their **promise**, and would **not** have been **removed for ever** otherwise. In fact this is further confirmation that God originally made the Universe we now live in to last **for ever**, isn’t it? But if you add a Universe in ‘decay’ because of **sin** to a situation where...

...the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually
[Gen 6:5](#),

then, however it actually happened, **the waters** that stood **above the mountains** were let go and, just gently enough for the Ark, brought down. And I mean God couldn’t just let the *canopy* ‘quickly’ collapse, or no one would survive, and He couldn’t just wait until it did, or by then there would have been no one left worth saving, not to mention a lot more **demons** to deal with. Yes, Satan and some of his **angels** were running almost completely amuck—I mean with everyone except Noah and most of His family. And Satan probably thought He had God where he wanted Him, where he thought God’s plans were thwarted, and that God would be forced to either let Satan have control of the World, or completely destroy everything, and give up on saving the World. **But God...** well, by using Mercury for the finesse necessary to **destroy all flesh** except for **the seed of the righteous**, through which Jesus would still have the opportunity to **save us**, while at the same time the **angels that sinned** He **cast...down** to *Tartarus*, **and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment** ([1Pe 3:18](#); [2Pe 2:4](#)), and while by the Flood God also disembodied the then **giant**, dominating **‘angel-**

human hybrids' making them instead much less formidable human-body-dependant **unclean spirits**, otherwise known as **demons** (e.g. [Mat 12:43-45](#); [Luk 11:24-26](#)), yes God, **having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it** [Col 2:15](#).

And yes, I said "most of Noah's family", as the 'seed' of these 'Tartarus angels' survived, let's say to a 'manageable' extent, through Ham's wife. I mean Satan probably thought—and maybe is still thinking—that because this 'seed' survived through Ham's line, he had really won after all. **But God** has no limits to how He can 'make a show' of Satan **openly**. In this case, God was and still is **able to deliver** even some of these, 'preemptively', since He evidently **made... the angels**—and **cursed** them too in a way—so that if they **came in unto the daughters of men**, their **traits** would only be **expressed recessively**, or only 25% of the time, which gave everyone not expressing such traits a chance, at least eventually, to outnumber and defeat the inevitable **great wickedness** of such **evil** angelic **giants** ([Gen 6:1-8](#)). And at least arguably, there was another 'world-renowned' **curse** making the 'trans-ethnic reproduction' of some of the worst of this **evil** line 'visually avoidable', not to mention other 'open showings' of God's that were less 'preemptive'—though likely 'in the works' starting at The Fall—which reduced and controlled this particular population, including more 'just-gently-enough' executed **great judgments**, and other 'biologically engineered' ones 'along these lines' too, all of which we'll get to along the **way**.

And sure, this case for Mercury is still a little thin. But like the last **study**, and as with all 'mature' **study, doctrine** should only be established with the accumulation of **many infallible, line upon line, precept upon precept**—that is, 'correctly interconnected'—scriptural **proofs**. And I mean that, again, and as should be, the **full proof** of this **study** is best established in its 'scripturally-interconnected totality'. And by-the-way, I expect, when we have finally accumulated such **full proof**, to show you how God, without needing any '**abracadabra**', will pull **the waters** back up into the sky, and hold them there again for The Millennium. I hope to get to this 'prestige', and that is, to the 'trick' of how I expect God will finally cause this to 'naturally' as opposed to 'magically' happen, in the last 2 sections, **glory to God**.

And by-the-way, I only recently **received** answers to questions critical to my present **understanding**, an **understanding** I have been growing in for decades, but most all of which are **revelations** you may **receive** and **understand** in the process of this single, 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style' **study**, especially with a little continuing **study** of it. In other words, I had to **wait** decades to get the 'slow-growing', 'bigger picture' I now have, while you will not need to **wait** nearly so long. This is not necessarily a good thing. So again, practice a little **patience**, because, compared to what I have **endured** 'along these lines', (and yes, a double pun is intended), that's all it can be for you, just a little **patience**, though what I have **endured** is but little compared to what my Lord has. And no, I'm not talking about His **sacrifice** for **our sins** in this case. I'm talking about **better things...and things that** should **accompany salvation**, at least for those with **vehement desire** to **go on unto perfection**. And I mean in this case I'm talking about Jesus' loneliness, and your and my loneliness, or maybe just your 'awakening' to such loneliness, but hopefully also your 'awakening' to the **patience** that will be required in the anticipation of mature, '**friends-of-Jesus-level**' **fellowship**. And by way of **comfort**, which, too often in spite of me, The Spirit has been sent to minister, your 'spiritual growth' through **patience, if ye continue**, should soon enough, and forever, more than satisfy your want of **fellowship**, and then hopefully mine, and may even, eventually, and to some **glorious** extent, **God**

willing, satisfy His too. But these are **deep** [and **eternal**] **things** indeed, and I **fear** such ‘satisfaction’ cannot be most ‘fully’ **attained** without you having been **exercised** in this incarnation for most of a lifetime by ‘perfected’ **patience**, nor without finally the ‘proven willingness’ to **lay down** your **life** for your **friends** and **brethren**. But can you yet begin to imagine Jesus getting excited about an opportunity for **face to face**, ‘**close-friend**’ **fellowship** with you anyway?! And no, I do **not** feel I have **already attained** this yet, though **I follow after** it, and I **hope** it is eventually possible, but I also **believe** that, using the Prophet Isaiah for an example, that only the **great[est]** will **obtain** such **favour**, and that is, to...

...be glorious in the eyes of the LORD [Isa 49:5](#).

But maybe you should also be wondering why I call Mercury, “the first of the **great judgments**”. I mean really there is a **judgment** arguably **greater** than The Flood that preceded it. I’m talking about The Fall. But I’m not talking about the proclaimed ‘human consequences’ of this **appointed** universal **curse**, for men that, because God **cursed... the ground**,

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou [grow **herbs** among **thorn...and thistles** and only thereby] **eat bread** [Gen 3:17-19](#),

and not either for women, that God said He would...

...greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee [Gen 3:16](#).

Remember I discussed in **SECTION 3** why I consider these ‘consequences’ of the **curse** more of a ‘help’ than not, because they offer us—given that our **heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked**, and given the **warring of lust** and **pride** in our **flesh**—a **better** chance at **eternal life**, that is, from our perspective, and however Satan has, nowadays, turned such a perspective of this **curse**, as well as of that later one, completely upside-down, which would be a topic for the next **study**.

But **the curse** in general is different. And I mean that with it God started or increased **entropy**, or ‘universal decay’, and that He did it ‘**abracadabra style**’. But it is nonetheless an ongoing universal **judgment** of ‘**for-dust-thou-art-and-unto-dust-shalt-thou-return**’, eventual, but certain physical **death** to all, making it a **judgment** that, though slower than The Flood, remains even more deadly. But clearly this **judgment**, at least in this way, is different than The Flood, and than most all the other **great judgments** that I identify in this **study**, because it is not one that operates predominantly within God’s established **ordinances of heaven and earth** [Jer 33:25-26](#), as it is a **judgment** whereby God entirely and instantaneously—can you say ‘**abracadabra**’? —changed the ‘permanent’ **ordinances of eternal life** to ‘decaying’ ones of ‘**eventual death**’, and ones that all the following **great judgments** would operate by—and possibly, or probably, were all initiated and accomplished by—all the way to **the end** of this **world**.

So The Fall is a ‘**great judgment**’ that is ‘initiated’ by God without using any of His not-yet-existing, ‘**curse-produced**’, **wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible**, what King David calls, **instruments of death**, (and I mean as he refers to them in [Psalm 7:13](#)), because it is The Curse itself that initiates not only ‘**inevitable**

death', but also all the **instruments of death** resulting from it. So for this reason alone I feel **approved** to call The Fall the **first** and **greatest** of God's **great judgments**, since He, like with The Flood, but even more absolutely, **ordained** by it that,

...every thing that is in the earth shall die.

And yes, this is an arbitrary classification. But it is a classification I have chosen that **seemed good unto** me, a **'spiritual teacher'** of The Word of God, and also, as I can **discern, seemed good unto the Holy Ghost** too—which must not be confused with what **seemeth right** unto **unbelievers, babes in Christ**, or even to a **novice** in Christ—and therefore **'we'** chose this 'classification method' to help us **better** distinguish the kinds of **judgments** God uses to **save some**, as part of our foundational goal, to get to **know** God **better** and **better**.

And we've already covered the physical aspects of this **curse of the ground** enough for the purposes of this **study**, so that you can now **understand**, and **understand** increasingly **better** as we **continue**, why I, again, arguably somewhat arbitrarily, consider this God's **greatest 'instrument of death'** of all. But now that you have been introduced to this **'instrument'** and its qualifications, which I'll call Great Judgment I, you should be **able to see** how it, operating more **naturally** and much less **'abracadabra-style'**, is in a different class.

And it's in a different class in another way too. I mean it shows how God doesn't have to 'cheat' if things go seemingly irretrievable wrong. He doesn't have to just 'snap His fingers' to **'make a show'** of His **enemies**. No, His Character is **revealed** in that He most often, as an example to us all, 'plays by the rules', and I mean by His **ordained** or **'reordained' laws** of Creation ([Psa 8:3](#)), and even when His **enemies** don't. And some reflection should also show you why He doesn't always just answer your every whim with a **miracle** too. It's always **all** for our own **good**. But I also mean that if you think God...

...appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth... [Jer 33:25-26](#)

...but isn't **able** to 'play by them', then you don't **know** Him. In fact, in these verses God is swearing by His own **ordinances**—yes, and God swears by his **holiness** too, for example ([Amos 4:2](#))—that He will redeem His people. And you should come to **understand** that He is **able** to do so **only** using them, or at least by 'interfering' with them no more than his **enemies** do.

And speaking of **'getting to know'** Him, and **redeeming** His **people**, and of the Prophet Amos, in this particular chapter God tells us that this is exactly what He means when he warns **Israel**, saying,

...prepare to meet thy God, O Israel... [Amos 4:12](#)

Yes, He does mean many of them are about to die, but He tells them this after a list of all the other 'inconveniences' He has put them through, and where **5 times the LORD** concluded, saying,

...yet have ye not returned unto me... [Amos 4](#)

Talk about **longsuffering**. So evidently this **stubborn and rebellious generation** ([Psa 78:8](#); see also verse 7) still needed a 'proper introduction'. And evidently this 'introduction' God speaks of will require Him to 'bring out the big guns', or to use another metaphor, that next He's really going to 'knock their socks

off'. But also that, like the relatively 'minor inconveniences' He had **chastised** His people with up to that point, and as the last verse in the chapter implies, He's going to 'make this introduction' with His own **ordinances of heaven and earth**, or, as before, only with His own '**laws of creation**'. But it also means that only "most of them will die"—these being the ones who don't get this 'introduction', and that 'introduction' being to the 'mindboggling awesomeness' of God, that plainly gives survivors unlimited **faith** to absolutely and without doubt **trust** Him to **deliver them** beyond their imagination.

So yes, God is not only able to '**make a show**' of His **enemies** fairly and **openly**, again and again, and still—oh, what an '**awesome**' and **glorious** God He is!—**naturally** always win (pun intended), but He also **chasteneth** His people as needed ([Heb 12](#)), and He is **able** to do so in this **wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible** way too. I mean if you don't think God is **able** to **command** your full and complete attention with His 'introductions', you not only don't **know** Him, you really haven't even ever met Him yet. But it is this **righteous, great and good** God that I intend to 'introduce' you to in this **study**, though naturally, it is an 'introduction' that we will be '**correcting, improving and expanding**' as we go, **for ever**. And oh yes, this 'introduction' should **work wonders** with some of your **stubborn and rebellious**, well, **disobedience** too.

But thankfully, a 'downhill' death-toll trend continues from here. And I mean the number of deaths for each of the following '**great judgments**' only drop after The Flood, except maybe for The 4th Seal and 6th Trumpet Judgments, and Armageddon. But these Great-Tribulation **great judgments** don't make the cut because they are not, at least directly, or predominantly, caused by any of God's **great and terrible**, 'physical' **instruments of death**. And I mean the remaining **great judgments** that we will count out in this **study** are **predestinated** operations of **natural**, 'physical' **instruments** of God—the most formidable of these **instruments** being the **planets** of our Solar System—where God uses His '**reordained**', **cursed**, though still infinitely complicated **ordinances of heaven and earth** that He '**re-spoke**' into existence to, with 'mindboggling' **power**, balanced with 'breathtaking restraint' and 'unimaginable finesse', and reigned-in by 'perfect control', **utterly** and completely **destroy the sinners...out of** the World, while at the same time make it possible to **redeem** [the future] **you...** and do it **with signs, and with wonders, and with a strong and mighty hand... and with great terror and fury, and with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments**. And if that's not enough, in this process God is **delighted** to **deliver** and **save** the **righteous... from the wicked**, and also **provide** [**water, bread**, and whatever other needed **provision**]... **for his people...**

But though 'it's all downhill from here', in a way its 'uphill' too. I mean the rest of this journey is necessary to help you **understand** increasingly **better** the details of all these **great judgments**, and therefore the '**awesome**' **power** of God to both **destroy** and **deliver** while using His unimaginably **great and terrible**, 'physical' **instruments of death**, but more than that, including as it applies to you, to help you '**better see**' how they are as much '**instruments of life**' as **death**. And I mean you won't as fully **understand** The Flood until you can **understand** how God is using virtually all of the **heavenly bodies** of our Solar System—and that enter our Solar System, and really the whole Universe for that matter—to 'physically' and 'naturally' **judge the world**, that is, with 13 'visits' of 5 different **instruments** altogether, by my count, and with each new **judgment** helping you to **understand** the previous ones **better** and **better**. And with the details available from the previous **great judgments**, your picture of The 2 Great Judgments that are still 'on the way' will continually be '**corrected, improved and expanded**' in the process.

But before Dr. Velikovsky and I start helping you **'better understand'** all this, I don't want to 'put God in a box', that is, leave you with the impression that I think God **judgeth righteously** only by 'natural means'. No, and though it's true God is characteristically **just** and fair, even **longsuffering**, and usually 'plays' by His **ordained** and **appointed** 'rules', He is also characteristically universally **sovereign** too in **all his ways**. Or as Moses puts it,

He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he [Deu 32:4](#).

But also remember that He has and will **destroy** much more than He will **redeem**, and that His **testimony** is that He not only **'forms' light** and **'makes' peace**, but also **'creates' darkness** and **evil** ([Isa 45:7](#)).

A case in point could include another arguably **'great judgment'** I'm going to take out of the 'natural box'. I mean though it has characteristics of what I would consider a **'great judgment'**, like The Fall it is **ordained** by God strictly **'abracadabra style'**. And though it's a **judgment** that makes quite an **'open showing'** of Satan and his **principalities and powers**, completely taking their **forecast of devices** decisively back to 'square one', it doesn't belong on my top 13 list. What am I talking about? I'm talking about at least part of God's **judgment** at the **tower of Babel**. It was **there** where God unilaterally, (or 'trilaterally' really, see complete verse), decided to...

...confound their [one] language, that they may not understand one another's speech [Gen 11:7](#),

evidently instantaneously creating all the origins of all the languages we have today, and totally confusing and thereby destroying the 'functionability' of that entire 'civilization', that through later **great judgments**—that forced further separation—encouraged even more confusion by an ever increasing number of dialects by which God continues to make a **'laughable open showing'** of the plans of all His **enemies**.

But this **darkness** and **evil** on God's part—I mean it made keeping the **peace** from then on impossible—was plainly also for the purpose of resecuring, again, the **hope** of **redemption** for **some** in future generations. So is this **light** or **darkness**, **good** or **evil**? I mean what best characterizes Him. Is it His conditional **gift** of **eternal life** and the **'unending' increase of his government and peace** for a relative **few**, or is it the **torment...for ever and ever...in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death** for the vast majority of humanity, and a large part of the **angels** He **created** too? No, God fits in no box.

By-the-way, and to 'nip in the bud' a little more compartmentalization, you might think that 'technology' will eventually overcome this 'dark and evil' **language** limitation God has imposed upon the World. And yes, **evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse** [2Ti 3:13](#), and overcoming this limitation is one of the ways they will try to do it. And 'progress' by Satan toward 'reunifying' the World has been made. But remember all this 'progress' will end at about The 3rd Seal Judgment, remember?—starting with another 'Mercury-like', EMP-style, 'Ka-Boom!' Yes, The Collapse of Technology and the ensuing chaos will again take all this 'rising World unity' back to 'square one'. Or as Jesus puts it,

For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom... [Mat 24:7](#);

[Mark 13:8](#); [Luke 21:10](#).

I mean the odds are that any given **nation** or **kingdom** involved in these ‘uprisings’ will still be speaking a different **language** than their opponents.

And this brings us to another reason why this arguably **‘great judgment’** doesn’t make the cut for one of my **‘top great judgments’**. It’s because it is going to be completely reversed first thing ‘tomorrow’. And again I mean ‘tomorrow’ in God’s transcendent perspective. And I’m referring to an event—not this time a **judgment** really, but a **blessing** and **mercy**—which happens at a time when God says He will,

...rise up to the prey: for my determination is to gather the nations, that I may assemble the kingdoms, to pour upon them mine indignation, even all my fierce anger [including at Armageddon]: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For then [- maybe at The Feast of Tabernacles at the beginning of The Millennium -] will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent [Zep 3:8-9](#).

Yes, this ‘new day’ is coming, obviously at the end of The Great Tribulation, when God will **return to the people [one] pure language**. And I’m guessing all that **‘garment-bloodying’ fierce anger** we’re expecting to participate in will happen a bit before, or maybe a bit after this event, but whatever the case, I’m sure we’ll clean up quite nicely, maybe in that river flowing eastward from the Temple steps, surely **praising God** in this **pure language... with one consent**, and that is, whenever it is finally, and possibly again, universally shared. And yeah, my guess is that it happens at The Feast of Tabernacles, initiated by The One that is The shadow of things to come, and that is, where **the body is of Christ**, which would be the celebration when Jesus comes to live or ‘tabernacle’ forever with His people in Jerusalem.

But whether at this **feast** or not, this ‘reunification’ of **language** must happen when...

...the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever [Dan 7:18](#),

that is, at the time we begin to ‘live and reign’ with Jesus **for evermore**. But of course this arguably **‘great judgment’**, at Babel, surely indirectly contributing to a lot of the both first and **second death[s]**, isn’t a direct, ‘physical’, **‘instrument-of-death-style’ judgment** either, which is what really disqualifies it from my **‘top great judgments’** list. And besides, everyone already **knoweth** God instantaneously **commandeth** whatever ‘They wants’ into being, which is another reason why the purpose of this **study** is to ‘introduce’ you to a God you don’t **know**, or at least to **one** you will **know** a lot better than you did before. (See also [Lamentations 3:37-40](#)).

And maybe now you can even better **see** what a fantasy world *modern scientists* live in nowadays, including virtually all ‘Christian scientists’, since you should remember from *RGT* that the ‘founding fathers’ of *modern creationism* rejected Dr. Velikovsky’s *theories*, essentially mostly rejecting the chance of even being ‘introduced’ to their God—I mean as God meant it through the Prophet Amos. Because yes, even this small glimpse of reality I just presented is mostly or entirely inaccessible to most all *modern scientists*. And since you now know that *modern*

science, especially *modern evolutionary science*, is so full of **'misrepresentation', corruption** and **fraud**, and mostly founded on sheer fantasy at best, it is fitting that we digress to an earlier era of science that, though lacking some of the *modern scientific apparatus* available today, still contained factions of *scientists* that at least accepted **'abracadabra creationism'** as a valid *theory*, and I mean factions that were not as much confused, distracted and misled by the overall entirely misdirected focus of 'science' today. It is in such a time when Darwin's 'theories' were still unknown, or at least controversial, and more to the point, a time when comprehensive, controlled, unbiased research and handling of evidence was still considered, often even by the majority, as reasonable, even essential. I mean that today since the 'fairy tale' that is the Theory of Evolution is accepted as reality and therefore influences, no dominates, and oppresses, everything, it would be well to reject this generation of 'scientists' altogether, or at least from now on consider their contributions with extreme caution and skepticism, and turn to an earlier and more **godly** generation for both evidence and research, though maybe not as much for **interpretation**. And I mean I will not attempt to trace most of Velikovsky's *theories* to the present day in 'modern science', at least not as much as I did in the previous sections, although we have already done some of it, and this has been otherwise not too popularly done by others to some extent. The point is that the rest we can best—or must—do on our own. More particularly, I intend to examine Dr. Velikovsky's work as if it arrived at the very end of 'The Age of Reason', with what followed becoming increasingly and hopelessly 'insane', the 'end of this age' marked by the total rejection of Dr. Velikovsky's work, and that mostly out of hand, even by *creationists*. So again, beyond Dr. Velikovsky and his research, we will be mostly on our own, where any further consultation of 'modern science' is only indicated under the supervision of **disciples** that have been long scripturally **exercised to discern both good and evil** in such topics. And this would not likely yet be you.

And even more specifically, most of the evidence we will examine from here on is centuries to millennia old, where the question becomes who is best able to **interpret** it: *scientists* from near a century or more ago, or more recent ones. By now this should be a 'no-brainer'. And this is also directly related to the Apostle Paul's declaration to us that,

...evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived [2Ti 3:13](#).

And you don't need to proceed any further with this 'level' of **study** if you don't yet **believe** that it has reached a point approaching ridiculous, and certainly where it is much more a waste of time than not, to continue to try to isolate and extract any more unbiased, unfabricated, untainted, unmanipulated, let alone accurate or correct, or even realistic or un fanciful information and analysis from recent 'scientific sources', even most so-called 'Christian' ones really. But my experience is that we certainly can have some confidence that we can find better, useable information, including honest analysis, even sometimes from *evolutionists*, as long as it originates from around the middle of last century or before, with unavoidable exceptions.

So most of the evidence in this section, and in the following sections, will be of this vintage, and it will be easily enough presented, as it will be largely paraphrased, mostly only reorganized really for the additional clarity I believe this will provide, and mostly from Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky's *Worlds In Collision* and *Earth In Upheaval*, but also a little from his *Ages in Chaos* series too, all this information referenced in these works, and all of which I accept as generally

credible, and certainly more credible, generally speaking, than the more current works of more 'modern scientists'. Of course I will also include his and my qualifications, where I will only occasionally need to differ with him on aspects of **interpretation**, especially biblical ones, but also a few scientific and chronological ones too, which is not really his fault. I mean he is a Jew who I hope is in **Abraham's Bosom** right now—that I **hope** makes good use of that midterm rapture I expect he'll soon be involved in. In fact I would love the opportunity to bring him up to speed even as he is partly responsible my growth in God. And of course there's that other advantage we have over him—that we came along later in The Natural Eternal Progression of Knowledge of God. And I mean I should expect, if there is time, that we and/or future **disciples** will be able to expose some of my errors and oversights, thereby '**correcting, improving and expanding**' our perspective, just like we will be able to expose some of the things Dr. Velikovsky got wrong. And don't get me wrong. We are going to need the help of real *scientist*, but ones with relatively uncorrupted perspectives of reality, and hopefully a lot more **integrity** than we're used to nowadays. And don't get this wrong either. Though an *evolutionist*, but a *catastrophist*—whereby it is much less problematic that he is an *evolutionist*, as we will see—it's Dr. Velikovsky that gathers, abundantly, such comparatively uncorrupted and appropriately interpreted sources, and that makes the consultation of more 'modern scientists', generally, and at least at this level, and at least arguably, a waste of our time. We're simply going to leave them behind, or at least place them as far on the periphery of our focus as we can.

But there is another way I want you to start looking at this. And I mean that we are the real modern scientist, and that this **study** will make those who **master** it far above the 'top modern scientists' of our day in 'scientific understanding'. I mean to say that with a '**mature spiritual perspective**', real and uncorrupted 'modern scientific breakthroughs', at least conceptual ones, by those with such **knowledge, wisdom** and **understanding** should be expected and welcomed. Indeed I have personally experienced the **revelations** of many of these 'scientific breakthroughs' in the preparation for and in the writing of these '**studies**'—we're talking about God's Creation and our growing **understanding** of it, after all—and, as this is one of the **exceeding great and precious promises** of God, you and I should experience many more such **revelations** as we proceed. And this is also directly related to the Apostle Paul's declaration when he says,

But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man
[1Co 2:15](#).

Yes, this applies even to *science*, and to **us**, because, again, in this case we're talking about our growing **knowledge** and **understanding** of God's Creation, aren't we? And who should **know** and **understand** more about this than **disciples** like **us**? And I **hope**, at this point in this **study**, that this is already now your **testimony**. So we really have no choice but to leave behind those that cannot or will not **follow**, whatever their intelligence, credentials, or even their **testimony** in Christ. And for those not yet '**following us**' whose **testimony** remains in Christ, they must, either to their **glory** before The Rapture, or their **shame** after it, nevertheless eventually '**follow us**'.

But after all this 'build-up' I've given to 'vintage science', I'll need to do some qualifying. And to get the 'ball rolling', (or maybe I should say 'balls rolling', right?), I'd like to introduce you to a few more key 19th Century *scientists* that, through their research, Dr. Velikovsky introduced to me, who were all to some extent students and colleagues of our 'qualified hero' from **SECTION 3**, Baron Georges Cuvier. So I offer

these more extensive introductions to help you get a better **understanding** of ‘the lay of land’ of ‘19th Century science’.

And this brings us to someone who I’d call, besides Baron Georges, the brightest shining ‘light’ of 19th Century *geology* and *paleontology*, Jean Louis Rodolphe Agassiz. You should remember this family name has come up a few times already. He was a prominent 19th Century *biologist* and *physician*, ultimately a Harvard professor, as his equally famous son Alexander was too, and he was an innovator in the study of Earth's *natural history* in both Europe and America who steadfastly opposed the Uniformitarian and Natural Selection Theories of Dr. Lyell and Mr. Darwin, mostly because of the overwhelming amount of evidence he personally gathered together and analyzed, and this mostly of *fish fossils* and *glaciers*, by which he is known as the father of the sciences related to these phenomena, the ‘overflowing’ and/or ‘conflagrating’ importance of which Dr. Velikovsky for the most part correctly recognized.

Having adopted *medicine* as his profession, he studied at the universities of Zürich, Heidelberg and Munich extending his knowledge of *natural history*, but especially of *botany*. In 1829 he received the degree of Doctor of Philosophy at Erlangen—in this case ‘philosophy’ is an academic term referring to his ‘scientific studies’—and in 1830 he received the degree of Doctor of Medicine at Munich. Moving to Paris, as many of the greatest not just artists, but also *doctors* and *scientists* of this century did, he fell under the tutelage of the renowned Prussian *naturalist*, (read, *deist*, *materialist* and *rationalist*, and maybe also secretly *atheist*), Alexander von Humboldt, but also under the mentorship of another of our heroes, Baron Georges Cuvier, who launched him on his careers of *zoology* and *geology*. Before then he had not paid much attention to the study of *ichthyology* (*fishes*), but it soon became his major focus since he spent most of the rest of his life publishing his research on this subject, starting with the samples of the *fresh water fish* of Brazil, especially of the Amazon River, that he obtained from an earlier expedition after the death of one of the scientists involved, that he completed and published in 1829. After this he did research into the history of the *fish* found in Lake Neuchâtel in Switzerland. Widening his scope, in 1830 he published his plans to complete a work he entitled, *History of the Freshwater Fish of Central Europe*. However it wasn’t until 1839 that the first part of this publication appeared, and it was completed in 1842.

This delay was mostly due to another plan of his originating in 1829, which because of publications from 1833 to 1843 became his biggest claim to fame. This would be the five volumes of his *Research on Fossil Fishes*, largely facilitated, beginning in 1832, by his appointment to Professor of Natural History at the University of Neuchâtel, by the previously unstudied *fossil-fish-rich* locations nearby, by his visits to the principal museums throughout Europe, and also by the continued help of Baron Georges in Paris, who offered him much encouragement and assistance.

Along the way Dr. Agassiz decided that the broad scope of his work made possible a new basis of *ichthyological* (*fish*) *classification*. However the *fossils* he studied rarely exhibited any traces of the *soft tissues*, keeping his new *classification system* more focused on the ‘harder ones’, like *bones* and *teeth*. But sometimes they did exhibit characteristics of *soft tissue*, like *color* and *skin*, and strikingly so, as we will see, and as the present ‘system’ now accepts. Yet despite the success of Dr. Agassiz efforts to place this subject on a ‘sincerely scientific basis’, his *classification system* has since been made obsolete by later ‘work’. But whether the present ‘system’ was as ‘sincerely proposed’ or not, or really more just a ‘power play’ for ‘turf’, evidently it has not improved our perspective of reality, that is, not

without at the same time entirely distorting reality by its full accommodation of outrageous 'evolutionary fantasy'.

But I don't mean that Dr. Agassiz didn't have to, like most other *scientist*, 'pay the piper' too, especially given his need for much travel, not to mention his highly time-consuming and detailed research, which naturally almost completely drained his available resources. However timely help appeared in the form of the newly established British Association, now known as the British Science Association, and in the person of the Earl of Ellesmere—then Lord Francis Egerton—when he purchased the 1,290 original *ichthyological drawings* of Dr. Agassiz for the purpose of presenting them to the Geological Society of London. In 1836, the highest honor of the Geological Society of London, the Wollaston Medal, was awarded to Dr. Agassiz for his work on *fossil ichthyology*. Three years later it was awarded to Sir Richard Owen, who we are getting to, but a couple decades later this 'honor' was given to the likes of Mr. Charles Darwin (1859) and Sir Charles Lyell (1866). But as late as 1838 Dr. Agassiz, a life-long obstacle to Mr. Darwin and Sir Charles' **so-called** 'theories', got elected a foreign member of the Royal Society. And I mean that in England, evidently between about 1840 and 1860, a transition was occurring, where true 'pearls of wisdom' about God's Creation were 'cast aside', while 'scientists' increasingly preferring their own 'pig slop', or their own 'regurgitations'.

In the late 1830's and early 40's Dr. Agassiz also became engaged with *fossil echinoderms*, that is, *fossil marine animals*, including in 1839-40 publishing two volumes on the *fossil echinoderms* of Switzerland; and in 1840-45, issuing his *Critical Studies on Fossil Mollusks*. And because his colleagues brought to light some of the remarkable *fossil fish* of the Old Red Sandstone in the northeast of Scotland, including such strange forms as the *Pterichthys* (left), and the *Coccosteus* (right), (pictures p.436), and other genera that for the first time became known to *geologists*, they became of intense interest to Dr. Agassiz too, and became the subject of his special publications in 1844-45.

It is also noteworthy that in the early stages of his career at the University of Neuchâtel, Dr. Agassiz made a name for himself as a man who could run a scientific department well. Under his care, his university quickly became a leading institution of scientific inquiry. And in 1837 he was elected a foreign member of the Royal Swedish Academy of Sciences. In the same year, Dr. Agassiz was the first among his colleagues to propose that the Earth had been subject to a past *ice age*, though other scientists had already concluded that the remarkably large, *erratic boulders* scattered over the slopes and summits of the Alps, for example, in the Jura Mountains, had been moved there by *glaciers*.



His interest in this phenomenon not only led to further collaboration with his colleagues, nor just to multiple journeys with some of them to the alpine regions, but to him constructing a hut on one of the Aare Glaciers, which for a time he made his home, in order to investigate the structure and movements of the *ice*. These endeavors resulted, in 1840, in the publication of his work in two volumes entitled, *Study on Glaciers*. In it he discusses the movements of the *glaciers*, including their *moraines*, that is, the 'line or rocks' that are pushed to the end of the *glaciers* "flow", and that remain there after *glaciers* melt away. He also characterized their influence in 'grooving'

and 'rounding' the *rocks* and *landscape*, which also confirmed some of his colleagues' assertions that *alpine glaciers* had extended across the wide plains and valleys drained by the Aare and the Rhône rivers. But his *theory* went even further 'afield'. because he also concluded that, in the relatively recent past, Switzerland had been another Greenland, or more specifically, that instead of a few *glaciers* stretching across this relatively smaller region, one vast 'sheet of ice', centered in the higher Alps, had extended over the entire valley of Northwestern Switzerland until it reached and deposited its *moraines* all the way to the southern *slopes* of the Jura Mountains, which, though this *range* evidently checked and deflected its further extension, did not prevent the *ice*—and the *rocks* it pushed—from reaching the *summits* of this *range*. Naturally, the publication of this work became the impetus to the study of *glacial phenomena* all over the world.

But unfortunately, it also became the 'force' to 'turn the tide' against *flood geology*. Let me explain. Having become familiarized with *glacial phenomena*, Dr. Agassiz was ready for a discovery which he made in 1840 together with Rev. Dr. William Buckland, when these two visited the mountains of Scotland together. There they found at various locations clear evidence of ancient *glacial action*. The discovery was announced to the Geological Society of London in successive communications, specifically that the mountainous regions of England, Wales, and Ireland were each centers for the dispersion of *glacial debris*. About this discovery Dr. Agassiz concluded that,

...great sheets of ice, resembling those now existing in Greenland, once covered all the countries in which unstratified gravel (boulder drift) is found; that this gravel was in general produced by the trituration of the sheets of ice upon the subjacent surface, etc.

And since because of these published discoveries everyone then knew what to look for, this sparked a worldwide search for *glacial action*, and it was found on similarly massive scales almost everywhere. And this became more than a distraction to the study of *flood geology*. It became the replacement of it. Call it the beginning of the outright rejection of the idea that there had ever really been a *global flood* at all, just some major local ones. But really, as we will see, there were both, and multiple occasions of worldwide *glacial action* too. And though you might not yet have a good picture of what I mean by "both", let alone "multiple", you should at least already **see** that this growing rejection of *flood geology* and its replacement with *glacial action* to explain the overall condition of Earth's surface was **not...flesh and blood** happenstance, but rather orchestrated by **spiritual wickedness in high places**, though you should also know I'll explain a little further shortly, as well as even more so in the next sections.

In 1842-1846 Dr. Agassiz published his *Zoological Nomenclature*, a classified list, with references, of all names used in *zoology* for *genera* and *groups*. But after that his career permanently transferred to the Americas where he became associated with and lectured for the Lowell Institute in Boston, starting with a series of lectures entitled, "*The Plan of Creation as shown in the Animal Kingdom*". But he was also enticed to go so he could investigate the *natural history* and *geology* of North America. This led to professorships at Harvard, Cornell, and Charlestown, including being elected a Foreign Honorary Member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (1846), and to the start of the Lowell School at Harvard (1847). His continuing lectures for the Lowell Institute spanning almost 3 decades, including the series entitled, "*Ichthyology*" (1847-48), "*Comparative Embryology*" (1848-49), "*Functions of Life in Lower Animals*" (1850-51), "*Natural History*" (1853-

54), “*Methods of Study in Natural History*” (1861-62), “*Glaciers and the Ice Period*” (1864-65), “*Brazil*” (1866-67) and “*Deep Sea Dredging*” (1869-70).

In America he also found the love of his life, his wife Elizabeth, a ‘fellow fossil hunter’ who ultimately wrote his biography, but also the love of the American people, including Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, who wrote a tribute to him on his 50th birthday. In the mid-1860’s and early 70’s, partly to recover his health, he went on an expedition to and published new findings from South America, including to Brazil to continue his study of the *fish*, but also further south to the continent’s southern Atlantic and Pacific seaboard, including exploration of the Magellan Strait, which drew the praise of Mr. Charles Darwin, though again, Dr. Agassiz, while always cordial, maintained his resistance to Mr. Darwin’s ‘theory of evolution’. And though dying in the process, he published much more, in multi-volumed works on almost everything in his fields. And despite the fact that his work on *glaciers* was used to distract the ‘scientific community’ away from evidence of The Flood, even by him, and to convince ‘scientists’ that the Earth was a lot older than previously imagined, as we will see such evidence, in a human perspective, unavoidable should have, he still believed in the Creation of the World, and of all the *species* he studied, even if he thought they must have been created only intermittently over a very long time. And he at least left a legacy in his students, he himself being a legacy of his mentor Baron Cuvier in France, who continued to uphold scientific integrity, and thereby, at least for a while, held back the tide of ‘**godlessness**’ in America, standing as an unbreachable ‘damn’ against the increasing ‘tide’ of entirely baseless and faithless ‘evolutionary depravity’.

Meanwhile back in England, and back to Dr. Agassiz’s British colleague, the Rev., Dr. William Buckland, and to turn a phrase, to that ‘damn’ pastor, preacher, and doctor of divinity who remained a prominent influence there, but really only succeeded in ‘blindly leading the blind’. In fact, Dr. Agassiz was present for his originally poorly-received presentation of their new ‘theory’, that is, that there was no ‘global flood’, just ‘global glaciation’. Rev., Dr. William Buckland, DD, FRS, who, fortunately, was only able to personally perpetuate his legacy until the mid-50’s, was an English *theologian* who became Dean of Westminster. But he was also a *geologist* and *paleontologist*, who wrote the first full account of a *fossil dinosaur*, naming it *Megalosaurus*, considered to be an over 60-foot-long *quadruped*, though since it has been determined to be an upright-walking *biped*, and though now weighing in at over a *ton*, has been twice reduced in length to closer to 25 feet. And we could laugh like hyenas about his work in a ‘prehistoric’, uh, *hyena den* (Kirkdale Cave in North Yorkshire), and that he was honored for it with the Royal Society’s Copley Medal (1922), and later also got the London Geological Society’s Wollaston Medal (1849), not to mention that he’s the guy who ‘personified’ *fossil feces* by giving it his rival’s name (pun not necessarily intended—OK, it’s intended).

But I am more than implying that he was ‘blind’ and ‘damning’. Yes, Rev., Dr. Buckland was a proponent of the Gap Theory. No, not the good Gap Theory—that the Age of Grace is *hid* in Old Testament *prophecy*, but the bad Gap Theory—that there is a lengthy ‘gap of time’ between Genesis 1 and 2 that allows for ‘evolution’ to take place before ‘Adam and Eve’ finally ‘come along’. This ‘theistic evolutionary theory’ emerged in the late 18th and early 19th Centuries as a way to reconcile the scriptural account with discoveries in *geology* that supposedly suggested the Earth was ‘very old’. But really, at this time when new discoveries were undeniably proving that there had existed nearly continent-sized *ice sheets*, not to mention miles-deep ‘stacks’ of *strata* containing *fossils* everywhere, many scientist ‘naturally’ got the idea that a ‘young Earth’ seemed much less supportable by the ‘evidence’, and was more just **faith** beyond imagination. And I mean there are

more 'short circuits' to come when you begin to picture how God must have not only moved and removed so much water so fast, but also placed and removed so much *ice* so fast too. But we will **see** that He did, and how He did it 'naturally'. And I mean just using His Own **ordinances** of His Own Creation.

So this was a 'big'—and to some extent 'understandable'—change in thinking. In fact early in Rev., Dr. Buckland's career he believed that he had found *geologic evidence* of the Biblical Flood, (at Kirkdale Cave, for example), but later became convinced that the *glaciation theory* brought to his attention by Dr. Agassiz provided a better explanation, and he played an important role in promoting this 'change of thinking' in Great Britain. And the reverend was not completely at odds with Baron Georges, nor with Dr. Agassiz, because they all concluded that *species* were instantly **created**, some of which had become *extinct*, and not all at once but 'intermittently' over 'long ages', the *extinct* ones, like *dinosaurs*, becoming so before Adam and Eve 'came along'. However what we will really come to **understand** is that the far-reaching *global glaciation* of Earth that really did 'diminish and bury' evidence of the *global flood* is directly related to how The Visits of Venus and Mars really did 'diminish and bury' our knowledge of The Visits of Mercury. And you're not getting it yet if you're not 'short circuiting' right now. But don't panic, it just means you need to keep reading.

So it was Rev., Dr. Buckland that was responsible, if any one man was, for leading England, well, at least most of her *scientists*, away from the more traditional or conservative belief that the condition of Earth's crust was more due to The Flood, to it being due to 'continent-sized' *glaciers*. But this could only happen after he was able to 'justify' *geology* as a legitimate, acceptable *science* in the first place. I mean in early 19th Century England, this would require not just a respectable *scientist*, but also a legitimate, respectable 'churchman', considered qualified to reconcile his 'scientific' conclusions with **scripture**. So after he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society in 1818, he convinced the Prince Regent, the person in England, often a crowned prince or relative of the king or queen, and oftentimes the one really running things (sound familiar?), to create and endow (or fund) an additional "Readership"—that is, a lecturer, in this case in Geology, approved to teach—and preach—in institutions of the highest level, not to mention the freedom to preach pretty much any where he was invited on Sunday. Being the first holder of this new royal appointment, he delivered his inaugural address in 1819, which in the following year was published and entitled, *Vindiciæ Geologiæ* ("*Defenses for Geology*"); or *the Connexion of Geology with Religion explained*, which in addition to 'legitimizing' *geology* as a *science*, also attempted to reconcile *geological evidence* with the Biblical accounts of Creation and Noah's Flood. And from this his influence grew. In 1824, for example, he became president of the Geological Society of London. So at a time of the beginning or the rise of Scottish *geologists* James Hutton's Theory of Uniformitarianism, which he proposed late in the previous century, Rev., Dr. Buckland developed a new *hypothesis* that redefined the word "beginning" in Genesis to mean an undefined, very long period between the origin of the Earth and the 'creation' of its current inhabitants, during which time a long series of *extinctions* and successive but 'instantaneous creations' of new 'kinds' of *plants* and *animals* had occurred. Yes, this was a form of *catastrophism theory*—that things had not just gone on 'uniformly', but that there had been a 'global flood', etc.—that incorporated a version of what is sometimes called *Gap creationism*. So Rev., Dr. Buckland believed in a 'global deluge' during the time of Noah, but ultimately rejected *flood geology* as he finally concluded that only a small amount of the *strata* could have been formed in the single year occupied by the 'deluge'. OK. I mean this is not an unreasonable conclusion for

this time, maybe no more so than the conclusions near the same time of Charles Darby, who, if you remember, concluded there were just two “dispensations”, and that the Gentile one only included ‘post-Pentecost’ members. Again OK, because on the scale of ‘hot to cold’, in both cases were getting ‘warmer’, where, as you should expect, from here on we will only get more so. Yes, I’m talking about how absolutely ‘red hot’, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky’s additional contributions, things are going to get in this **study**. And OK, the ‘pendulum’ again ‘swings back’. I mean I guess I should admit that the Rev. Dr. Buckland was a hedge against Uniformitarianism in England and beyond in his time.

For example, from his investigations of *fossil bones* at Kirkdale Cave, in Yorkshire, he concluded that the cave had actually been inhabited by *hyenas* in antediluvian (Pre-Flood) times, and that the *fossils* were the remains of these *hyenas* and the *animals* they had eaten, rather than being remains of animals that had perished in the Flood, which if so may have been carried there from the tropics by the surging waters, as he and others had originally thought. But in 1822 he wrote:

It must already appear probable, from the facts above described, particularly from the comminuted state and apparently gnawed condition of the bones, that the cave in Kirkdale was, during a long succession of years, inhabited as a den of hyaenas, and that they dragged into its recesses the other animal bodies whose remains are found mixed indiscriminately with their own: this conjecture is rendered almost certain by the discovery I made, of many small balls of the solid calcareous excrement of an animal that had fed on bones... It was at first sight recognised by the keeper of the Menagerie at Exter Change, as resembling, in both form and appearance, the faeces [or excrement] of the spotted or cape hyaena, which he stated to be greedy of bones beyond all other beasts in his care [Rudwick, Martin, *Scenes from Deep Time*, 1992, p.38-42].

So while criticized by some, Rev., Dr. Buckland's analysis of Kirkland Cave and other *bone caves* was widely seen as a model for how careful analysis could be used to reconstruct the Earth's past, for which the Royal Society awarded him the Copley Medal for his paper on the subject that year. At the presentation of this honor the society's president, Baron Sir [Humphry Davy](#) said,

...by these inquiries, a distinct epoch has, as it were, been established in the history of the revolutions of our globe: a point fixed from which our researches may be pursued through the immensity of ages, and the records of animate nature, as it were, carried back to the time of the creation [Rudwick, Martin *Bursting The Limits of Time: The Reconstruction of Geohistory in the Age of Revolution*, 2005, p.622-638,631].

And from these glimpses of the early 19th Century you can **see** the great difference that existed between that time and the present. There was still a great deal of respect for a Creator God, and still, generally, an inseparable bond between ‘science’ with ‘integrity’ and ‘reality’ that would seem to all but disappear by the turn of the following century. But you should eventually see that the Rev., Dr. Buckland, and the ‘scientific community’ in general—both *uniformitarianists* and *catastrophismists* alike, that is, from ‘slow’ *gradualists* to ‘monstrously fast’

saltationists—got it all wrong in the Kirkdale Cave. I mean about those *hyenas* that supposedly lived before The Flood, and about how they were allegedly *buried* with *sediment* by The Flood. Nevertheless, and on the other hand, the reverend was getting ‘warmer’.

For another example, while Buckland's analysis convinced him that the *bones* found in Kirkdale Cave had not been washed into the cave by a ‘global flood’—and he was right about that—he also believed the ‘thin layer of mud’ that covered the remains of the *hyena den* had been deposited in the subsequent ‘Universal Deluge’—which he got wrong, as we will see. He nevertheless naturally developed these ideas into his great scientific work, *Reliquiæ Diluvianæ, or, Observations on the Organic Remains attesting the Action of a Universal Deluge*, which was published in 1823 and became a best seller. However, over the next decade the Rev., Dr. Buckland changed his mind. In his famous contribution—one of eight *scientists*—to the prestigious Bridgewater Treatises, commissioned by the Earl of Bridgewater on his death bed, to explore “the Power, Wisdom, and Goodness of God, as manifested in the Creation”, and published individually from 1833-40, Rev., Dr. Buckland’s part published in 1936, he maintained in his installment that the Biblical account of Noah's Flood could not be confirmed using ‘geological evidence’. And by 1840, thanks to Dr. Agassiz, he was very actively promoting the view that what had been interpreted as evidence of the ‘Universal Deluge’ two decades earlier, and subsequently of “deep submergence” by a new generation of *uniformitarian geologists* such as Dr. Charles Lyell, was actually evidence of ‘major’ *glaciation*. But though he and Dr. Agassiz were also ‘warming things up’ by promoting the existence of a phenomenon that had up till then been unknown, *global glacial action*, they were attributing this phenomenon, unknowingly, to the wrong *planets*, not to mention the wrong ‘time zone’, as we will see.

But the Rev., Dr. Buckland was indeed a churchman and man of God. In 1825, he resigned his college fellowship at Oxford, and was quickly offered the appointment of Canon (priest) of Christ Church, that is, a high clerical position in the constituent college of Oxford named Christ Church, this being a rich reward for academic distinction that came without many administrative responsibilities. Late that year, bless his heart, he also married a fellow ‘fossil hunter’, who he went ‘fossil hunting’ with all over Europe for their honeymoon, and who evidently often thereafter assisted him in his work.

Still the Rev., Dr. Buckland shared the view of Baron Georges that no *humans* had coexisted with any *extinct animals*. And it was while the Rev., Dr. Buckland was Canon of Christ Church that he was commissioned to contribute one of the set of eight, ultimately very influential Bridgewater Treatises. And he took it very seriously. It took him almost five years' work to complete his part, finally published under the title, [*Geology and Mineralogy considered with reference to Natural Theology*](#). His volume included a detailed compendium of his *theories* identifiable as Day-age/Gap Theory and a form of Progressive Creationism where *faunal succession* revealed by the *fossil record* was explained by a series of successive ‘divine’, apparently instantaneous ‘creations’ that prepared the Earth for *humans*. In the introduction he expressed the necessary *argument from design*—or his *teleological* or *physico-theological argument*, also called an *intelligent design argument*, or ‘an argument for the existence of God’ —by asserting that the *families* and *phyla* of *biology* were “clusters of contrivance”, contrived by God to prepare Earth for man. Or as he put it,

The myriads of petrified Remains which are disclosed by the researches of Geology all tend to prove that our Planet has been occupied in times preceding the Creation of the Human Race, by extinct species of Animals and Vegetables, made up, like living Organic Bodies, of 'Clusters of Contrivances,' which demonstrate the exercise of stupendous Intelligence and Power [over an extraordinary long period of time]. They further show that these extinct forms of Organic Life were so closely allied, by Unity in the principles of their construction, to Classes, Orders, and Families, which make up the existing Animal and Vegetable Kingdoms, that they not only afford an argument of surpassing force, against the doctrines of the Atheist and Polytheist; but supply a chain of connected evidence, amounting to demonstration, of the continuous Being, and of many of the highest Attributes of the One Living and True God.

Getting 'warmer'? Not yet. That would not be till a few years later when he and Dr. Agassiz jumped on the 'global-glacial-action bandwagon'.

One 'cooling effect' at this time was that the Rev., Dr. Buckland's completion of his Bridgewater Treatise closely coincided with the return of Mr. Darwin from his famous 'fossil gathering voyage'. And the reverend unfortunately encouraged young Mr. Darwin at least to some extent, even recommending some of his written work. This is unfortunate because by this time the Rev., Dr. Buckland was a prominent and influential scientific celebrity, not to mention a friend of the Tory (read, 'Catholic-connected') Prime Minister, Sir Robert Peel. Another 'cool down' surely involved his 'co-operation' with Sir Charles Lyell when he prepared the report leading to the establishment of the Geological Survey of Great Britain. But some of this 'chill' was abated in that he also cooperated with the 'seated' Cambridge *geology* professor, the Rev. Adam Sedgwick, in this undertaking too. We'll get to Professor Sedgwick shortly.

So after the Rev., Dr. Buckland had toured the 'glacial action' in Switzerland with Dr. Agassiz, Dr. Agassiz came to Britain for the Glasgow meeting of the British (Science) Association, in 1840, after which they went on an extended tour of Scotland. In that year the Rev., Dr. Buckland had become president of the Geological Society of London again and, despite their hostile reaction to his presentation of *glacial theory*, he was now satisfied that *glaciation* had been the origin of the condition of the land covering Britain. Yes, they were getting 'warmer'.

And I think it noteworthy that in 1845 he was appointed by the Prime Minister to Dean of Westminster, which had the unique privilege of reporting directly to the Queen. He succeeded in this position Great Britain's great emancipator, Samuel Wilberforce. As Dean and Head of Chapter, the Reverend-doctor was involved in repair and maintenance of Westminster Abbey and in preaching suitable sermons to this local congregation, while continuing to lecture on *geology* at Oxford. In 1847, he was appointed a trustee in the British Museum and, in 1848, he too was awarded the Geological Society of London's Wollaston Medal. He remained Dean of Westminster for 11 years, his term shortened because he contracted tuberculosis in 1850, and succumbed to it in 1856.

Of course Rev., Dr. Buckland wasn't the only 'man of God' dissuaded from the more 'conservative' Church view of a 'universal flood' by the new evidence. There were also men like Rev. Adam Sedgwick. He, though arguably remaining a 'conservative', or 'fundamentalist', if you will, went along with the evidence, and along with many other more 'liberal churchmen', though remained a staunch and

substantial opponent of Mr. Darwin's 'theories' till his death in 1873. And of course his 'recanting' of "flood geology" had a lot to do with Rev., Dr. Buckland and Dr. Agassiz's 'excursion' to Northern Scotland. You see, the real evidence does and should, at least at first examination, contend with the idea that a 'universal flood' was the only significantly influential cause of Earth's present *geological* and *paleontological* condition. And yes, Venus and Mars 'stirred things up' quite a lot too, adding on top of what The Flood did the evidence of what they did, and that is, evidence of more regionalized but nonetheless massive *inundations*, including quick and massive *sediment* 'burial' of all manner of *human, animal* and *plant materials*, and regionalized but massive *conflagration* too, as well as combinations of *conflagration* and *inundation*, all accompanied by the naturally resulting 'ice ages' that followed, except of course, they happened in much shorter timeframes than presently popularly imagined.

This brings us to the next 'bright light' of 19th Century science I would like to further introduce, Rev. Adam Sedgwick, FRS, whose relationship with the scientific community reminds me of Dr. John Witcomb's relationship with Dr. Henry Morris. The Rev. Sedgwick is considered one of the founders of *modern geology*. He proposed the *Devonian period* of the *geologic timescale*. Later he proposed the *Cambrian* period based on work which he did on Welsh *rock strata*. And though he had guided the young Charles Darwin in his early study of *geology* and remained on friendly terms with him, Rev. Sedgwick was an opponent of Darwin's Theory of Evolution, and more specifically, He was opposed to his Theory of Natural Selection.

He studied *mathematics* and *theology*, and obtained his BA from the Trinity College, University of Cambridge in 1808, and his MA in 1811. He next became a Fellow of Trinity College, and was then elected to the Woodwardian Professor of Geology at Cambridge in 1818, retaining it until his death in 1873. The Woodwardian Chair, by the way, is jointly elected by the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Ely, the President of the Royal Society, the President of the Royal College of Physicians, the Members of Parliament for the University of Cambridge, and the University Senate. And he became a Fellow of the Royal Society early on, in 1821. Also an 1851 portrait of Sedgwick hangs in Trinity's collection. Yeah, he was all that.

The focus of his work was the study of the *geology* of the British Isles and Europe. He is the one who founded the system for the classification of *Cambrian rocks*, and with Scottish *geologist* Sir Baron Roderick Murchison, 1st Baronet, KCB, DCL (Doctor of Civil Law), FRS, FRSE (Edinburgh), FLS, PRGS, PBA, MRIA, (the last 3 being a Peer of the Royal Geographical Society—the one that later helped sponsor Darwin's excursions—Peer of the British (Science) Association, and Member of the Royal Irish Academy), Rev., Prof. Sedgwick worked out the order of the *Carboniferous* and underlying *Devonian strata*. These studies were mostly carried out in the 1830's. The investigations into the *Devonian strata* (near Devon, Southwest England) allied Sedgwick with Murchison in a vigorous debate against Sir Henry De la Beche, FRS, KCB, in what became known as "The Great Devonian Controversy".

You see Henry, though retaining honorable status in most 'scientific circles', was a dishonest scientist that was exposed by Sir Baron Murchison for manipulating the evidence at Devon. Supported by the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick, they proved that Henry's 'deep' sample claims were actually quite 'shallow' (pun intended). And Henry finally admitted his 'mistake', but maintained his original theory. Yeah, recognize this ***seed of evildoers*** that has now become a flourishing 'tare patch', which is the regular practice of *evolutionary science* today? I mean unlike Baron

Georges, Dr. Agassiz, Rev., Dr., Buckland, Sir Baron Murchison, and Rev., Prof. Sedgwick, et al., who had the **integrity** to always handle evidence **honestly**, Henry evidently did not always let the evidence sway his preferred 'scientific' conclusions. And for him, at least in this incident, misrepresenting the evidence was an acceptable means for the 'advancement of science'.

But evidently such **evildoers**, or at least the depths of their **wickedness**, were not as common in the early 19th Century 'scientific community' as it is today. And I mean that the confusion between the evidence for 'global flood geology' and 'glaciation geology' was legitimate. Sure, most everyone back then **believed** that God **created** the World, however long ago, and that there were 'floods', and from most perspectives, a global one, but who knew there were other cataclysms to rival The Flood that came along afterward marring much of the evidence—especially the 'surface evidence'—caused by The Flood. And yes, most accepted on **faith** that there was a 'global flood', but who could accept, or even **understand**, even by the evidence, that about 2500 to 3500 years before their time there had been over half-a-dozen other earthshaking, cataclysmic 'visits' of Venus and Mars, especially the ones who were, also understandably enough, thinking in terms that there was a 'very long time' between Creation and when Adam and Eve finally came along?

But indeed you should now see the **seed** back then that 'sprouted' and 'blossomed' into the way things are today. The Church of England, by no means a *fundamentalist* or *evangelical* church, then included a wide range of 'beliefs'. During the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick's life, largely because of Dr. Agassiz' work with Rev., Dr. Buckland's support, but also because of Mr. Charles Darwin's work with Sir Charles Lyell's support, relationships between the 'conservative high churchmen' and the 'liberal wing' became quite 'icy'. After 'glaciating' for some years, in 1860 the 'liberal churchmen' publication, *Essays and Reviews*, decided to define their differences with their more 'conservative' colleagues. Two of the contributors were actually charged with crimes for their contributions to this volume, but were ultimately acquitted by the courts, but the volume was condemned by the clergy in Convocation. It was about all this that the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick, like most 'conservatives' whose *science* and **faith** were 'intertwined' in a *natural theology*, was extremely outspoken. And he too evidently saw that the **seed of evildoers** was 'sprouting' and 'blossoming', when he told the February 1830 meeting of the Geological Society of London that,

No opinion can be heretical, but that which is not true... Conflicting falsehoods we can comprehend; but truths can never war against each other. I affirm, therefore, that we have nothing to fear from the results of our enquiries, provided they be followed in the laborious but secure road of honest induction. In this way we may rest assured that we shall never arrive at conclusions opposed to any truth, either physical or moral, from whatever source that truth may be derived [Browne 1995, p.129, Sedgwick, Adam, "Geological Society", Feb. 19, 1830: "At the Annual General Meeting of the Society, held on this day, the President, Professor Sedgwick, delivered the following Address from the chair...", *The Philosophical Magazine: Or Annals of Chemistry, Mathematics, Astronomy, Natural History and General Science*, Richard Taylor, Vol.7, p.310].

And I **believe** that like **scripture**, '**these words are true and faithful**' too. But the publication of this 7 article volume was a boon to the Theory of Evolution as it happened 4 months after the publication of Mr. Darwin's famous contribution to this

now popular **wicked** fantasy that **the world** became **deceived** to 'believe' is 'reality'.

And unfortunately, as a *geologist* in the mid-1820's he encouraged the Rev., Dr. Buckland's interpretation of certain *superficial* (or *shallow*) *deposits*, particularly *loose rocks* and *gravel*, as "diluvium", relating them to a 'worldwide flood', and in 1825 he published two papers identifying these as due to a "great irregular inundation" from the "waters of a general deluge", that is, Noah's Flood. However, since *scientists* of his time were entirely unaware of the *global cataclysms* brought by Venus and Mars, of course the evidence *scientist* began finding just didn't fit the Rev., Dr. Buckland's idea of a single 'worldwide flood' with 'shallow deposits'. And in early 1827, after spending several weeks in Paris, Rev., Prof. Sedgwick visited *some of this 'contradictory evidence'* in the Scottish Highlands with Sir Baron Murchison. He later wrote,

If I have been converted in part from the diluvian [flood] theory... it was... by my own gradual improved experience, and by communicating with those about me. Perhaps I may date my change of mind (at least in part) from our journey in the [Scottish] Highlands, where there are so many indications of local diluvial [this time read, *glacial*] operations... (J. W. Clark and T. K. Hughes, *The Life and Letters of the Reverend Adam Sedgwick*, 2 Vols, Cambridge, 1890, Vol.1, p.371; p.270-74 on Sedgwick's stay in Paris; Chapter 8 on his travels with Murchison in the Scottish Highlands).

But in response to Dr. Charles Lyell's 1830 publication promoting *uniformitarian geology* Rev. Sedgwick argued for *floods* at various times. Finally in February, 1831, when retiring from the Presidency of the Geological Society, he recanted his former belief in the Rev., Dr. Buckland's "diluvium" *theory* (*Herbert 1991*, April 1831, p.170-74, Sedgwick, Adam, "*Address to the Geological Society, delivered on the Evening of the 18th of February 1831, by the Rev. Professor Sedgwick, M.A. F.R.S. &c. on retiring from the President's chair*", *Philosophical Magazine*, Vol.9. p.312-315).

And to be clear, I said it was 'unfortunate' that the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick encouraged the Rev. Dr. Buckland's 'theory' about "diluvium" because remember the Rev., Dr. Buckland originally believed that the 'shallow layer' of *sediment* covering the *hyenas* and other *remains* in the Kirkdale Cave was evidence for Noah's Flood. Yes, these men were unwittingly and so understandably confusing their *inundations*. Remember the *sediment* of The Flood is usually miles, often many miles deep. So they were confusing the **great** but more *regional inundations* caused by Venus and Mars with Mercury's bigger, fully global one, being entirely unaware of what Venus or Mars had later done.

But the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick continued to strongly believe, like Baron Georges, and the Rev., Dr. Buckland, et al., that *species of organisms* 'originated' in a succession by Divine 'creative acts' over time. And missing what Venus and Mars did, they naturally assumed it was a very long time, because, attributing the comparatively very *shallow* "diluvium" to Noah's Flood instead of to Venus and/or Mars, they naturally '**misunderstood**' that both the 'miles-deep' *sediments* and *continental glaciation* had to have been very 'time consuming'. But they really weren't, relatively speaking, as we will see.

But at least these men of **integrity** believed that any form of 'development'—or *evolution*—that denied a direct 'creative action' was nothing more than *atheistic*, *materialistic* and *amoral*. And though the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick contended with his

fellow 'conservation churchmen' about possible new conclusions coming from the new 'physical evidence', he maintained that 'moral truths' must be distinguished from 'physical truths', and to combine these or blur them together could only lead to 'disastrous spiritual consequences', yeah, like the Lake of Fire. But really, this 'disconnect' is one of the reasons why true Christian men of **integrity** eventually lost this **fight**. However this is a **fight** I expect to **win** by this **study**, at least with anyone **that hath an ear**, having engaged it not with **all** the **answers** I thought I needed to **win** it, but with the **confidence** of **faith** in the Apostle Paul's **instruction** and **admonition** that I should indeed **endeavour** to **prove all things**, and with the **faith** that I could silence the **ignorant, foolish, wicked** banter that **the creation of the world**, including how it now has its present condition, could not be **proved**. Again, of course it can.

But, for examples, I never expected to '**open**' or '**unseal**' Daniel 11 when I began the first **study**, nor did I expect to recognize actual physical evidence of The Fall when I started the second. In other **words**, though I already had many **revelations** that it was my intention to **teach** before I began, many of them I **receive** in the process of writing, but all of them become **corrected** and/or '**improved**' and/or '**expanded**' in the process. And this process of **study** in which I **come to...revelations**, that is, to '**regular and growing**' **revelations**, has for many years been my lifestyle, so that I have an overflowing **confidence** of **faith** that it will **continue**, even as I do. But it also offers me another perspective—well, glimpses anyway—into God's perspective, that He is simply 'leading me by the hand' every **step** of **the way**. Nevertheless, from my perspective I experience that He continues to **teach me all things** because, **giving all diligence**, I **work, strive, press, run** and **fight** with **vehement desire** to **follow** His lead.

And along with his more conservative colleagues, the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick eventually got into this **good fight** against the **ungodly** Theories of Uniformitarianism and Natural Selection.

But when author, publisher, friend of Sir Walter Scott, and mostly just self-homeschooled in the Encyclopedia Britannica, Mr. Robert Chambers, anonymously published his own *theory* of 'universal evolutionism' in October 1844 in the book, [*Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation*](#), it was an immediate, popular, 'liberal' success, evidently because of Mr. Chambers' *uniformitarian* "development hypothesis". However it also caused the many 'conservative' friends of Rev., Prof. Sedgwick to champion a rebuttal. At first, like other eminent *scientists*, he ignored the book, but the subject wouldn't go away, so he finally read it carefully and made a contemptuous attack on it in the July 1845 edition of the *Edinburgh Review*. He wrote in this review:

[*Vestiges*] comes before [its readers] with a bright, polished, and many-coloured surface, and the serpent coils a false philosophy, and asks them to stretch out their hands and pluck the forbidden fruit [James Secord, *Victorian Sensation*, 2000, p.233,246].

In other **words**, he **believed** that accepting the arguments in *Vestiges* was equivalent to being **fallen from grace**, yep, and ultimately 'scheduled' for that trip to the Lake of Fire.

He also **condemned** the book in a letter to Sir Charles Lyell, lamenting the consequences of this **science falsely so-called**, writing,

If the book be true, the labours of sober induction [logic] are in vain; religion is a lie; human law is a mass of folly, and a base injustice;

morality is moonshine; our labours for the black people of Africa were works of madmen [uh-huh, *eugenics* is on the way]; and man and woman are only better beasts! [*Letter of Adam Sedgwick to Charles Lyell*, April 9, 1845, in, *The Life and Letters of the Rev. Adam Sedgwick*, 1890, Vol. 2, p.84].

And later Rev., Prof. Sedgwick added a long preface to the 5th edition of his *Discourse on the Studies of the University of Cambridge*, 1850, including a lengthy attack against *Vestiges*, but also generally against other 'theories' of "development" (yes, read, *uniformitarian, natural selection evolutionism*).

Incidentally, Mr. Charles Darwin was one of Rev., Prof. Sedgwick's *geology* students in 1831, and accompanied him on a field trip to Wales that summer. The two therefore kept up a correspondence while Mr. Darwin was on his famous, far-reaching expedition, and also afterwards. However Rev., Prof. Sedgwick never accepted the case for *evolution* as published by Mr. Darwin—in 1859—no more than he accepted the conclusions in *Vestiges* in 1844.

In response to receiving and reading Darwin's book, he wrote to Darwin saying,

If I did not think you a good tempered & truth loving man I should not tell you that... I have read your book with more pain than pleasure. Parts of it I admired greatly; parts I laughed at till my sides were almost sore; other parts I read with absolute sorrow; because I think them utterly false & grievously mischievous — You have deserted—after a start in that tram-road of all solid physical truth—the true method of induction—& started up a machinery as wild I think as Bishop Wilkins's locomotive that was to sail with us to the Moon [though the bishop was better known as a founder of the Royal Society who attempted to include *scientists* 'outside' the Church of England]. Many of your wide conclusions are based upon assumptions which can neither be proved nor disproved. Why then express them in the language & arrangements of philosophical induction?

Why indeed. Yes, **ignorant, foolish, wicked** 'banter' masquerading as 'science' was on the rise. But Rev., Prof. Sedgwick evidently **understood** God's '**provable reality**', and tried to persuade Mr. Darwin that his Theory of Natural Selection was...

...but a secondary consequence of supposed, or known, primary facts. Development is a better word because [it is] more close to the cause of the fact. For you do not deny causation. [Yes, they were all still 'acknowledging' God as Creator then.] I call (in the abstract) causation the will of God: & I can prove that He acts for the good of His creatures. He also acts by laws which we can study & comprehend—Acting by law, & under what is called final cause, comprehends, I think, your whole principle.

And he also tried to explain to Mr. Darwin that he saw a distinction between the 'moral' and 'physical' aspects of life, writing,

"There is a moral or metaphysical part of nature as well as a physical. A man who denies this is deep in the mire of folly". If humanity broke this distinction it "would suffer a damage that might brutalize it—&

sink the human race into a lower grade of degradation than any into which it has fallen since its written records tell us of its history" (*Darwin Correspondence Project, Letter 2548*, Adam Sedgwick to Darwin, Nov 24, 1859).

So this was the beginning of a long but losing battle, as it has ever since given 'scientists' the opportunity to exclude the "moral or metaphysical part of nature" from all 'fields of science' altogether, that is, to increasingly and now almost entirely not just ignore, but even ridicule God.

But at least Rev., Prof. Sedgwick recognized the inevitable consequences of Mr. Darwin's fantasy. In a letter to another of his correspondents, he was even harsher on Darwin's book, calling it "utterly false" and writing that,

It repudiates all reasoning from final causes [read, it is fantasy]; and seems to shut the door on any view (however feeble) of the God of Nature as manifested in His works [read, it ignores God]. From first to last it is a dish of rank materialism cleverly cooked and served up (*Letter to Miss Gerard from Adam Sedgwick*, January 2, 1860, in *The Life and Letters of the Rev. Adam Sedgwick, Vol. 2*, 1890, p.359-60).

And though the Rev., Prof. Sedgwick and Mr. Darwin remained friendly, they were in actuality primary examples of the beginning of the growing 'divide' between 'conservative' and 'liberal churchmen', or more to the point, the 'break' between including and excluding God in the curriculum, and therefore in life in general.

However after the death of Rev., Prof. Sedgwick it was decided that his memorial at Cambridge should take the form of a new and larger museum, his successor to the Woodwardian Chair becoming a principle founder of this new museum, opened in 1903. The picture of [Sedgwick Museum](#) on [p.446](#) shows its appropriately prominent 'forestructure' that resembles a 'lighthouse'. And evidently his 'light' still shines, because to celebrate his bicentennial birthday—that would be in 1985—a "geological trail", The Sedgwick Trail, was created near Dent, where he was born. This trail is a 'geological delight' that follows the River Clough, highlighting the kind of 'fault-line-revealed' *rock features* that he originally identified and defined.

The next and last 'bright light' we'll focus on is Sir Richard Owen. However he was arguably the kind of 'misdirected light' that 'irritates the eyes'. He also reminds me a little of King David. I mean that he mostly 'fought a good fight', but was evidently found guilty of some 'foul play' too. But again, who isn't?

Sir Richard Owen, FRS, [KCB](#), was another famous and influential English *biologist, comparative anatomist* and *paleontologist* from the 19th Century, whose life spanned almost the entire century, who was arguably unrivaled—yes, even by Dr. Agassiz—in his contributions as a *naturalist* to that field, who continually 'exhibited', (pun intended), a remarkable gift for 'interpreting' fossils, (and yes, pun again intended), and who more or less held a more 'conservative line' on 'evolutionary fantasy', though finally becoming a controversial figure and unwilling



'promoter' of it. And I mean though he produced a vast array of scientific work, including exhibits and writing, and is known even today for coining the word *Dinosauria* (meaning "Terrible Reptile" or "Fearfully Great Reptile"), he is maybe better remembered for his outspoken opposition to Charles Darwin's Theory of Evolution by Natural Selection, though he could be considered to have been instrumental in popularizing it. But he agreed with Darwin that *evolution* occurred, but thought it was a more 'godly' process than 'imagined' in Darwin's, *On the Origin of Species*. Yes, even when his actions made his motives questionable, he maintained, unlike the growing number holding the more 'liberal', even **ungodly** line, that, whatever the case, God as Creator must be part of any understanding of His Creation.

But yes, his concessions to *evolutionism*, and other contributions, became only a series of 'backfires', the worst being maybe that his approach to *evolution* arguably anticipated the issues that dominate and complicate, even 'controversialize', this 'never, never land' to this very day. Another contribution that for his own ends became much more harmful than helpful was his life's work and campaign for the *natural specimens* in the British Museum to be given a new and larger home, which in 1881 resulted in the establishment of the now world-famous Natural History Museum in South Kensington, London.

Author, journalist, and Honorary Dr. Bill Bryson, (honorary doctorate in 2012 from King's College London), OBE, (Officer of the British Empire), and, in 2013, the very first non-Briton—he is a U.S. citizen—elected an Honorary Fellow of the Royal Society, argues in his writing that,

...by making the Natural History Museum an institution for everyone, Owen transformed our expectations of what museums are for [Bryson, Bill, *A Short History of Nearly Everything*, London: Doubleday, 2003. p.81].

So we might call Sir Richard 'the father of the modern natural history museum'. And if so, his popular, 'public-friendly' exhibits were a major 'backfire' too, as such museums and their exhibits are now much more 'never, never lands' of 'fantasy propaganda', and therefore '**deception**', that is, veritable 'monuments' to *humanism*, which stand more in opposition to reality than to **the truth** that God is Creator. But there were more 'backfires' of his than these.

And I mean that though his 'backfires' that aided *evolutionists* with their 'fantasy' were bad, he had bigger ones. Besides giving them the 'tools' they needed, he ultimately strengthened *evolutionists* to defeat the *creationist world view*, all this best facilitated by his apparent '**pridefulness**' and, worse than that, his occasional '**pit-digging**' misuse of evidence, all of which resulted in putting *creationists* in a 'negative light' and bringing *evolutionists* into an increasingly popular one, even putting them on the 'moral highground'. And he was feared and even hated by some of his contemporaries, such as Mr. Darwin and Mr. Thomas Huxley. These conflicts resulted in Sir Richard finally rejecting the Theory of Evolution by Natural Selection as proposed by Mr. Darwin, which only further alienated him from the rising ranks of the young and more 'liberal churchmen-scientists'. And this downfall of the popular view of *creationism* among *scientist* during his career was exacerbated by accusations of his '**dishonesty**', including that he took credit—and awards—for other people's work. So Sir Richard became the unwilling 'breakwater' by which 'the tide was turned'. In a phrase, and ironically enough, 'Man-glorifying fantasy' disguised as 'reality' delivered with 'apparent integrity' won out over a more 'God-glorifying reality' delivered with apparent

'pridefulness' and ***fraud***.

In 1824 he became a medical student at the University of Edinburgh. But evidently looking for more challenging, if not more prestigious work, he left in the following year and completed his medical course in The Royal Hospital of St. Bartholomew, London—the oldest hospital in England, established in 1144, and “refounded” and endowed by King Henry VIII in 1546—where Mr. Owen came under the influence of one of the founders of the principles of *surgery*, Dr. John Abernethy, FRS.

Upon completing his education, he considered the usual professional career, but he instead turned in the direction of *anatomical research*, as he was persuaded by Dr. Abernethy to accept the position of assistant to William Clift, the highly respected conservator of the museum of the Royal College of Surgeons. This occupation soon led him to abandon his intention of medical practice and his life from then on became devoted to purely scientific work. He prepared an important series of catalogues of the museum’s Hunterian Collection, and, in the process, he acquired the unrivalled knowledge of *comparative anatomy* that enabled him to enrich all fields of the science, and especially helped his researches on the remains of *extinct animals*.

In 1836, he was appointed Hunterian Professor in the Royal College of Surgeons and, in 1849, he succeeded Mr. Clift as Conservator. He held this conservatorship until 1856, when he became superintendent of the natural history department of the British Museum. But again, desiring more challenging, if not more prestigious work, he then devoted much of his energies to a great scheme for a national museum of natural history, which eventually resulted in the transfer of the natural history collections of the British Museum to South Kensington, which is now called the Natural History Museum. He retained this office until the completion of this transfer, and shortly after, in December, 1883, he was made a Knight of the Order of the Bath (KOB). After that he managed to live quietly about another decade longer before he passed.

But his later career before he completed the new museum was by no means quiet, but contentious, and had been tainted by multiple accusations that he failed to give credit to the work of others, and that he even tried to appropriate it in his own name. This came to a head in 1846, when he was awarded the Royal Medal for a paper he had written on supposedly *extinct 'squid-like' fossils*. Mr. Owen had failed to acknowledge that these *extinct marine animals* had actually been discovered by an *amateur biologist* a few years earlier. As a result of the ensuing scandal, he was voted off the councils of the Zoological Society and the Royal Society.

Meanwhile, ‘the bulldog of Darwin’, Mr. Thomas Huxley, so-called mostly because of the ‘chewing’ he did on Mr. Owen, was being elected president of these and other societies. And to make a long story short, though Sir Richard was the first director of the Natural History Museum in London, and his statue remained in the main hall there until 2009, it was then replaced with a statue of Mr. Darwin.

But Sir Richard, always tending to support the more ‘conservative’, ‘God-fearing’, and therefore ‘king-fearing scientists’, was appropriately enough supported by the royal family, who presented him with the cottage which he ultimately used to retire, and he was supported by the prime minister too, who put him on the Civil List, which came with a government salary. And I think a closer examination of his career at this point is only fair, and more than that, will help with our more ‘scientific perspectives’ in the next sections.

While occupied with the groundbreaking work of cataloguing of the Hunterian Collection, Mr. Owen did not limit himself to this work, but also took every

opportunity to *dissect fresh specimens*. He was allowed to examine all *animals* that died in London Zoo's gardens and, when in 1831 the Zoo began to publish scientific proceedings, he was the most prolific contributor of anatomical papers. His first attention-getting publication, however, was his *Memoir on the Pearly Nautilus* (1832), which was soon recognized as a classic. From then on he continued to make important contributions to every department of *comparative anatomy* and *zoology* for a period of over fifty years.

In 1852 Mr. Owen named *Protichnites*—the oldest ‘footprints’ found on land. And applying his knowledge of anatomy, he correctly postulated that these Cambrian “trackways” were made by a supposedly *extinct* type of *arthropod*, (an *invertebrate animal* having an *exoskeleton*, a *segmented body*, and *jointed appendages*, e.g., *crabs*), and he did this more than 150 years before any *fossils* of the *animal* were ever found! Mr. Owen saw a resemblance, (maybe a variation?), of this *animal* in the *extant* or *living arthropod*, *Limulus*, a *horseshoe crab*, which he featured in a special memoir in 1873.

And his descriptions of *vertebrate animals* were even more numerous and extensive than that of *invertebrate* ones. He was a student and follower of Baron Georges’ work, who was considered ‘the father of vertebrate paleontology’. And Sir Richard’s, *Comparative Anatomy and Physiology of Vertebrates* (3 Vols., 1866-68), was indeed the result of more personal research than any similar work since Baron Georges’, *Leçons d’anatomie comparée (Study of Comparative Anatomy)*. And again, he not only studied existing forms but also devoted great attention to the remains of *extinct groups*. Early in his career, he made exhaustive studies of the *teeth* of *extant (living)* and (supposedly) *extinct animals*, and published his extensively illustrated work entitled, *Odontography* (‘teeth drawings’, 1840-45). And among his writings on *fish*, his memoir on the *African lungfish*, like so much of his other work, laid the foundations for later work.

Most of his work on *reptiles* related to the *skeletons* of *extinct forms* and his chief memoirs, on British *specimens*, were reprinted in a connected series in his, *History of British Fossil Reptiles* (4 Vols., 1849-84). These volumes contained his first important general account of the *great group* of *Mesozoic land-reptiles* (*evolution*: buried 60+ million years ago – reality: buried about 4400 years ago in The Flood), where he coined the name *Dinosauria* from two Greek words that together mean, “terrible-powerful-wondrous lizard”. Most of the specimens he obtained were from South Africa, beginning in 1845, and eventually furnished materials for his, *Catalogue of the Fossil Reptilia of South Africa*, issued by the British Museum in 1876.

And it wasn’t just with *dinosaurs* that he was able to capture the attention of both his scientific and public audiences. Among his writings on *birds*, his classical memoir on the *kiwi* and the *dodo* were especially attention-getting. And his monograph on *Archaeopteryx* (1863), the ‘long-tailed’, ‘toothed’ *bird*, *fossilized* in the Bavarian stone, was also one of the most influential works of the century. Remind you of anyone? I mean someone not getting along with his colleagues but widely inspiring the public with his prolific writing?

And it wasn’t just with his writing that he inspired the public. Sir Richard helped create the first life-size sculptures depicting *dinosaurs* as he thought they might have appeared. And I think that his efforts in this endeavor were mostly sincere and appropriate, at least initially, and that he was probably the best person on the planet for the job. But surely you can see how such a format could be, and today predominantly is, abused. And apparently even Sir Richard’s best efforts included some ‘gross’ misrepresentations (pun intended). What misrepresentations? Some of these *dinosaur* models were completed for the Great Exhibition of 1851, but by

1854, when the exhibition's 'building', the Crystal Palace—a wrought iron and plate glass structure originally used to showcase the budding Industrial Revolution—was enlarged and relocated from Hyde Park to South London, there were 33 sculptures produced. But during that transition, on New Year's Eve 1853, Mr. Owen famously hosted a dinner for 21 prominent scientists inside one of the sculptures, inside the hollow concrete *Iguanodon*. However, in 1849, Dr. Gideon Mantell, FRS, MRCS (Member of the Royal College of Surgeons), the discoverer of the *Iguanodon*, realized that it was not a heavy *pachyderm* (or *elephant-like animal*), as Mr. Owen had supposed, but had slender *forelimbs*. And his death in 1852 made it



impossible for him to participate in the creation of the newer Crystal Palace 'dinosaur sculptures'. So Mr. Owen's vision for these *dinosaurs* became what was seen by the public. In the transferred, enlarged exhibit building there were nearly two dozen lifesize sculptures of various *prehistoric animals* built out of concrete sculpted over a steel and brick framework; including two *Iguanodon*, one standing and one resting on its belly. Naturally such misrepresentation was tolerated by the scientists who at least eventually knew better. But today it is not only tolerated. Such **deceit** is required and encouraged.

But it gets worse. Mr. Owen famously credited himself and Baron Georges Cuvier with the discovery of the *Iguanodon*, though the original discovery in 1821 by Dr. Mantell—or was it his wife—only included *teeth*, that at that time the Rev., Dr. Buckland said belonged to a *fish*, and Baron Georges said belonged to a *rhinoceros*, though according to Sir Charles Lyell, Baron Georges had second thoughts, though he made no specific identification. And Baron Georges' death in 1932 left him unable to corroborate Mr. Owen's claim of discovery. It has also been suggested by some others, including Bill Bryson in, *A Short History of Nearly Everything* (see quote above), that Mr. Owen even used his influence in the Royal Society to ensure that many of Dr. Mantell's research papers were never published. This becomes even more disturbing because Mr. Owen was finally dismissed from the Royal Society's Zoological Council for publishing the work of others, probably including Dr. Mantell's, as his own.

By-the-way, in 1825 Dr. Mantell finally did identify the *teeth* as the those of an *iguana* (p.450), except that the animal must have been near 60 feet long, the *teeth* being 20 times larger. Uh-huh. So in this case we're not really talking about an *extinct* 'dinosaur' at all are we? No, it's just that since *iguanas* came out from under the protection of the *water canopy* they don't grow nearly so big anymore. And surely this never occurred to Dr. Mantell, or anyone else back then for that matter, that dwarf or just much smaller versions of lots of animals, etc., were 'best suited to survive' after The Flood.

But even more disturbing is that when Dr. Mantell suffered an accident that left him permanently crippled, Mr. Owen apparently exploited the opportunity by renaming several *dinosaurs* which had already been named by Dr. Mantell, again claiming the credit for their discovery himself. And when Dr. Mantell finally died in 1852, an anonymous obituary ridiculed Dr. Mantell as little more than a mediocre scientist, who contributed little to science. But the obituary's authorship was universally attributed to Mr. Owen by all *geologists*. The president of the Geological Society claimed that it "bespeaks of the lamentable coldness of the heart of the writer". After that Mr. Owen was denied the presidency of the society.

And I should clarify that though Mr. Owen apparently ignored the genuine scientific content of Dr. Mantell's work, including the remarkable insight that some

dinosaurs were *bipedal*, including ignoring this insight in the construction of the Crystal Palace models, where Mr. Owen instead portrayed *Iguanodon* as grossly overweight and strictly *quadrupedal*—‘4-footed’— including also misidentifying the ‘thumb’ on its nose, still Dr. Mantell’s work was finally acknowledged, including his 67 books and memoirs that appear in Dr. Agassiz’, *Bibliographia Zoologiae*, (1848, *Bibliography of Zoology*), which was edited and expanded by Hugh Strickland, FRS, a student of the Rev., Dr. Buckland at Oxford, and ultimately his colleague near the time of the reverend’s death, and who was one of the founders and editors of the Ray Society, established in 1844, the object being the publication of significant works on *natural history* that would otherwise be unpublishable. And Dr. Mantell did manage to get published by the Royal Society, who accumulated 48 scientific papers of his in their Catalogue.

But Dr. Mantell did not live to witness the discovery in 1878 of *articulated*, that is, ‘connected’, *Iguanodon skeletons* in a Belgium coal mine—yes, **giant iguana** buried in The Flood—that supposedly reveal it was ‘mostly bipedal’, and that when ‘upright’ they apparently could use such *nose spurs* (p.450) for defense. But Mr. Owen made no comment or retraction about this later discovery. Evidently it was most uncommon for him to admit any error at all. But today, since some of the ‘earliest known’ (read, ‘deepest buried’) *dinosaurs* were *bipedal*, Dr. Mantell’s idea was insightful. However was he entirely right in this respect? And was Mr. Owen wrong? To answer that I might add another insight, that today *iguana* are really ‘mostly quadrupedal’, though have the capability of standing and moving solely on their *hind legs*, and their ‘bigger versions’ may have been that way before The Flood too. Uh-huh.

I mean again, Mr. Owen didn’t just work with *fossils*, so he had by far the greater experience with comparative anatomy. Remember he had “right of first refusal” on any *freshly dead animal* at the London Zoo. Once his wife arrived home to find the carcass of a newly deceased *rhinoceros* in her front hallway. And regarding *living mammals*, the more striking of Mr. Owen’s contributions included studies of *monotremes* (‘egg-laying mammals’), *marsupials* (‘pouch-bearing mammals’), and *anthropoid apes*—*anthropoid* being a *group* that, according to *modern evolutionists*, includes *monkeys*, *apes*, and us. Most of his writings on *mammals*, however, deal with ‘supposedly’ *extinct forms*, as his attention seems to have been first directed there by the remarkable *fossils* collected by Mr. Darwin that he brought back from South America. And besides other important contributions, Mr. Owen’s interest in South American *extinct mammals* eventually led to the recognition of the *giant armadillo*, (1839)—though not really *extinct*, huh—and to classic memoirs on the *giant ground-sloths* (1842)—again, not really *extinct*—and *Megatherium* (1860, p.451)—this last one possibly really *extinct*. Mr. Owen also first described the *false killer whale* in 1863. Of course all this work on ‘supposedly’ *extinct animals* created a problem. It apparent encouraged the presumption that most “giant” *fossil mammals* must have all gone *extinct*. But some ‘supposedly’ *extinct species*, especially smaller ones, have since been found alive. And surely some of the ‘giant ones’ are not really *extinct* but just not growing as big as they used to. And maybe you noticed another problem some of Mr. Owen’s work created. It to some extent created inappropriate respect for Mr. Darwin’s work too.

Also Sir Thomas Mitchell’s discovery of *fossil bones* in Australia provided him material for the first of Mr. Owen’s long series of papers on the ‘supposed’ *extinct*





mammals of that continent, which were eventually reprinted in book-form in 1877. He also apparently really did discover *Diprotodon* (1838, p.451) and *Thylacoleo* (1859), besides *extinct kangaroos* and *wombats* that, again, were only considered *extinct* because they were of such gigantic size.

And while occupied with so much material from abroad, Mr. Owen was also busily working on an exhaustive study on similar fossils from the British Isles and, in 1844-46, he published his, *History of British Fossil Mammals and Birds*, which was followed by many later memoirs, such as his, *Monograph of the Fossil Mammalia of the Mesozoic Formations* (1871). One of his latest publications was a little work entitled, *Antiquity of Man as deduced from the Discovery of a Human Skeleton*

during *Excavations of the Docks at Tilbury* (1884)—surely no direct connection to *apes* intended.

But we should also more closely consider his relationship with Mr. Darwin—and with his colleagues. Remember that following the voyage of the *Beagle*, Mr. Darwin had at his disposal a significant collection of *fossil specimens* and, in October 1836, he was introduced to Mr. Owen by another Oxford man, Mr. Charles Lyell. Also a former student of the Rev., Dr. Buckland, and a lawyer, who, somewhat on the back of the ‘Father’ of Uniformitarian Theory, 18th Century geologist, Dr. John Hutton, and on the back of the ‘Father’ of Natural Selection Theory, Mr. Darwin, and along the way becoming an opponent of *Lamarckism*, Mr. Lyell goes on to receive the Copley Medal of the Royal Society in 1858, and, as you may also remember, the Wollaston Medal of the Geological Society in 1866, and even has a new medal of the Geological Society named after him, and he was knighted relatively early (Kt, Knight Bachelor—the lowest ranking knight) in 1848, but was also made a baronet in 1864, which is an hereditary title. But all this misplaced **honour** wasn’t just facilitated by the work and theories of others. With his ‘misrepresentation’ skills as an elite lawyer—along with some help in that department from Mr. Huxley, as we will see—Mr. Lyell established himself as the leading champion of ‘slow’ Uniformitarian Evolution, opening the door to **the whole world** to **deny** God.



However when Mr. Owen agreed to work on these *fossil bones* that Mr. Darwin had collected in South America, he came to some significant insights, including that these *extinct giant creatures* were *rodents* and *sloths*, showing that they must be related to the *species* now there, rather than being relatives of similarly-sized creatures from where everyone thought life began—Africa—as Mr. Darwin had originally thought. And this was one of the many influences that led Mr. Darwin to later formulate his own ideas on the concepts of *transmutation* by *natural selection*. And in a way he had the right idea, didn’t he. I mean we can now **see** that after the *water canopy* came down, and the protection and enhancements of the *atmosphere* were lost, the relatively small number of all land *animals* that disembarked from the Ark—and surely they traveled as babies if too large as adults—naturally produced smaller and smaller offspring, maybe finally settling at their new normal smaller sizes about when the Patriarchs settled down to theirs, and to lifespans of no more than 120 years, and where the *species* still growing especially large, being at a

disadvantage after The Flood because they needed so much more food to survive, were naturally the first to become *extinct*, because evidently mostly only the ones that made it to their new smaller sizes survived. Of course it occurs to me that some of the larger animals that lived in the oceans, like *whales*, for example, that were at least protected from the increased exposure to cosmic radiation by living *underwater*, and evidently being able to find enough food after The Flood, remained large, or maybe nearly as large, didn't they. And I mean it was probably something like that, but not possibly like any story that involves either 'fast' or 'slow' *evolution* over millions to billions of years.

However Mr. Owen wasn't an *uniformitarian evolutionist*, but a *catastrophist* who remained uncommitted to the means of how God 'created' and/or 'evolved' life. But apparently his ideas were inspired by the theories of the widely influential and revolutionary—he introduced *chemistry* and the *microscope* into the discussion—German *physiologist*, *comparative anatomist*, *ichthyologist*, and *herpetologist*, Dr. Johannes Müller, but especially by his, now considered obsolete, Theory of Vitalism, that living matter had an "organizing energy"—a soul or a 'life-force' that directed the *growth* of *tissues* and also determined the *lifespan* of the individual and the *species*. And supported by many of his 'conservative churchmen-scientists', Mr. Owen determined that the 'human soul' was unique in this capacity, and distinct from *animals*, etc.

But apparently Mr. Darwin was greatly influenced by the *materialistic*, *atheistic* and *Lamarckian* views of one of his original mentors, Professor Robert Edmund Grant, FRS, FRCPE (Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, Edinburgh), the first Professor of Comparative Anatomy at University College London, and for nearly half a century, who himself had been influenced by the *deist*, *catastrophism*, and *Lamarckian* views of Professor Geoffroy. But evidently the 1830 debate between Baron Georges and Professor Geoffroy, mostly about how to *classify lifeforms*, marked the beginning of the downfall of Professor Geoffroy's career, and of Lamarckism ultimately to Natural Selection, and therefore anticipated the downfall of Professors Grant's too.

And Mr. Darwin sought counsel from Professor Grant before departing on his famous voyage, but shortly after his return he witnessed, probably with some shame, Mr. Owen, as secretary of the Geological Society of London, and his 'churchmen-scientist-allies', openly ridicule his mentor and his 'Lamarckian heresy'. But in 1841, when the recently married Mr. Darwin was ill, Mr. Owen was one of his few scientific friends to visit him, though Mr. Owen's open opposition to any hint of *Lamarckian transmutation* evidently made Mr. Darwin keep quiet about his budding 'hypothesis'.

And it was sometime during the 1840's that Mr. Owen began to concede that *species* arise as the result of some sort of *evolutionary process*. In fact he allowed for as many as 6 possible *mechanisms*: Parthenogenesis (*development* of *eggs* without *fertilization*), Prolonged Development (?), Premature Birth, Congenital Malformations, Lamarckian Atrophy (change by disuse), Lamarckian Hypertrophy (change by excessive use) and Transmutation (*Lamarckism*—'changing environment and habits promoting change'), of which he thought Transmutation was the least likely, because, after all, *special creation* (or *saltation* - 'fast evolution') was already evident in the *fossil record*.

And you may remember that the reason Lamarckism finally entirely gave way to Natural Selection was because of the discovery of *genetics* that led to Modern Evolutionary Synthesis, where it was determined that *lifeforms* only have the capacity for the changes that *genetics*—not *environment* or 'habits'—allow, and therefore can only 'naturally select' *genetic expressions* that are 'best fit to

survive'. Of course *saltation evolutionists* from Professors Geoffroy to Gould—because of the apparently 'sudden appearance' (read, 'sudden burial') of all *lifeforms* in the *fossil record*—are naturally challenging that premise to this very day.

But it makes sense that Mr. Owen backed away from publicly proclaiming his *theories* after the critical reaction given against the anonymously published, *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation*, in 1844. And Mr. Owen was criticized for his own 'evolutionary remarks' in his *Nature of the Limbs* in 1849. His conclusion in this work suggested that *humans* ultimately 'evolved' from *fish* as the result of 'natural laws', which brought criticism from the press for denying that *species* such as *humans* were 'specially' and 'suddenly' **created** by God.

But this does not bring me to a great big, 'Hooray for Christians!', but to the opposite really. I mean it is 'conservative churchmen', that is, Protestants, that is, real Christians, that must bear some of the blame for the fall of the Christian World View. The more 'liberal' or **backsliding** or **reprobate** 'so-called' Christians openly acknowledged the new evidence and used it to convince the World, however increasingly deceitfully and fraudulently, to join them in abandoning God, while the more 'conservative' too often ignored new evidence that complicated their simpler, 'Noah's Flood geological perspective', new evidence like widespread *glaciation*, both shallow and miles-deep *sedimentation*, even *homology*—that vertebrates, for example, did indeed in many ways have comparable *bone structures*, etc.—and therefore such 'closed-minded' Christians revealed themselves as **ignorant** or **worse**, that is, appearing to ignore evidence, and appearing to be upholding a '**false philosophy**'. So no wonder God, generally speaking, let the **ungodly** deceivers 'win'. What?—was He going to let 'God-fearing deceivers' or 'evidence ignorers' be the 'winners'? So yes, it is really 'Christians' that 'opened the door', if not started all this 'foul play', making themselves easily enough defeated, and sometimes even just by 'fair play', as Mr. Owen's life seems to so glaringly portray. But this 'tide' will decisively 'turn' again, as it now already has in this **study**, so that,

...the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea ([Isa 11:9](#); [Hab 2:14](#)).

And both God and I mean by this that this 'losing' to the **ungodly** will only last till He returns, or for you, God willing, only until you master these '**studies**'. And yeah, with all the 'build-up' I'm giving to how 'great' the previous centuries' *scientists* were, this has turned into somewhat of a 'wild goose chase' too, hasn't it. Uh-huh. But still there were some better ones than nowadays, and good enough to be of real help with the rest of this **study**.

And talking about evidence ignored by 'conservative' Christians, during the development of Mr. Darwin's 'theory', in 1849 his investigation of *barnacles* showed how their *segmentation* related to other *crustaceans*, showing how they seemed to have diverged from their 'relatives', that is, from other *species* that have similar *structure* to theirs. And to both Mr. Darwin and Sir Richard such "homologies" in *comparative anatomy* was evidence of descent. And yeah, it makes sense if you stay inside that compartmentalization, kind of like you and I do—or used to do—with The Word of God all the time. And Sir Richard too, like the rest of us sometimes still do, went too far, in his case apparently using 'fantasy' and/or 'foul play' to 'exhibit' his 'theory'. I mean he either misrepresented or just missed that the *fossil evidence* of *horses*—yes the 'horse fossils scandal' all started with Sir Richard—that was 'exhibited' in its imagined 'direct evolutionary sequence', was actually presented out of the order indicated by the depths at which they were found buried,

and all this to support his 'fantasy' of "development" as an "ordained continuous becoming", yeah, Evolution. But it remains hard to tell if he was trying, like so many Christians today, to sincerely 'erect' this 'theory' on the 'sandy foundation' of Theistic (usually slower) Evolution or Progressive (usually faster) Evolution, or if by this point he's more just placating his fellow more 'conservative' colleagues. And yes, at this point I can't rule out that he had always been or had become **reprobate**. Of course only God knew for sure. I know I've done things that could make my testimony equally questionable.

But speaking of some of the "better" scientist, evidently Mr. Darwin was strongly influenced by one of them too. Shortly before he set sail to circumnavigate the globe, he read, and was reported to be "delighted" with, a couple of William Paley's turn-of-the-19th-Century works, *Evidences of Christianity* (1794) and [*Natural Theology or Evidences of the Existence and Attributes of the Deity*](#) (1802). Remember this Cambridge educated churchman and Fellow of the Royal Society—and by-the-way, a leading *abolitionist*—was that Christian *apologist*—'defender of the faith'—that compared the Solar System to a clock, and was the one that Professors, Drs. Hoyle and Wickramasinghe said should be vindicated as still correct today, while saying they proved Mr. Darwin to be wrong. More specifically they said,

The speculations of *The Origin of Species* turned out to be wrong, as we have seen in this chapter. It is ironic that the scientific facts throw Darwin out, but leave William Paley, a figure of fun to the scientific world for more than a century, still in the tournament with a chance of being the ultimate winner (*Evolution from Space: A Theory of Cosmic Creationism*, Simon and Schuster, 1981, p.96-97).

So who knows who else was in Mr. Darwin's head. Maybe even Jesus. I mean remember at the beginning of last **study** I said,

Fundamentally, I don't care what you believe about **the end of the world**. It's not essentially what will get you into Heaven. Anyone that teaches that eschatological **error** can in and of itself somehow overcome **faith in the blood** of Christ doesn't fully **understand** the **promise** and **power of the blood of Christ** ([RGT](#), p.4).

Now read it again exchanging for the **words, the end of the world** and for the word "eschatological" the word "**creation**". And remember that we are all going to carry some '**erroneous ideas**'—and **worse**—into the **fire of judgment** at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, and therefore then begin to carry with us at least some **shame**—or call it '**lack of honor**'—as we pass through and beyond it. And think about it. Would we have been able to reach this level of **understanding** of Creation without Mr. Darwin's 'globe-encompassing expedition' and his 'greatly-debated philosophy'—or Sir Richard's 'world-class anatomical examinations' and 'exhibits'? I don't think so. However their efforts could also be compared to the **pride** and '**presumption**' of modern Bible commentators—how they were **deceived** to 'believe' they were 'Bible translators'—the **understanding** of which helped me 'unseal' Daniel 10-12. But particularly in Mr. Darwin's case, as we have heard some complain already, though really no less in Sir Richard's, they were **deceived** to 'believe' that their '**false philosophy and vain deceit** was **science**. Ouch! That's gonna **burn**, whether going one way or the other.

And speaking of 'big messes' any 'good Christian' might make 'in good faith',

(pun hopefully appropriate, that is, for both Mr. Darwin and Mr. Owen), in 1854, Sir Richard lectured at the British (Science) Association on the impossibility that *apes*, including the recently discovered *gorilla*, could ever 'stand erect' or become "transmuted" into men—a position that certainly did placate, whatever the motive, the then more 'conservative Christian majority'. However he did not rule out, though surely not so publicly, the possibility that *humans* had *evolved* from other *extinct animals* by *evolutionary mechanisms* other than by *transmutation*. And I said Mr. Owen spoke "not so publicly" about his 'theories of evolution' because, at that same time, others were more publicly mocking the idea of man's supposed 'monkey origins'. So, in hopes of pacifying these public protestors, Sir Richard, as President-elect of the Royal Association, announced his authoritative *anatomical studies of primate brains*, claiming that the *human brain* had *structures* that *apes brains* did not, and that therefore *humans* were a separate 'sub-class', which only 'backfired', as it started a dispute which was subsequently also mocked as "The Great Hippocampus Question", where Sir Richard had to retreat to the argument that *humans* have much larger *brains* for their *body* size than other *mammals*, including the *great apes*, and therefore must be in a different 'class'.

Mr. Darwin responded that he could not "swallow" that Man was that "distinct" from *chimpanzees*. And the "bulldog" Mr. Huxley used his March 1858 Royal Institution lecture to deny Sir Richard's claim, and affirm that, structurally, *gorillas* are as close to *humans* as they are to *baboons*. And he instead proposed that the "mental and moral faculties are essentially... the same kind in animals and ourselves". This was a clear denial of Sir Richard's claim for 'human uniqueness' given at the very same place. So the 'tide' was beginning to 'turn'.

On the publication of *On the Origin of Species* the next year, Mr. Darwin sent a complimentary copy to Sir Richard, saying, "...it will seem 'an abomination'." But Sir Richard responded courteously, claiming that he had long believed that "existing influences" were responsible for the "ordained", what he might call, 'birth of species'. And at this point Mr. Darwin had long talks with Sir Richard, who at the time concluded that the book offered the best explanation "ever published of the manner of formation of species", although he still strongly rejected the idea that *transmutation* from 'beast' to 'man' had occurred. And apparently Mr. Darwin assured Sir Richard that he was looking at everything as resulting from designed laws, which Sir Richard may have misinterpreted as that they shared a belief in "Creative Power".

And Sir Richard remained hard to 'pin down'. As head of the Natural History Collections at the British Museum he received numerous inquiries and complaints about *On the Origin of Species*, but refrained from commenting one way or the other. For example, when 'pitching' to a Parliamentary committee the need for a new natural history museum, it is reported that he pointed out that,

The whole intellectual world this year has been excited by a book on the origin of species; and what is the consequence? Visitors come to the British Museum, and they say, 'Let us see all these varieties of pigeons: where is the tumbler, where is the pouter?' and I am obliged with shame to say, I can show you none of them... As to showing you the varieties of those species, or of any of those phenomena that would aid one in getting at that mystery of mysteries, the origin of species, our space does not permit; but surely there ought to be a space somewhere, and, if not in the British Museum, where is it to be obtained?

Of course when no real examples of 'transitional species' were forthcoming, 'misrepresentation by exhibit' became an ever-expanding 'artform'.

And Mr. Huxley could not be denied. His attacks on Sir Richard were hitting their mark. In April 1860 the *Edinburgh Review* included Sir Richard's anonymous and critical review of *On the Origin of Species*. In it he showed contempt for what he saw as Mr. Darwin's mocking of the 'creationist position', and for the fact that he ignored Sir Richard's "axiom of the continuous operation of the ordained becoming of living things". And Sir Richard not only attacked Mr. Darwin's "disciples", including Mr. Huxley, for their "short-sighted adherence", he is also reported to have concluded that the book symbolised the sort of...

...abuse of science... to which a neighbouring nation, some seventy years since, owed its temporary degradation,

this being a mocking comparison of Mr. Darwin's work to the chaotic French Revolution. And Mr. Darwin understandably thought this was...

Spiteful, extremely malignant, clever, and... damaging,

and later is said to have commented that,

The Londoners say he is mad with envy because my book is so talked about. It is painful to be hated in the intense degree with which Owen hates me.

And during this time Mr. Huxley's arguments with Sir Richard continued. Sir Richard tried to discredit Mr. Huxley, portraying him as an "advocate of man's origins from a transmuted ape", while he published arguments against that premise, including, "Ape-Origin of Man as Tested by the Brain". In retaliation, beginning in 1862, Mr. Huxley took the opportunity to arrange demonstrations of *ape brain anatomy*, for example, at the British (Science) Association meeting when Sir Dr. William Flower, FRS, FRCS, KCB—the most qualified man in the realm for the job—performed the dissection. In other words, *visual evidence* of the supposedly missing *brain structures* (*posterior cornu* and *hippocampus minor*) was used to, in effect, indict Mr. Owen for perjury, or at least incompetency. And indeed Mr. Owen had argued that the absence of those *structures* in *apes* were connected with the lesser size to which the *ape brains* grew, so he had to retreat, and concede that a poorly developed version might be construed as present, while maintaining the position that *brain size* was still the major way of distinguishing *apes* and *humans*. And this relentless campaign of Mr. Huxley's ran for over two years, and was hugely successful at persuading the scientific community—though not so much the public. Still, each fresh 'mauling' became a 'recruiting drive' for the Darwinian cause.

And the **warring** continued. While Sir Richard continued to argue that *humans* were distinct from *apes* by virtue of having larger *brains*, Mr. Huxley claimed that *racial diversity* blurred any such distinction. In his paper criticizing Sir Richard, Mr. Huxley explains,

...if we place A, the European brain, B, the Bosjesman brain, and C, the orang brain, in a series, the differences between A and B, so far as they have been ascertained, are of the same nature as the chief of those between B and C (Huxley, Thomas H., "On the Zoological Relations of Man with the Lower Animals", *Natural History Review*, January, 1961, p.83).

Sir Richard countered by saying the *brains* of all *human races* were really of similar size and intellectual ability, and that the fact that humans had brains that were twice the size of *large apes* like *male gorillas*, even though *humans* had much smaller bodies, made *humans* distinguishable.

But Sir Richard never really recovered. When Mr. Huxley joined the Zoological Society Council in 1861, Sir Richard, because of this and other looming scandals, left, and, in the following year, Mr. Huxley moved to stop Sir Richard from being elected to the Royal Society Council, accusing him of “willful & deliberate falsehood”. And by the way, though two decades later, guess who succeeded Sir Richard as director of the new Natural History Museum. Humiliatingly enough, it was Dr. Flower.

But in January 1863, Sir Richard must at least have experienced some distraction from his predicament when for the museum he bought the *Archaeopteryx* (“first bird”) *fossil*, which had both *feathers* and *teeth*. However since it seemed to fulfill Mr. Darwin's prediction that a ‘proto-bird’ with *unfused wing fingers* (‘wing claws’) would be found, of course Sir Richard, probably gaining as much pain as distraction from this acquisition, described it as no more than a *bird*. Can you say *duck-billed platypus*? I mean apparently God wanted us to know that *comparative anatomy*—or *homology*—has its limits, as made evident in both these God-made **creatures**.

And the feuding between Sir Richard's and Mr. Darwin's supporters continued. In the early 1870's, Sir Richard was discovered to be involved in a plot to end government funding of the botanical collection at Kew, London, and bring it under the control of the British Museum. Sir Dr. Joseph Dalton Hooker, FRS, PRS, CB, KCSI, OM, etc.—let's just call him Mr. Darwin's ‘back-up bulldog’, who was for two decades Director of these *botanical exhibits*, and was actually elected President of the Royal Society (PRS), in 1873, as a show of support for him in this dilemma. And the support was sufficient because Sir Richard's power play failed. Of course this also shows that by this time the *Darwinists* were in the majority, at least in the ‘scientific community’.

About his involvement in this ‘attempted takeover’ Mr. Darwin reportedly commented,

I used to be ashamed of hating him so much, but now I will carefully cherish my hatred & contempt to the last days of my life.

Of course neither side sounds very ‘Christian’ here, do they? No, by this time the ‘tide’ is fully ‘turned’. And it's clearly a ‘wrong turn’.

So what's the problem? Isn't there really clear evidence of a ‘global flood’? Yes, plenty. The problem, and confusion, is that there is also clear evidence for other major *inundations* and *glaciations*, not to mention *global conflagrations* and **great topographical renovations**. And the problem is that no matter where any given *geologist* or *paleontologist* might be looking, they are blind to the fact that there have been multiple, recent *global cataclysms*, and instead of **seeing** ‘unimaginably awesome’, **great judgments** of God as the cause, only see ‘slow processes’ that are the result of ‘unimaginable quantities of time’. In other words, being **ignorant** of who God is, generally speaking—and this unfortunately applies to most Christians—they confuse the real evidence of the global, **great earth-shaking**, and otherwise *cataclysmic effects* of the ‘**visits**’ of Mercury, Venus and Mars for ‘slow processes’ taking millions to billions of years. I mean everything did grow a lot bigger under the *water canopy*, and The Flood did indeed *bury* everything miles deep—in a

matter of days. And Venus, and to a lesser extent Mars, did indeed cause the covering and recovering of major portions of the World with *ice*, and on each occasion within only a few days, where, except at the new *poles*, it all ‘melted away’ in not too many years thereafter. And yes, Venus, and to a lesser extent Mars, did indeed make ‘cavemen’ of people, some of the evidence of this seen in **SECTION 3**. And there is a ‘red planet’ coming, one way or another, that is going to make ‘cavemen’ of the inhabitants of Earth again. The Apostle John saw it in advance, and wrote,

And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind. And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains; And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand? [Rev 6:12](#)

Yeah, when Venus, and to a lesser extend Mars, came by, it was kind of like that. People moved into caves not because they didn’t know better, but because they were afraid that no where else was safe enough. And the fallout from any passing of Venus and Mars, though likely diminishing over time, probably went on for years afterward, as we will see in the following sections, that is, if you’re not beginning to **see** it already. And yes, surely people who had taken refuge in caves at the first passing of Venus were still living in them when it came by again about 52 years later, when it *ignited, inundated* and/or *froze* everything again, including ‘sloshing’ *oceans* across the *burning—and melting—land*, and *inundating* many *caves* with *sediment-filled water*, usually only ‘shallowly burying’ who and whatever was inside.

And hopefully by now you’ve realized that we’ve established that denying the additional effects of The Visits of Venus and Mars—like that there really were ‘Ice Ages’—makes you look like a ‘narrow-minded religious dogmatist’, who believes there was only one *global flood*, the **shame** being—surely eventually apparent to all survivors of The Great Tribulations—that this is all the **understanding** that limited (read, **‘spiritually immature’**) **knowledge** and **skill** in **handling** The Word allows. And such a perspective, unavoidably, and no matter how much evidence actually supports it, because of all the other evidence literally heaped on top, became, ultimately, a losing position on all opposing ‘fronts’. And the battle has remained unwinnable because even most our ‘best Christian scientists’ still only see The Flood—more recently largely thanks to Dr. Henry Morris’ cowardly, or **worse**, misguidance, and Mr. Whitcomb’s shameful acquiescence to hiding evidence that he knew, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, existed, as you may remember. But here the ‘tide’ of this ‘battle’ decisively ‘turns’.

However I should be clear that even Dr. Velikovsky didn’t completely eliminate this confusion. So I will start by breaking apart Dr. Velikovsky’s work, *Earth in Upheaval*, showing it to be substantially—though I know he accurately chronicles The Visits of Venus and Mars in *Worlds In Collision*—‘mis-imagined’, and not as much because that in his reporting he often made no distinction about when and how strata, etc., were ‘laid’, frequently leaving this, understandably enough, to us,

that is, whether it more likely involved Venus or Mars or some other “agent”, but more because he also ‘mis-imagined’ that there was a “pageant” of previous ‘visitors’ to Earth before Venus and Mars, not just Mercury alone. And though he knows Mercury is part of this supposed “pageant”, he saw ‘him’ only making a single ‘visit’ that he accurately chronicles not at the time of The Flood, but about 300 years later at the time of The Destruction of the Tower of Babel.

I mean though sometimes he is very chronologically specific, especially when it concerns Venus or Mars, he otherwise continually leaves it unclear whether given ‘catastrophic effects’ were the result of Venus, Mars, or of any number of previous ‘visitors’, or combinations thereof, being himself confused by the ‘mis-imagined’ millions to billions of years available in the Theory of Evolution, and, though aware but **blinded**, confused because he rejected as “myth” and “folklore” the only 6,000 years available since Creation accounted for in God’s Word. And I mean though in his various works he shows he is fully aware of, and has accurately chronicled, The 2nd Visit of Mercury—as we will see in **SECTION 7**—he was apparently unaware that there must have been a previous ‘visit’ of Mercury which helped cause The Flood, seeing Earth’s *surface water* delivered by other understandable but nonetheless ‘mis-imagined’ means and sources and catastrophes, though he accurately chronicles Venus’ relationship to The Exodus, and ‘her’ relationship to Joshua’s long day of battle too, as well as accurately chronicling the several later Visits of Mars. Still, using his somewhat **blinded** work—as all **work** but God’s is—can help us in the unraveling of this *historical, geological* and *paleontological* confusion, starting with... The Flood of Noah.

And we could talk about other agendas of Satan, et al., and how he has, is and will continue to **wrestle** with us to turn us to his imaginary, deceiving, idolatrous—and now primarily self-idolatrous—philosophical fantasies. For example, we could talk about how he obviously duped and used—in turn—a late 17th and early 18th Century, brilliant, German, ‘Protestant Christian philosopher’, (‘Christian’ because, again, whether Protestant or Catholic, and like ‘scientists’ in the ‘sciences’, at that time it was the only kind of ‘philosopher’ it was acceptable to be). And in this case I’m talking about Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel, who was also a ‘Hellenistic Civilization admirer’, a ‘French Revolution and Napoleon supporter’, was ‘influenced by Enlightenment-writers’, (*deists* or *rationalists* who ‘believed in God’, or **the god of this world**, but not **miracles**), and by Jean-Jacque Rousseau, whose “thinking” was “a constructive development within the broad tradition that includes [both Aristotle and] Plato and Immanuel Kant”, who was arguably the principle ‘Protestant’, being German surely only posing as a Lutheran, to convince **the world**, as I would put it, that the existence of God was ‘questionable’ to ‘irrelevant’, which mindset allowed Satan to further mislead—in turn—Professor Hegel’s ‘disciples’, like *nihilist* (read, ‘extreme’ *atheist*) Friedrich Nietzsche, to declare the “death of God”. And this ‘father of doubting God’, Professor Hegel, a ‘seminary’ (University of Berlin) philosophy chair and rector (or chancellor, the highest academic official—and ‘seminary’ because, again, all respectable schools at that time were—though evidently by then an irrecoverably apostate Lutheran institution), surely with Satan’s ‘supervision’ (pun intended), also misled—in turn—Charles Darwin (‘the father of evolutionary philosophy’), as well as Karl Marx (‘the father of communist philosophy’), who ultimately misled—in turn—Sigmund Freud (‘the father of psychological philosophy’), not to mention also Immanuel Velikovsky, and so it goes.

An editor of the “leftist magazine” founded in 1945 by *existentialist* (read, ‘self-idolizing’ *atheist*) Jean Paul Sartre wrote,

All the great philosophical ideas of the past century—the philosophies of Marx and Nietzsche, phenomenology [read, ‘shape’ your ideas the way you want], German [and French] existentialism [including Sartre’s], and psychoanalysis [including Freud’s and Velikovsky’s]—had their beginnings in Hegel (Maurice Merleau-Ponty (trans. Herbert L. and Patricia Allen Dreyfus), *Sense and Nonsense*, Northwestern University Press, 1964, p. 63).

And yes, the title of *existentialist* Editor Maurice Merleau-Ponty’s book says it all, that *atheist* like himself ‘believe’ in their ‘sense’, that is, in their **flesh**, but ‘think’ the idea of God is ‘nonsense’.

But instead of further pursuing this line of ‘reasoning’, (read, ‘satanic propaganda-fantasy’), I’ll just direct you to another ‘little study’ you should do before you go on, or after no more than another few times through this one if you prefer, which will help put all this ‘history’, and the history from the previous sections, in an even better, certainly improved, and more **spiritual** perspective. However like the way Dr. Hovind’s research and conclusions fail to avoid major flaws, compartmentalizations and errors in the process, but nonetheless expose fantasies of *evolution* and illuminate realities of God’s Creation, this other ‘little study’ does too. And I mean it also needs, as with all sources but **scripture**, ‘spiritual filtering’. But I also mean it can further improve your perspective, from the Tower of Babel to the present, of some of God’s more major ‘battles’ against **‘false’ philosophy and vain deceit**, and against **science**—really just another **philosophy—falsely so called**. The **study** is called *Know Your Enemy*. Find the links/web addresses, 1) [https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-\(Part-01-25-Introduction\):e](https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-(Part-01-25-Introduction):e); 2) [https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-\(Part-26-50--Islam---Muhammad\):c](https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-(Part-26-50--Islam---Muhammad):c); 3) [https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-\(Part-51-77--The-American-Revolution\):0](https://odysee.com/@PressingTowards:3/Know-Your-Enemy-(Part-51-77--The-American-Revolution):0) on p.459.

And please **continue** in this **study**,

The Perfect Principles of the Doctrine of Christ Trilogy

with the second volume in,

The Intermediate Study, The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation,
entitled,

A Comprehensive Biblical Reconstruction of Reality, Part 1: The Great Instrument of Judgment Mercury as Revealed in Earth In Upheaval and In the Beginning
and **Enlightened** ^{G5461} by **Scripture** ^{G1124},

because indeed, the **‘introductions’** to Who God is have really only just begun.

Final draft concluded 1/12/2022; final editing concluded 9/10/22